

# **DEVOURING THE HEAVENS**

---

**by Xiami XL**

Devouring the Heavens

Author : Xiami XL

Associated Names :

Tunshi Cangqiong (Novel)

Status in Country of Origin :

7 Volumes (Complete)

## ***2177 Chapters***

Xuanyuan was reborn into a strange new world where training to be a Xian was a cornerstone. There was however something ancient dwelling inside his body. He could now devour all of creation...

This is the journey of an ordinary boy and his transformation into the supreme being that reigns over all existence! Everywhere he went, he could not help but tie his fate with numerous women. It did not matter whether they were a goddess or a devil...

Translator: Pan [ Little Loli ]

Editor: Notsaneinthebrain [ Translator of PMG ]

---

Info :

<https://www.mangaupdates.com/series.html?id=128625>

Raws :

Translator :

<http://novelsnao.com/category/dth/>



# DTH-Toc

[Devouring The Heavens](#)

[DTH-Glossary](#)

[DTH-C01](#)

[DTH-C02](#)

[DTH-C03](#)

[DTH-C04](#)

[DTH-C05](#)

[DTH-C06](#)

[DTH-C07](#)

[DTH-C08](#)

[DTH-C09](#)

[DTH-C010](#)

[DTH-C011](#)

[DTH-C012](#)

[DTH-C013](#)

[DTH-C014](#)

[DTH-C015](#)

[DTH-C016](#)

[DTH-C017](#)

[DTH-C018](#)

[DTH-C019](#)

[DTH-C020](#)

[DTH-C021](#)

[DTH-C022](#)

[DTH-C023](#)

[DTH-C024](#)

[DTH-C025](#)

[DTH-C026](#)

[DTH-C027](#)

[DTH-C028](#)

[DTH-C029](#)

[DTH-C030](#)

[DTH-C031](#)

[DTH-C032](#)

[DTH-C033](#)

[DTH-C034](#)

[DTH-C035](#)

[DTH-C036](#)

[DTH-C037](#)

[DTH-C038](#)

[DTH-C039](#)

[DTH-C040](#)

[DTH-C041](#)

[DTH-C042](#)

[DTH-C043](#)

[DTH-C044](#)

[DTH-C045](#)

[DTH-C046](#)

[DTH-C047](#)

[DTH-C048](#)

[DTH-C049](#)

[DTH-C050](#)

[DTH-C051](#)

[DTH-C052](#)

[DTH-C053](#)

[DTH-C054](#)

[DTH-C055](#)

[DTH-C056](#)

[DTH-C057](#)

[DTH-C058](#)

[DTH-C059](#)

[DTH-C060](#)

[DTH-C061](#)

[DTH-C062](#)

[DTH-C063](#)

[DTH-C064](#)

[DTH-C065](#)

[DTH-C066](#)

[DTH-C067](#)

[DTH-C068](#)

[DTH-C069](#)

[DTH-C070](#)

[DTH-C071](#)

[DTH-C072](#)

[DTH-C073](#)

[DTH-C074](#)

[DTH-C075](#)

[DTH-C076](#)

[DTH-C077](#)

[DTH-C078](#)

[DTH-C079](#)

[DTH-C080](#)

[DTH-C081](#)

[DTH-C082](#)

[DTH-C083](#)

[DTH-C084](#)

[DTH-C085](#)

[DTH-C086](#)

[DTH-C087](#)

[DTH-C088](#)

[DTH-C089](#)

[DTH-C090](#)

[DTH-C091](#)

[DTH-C092](#)

[DTH-C093](#)

[DTH-C094](#)

[DTH-C095](#)

[DTH-C096](#)

[DTH-C097](#)

[DTH-C098](#)

[DTH-C099](#)

[DTH-C0100](#)

[DTH-C0101](#)

[DTH-C0102](#)

[DTH-C0103](#)

[DTH-C0104](#)

[DTH-C0105](#)

[DTH-C0106](#)

[DTH-C0107](#)

[DTH-C0108](#)

[DTH-C0109](#)

[DTH-C0110](#)

[DTH-C0111](#)

[DTH-C0112](#)

[DTH-C0113](#)

[DTH-C0114](#)

[DTH-C0115](#)

[DTH-C0116](#)

[DTH-C0117](#)

[DTH-C0118](#)

[DTH-C0119](#)

[DTH-C0120](#)

[DTH-C0121](#)

[DTH-C0122](#)

[DTH-C0123](#)

[DTH-C0124](#)

[DTH-C0125](#)

[DTH-C0126](#)

[DTH-C0127](#)

[DTH-C0128](#)

[DTH-C0129](#)

[DTH-C0130](#)

[DTH-C0131](#)

[DTH-C0132](#)

[DTH-C0133](#)

[DTH-C0134](#)

[DTH-C0135](#)

[DTH-C0136](#)

[DTH-C0137](#)

[DTH-C0138](#)

[DTH-C0139](#)

[DTH-C0140](#)

[DTH-C0141](#)

[DTH-C0142](#)

[DTH-C0143](#)

[DTH-C0144](#)

[DTH-C0145](#)

[DTH-C0146](#)

[DTH-C0147](#)

[DTH-C0148](#)

[DTH-C0149](#)

[DTH-C0150](#)

[DTH-C0151](#)

[DTH-C0152](#)

[DTH-C0153](#)

[DTH-C0154](#)

[DTH-C0155](#)

[DTH-C0156](#)

[DTH-C0157](#)

[DTH-C0158](#)

[DTH-C0159](#)

[DTH-C0160](#)

[DTH-C0161](#)

[DTH-C0162](#)

[DTH-C0163](#)

[DTH-C0164](#)

[wink](#)

— — — Glossary — — —

Power Level:

Combat Realm – 9 Bulls Force Max – Refining Skin Warrior Real – 36 Bulls Force Max – Refining Flesh Master Realm – 99 Bulls Force Max – Refining Bones Spiritual Realm – 32? Dragons Force – Refining Veins Wild Realm – 54 Dragons Force – Refining Marrow King Realm – ?? Dragons Force – Refining the five organs Grandmaster Realm – Activate the five elements Imperial Realm – Refining blood with 5 elements for Refining the body Emperor Realm – Stimulate acupuncture points with blood qi

Money:

Each currency was worth ten times more than the one before, named after each realm.

- Fighter coins
- Warrior coins
- Master coins
- Spiritual coins
- Wild coins
- Kingly coins
- Grandmaster coins
- Imperial coins

Etc

Techniques:

- Yellow Class (Huang)
- Black Class (Xuan)
- Earthly Class (Di,)
- Heaven Class (Tian)
- Xian Class (Xian)
- Deity Class (Shen)
- Tao Class (Tao)

Techniques are divided into stars which correlates to their power. I.e one-star heaven class technique.

Instruments:

- Sacred Instrument
- Spiritual Class Instrument – Earth Class Instrument
- Heaven Class Instrument

Within each class, they are divided in 4 ranks: Lower rank, middle rank, upper rank, top rank

## Characters

Xuanyuan: MC Duuh

Greed: A shadow who fuses with mc body? he teaches him the devouring technique Yin Zhenluo: Master of mc and his love

Yan Ziyun: First Disciple, first sister – Srta. Fairy Huayu: Girl who is auctioneering of fullmoon cave

## Fighting Dragon City

Bai: Super sexy girl who Work for Taibai Trading Company – king realm Huxuan:  
Young master of Hu family, is friend of Fung Lie, loves Bai Kuixue: man in  
grandmaster realm – Kuiya father? – wants to kill mc because of son

Fang Yuyou: girl who dresses as a man Fang Wujian: guy uses an axe as  
weapon, serves Fang Yuyou Lu Yuxiang: young master of Lu family Xie Wuhen:  
guy of Xie family Fang Yun: guy of Fang family, is in top imperial realm

## Fighting Dragon Sect

Fung Lie: 33 True disciple

Kuiya: is father controls the portal of Moonsky to the sect / work the Biyue to kill mc Biyue: Interne disciple, A bitch who likes insult to all – she is in king realm Biluo: True disciple, brother of the bitch Xiang Tianku: Internet disciple, he likes Longyue?

Longyue:??

Xiaotian: random disciple noob who want the dragon boots in the auction Huotao: True disciple he is against Fung Lie Xingcan: Rank 6 in merit list, he wanted the instruments Huxuan recommended to mc – Xingyun: True disciple, support Xingcan

Dinastia Lu – Mo Creatures?

Shitan: Higher Princess < Super sexy – imperial realms Shiguan: Younger Princess – Master alchemist – imperial realms Guizhan: other MO in the Mo nest

Moonsky City:

Fangyuan: Young master of Mall of the full moon Fangyue: Master of Mall of the full moon

Book 1 – Awakening

## ***Chapter 1 Reborn***

He was an orphan, without any parents, without a name. His memories began when he was four years old, cold and alone. He had a great deal of scars across his body from fighting stray animals, for scraps of food that were thrown away. He may have the scars of battle but he survived.

He had always dreamt of becoming a Xian, a Chinese immortal who could fly through the sky and dig beneath the earth, they could shape the mountains and empty the seas. He wished that he had the power to change his own destiny, which is why he named himself after a famous Xian, Xuanyuan. One time, when he was begging on the streets for food and money, he heard a blind fortune teller mumbling that Xuanyuan, the Yellow Emperor, had conquered all the lands in each and every direction. All countries had sworn allegiance to him. Xuanyuan was the one true emperor under the heavens...

When he turned five, an old beggar took Xuanyuan under his wing. The old man treated him with kindness and taught him all the things that he needed to survive. He told Xuanyuan that when he turned seven, he should go to school and become educated.

“I am old and my life is coming to an end. I can’t have you begging for a living for the rest of your life. I do not want you to remain as an outcast. You have to go to school, that’s the only way. You are a smart boy and I know if you studied hard that one day you will live inside one of the big cities. Then all the pretty girls will line up for you. You won’t have to be like me, peeking in the widows when they are showering...”

On his first day of school, Xuanyuan cried the whole journey to school. He was very intelligent. He mastered every subject with only the tiniest of help from the teachers. Language, Mathematics, Foreign Language...he was often the best in class. In fact, his results were so good that he skipped two grades in school. He was always the first in the whole town. The school realized he was living an extremely poor life, so they made sure to exempt him from tuitions. They even gave him allowance here and there when they could.

Things fell apart when Xuanyuan was finally able to save up enough money from his allowance to give to the old Beggar as a surprise. In the harsh winter snow, the old man was too weak to fight against the bitter chill and died from the cold. He passed away cold and alone, before Xuanyuan arrived with his gift.

Xuanyuan gathered all of his strength in the freezing winter air and carried the body to an open area where he could lay the old man to rest. Using his tiny hands, he dug a hole in the frozen soil. The pain in his hands helped him hold back the tears that were filling his eyes. He tried to overlook the pain in his heart by focusing on the pain in his hands. He dug the grave with his own two tiny hands and laid the old man to his eternal rest. He choked on the tears as he was trying to swallow them back down.

“Old be...beggar, you died when you were alone, must have been so lo...lonely. You told me once, good peop...ple will have their rewards, but then why...why did you have to die? It’s my fault! I couldn’t afford to give you a...a nice life. I couldn’t re...repay your kindness. I only wish you can...can be happy in the next life. No more hardship...no more living on the streets. Be Happy.”

Xuanyuan couldn’t hold back the tears any longer and fell to his knees sobbing.

A fortune teller once said, if you kowtow a hundred times to a good, unfortunate man, then he would reincarnate into a better life. So Xuanyuan gave one kowtow after another in the grave snow storm. His scrawny body kowtowed again and again as the tears rolled down his cheeks, He hoped that this would help the old beggar enjoy a full stomach and a warm house in the next life.

There was a small pool of blood in front of the old beggar’s grave. Xuanyuan finally stood up, his forehead was covered with blood and his eyes were empty of emotion. Although his eyes looked empty, his tears did not cease to flow. He fell onto the ground that was covered in frost. His heart was filled with pain. He was confused, not knowing what to do next. The old beggar was his only family member. Now that the old beggar died, Xuanyuan felt truly homeless and alone.

Snow drifted down from the sky like feathers on the wind. Xuanyuan’s steps got heavier and heavier. His head was spinning and his body freezing. He walked without direction. At last, he finally collapsed and soon disappeared under the snow. The land was covered in white, without a trace of the boy that was lying

on the ground.

\*\*\*\*\*

Like a spirit, Xuanyuan after collapsing drifted under the storm clouds. Xuanyuan felt his body floating through the air, light and completely out of his control.

“Where am I?”

He turned his gaze downwards. There was a mass grave with thousands of corpses everywhere. It was a lifeless land. A group of crows and vultures pecked the flesh from the decaying bodies.

“So many people have died here. Am I dead?” Xuanyuan smiled wryly, looking at his hands. He could see the dead bodies through them. It seemed like he was truly dead.

But at this moment, a lone wolf with silvery white fur suddenly barged towards the mass grave and disturbed the crows and vultures. In a hurry, the birds flew to the withered branches on the trees nearby and shrieked towards the wolf that interrupted their feast.

The lone wolf paid no attention to the sounds of the birds. It approached a young boy’s body, sat down and sniffed. Then it gave a long and sorrowful howl which made the birds grow quiet.

The young boy’s face was pale but stern, with many scratches across his body. His clothes were ragged and a black dagger was tied to his waist. The dagger looked rusty and dull. The boy was completely lifeless.

The lone wolf stayed on his side and kept howling, as if it was begging for the heaven’s for mercy.

Perhaps, the heaven would answer its plea.

All of a sudden, the black rusty dagger quivered and a strange power stirred from within. An indescribable force sucked Xuanyuan’s spirit towards the dagger. He was startled but before he could react, his body no longer felt weightless.

Opening his eyes, Xuanyuan looked up and saw the depressing grey sky. It was

foggy. He suddenly felt a pounding headache, followed by numerous memories flashing into his head. He thought his brain was about to explode from all of the information.

He then noticed all of the corpses were everywhere around him, oozing a rotten stench. The stench disgusted Xuanyuan so much that he jumped like a cat when its tail is stepped upon.

“What happened? Didn’t I die? Doesn’t matter, I need to get out of here first.”

This was his first thought. He passed by many corpses and ran towards a forest. The stench of rotten bodies slowly faded away and the sight of them finally disappeared. When he approached the edge of the spooky forest, he realized that his whole body was in searing pain.

He was too exhausted to run. His legs had given up and he tumbled under a tree while heavily breathing. He finally noticed the wolf that was following him. He was spooked as the memories flashed through his brain. He has the memories of this body’s previous occupant. He remembered the wolf that guarded the boy’s body. He remembered the name of the wolf...

“Guxing!”

Hearing Xuanyuan’s calling, the wolf howled a few times and its eyes sparkled.

When he heard the voice that came from his mouth, it was unfamiliar to Xuanyuan. There were many memories that weren’t his. But the first priority was to fill his empty stomach.

“Guxing, I’m hungry. I can’t walk anymore. Please go and find me some food.” Xuanyuan gathered a bit of hope and whispered. His stomach rumbled at the perfect timing.

It was as if Guxing understood what he had said, it ran into the forest immediately. Xuanyuan was surprised by the wolf’s intelligence. However that matched the memories that were inside his head.

He thought a good time to gather his thoughts would be when Guxing was out looking for food.

“Was it possible that I reborn into this dead boy’s body? What happened?”

Behind him a forest, in front of him a mass of corpses.

Memory after memory revealed and flashed through his mind. He realized that was not his own world.

This body's original owner had a similar fate to Xuanyuan. He was fourteen years old, also without a name. Since he was young, he suffered through a great deal of bullying. He struggled to survive on his own. The rusty dagger came into his possession by accident. Although it looked dull, it was incredibly sharp and could cut through all other metal. It seemed like the dagger had a magical power.

The forest was called the Beastly Forest. Inside the forest's mountains contained many extremely dangerous magical beasts. He only dared to hunt the beasts with lower magical abilities who stayed at the edge of the forest. He would take the opportunities to hunt when the beasts came out of the forest to eat the corpses.

However, a few days ago, he killed a magic tiger with the help of along with Guxing and Guyue. Guyue was severely injured during the fight. The young boy panicked. In order to save Guyue, he skinned the tiger in order to exchange it for some medicine to save Guyue. He found an elixir inside the tiger's body.

Elixirs were extremely rare and precious. Sometimes you might not find one even if you slaughtered a hundred beasts. This elixir was a life saver.

In his bliss, he left Guyue under Guxing's care and went to the Moonwaste City to sell the elixir for medicine. What he did not expect was that the trace of the tiger's magic remaining inside the elixir attracted the attention of the young master of the Yue Family, Yue Jue. The elixir was the highest quality of elixir and Yue Jue wanted it. So he ordered his servant to beat the young boy, using the excuse that the boy had damaged his carriage. The boy was a breath away from death and his elixir was stolen by Yue Jue. He was then thrown into the grave.

"How dare you lowly commoner, disturb my precious horse. Beat him up, but don't kill him. Throw him into the mass grave, let the beasts eat him alive. That's the only way to calm my anger."

Thanks to Guxing guarding him, the boy did not get eaten alive. Yet he still died without proper medical care. But the loyal Guxing would not leave his side even

after death.

Knowing all this, Xuanyuan could not help but laugh. What was justice? Where was the law? How could this Yue Jue be so cruel? Xuanyuan's heart filled with fury and he screamed.

"We are both lonely and unfortunate souls. Now that I have your body, I became you and you have become me. I now live in this unknown world and there's no way back. Yue Jue is not going to get away with this. One day, I am going to be like Xuanyuan the Yellow Emperor. I shall conquer the world and soak the earth with dragon's blood. In the name of Xuanyuan, I am going to destroy all those that stand against me!"

To Xuanyuan's misfortune, the earth beneath his feet began to shake.

Bang! Bang! Bang...

Xuanyuan turned his head and saw a magic bear three metres tall charging in his direction. Its terrifying mouth was displaying its razor sharp teeth. It opened its mouth, ready to bite!

Xuanyuan did not know what to do. A shiver ran down his spine and his brain froze, he was unable to react.

## Chapter 2 – Murdering your own husband?

A magic bear was even more powerful than a magic tiger.

There were no magic bears in the world of his previous life, so this was the first time that Xuanyuan saw such a ferocious beast. He trembled at the sight.

His heart screamed, “Am I going to die just when I’m reborn into a new life? If a magic bear could kill me, I don’t deserve the Yellow Emperor’s name. I’m going to fight!”

Xuanyuan’s bloodthirst was growing by each second spent between life and death. He pulled out the rusty black dagger from his waist and ignored the pain from his body. He pushed through his body’s limit and jumped. He thrust the dagger, which was more like a tiny sword, 40 centimetres in length, towards the bear’s neck. A strange, indescribable feeling arose within Xuanyuan’s heart when he held the black dagger. He did not put much thought into that feeling, there was no time.

The bear seemed to have sensed something when it saw the rusty dagger. A tinge of disdain flashed through its eyes as it bit down onto the dagger.

At this very moment, all of the bear’s long, sharp teeth shattered. Blood was oozing from its wounds.

As the blood covered the dagger it seemed to come alive. The dagger burst into an incredible amount of black threads which wrapped around the bear’s head. The threads were so tight that the bear could not move. Xuanyuan’s hand was glued to the dagger.

His body gave a violent shake. All the black threads condensed into a black light which was directed towards his body. Xuanyuan felt his wounds healing, his strength replenishing. To his shock, the bear’s torso shrank at an alarming speed until there was only skin and bones left. The bear merely struggled for a brief moment before it died.

His wounds disappeared, his hunger no longer remained. He felt energetic. He looked at the dagger. A few pieces of rust fell from the dagger, the black light

shone weakly for a while longer and then it returned to normal.

When his life was at stake; Xuanyuan was fierce and fearless, however he realized after that a cold sweat had covered his body. He tried to steady his breathing. All the sensations he just experienced were unimaginable. He could not find anything similar when searching through the old memories from this body.

It took him a while to compose himself. Then he remembered that he could exchange the bear's skin for money. He took out the dagger and began to remove the bear skin.

Thanks to this body's memories, Xuanyuan was an expert at skinning a beast, so he could sell it at the highest possible price. And since the bear's flesh and blood were completely absorbed by the strange force from the dagger; he removed the skin without much difficulty. When it was done, he neatly folded the bear's fur. His eyes lit up when he saw the bear's skeleton.

"Bones of a magic bear! I can get lots of money from those."

The second he touched the bones, the skeleton burst into fine dust and was blown away by the wind. Xuanyuan was dumbfounded. He sighed – It was regretful that he could not sell the skeleton. Then he suddenly saw a blood-red cobblestone-size object, an elixir was laying on the ground.

"Ha! An elixir!"

Xuanyuan naturally knew how precious the elixir was. He was ecstatic to have found it. If he sold it, he could afford better medicine and equipment to protect his life.

"This is just like the fairy tales from my past life. This is a magical world. It's not just a dream that I can become a Xian!"

Suddenly, he felt like a great hero. He will hold his head high. Guxing came back this time with a small hog in its mouth. The wolf was a natural hunter.

"Where's Guyue?" The sight of Guxing reminded him of his other wolf companion, Guyue. If Guyue was dead, the least he could do was to bury it properly.

It was as if Guxing understood him and sadness filled its eyes. It shook its head.

Xuanyuan knew that Guyue was lost forever. This realization made his heart ache.

“Come on, let’s go home!”

From his newfound memories, he knew his home was nearby under a magnificent tree.

The boy and the wolf moved slowly as they headed home. Xuanyuan continued looking into his memories: he had carved a hole inside the tree using this rusty dagger. His home was simple, a simple bed with bed sheets made from the fur of a magic tiger. The walls were filled with his hunting trophies and magic wolves’ fur covered the floor. In his imagination, it was a cosy little home. In the middle of this tree house, there was a pit; a metre or so wide that he could use for cooking. Cooking in the open attracted unwanted attention, which might result in his death. Surviving in this world was definitely hard.

People like him who struggled to survive did not have many options: They could become servants or hired thugs for the rich families in Moonwaste City, become mercenaries and bodyguards or possibly do shady deals. If they were lucky and talented, they could be adopted by a sect. Then they would not have to suffer from hunger and the cold. They only needed to concentrate on perfecting their martial arts skills and occasionally go on missions for the sects. If they were unlucky, they would be robbed and killed, or raped and killed, if you were a woman.

He finally realized how helpless he was. It was difficult to achieve something great in this cruel, strange world. He swore to take revenge on Yuejue, the son of the master of the Moonwaste City. However was that even possible?

“The worst thing that could happen is death. Like I give a damn!”

He felt disheartened nonetheless. Xuanyuan knew very clearly that if a person lost his spirit, courage, principles and will, he was better off dead. So he had already made up his mind.

“I’ll avenge you whatever it takes. This is all I can do for taking over your body. I swear on you and Guyue’s souls, I shall avenge your deaths!”

While he was encouraging himself, Xuanyuan already reached his home. It was located very discreetly. He opened the door, it was the same as within his memories.

Except, when he and Guxing walked into the tree house, he was stunned by the sight on his bed.

He couldn't believe his eyes, he couldn't even move. There was a woman in a snow white coloured silk dress. Her shoulders were peeking out from the dress. Her hair was like the smoothest black silk, draping casually to her waistline. She had beautiful collarbones and below them, you could almost see her equally beautifully shaped breasts. Her skin was like porcelain, white and perfect. Xuanyuan could not stop staring.

"I have never seen such a pretty girl in my life. I should look while I still can. She is prettier than a thousand widow Zhao's combined..."

The old beggar was a good guy, except for being quite horny. He would always bring Xuanyuan to sneak a peek at widow Zhao when she showered. Xuanyuan realized his blood was boiling and his face was flushing red.

The girl's tiny, lovely face looked peaceful with a hint of sadness. A teardrop was clinging on to her long eyelashes. Her expression calmed and her cheeks flushed, she gave off a serene atmosphere. So delicate, she was untouchable.

Xuanyuan stared at the woman up and down, from her face to her chest, from her casually placed arms to her tiny waist, from her knees covered in the white dress to her delicate feet. He had numerous experiences in peeking at widow Zhao as she showered, that's why he could determine that this girl had two long, beautiful legs judging only from the shape of her dress.

His heart was pounding violently. He didn't know who the girl was. This was his home and certainly it was inappropriate for her to sleep on his bed. He buckled up and walked nervously towards the bed.

Xuanyuan's heart was screaming.

"Her ass, I still haven't seen her ass. The old beggar said that girl's asses should be round like full moons. That's the best..."

He seemed to have forgotten all his grandiose promises.

He held his breath as he walked up. She was lying on her side, revealing her cleavage from her low-cut dress. The dress also revealed a perfect outline of her bottom. He drew nearer to the girl and could smell her natural, sweet and refreshing body fragrance.

“How perfect...perfect...Thank you God, you are fair and just...sending this great beauty my way.”

Xuanyuan was so excited. His hand reached out for her shoulder. When he touched her porcelain-like arms, he was so excited that he teared up. Goodness.

“I’ve never touched anything smoother. Perfect...so smooth...”

He suppressed his urges, cleared his throat and whispered awkwardly.

“Lady, wake up, lady...”

His voice was almost inaudible, he didn’t expect it to wake the girl, but she indeed awoke. Her eyes sharply opened. They were dreamlike, reminding Xuanyuan of a fairy. They were feminine and tempting, but her gaze was cold. He failed to see what the girl did, he only felt his sight spinning and his head hurting, he was already a few metres away from her. He felt like he was floating. He rolled back to his feet, one hand covering his injured forehead, the other pointing at the icy beauty.

He yelled, “Are you trying to murder your own husband?”

She looked at the dumb boy in front of her and smiled sweetly. Her smile was comparable to the most beautiful sceneries of the world.

His anger dissipated immediately. Xuanyuan was a poor little beggar for all his life. He experienced both cruelty and kindness from people. He could easily distinguish the good people from the bad. He looked past her fairy-like beauty. She did not seem bad. She seemed like a good person.

## Chapter 3 – My Beautiful Master

The girl's smile was magical. It could calm the most ferocious anger.

She also brought tranquility to Xuanyuan's anxious, helpless heart. He could not exactly pinpoint the feeling, but he felt at home as long as he was beside this girl. This was the impression she gave him.

However, he was shocked by how easily she could kill him. He didn't even see how she hurt him.

"Who was murdering their husband?" She grinned and walked towards Xuanyuan in bare feet. She was still stunning to look at. As she approached him, Guxing shielded Xuanyuan behind itself, whimpering a warning, but the girl ignored it. Xuanyuan looked at her, she was at least a head taller than him. He remembered how quick her attack was and realized he didn't stand a chance against her. He could only appeal to her with words.

"This is my home that you slept in. How could you attack me?"

She ceased her footsteps and glanced around the house. She gave out an alluring aura with her movements. Her glance stopped at Xuanyuan. His clothes were full of bloodstains, dirty and ragged. She noticed some of his scars had already healed. After a few moments of pondering, she smiled and said,

"You have a good body, but your strength cannot even compare to a lowly fighter. How are you going to prove that this is your home? What power do you have to create this place inside a tree?"

"If you lift the fur beneath the bed you slept on, you'll find a hidden compartment. Inside are 936 fighter coins." Xuanyuan pointed at the middle of the bed confidently.

The woman was slightly astounded. She found the coins inside the compartment under the fur and counted them one by one. It was exactly 936 fighter coins.

Her expression was shaken a bit. Seeing this, he took the advantage and stepped up."Guxing, dig out the bones you hid in the house. Let her know whose

house this is.”

Guxing gave out a small whimper and dug out the big thigh bones of a magic bull from the corner of the tree house.

“You dare to say this is not my home? If you still don’t believe it, I’ll show you.” He came to a corner and opened another hidden compartment. There was some dried meat and clean water.

“Do you believe me now?”

“Then I’m truly sorry. I was exhausted when I found this wonderful place, so I came in for some rest. Now that the master of the house is back, it’s time for me to go.” She smiled. Her breath was fresh and had a floral fragrance. She gestured elegantly then walked towards the door.

“Wait a minute, you barged into my house and hit me for no reason at all. Now you want to go? This doesn’t sound right.” He realized if such a beautiful girl went away, he did not deserve the good karma his ancestors accumulated for him. But there was a more important reason. Xuanyuan wanted to get more information about this world from her. He wanted to know more about practicing martial arts!

The woman was stunned. Her red lips quivered. “How are you going to stop me? You can’t even touch my hair. If I want to go, there’s nothing you can do.”

Xuanyuan couldn’t react for a moment. Then an idea came up. He softened his voice and said, “You’re unreasonable. How about this: you teach me martial arts for a month as compensation for hitting me. You can leave freely after that.”

The woman looked at Xuanyuan. He’s about fourteen years old and yet he kept his home orderly, which she appreciated. He looks like he’s been bullied, judging from his bruises. Even though Xuanyuan had a good body, whoever knew a little bit of martial arts could easily injure him.

Looking at his determined face, she couldn’t resist so she promised him.

“All right, I shall teach you for a month. I’ll leave after that. Take the chance while you can.”

Xuanyuan was so excited that he jumped up and down. He nodded his head

vigorously.

“Of course! I never let an opportunity slip away. But before that, what should I call you? I’m Xuanyuan!”

“Xuanyuan? Xuanyuan... What an interesting name. I am Yin Zhenluo.” Yin Zhenluo stepped on the floor lightly and put on the white boots under the bed. She moved in front of Xuanyuan and said, “Do you truly want to learn martial arts? The quiet life you have now may not be a bad one, being a hunter-gatherer. Why throw yourself into the huge mess that is the martial arts world?”

“I don’t have any grudge against the world, but the world is determined to hurt me. After all, the strongest are at the top of food chain. Look at all my bruises. I got them because I startled the horse of the young master of the Moonwaste City. He almost killed me, but instead he dragged me into the mass grave. I was so close to dying. I got lucky and I stayed alive, but Guyue, the wolf that grew up with me, wasn’t so lucky. Yuejue was the reason Guyue died. I’ve only got Guxing left. How can I face myself if I don’t avenge my friend?”

“A real man should be quick to repay other’s debt of kindness, yet also quick to take revenge. His life should be fulfilling and passionate. What’s the point in being a coward and living safely? I’d rather be the meteor that shines brightly but briefly!”

Yin Zhenluo tried to move her mouth, wanting to say something, but she just sighed instead.

“Never mind. I will oblige if you say so. Take off your clothes.”

Xuanyuan couldn’t react. He took a few steps backwards, his hands cradled his own body and his eyes stared at the exquisite collarbones of Yin Zhenluo. He almost teared up because he was about to live in the same room as this beautiful girl for a month. The old beggar used to say, you have to accumulate good karma for a hundred lives to marry a girl like this.

“Wha...what do you wanna do? I’m a guy, but I’ve never done this before, you...”

She was both mad and amused. With just a step, she was already right in front of Xuanyuan. She flicked her fingers slowly, so Xuanyuan could see this time, and

hit his forehead. The pain was intense, but much lighter than the last time. He was only forced a few steps back this time.

Xuanyuan trembled and thought, “How can a woman be so strong? She only used her fingers. Is she really human? This is insane.”

“There’s nothing to be surprised about. People who know the way of martial arts have unimaginable strength to someone like you. Take off your clothes and change into something clean. You are filthy. I have a bottle of medicine. It can help your wounds heal faster. Tomorrow, I’ll teach you the way of martial arts, introducing you to our world.” Yin Zhenluo took out a jade bottle and threw it to Xuanyuan.

“Thank you so much, my beautiful master!” Xuanyuan caught the bottle and took out a set of clean clothes from the end of the bed. He ran outside quickly and cheered.

“Guxing, let’s take a bath!”

Yin Zhenluo was looking at his silhouette, then she smiled and mumbled to herself, “Xuanyuan, right?...I shall see how much you can grow in a month.”

## Chapter 4 – Ambushes allowed!

Xuanyuan jumped into a stream not far from the treehouse.

Guxing was guarding his belongings – a clean set of linen clothes, a bottle of fresh smelling medicine and a rusty black dagger.

Inside the stream he took off his dirty clothes and swam in the water.

When he was finally clean, he swam over to the shore while naked and opened the bottle. A fresh, cool scent rushed into Xuanyuan's nostrils. It was incredibly refreshing. He already felt revitalized merely by smelling it.

Xuanyuan took a bit of the medicine and sprinkled it onto the hideous looking wound on his chest. There was still blood around the scab, but after applying the medicine, the scab slowly fell off.

He was astonished.

“God, what is this? It's so effective!”

He understood that he shouldn't waste a single drop of this medicine. Every precious drop in the bottle could be the key to saving his life in emergency.

So he only used a tiny bit on the large wounds which started to heal. Then he put on his clean clothes and hid the bottle inside the secret pocket carefully. When he was done, he rushed back to the tree house, his heart was singing.

“My beautiful Master, I'm back...”

Xuanyuan had begged for money since he was child, so he learnt how to read people. What's more was that he sometimes talked to a fortune teller and learnt a bit of physiognomy from them, it was the art to read people through their facial features. He knew instinctively who was good and who was bad. However, he was only a middle school boy in his previous life, after all. He was not very cautious about people's minds.

But Xuanyuan trusted his own instinct and if a woman like Yin Zhenluo really wanted to kill him, he would have already been long dead. Now that she agreed to teach him, he owed her a great deal already. He didn't dare to be suspicious

of her.

The beautiful sunset was lingering, but not for long.

A ray of the remaining sunlight filled the tree house.

In the middle of the room, there was a grilling rack, with a whole piglet grilling inside it. The grilled pork was a speciality of Xuanyuan. He found things like skinning, gutting, and grilling very easy with the memories within his new body. He added in all kinds of herbs and seasonings. The pork smelt delicious.

Guxing stood next to the grill and drooled. Yin Zhenluo sat cross-legged on the ground. She was amused by Xuanyuan's concentration and said "I wouldn't have thought. You are a fairly good cook."

He gave her a glance and smiled confidently,

"Of course. I am surely better than you."

She was irritated. A woman of her status no longer needed to do chores like cooking. She sulked and didn't speak again.

Xuanyuan grinned a little, not minding her irritation. When the food was done, he cut the most tender part of the pork and put it onto a wooden plate. The dagger cut the meat like cutting soft clay. He handed the plate to Yin Zhenluo with a smile to flatter her.

"Beautiful master, this is for you."

Yin Zhenluo stared at him. Even though Xuanyuan wasn't particularly good-looking, his face is quite soothing to look at when he smiled.

"That's more like it." Yin Zhenluo was a great practitioner of martial arts, but she still had to eat and drink occasionally to sustain herself. She wasn't going to refuse the delicacy right in front of her.

Xuanyuan's gaze drifted down to under Yin Zhenluo's collar bones when he handed her the plate. His heart was pounding. He had to take a deep breath so he could concentrate and look away. The sight strengthened his thought, "Xuanyuan, you must find someone like Master Yin Zhenluo to take as your wife. So you must work hard. Otherwise you'll be beaten by such a woman. How embarrassing would that be?"

Yin took the plate and focused on the food. She didn't notice Xuanyuan's expression, nor did she know what was on his mind.

She took out a small silver knife and cut a tiny piece of pork. She chewed it slowly. It was delicious.

However, she saw that Xuanyuan and Guxing were sharing some old dried meat. She was confused and asked. "Why are you having old dried meat instead of the freshly cooked meat?"

Xuanyuan smiled.

"Today I became your apprentice. Of course I have to make you something nice. The piglet would've lasted for two days for Guxing and I. Longer if we ration it. There are always powerful beasts lingering around in the forest. You don't get to eat food so easily every day. We don't mind having dried meat."

Xuanyuan halved the hardened dried meat and gave half to Guxing. He started chewing on it. Yin Zhenluo felt the bitterness in her throat. She grew up in a prestigious family. Nothing was comparable between the two of them.

"Xuanyuan, where're your parents?"

He stopped chewing when he heard her question. His eyes flickered a bit of loneliness. In both his last life and this life, he was an orphan. He never had any parents. After a while, he answered,

"I'm an orphan. I don't have any parents. Only Guxing and Guyue care for me, but Guyue was killed by Yuejue, the young master of Moonwaste City."

Yin Zhenluo saw how lonely he looked. It softened her heart. She sighed and no longer continued to question him.

Xuanyuan was observing Yin Zhenluo when she ate while chewing the dried meat. She chewed very slowly. Her every movement was elegant.

Some time had passed and the sky darkened. The cold moonlight came in from the window, shining on Yin Zhenluo. Under the moonlight, she looked like the fairy on the moon, Chang-e, cold and untouchable. He was obsessed and couldn't look away.

At this moment, he revelled in bliss. How nice it would be if this moment could

last forever. If he could just look at her forever.

Yin Zhenluo opened her eyes and saw that Xuanyuan was staring. She pointed at the grilled pork behind him and said. “Dry the meat. I’ll eat what you eat. There’s no need to prepare such a special meal for me. The practice starts tomorrow.”

Xuanyuan nodded while drooling.

She rolled her eyes, half with annoyance, half with amusement, and stood up. She walked towards the bed and laid down. She then told Xuanyuan. “Go to rest. I’ll take the bed. You can sleep on the floor.”

Xuanyuan wiped his drool and nodded vigorously,

“Of course. I’m grateful for not having to sleep outside.”

“Also, since you are my apprentice, there is one rule you have to follow.” Yin Zhenluo laid on her side. Her eyes seemed so tender under the moonlight. Her beauty made Xuanyuan feel woozy.

“Starting from tonight, if you successfully ambush me anytime, you can do whatever you want.”

Yin Zhenluo’s smile was stunning like a blossoming flower.

When she finished, fire awoke in Xuanyuan’s eyes. His body trembled, his mouth was watering. He rushed in Yin Zhenluo’s direction and attacked like a hungry wolf.

“That’s not an ambush, more like suicide.”

She sighed silently and flicked her finger lightly. A strong wind hit Xuanyuan’s head and knocked him backwards. He rolled across the floor and looked embarrassed.

Guxing didn’t growl at Yin Zhenluo threateningly this time. It seemed amused by the schadenfreude.

Xuanyuan refused to admit that he would fail. He tried seventeen more times and failed to touch even her hair. It was a miserable failure.

## Chapter 5 – Balls are painful

It was a wonderful morning.

The sun rose slowly from the East. Warm sunlight filtered through the branches and leaves, reaching the ground.

Xuanyuan's forehead was swollen from "ambushing" Yin Zhenluo seventeen times and losing every single one of them. Yin hit him right in the forehead every time, leaving his forehead swollen.

It made Yin very happy to see Xuanyuan grinding his teeth from the pain. Her hands were behind her back, showing her round shoulders and exquisite collarbones. She looked like the most delicate art piece in the whole world. She paced around slowly, her white dress draping across the ground. She was like a fairy from paintings. This scenery fascinated him.

The wolf sat on the side. The sun shone on its silvery fur and reflected all sorts of colours. Guxing yawned and showed its sharp teeth. It rolled its eyes towards Xuanyuan, blaming him for its lack of sleep last night.

"Before we start, I'd like to ask you one thing. How do you interpret 'fighting'?" She saw Xuanyuan's lingering stare and knew that he was still obsessed with ambushing her. She smiled as she asked.

Xuanyuan gathered his thoughts and quickly answered,

"Fighting, fighting against people, fighting against the world, fighting against the heavens. Fighting can bring true happiness."

Yin Zhenluo's excitement could be seen within her eyes. She was not expecting such a great answer. It surprised and delighted her. This was the first time she trained an apprentice. Perhaps he would be a genius in the art of fighting. The boy had a strong will, this would certainly aid his training.

"Well said. 'Fighting, fighting against people, fighting against the world, fighting against the heavens. Fighting can bring true happiness.' You are destined to walk on the path of martial arts. It would be a waste of your talents if you lived an ordinary life – rising and resting with the sun. Working to make ends meet. People would only spare a few tears when you die. Never able to escape

the wheel of suffering. What a pity it is to live a life like that.”

“Well, if I live a life like that, I’d probably die alone and be eaten by the beasts in the forest, with no one to cry for me.”

“So, you can only work your hardest. Do not disappoint me.” Yin Zhenluo hid the unknown emotions in her eyes. Her dark hair was blowing in the wind. She looked like a fairy. Her hands pushed out suddenly and there was a burst of wind. Xuanyuan jumped into the air with that sound.

“Ordinary people’s strength can only compare to one bull at most. Even that is rare. When people understand the first law of fighting, they will reach the peak of practicing the way of fighting. Their strength will then be comparable to nine bulls.”

Yin Zhenluo began explaining the practice method of fighting. Xuanyuan stopped acting foolish and immediately concentrated. And he asked,

“What happens after you surpass the strength of nine bulls?”

“Then you will become a warrior. But don’t reach for what you can’t grasp yet. Ordinary people can hardly reach the state of most fighters. Those who never practice the art of fighting have spiritual pores that are clogged and are unable to absorb the spiritual Qi of the universe. When they grow old, they can no longer retain their strength. They will lose their vitality. But if you reach the state of a fighter, you can delay aging, maintain a healthy body and live longer. In this state, fighters cleanse their spiritual pores and absorb spiritual Qi.”

Yin Zhenluo knew Xuanyuan was unfamiliar with the way of practicing martial arts. So she explained it as thoroughly as possible.

Xuanyuan had great comprehension. He understood immediately. So Yin Zhenluo continued,

“You can only become a warrior when you open all your spiritual pores. When you are able to absorb the spiritual Qi, you can then condense the fighter Qi into your body. But in order to practice, you must first have a sacred instrument. Now I will give you my family’s sacred instrument, ‘The Heavenly Dragon with Burning Scales’. Read carefully and see how much you can understand.”

Yin Zhenluo took out a steel-hard, golden dragon scale. The dragon scale was

engraved with small words.

Xuanyuan took the scale, read through the writing and recited it to himself. He suddenly felt a spiritual breath from the earth trying to break through his skin. He felt a tingling sensation.

Yin Zhenluo did not expect him to be so talented. By reciting the book, he could already gather the Qi of the universe to unclog his pores in less than an hour.

He was amazed by the sensation and said excitedly, "Beautiful master, I feel something. It's tingling on my skin. Is this the right type of feeling?"

"Correct. That is the sensation. Since you are my first apprentice, I cannot let you down. This is Dragon Scale Powder. It's extremely rare. Pour some on your skin. It can help with the process and cleanse your pores. It will also leave the scent of dragon scales on your skin."

Yin Zhenluo threw a jade bottle to Xuanyuan.

He caught the bottle and handed her the gold scale. She shook her head and said,

"Never mind. I gave it to you. It's no longer useful to me. I can't teach you for long. You can sell the dragon scale if needed. It's quite valuable. But remember to erase all the writing on it first."

Since it was useless to Yin Zhenluo, Xuanyuan did not hesitate in keeping it. It's only natural for a master to give her apprentice something.

If Yin Zhenluo knew what Xuanyuan was thinking, she would be furious. The book was useless to her, but the dragon scale itself was an incredibly strong shield. Ordinary weapons could not break through its defense. It was extremely valuable.

Xuanyuan equipped it as a chest plate carefully. Then he picked up the bottle with the dragon scale powder, and asked with a lewd smile, "My beautiful master, would you please help me apply it?"

Yin Zhenluo rolled her eyes. She didn't want to reply, but still said, "In your dreams. Do it yourself."

He didn't mind at all and nodded. Then he took off all his clothes in front of Yin Zhenluo, forcing her to turn her head and body away from him. She was blushing. After all, Yin was only two years older than Xuanyuan.

Yin Zhenluo's shoulders were showing from her silky white dress, it made the line of her neck seem even longer. Her body stirred his imagination. Xuanyuan gulped and said,

"Do I have to apply it everywhere?"

"Of course!" Yin Zhenluo was furious and complained to herself, "He doesn't even know shame."

Xuanyuan was naked and put some of the powder onto his hand. His hand felt cool and fresh as it touched his body. It was refreshing. He moaned from the pleasant sensation.

"Ah...ah...ooo..."

"Concentrate on the task. Stop making noise!" Yin Zhenluo angrily shouted.

Xuanyuan was just enjoying himself, and was even more after being provoked by Yin Zhenluo's scolding. He moaned even louder.

"aahh....ooohh..."

Yin Zhenluo was a bit shaken and couldn't think of an appropriate reply. Xuanyuan applied it everywhere on his upper body. Then he looked at his bottom half. It was the only place he had yet to apply the powder. He mumbled to himself,

"I need to unclog the pores here as well, don't I? I'll put some on there."

Xuanyuan poured some of the powder onto his hand and rubbed it onto his private parts. An incredibly fresh and comfortable sensation travelled inside his body. He couldn't help but moan even harder.

"Ou...ohh...aaii...."

Yin Zhenluo felt defeated as she listening to Xuanyuan mumbling some indistinguishable moans.

"Make one more noise and you are dead." Her body gave an uncomfortable

shake as she warned him.

Xuanyuan knew he shouldn't test the limit, so he put his clothes back on and sat in a cross-legged position. He looked completely innocent,

"Master, I'm done with the application. I'll start the practice. Please do not disturb me."

Yin Zhenluo turned her head and saw Xuanyuan's pretension. This irritated her, so she gave him an angry stare. Then she suddenly remembered something. A stunning smile bloomed on her face. She looked like she was ready to watch a good show.

Xuanyuan's eyes were closed, so he couldn't see Yin Zhenluo's smiling expression. He recited the Heavenly Dragon with Burning Scales. All his pores were then opening and closing repeatedly. He felt a strong flow of Qi crash into him. The tingling sensation became stronger and stronger. His whole body was in pain.

Xuanyuan could feel all his pores tearing open one by one, like he was being pricked by needles.

Yin didn't expect him to be so tough. Even though the dragon scale powder could speed up the process, the price was searing pain. She endured this when she was a child. She bit her tongue so she wouldn't scream. Xuanyuan didn't make a sound, which was impressive.

An hour was gone.

Xuanyuan recited the book from top to bottom. When the Qi reached his privates, his face darkened. He crouched down and covered his private parts. His body jerked violently as he screamed in pain,

"Master, my balls, my balls are painful!!"

Yin Zhenluo was stunned.

## Chapter 6 – Anger soothed

Yin Zhenluo didn't think Xuanyuan would foolishly apply the dragon scale powder to his private parts.

Regardless of gender, a person's private parts are the most fragile part of the body, and they have most difficult to have the pores to unclog.

Despite the help from the powder, it was still a miracle for Xuanyuan to have advanced to that part of his body in such a short time. It proved that he had excellent talent.

She could sense a dense Qi pushing through every single pore of Xuanyuan's body. Some pores were opened, some remained closed. But no matter what, Xuanyuan was surely a rare genius.

"Don't stop. Not even when your balls are painful." She wanted to laugh but couldn't bring herself to discourage him. She said slowly, "A human's body is like iron. It needs harsh fire to purify it so its true essence can be revealed. Your body has too much impurity. This is only the beginning, no matter how painful it is, endure it."

Her voice was like a refreshing stream of water from the mountain. It cleared his mind.

Once again, Xuanyuan sat in cross-legged position and recited the Book. If you had good eyesight, you would have seen the pores that were pushing Qi through now kept opening and closing.

His whole body was in pain, especially the most fragile part of his body. But at the same time, he also felt incredibly comfortable. These two sensations kept dominating his consciousness alternatively...

Yin Zhenluo looked at his skin and a dark red substance was oozing out the top layer of his skin. That was the impurities within his body. The substance was extremely oily and dirty, it was the reason that human bodies were unable to absorb Qi from the universe. The substance was now being removed from his body with the help of the Book of The Heavenly Dragon with Burning Scales.

Dragons had reverse scales and whatever touched them would die. Xuanyuan was like a baby dragon right now. His scales were burning, opening and closing. His body was being purified.

Without him noticing, a day had already past. His body was covered with an oily film. He smelt disgusting, like he hadn't washed in years, but Yin Zhenluo was ecstatic. She said,

"Well done. Let's call it a day. Go and rinse all the dirt and impurity from your body. The powder was absorbed by your skins. I didn't expect you to recite the whole Book in just a day and you still have strength left. Very well done, indeed."

After he recited the Book once, Xuanyuan was incredibly energetic. He did not feel exhausted at all. Quite the opposite, he felt like his strength grew exponentially. He was certain that he could lift a bull without any problems.

"Haha, great!" Xuanyuan jumped up and ran to the stream and soaked himself in the water. A dark red colour radiated out from Xuanyuan. All the dirt and oily substance was washed away by the stream water. He swam against the rapid stream and felt the great strength within both his body and mind...

Yin Zhenluo looked at him. She was pleased.

"Within a month, I hope to teach him even more things. With the help of the Dragon Scale Powder, he only needed one day to recite the whole Book and gained a full two bulls of strength. What an unusual genius."

In the first day, Xuanyuan recited the book once.

The second day, he recited the book twice.

The third day, he recited the book three times. His strength rapidly grew from two bulls to five. All of this excited Yin Zhenluo, perhaps he would prove to be a great apprentice.

Xuanyuan threw a few punches at his full power. The spiritual pores on his body were all opening and closing in regular movements, circulating the Qi. The parts that weren't purified on the first day were now being cleansed. During his training, the amount of impurity extracted from his skin each day was reducing, but he was not done yet. Xuanyuan knew this was only the beginning. The process would only be completed when he could do eighteen full recitals of the

Book in a single day. Then his skins would be completely cleansed and he would be ready to enter the warrior realm.

“Beautiful master, the food is cooked. I’m going out to hunt.” After three days of practice, Xuanyuan’s body went through tremendous changes. His strength was enhanced immensely and his appetite also grew with his strength. Yin Zhenluo didn’t need much food, but it was not the same for Xuanyuan. He finished all the food he stored in no time.

Yin Zhenluo nodded and smiled.

“Go.”

Xuanyuan and Guxing ran out the door. Each step would cover 3 metres of distance, so he was extremely fast. They ran to the Beastly Forest.

That’s was the direction of the mass grave.

There were two men heading in the same direction. They were wearing well made martial arts uniforms and had cruel smiles. They were hauling a frigid corpse, each of them holding a leg. They were heading to the mass grave.

They were the vicious servants from the Yue Family. Who knew how many innocent people they had killed?

“This kid was itching to get his ass kicked. It’s a blessing for him that Master Yuejue liked his sister. How dare he come to our house and demand for his sister back. He didn’t want to continue living.” One of called Qian Yonglai, mocked viciously. He even kicked the dead body.

“Ha, Master Yuejue is a kind man. He only wanted his limbs broken. But I just reached the strength of four bulls. I couldn’t control my strength very well. I killed him with a single kick, how careless of me. However Master Yuejue gave me ten warrior coins for it. They are worth one hundred fighter coins. I’ll treat you to a trip to the brothel when we get back.” The other man named Qian Yongfu laughed loudly. They already arrived at the mass grave while chatting. They dumped the body into the grave and were ready to leave.

Xuanyuan’s five senses became extremely sensitive after practicing. He could see and hear clearly for fifty metres. So Xuanyuan had heard their conversation. Qian Yonglai and Qian Yongfu were among the servants of Yuejue who beat him

before he died.

Xuanyuan was surprised to hear that these two evil men killed yet another innocent boy. He was furious, but calmed down quickly. He needed to be careful when facing a man with the strength of four bulls, and another with the strength of three bulls, otherwise he could be killed. After all, he didn't have any real experience with fighting. Even though he knew how to hunt, humans were a lot smarter than magical beasts.

He had an idea. With Guxing next to him, he approached them while faking a limp. He stopped when he was only ten metres away from them.

The servants were shocked to see Xuanyuan, but quickly showed looks of disgust.

Qian Yonglai laughed in an evil high pitched voice,

"Isn't this the boy we almost killed a few days ago? He's quite tough to survive that. The wolf looks nice; we should barbeque him later."

"Kill him. Master Yuejue will reward us for it later. You're right about the wolf. Its fur is beautiful. We should skin it alive and give the fur to Master. He'll be delighted." Qian Yongfu took a step towards Xuanyuan. He was very cocky because he had just gained the strength of four bulls. Not to mention Xuanyuan was still "wounded", and even if he was healthy, he could catch and kill him easily.

Like a rabbit facing two wolves, Xuanyuan pretended to be petrified. He was "limping" backwards and cried,

"You two again...You almost killed me, can't you let me go?"

"Hahaha...Seems like you are scared of us. Weren't you acting tough a few days ago? Well, we could let you go...if you give us that wolf of yours. If we're happy, maybe we'll let you off the hook." Qian Yonglai laughed. He seemed very happy with himself.

"Let you go? You filthy bastard, you disrespected Master Yuejue's carriage and insulted him. Even if you die a million deaths, you still couldn't make it up to him. You, that wolf, and your whole family should be killed!" Qian Yongfu was very aggressive. Qian Yonglai also revealed his vicious expression.

“Guxing, run!” Xuanyuan pretended to be crying as he ran away while limping. The servants were amused and chased him.

“Boy, you are not going to die quickly. This time, I’m going to break all of your limbs and make sure you’re slowly eaten by the beasts in the mass grave.” Qian Yongfu was more powerful so he quickly approached Xuanyuan and raised a fist to punch Xuanyuan’s back. Xuanyuan felt his back tingling. He knew immediately that this was the power of sense he gained from reciting the Book. With the tingling sensation, he could sense what direction the enemy was striking him from.

When Qian Yongfu almost hit Xuanyuan’s back, Xuanyuan suddenly crouched and turned around. His fist violently hit Qian Yongfu’s stomach.

His attack was almost undetectable. His strength of five bulls burst forth. There was a sharp bang when he hit Qian Yongfu.

Qian Yongfu’s eyes grew round. He started to throw up the contents of his stomach. He didn’t expect the boy who only had the strength of one bull was now in possession of five times that strength after a few days. What made him even angrier was that Xuanyuan pretended to be weak and tricked them!

It was only one punch and Qian Yongfu could no longer fight. He was twitching like an electrocuted toad. A stream of saliva was flowing from the corner his mouth. He was in a miserable state.

Qian Yonglai was petrified. He still hadn’t understood what was going on.

“Wha...what do you want?”

The roles suddenly reversed. Qian Yonglai was like a terrified little rabbit and Xuanyuan was the big bad wolf.

Guxing slowly approached. It had a smirk on its face, like it was mocking them.

“Not much. I just want to break all your limbs and feed you to the beasts in the mass grave. So you know how it feels.”

Qian Yonglai’s strength was much weaker than Xuanyuan’s. Xuanyuan stepped forward and grabbed Qian Yonglai’s shoulders. It was so tight that Qian Yonglai couldn’t move. He could only feel his shoulder bone being crushed bit by bit. A

searing pain transferred through every part of his body. He could not help but cry out.

Usually, Qian Yonglai was the one who did the beating. No one dared to beat him. After all, no one wanted to provoke the Yue Family, the biggest family of Moonwaste city.

Xuanyuan did dare to provoke them.

Crack.....crack....

The sound of bones crushing was harmonized with Qian Yonglai's screams. All the bones in his limbs were broken one by one.

Because of the terror and pain, Qian Yonglai lost control of his bowels. A disgusting stench suddenly made Xuanyuan cover his nose. He searched Qian Yonglai's body and found a big bag of fighter coins, at least a thousand of them. Xuanyuan was shocked by how much a vicious servant of the Yue Family could earn. It was more than he had saved in his whole life. He put the bag of coins into his pocket without a second thought.

He then moved to Qian Yongfu and smiled coldly. He stamped down onto Qian Yongfu's limbs and broke them. There was a horrifying scream.

He felt amazing while doing all this. Xuanyuan had never killed anyone and had no desire to kill them. This was sufficient punishment.

He found two hundred and fifty warrior coins on Qian Yongfu. He remembered that one of these coins was worth ten fighter coins. This seemed to be the reward for him reaching four bulls strength. No wonder he was showing off and planning a visit to the brothel.

The servants were very upset about Xuanyuan taking their coins. The money was gained from a great deal of bad deeds. Now that it was taken by Xuanyuan, it clearly upset them.

"Hey, man...let us go.... it's all our fault. Forgive us, we'll make it up to you."

"That's right.... Don't do this... You already broke our limbs. Please don't do this."

They kept begging and crying while looking terrified.

“You gained these coins by evil means. I’m going to spend them for you. As for your lives, that depends on your fate.”

Xuanyuan smiled happily as he dragged them onto the ragged road. Their faces and bodies were bruised. They looked disgusting. Xuanyuan threw them into the mass grave like dead animals. Then he went back into the forest to hunt for food.

## Chapter 7 – Too Soft

Moonwaste City.

Yue Family's Keep.

Qian Kuai, a tough looking man in his forties, was one of the housekeepers of the Yue Family and a top notch fighter with the power of nine bulls worth of strength.

He trained many vile servants. Among them, Qian Yonglai and Qian Yongfu were talented. Because of that, they were adopted by Qian Kuai and took his surname.

Yonglai and Yongfu often shared their blood money with Kuai. In turn, he treated them well and arranged for them to serve the vicious Young Master, Yuejue.

The day was coming to an end, and Kuai was growing impatient.

“Go get someone to check out the mass grave. Yonglai and Yongfu spent a whole day dumping a body for the Young Master. Don't they want this month's salary? I'll have to teach them a lesson when they return, so they don't get cocky for serving the Young Master and forget to respect their adopted father.”

“Understood, housekeeper Qian.” Said Qian Yong, a fighter with the strength of six bulls, he had served Kuai for a long time. He replied and left immediately.

The sky was dark when Qian Yong brought Yonglai and Yongfu back to the housekeeper's quarters. All their limbs were twisted, their faces were terrified. When they saw Kuai, they looked at him like they saw their saviour.

“Father, help!” They both screamed.

Kuai stared at them contemptuously when he saw that they were badly beaten. He turned to Yong and asked coldly.

“What happened?”

“I have no idea. When I arrived there, the brothers were almost eaten by magical beasts. They mumbled some nonsense on the way back. I couldn't

understand them.” Qian Yong replied.

“Father, it’s the boy...the boy...A few days ago, he startled Master Yuejue’s horses. He didn’t die. Now he has five bulls of strength. He did this to us. Please, father must beat that bastard!”

“That’s right! He even took the money we were going to give you. You have to help us!”

Their eyes burst with evil fury. Their faces were ugly and twisted. They wanted to skin Xuanyuan alive.

“I won’t let this go. A lowly, ordinary boy dared to attack men from the house of Yue. That’s an insult to our house!”

“Father, you must bring some men to the mass grave and find the bastard tomorrow. Cut off his limbs and torture him. Make him beg for death!”

“Cut off his dick....”

All kinds of vile ideas came from the brothers’ mouths.

Qian Kuai realized what happened immediately. A few days ago, that boy only had one bull of strength at best. Even though Kuai didn’t aim to kill him with his whip, ordinary people couldn’t endure such an attack. It had only been a few days, and the boy had already healed and gained five bulls strength. He couldn’t fathom the reason.

Looking at his foul-smelling adopted sons, Kuai was disgusted. He waved his hand and said.

“Someone get them out of here and take care of them. Tomorrow I’ll go to the mass grave and see for myself.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Near the edge of the Beastly Forest.

Xuanyuan was lucky and hunted down a wild boar of six hundred jin. The sky was still light on his way back to the tree house. The servants were lucky today and didn’t get eaten, but they screamed from the attacks from ravens. Xuanyuan smiled to himself but didn’t pay much attention. He went straight home after that.

When he was home, he butchered the boar with his dagger. He was a bit vexed that the dagger didn't show any more of its magical power like when it faced the magical bear, it was still razor sharp though. But he didn't dwell on the topic.

The six hundred jin boar was partly made into a fresh meal and partly into dried meat. This would be food for the next ten days.

After eating, Xuanyuan sat cross-legged on the bank of the stream, wearing only his underpants. He continued reciting the Book. He was pondering a trip to Moonwaste City since he does not have any clean clothes anymore. With his own savings and the coins from the men he defeated, he now had 4,636 fighter coins. He could buy so many luxurious things.

When the night fell, Yun Zhenluo sat on a smooth stone near the tree house and watched Xuanyuan practice quietly. She was smiling, her eyes dreamy. The past few days had been the most carefree in her entire life.

Xuanyuan did not realize a disaster had already befallen him.

The spiritual Qi from the universe was absorbed into Xuanyuan's body. He could feel that his skin had become smoother, his strength enhanced. It's like his body was breathing in the Qi. He was sure that even if his nose and mouth were covered, he could still breathe through his skin. The effect of practicing martial arts exceeded his imagination from his previous life.

He could also feel the strength of his muscles roaring under his skin.

Three more days flew by. Just as Yun had predicted, Xuanyuan reached nine bulls of strength.

A boy who never studied martial arts before could gain nine times his power in six days. It was an incredible achievement.

There were many people who practiced for decades and still could not exceed the fighter realm. They could only delay aging and enjoy a healthy life. Xuanyuan became one of the best fighters in six days.

Talent was essential. Qian Kuai from the Yue Family was a middle-aged man but still lingering within the fighter realm. You could imagine how difficult it was to practice the way of martial arts. It was not possible to have great achievements without talent.

With his increasing strength, Xuanyuan ate more and more everyday. He could gulp down ten jin of meat a day. That was because when you practice, you had to provide the body with nutrients to strengthen itself. Otherwise, the body would get worn down. Yun Zhenluo had said practitioners of higher realms didn't eat meat. They used elixirs to restore their strength. Elixirs were pure, as opposed to meat. Meat had many impurities which kept the body from absorbing nutrients.

But meat was enough for Xuanyuan right now. It gave him the strength he needed.

Guxing had always stayed by Xuanyuan's side during these few days. It benefited from eating a lot of meat and absorbing the Qi gathering around Xuanyuan. Its fur became much more shiny and its body became larger.

Xuanyuan estimated Guxing now had six bulls of strength, a lot stronger than before. With such sharp teeth, Xuanyuan wouldn't dare to receive a bite from them.

Just when Xuanyuan finished the day's practice, he could hear angry shouts from a few hundred metres away.

"That damn kid dared to attack housekeeper Qian's adopted sons. What an insult to the Yue Family! Master Yuejue was furious and ordered a search around the mass grave. We have to find him, even if that means we have to tear the place down and dig deep in the ground. It's such a bloody chore."

"We already searched for three days. If we find the kid, we'll show him a living hell!" Both these people were filled with hatred. Since they knew that Xuanyuan had five bulls strength, the men they sent were all quite powerful.

"Ha, Housekeeper Qian said, 'Whoever finds the kid will be awarded with three hundred warrior coins.' Let's find him."

They cursed as they searched, but at the same time, they saw that a boy and a wolf were approaching them.

When they realized it was Xuanyuan, they both trembled with excitement.

"Hahaha, finally we found you. You son of a bitch, wasting our time and insulting the house of Yue. Are you itching to have your ass kicked?"

“A disgusting scum like you can’t even repay your sin if you die a thousand times. Why don’t you kneel down and bow to us. If you do it a few hundred times and give us your money, maybe we’ll spare your life. Right, and we’ll skin the wolf and give its fur to Master Yuejue. He’ll like that.”

These two men’s strength far exceeded Qian Yonglai and Yongfu. They had five and six bulls of strength! Xuanyuan would have panicked three days ago. But he now had nine bulls strength, and he could shatter rocks into powder. He could kill them as if they were ants.

“If you two kneel down and bow to me a hundred times while giving me all your money, perhaps I’ll spare your life. Or else, Guxing wouldn’t mind eating your flesh. Meat is better fresh, after all.” Xuanyuan smiled coldly. He looked at them like he was watching performing monkeys.

The stronger of them grew angry, he was about to yell, but Xuanyuan was faster and gave him a slap to the face. A white stream of air came from his hand. When it hit the one with six bulls of strength, a cracking noise occurred and a few of the man’s yellow teeth flew from his mouth. Blood and saliva drooled out from his mouth. The man spun a few times from the impact, and he fell heavily on the ground and passed out.

At the same time, the other one screamed with pain. Guxing tore a piece of fresh meat from his bottom. The wound was so deep, you could see the white bone from his pelvis. Blood was gushing out. The man cried like a little girl. It was very easy for Guxing, who now has six bulls strength, to handle him.

Xuanyuan felt cocky. He searched them and found 600 warrior coins and 2,400 fighter coins. Servants from the Yue Family were all loaded with money.

“Haha...” Xuanyuan smiled ear to ear. He couldn’t be happier.

The man bitten by Guxing wasn’t in any mortal danger. He passed out from the pain.

Xuanyuan took out his dagger and was about to kill them. But he stopped at the very last moment. He mumbled to himself with a sigh, “Screw it, I don’t kill people. I should forgive them. They’ll survive if they’re lucky.” He grabbed their legs and threw them into the stream. Their bodies followed the current downstream.

Yun Zhenluo, beautiful as a fairy from paintings, silently watched Xuanyuan. Her face was expressionless. She neither approved nor disapproved of his behaviour. At last, she said to herself,

“A child after all. Too soft.”

## Chapter 8 – The School of Yuehua

Xuanyuan put the bags filled with coins into his pockets and turned around. He saw Yun Zhenluo looking at him from afar. He scratched the back of his head and laughed sheepishly. He moved closer to Yun Zhenluo and cracked a smile, “Beautiful master, it’s not very comfortable here in the wild. I made some money. How about in a few days, I go to the City and buy something nice for you?”

Yun Zhenluo shook her head and smiled. “No need. Keep the money. I can only teach you for a month, and six days have already passed.”

After saying this, she left him. Since he started training, Xuanyuan understood more and more about how powerful Yun Zhenluo actually was. Attacking her would result in failure. Her power could not be measured.

However what she said had ruined his good mood. After all, she only promised a month.

“ ... ”

Staring at her back, Xuanyuan was speechless. He thought of taking a break, but now he decided to practice again. He wanted to reach the warrior realm, and then perhaps he could successfully ambush Yun Zhenluo. He could then do whatever he wanted. Maybe, he could even convince her to stay.

Xuanyuan sat on a stone under the bright sun and began reciting. Once again, he opened his pores and let the Qi cleanse them.

Yun Zhenluo saw how hard Xuanyuan was working. She could only sigh, “If the Yun Family knew that I have acquired a genius apprentice, they would train you without rest. But now...I can’t go back home. Otherwise you’ll be dragged into a mess and would not be able to live in this peaceful place. I can only teach you as much as I can.”

She looked at him silently. It took him five hours to recite The Heavenly Dragon with Burning Scales for ten full cycles. There was a loud rumbling noise within his body.

At that moment, Xuanyuan broke through his limit and reached the ten bulls

strength. It took Yun Zhenluo by surprise, “Has he become a warrior now? No, you have to have at least twelve bulls to be a warrior. How come he only has ten?”

She suddenly remembered something and let out a low scream, “Could it be that he has a special physique? He already reached ten bulls but his body is still not fully purified. That should be it. Who knows how powerful he will become when he reaches the peak of fighter’s realm.”

Xuanyuan felt refreshed because more spiritual pores opened each time. But he also knew that the process was not complete. So even though he was happy with the progress, he was not complacent. He took out the dragon scale powder and applied it again. He endured the needle-like stings all over his body and recited the Heavenly Dragon with Burning Scales once more.

Another day went by.

Qian Kuai was standing near the lower course of the stream and listening to the tearful complaints of his injured subordinates. They claimed that Xuanyuan had eight bulls worth of strength. They didn’t even have the chance to fight back. All this annoyed Qian Kuai.

The man with six bulls strength had lost eight teeth from Xuanyuan’s strike. He was roaring angrily. Air whistled through his the missing teeth as he spoke.

“Housekeeper Qian, you have to avenge us. He took away all the money I was going to give to you. He lives near the upper course of this stream. That’s why we couldn’t find him near the mass grave.”

“It’s true. And he has a wolf with him...” This subordinate had many scratch marks across his body. Part of his backside was missing, because of Guxing’s bite.

“That means the kid has at least eight bulls strength. Even if he reaches nine bulls, I won’t be scared off. What can he do without a weapon? Not even a warrior has the guts to take a strike from my whip. He won’t be able to protect himself from me.”

Qian Kuai’s expression was dark and vicious. He wanted to kill Xuanyuan because he defeated his subordinates. These two servants were trained

personally by Qian Kuai. They earned him quite a lot of money each month. Now that the damn kid attacked them, it was an insult to Qian Kuai.

“Go, go to the upper part of the stream. I’ll whip the life out of this damn kid.” The whip in Kuai’s hand was a lower ranked sacred instrument which applied poison. Anyone who took a hit from the whip would be weakened and lose part of his strength. If the whip hit a warrior and slashed through his skin, he would lose half of his strength from the paralysis poison. That was why this sacred instrument was so terrifying.

Qian Kuai squinted. There was a poisonous dart up his sleeve. That was also a lower ranked sacred instrument specializing in assassination. It was exponentially more poisonous than the whip. The amount of poison could even kill an adult magic bear with thirty bulls’ strength. A magical bear with an elixir growing inside wouldn’t die immediately from the dart’s poison, but with the help of the whip attack, it would slowly drain the bear’s strength.

Qian Kuai brought seven servants along with him. He was in possession of nine bulls strength, three of the servant had seven bulls of strength, the rest only had six bulls of strength. They ran upstream. Qian Kuai said to the two injured subordinates,

“Go back and rest. People from the School of Yuehua will arrive in a few days. They will be picking young talents to become disciples. Since Yongfu and Yonglai won’t be able to make it. I could perhaps recommend that you two follow Master Yuejue, when he is chosen to go to the School of Yuehua. It’ll depend on how much money you have to give.”

The two men were excited, they nodded frantically. If they seized this rare opportunity, they could start their lives anew. The School of Yuehua was a great sect among all the martial arts practitioners. Moonwaste City was nothing when compared with the Yuehua School.

While Qian Kuai and his men rushed upstream, Xuanyuan had applied the dragon scale powder generously. It accelerated his practice. He felt that the cleansing process became much faster.

Without him realizing, Xuanyuan’s strength went up a level to reach eleven bulls.

At this very time, Xuanyuan's ears picked up from the sound from the people moving in his direction. Guxing jumped up and started a low growl. They saw eight men approaching quickly. A middle aged man was holding a whip, smiling viciously. Behind him, were a bunch of evil-looking servants. They were getting closer with each second.

Xuanyuan took a step back. He scanned Qian Kuai and remembered that he was the person who whipped and almost killed him. A few days ago, Xuanyuan was like a stray dog on the street and Kuai whipped him like a cat playing with a mouse. But even though the old saying said, "an eye for an eye", Xuanyuan wasn't expecting that the main instigator would come straight to his doorstep to take revenge.

Xuanyuan saw no reason to escape.

"You bastard, we finally found you. You are going to die here today." Qian Kuai held the whip up high and a sharp noise cracked through the air. He aimed at Xuanyuan and lashed out.

## Chapter 9 – Strength of Eighteen Bulls

Xuanyuan was furious at himself.

Upon hearing Qian Kuai, he immediately realized his mistake. He attracted these enemies because he threw those two men into the stream, instead of killing them. So they gathered reinforcements.

He should have killed them, then no one would know and no one would have come after him.

Xuanyuan glanced at them. Qian Kuai who had just whipped him had nine bulls strength, three of them had seven, and four of them had six. It was not difficult for him to fight them, but Guxing was in danger.

He could sense the danger of the whip in Qian Kuai's hand. There was a rotten smell coming from it. He was feeling stiff from the previous hit, so even though Xuanyuan was inexperienced, he knew that the whip was poisoned.

Turning his head, Xuanyuan evaded another attack from the whip. He took a few steps back and looked at the gang coldly.

“Do you really want to die?”

Xuanyuan held back his strength so his enemy couldn't see his true power. They laughed at him like he had just told a joke.

“You are only a kid with eight bulls of strength. How dare you threaten us.” The vicious servants behind Qian Kuai laughed loudly. They might not have done if they faced Xuanyuan one on one, but the situation now was eight against two, with one of them being the wolf. They were not hesitant to provoke Xuanyuan.

“Who knows which of us will be the one dying. We'll all fight him together. I want to skin him alive.” Qian Kuai jumped and lashed his whip towards Xuanyuan. With a clean crackling sound, it headed straight at Xuanyuan. The seven men rushed him together.

Yun Zhenluo wasn't very far away, she was quietly observing.

The whip missed Xuanyuan. His face darkened, turning to Guxing he said,

“Guxing, go find a weak one and strike to kill. Be careful!”

Guxing ran away immediately. Those men were not fast enough to follow him, but they all mocked Xuanyuan when they saw the wolf escape.

“Well, well, well... Even your wolf abandoned you. Prepare to die.” One of the servants laughed. But at this moment, Guxing ran back extremely fast. It struck the cocky servant and its claws pierced through his body as its teeth bit into his neck. This man had seven bulls of strength, but when his neck was bitten, he stopped breathing.

This shook the groups confidence. Xuanyuan didn’t evade or hide, but rushed right towards them and let his full power loose. He grabbed the necks of two men with six bulls of strength, like he was grabbing baby chicks. He took a few hits from them but they could not even cause him any pain. He lifted the two men into the air and then crushed their throats, their bones snapped like twigs.

You could hear the bones breaking amidst their screaming. It was a horrifying sight to behold.

It only took a few minutes and all the subordinates were defeated. Their bones were broken and they couldn’t move. Those who were still alive but couldn’t move were finished off by Guxing’s sharp teeth. Xuanyuan had broken their necks. The only one still standing was Qian Kuai.

Qian Kuai couldn’t believe his eyes. Even if one possessed the strength of nine bulls, when facing attacks from a group of people, he should have been severely injured yet Xuanyuan was so powerful.

“The kid is not hurt from all those attacks? Has his skin been refined by a sacred instrument during his training?”

Qian Kuai was dumbfounded. Xuanyuan was cunning. He turned to Guxing and said slowly,

“Guxing, this is a fight between me and him. Go to the side, and don’t get involved.”

Guxing retreated and Qian Kuai felt a bit more relieved when he heard that. He wore a cold smile and thought to himself,

“The kid has a death wish. If he and the wolf attack together, I might be in trouble. Now he wants to fight alone, it’s a great advantage for me.”

“Good kid. Wouldn’t want your friend getting hurt.” When he finished speaking, Qian Kuai took a step forward and brandished his whip. Xuanyuan rushed towards him and was struck by the whip. A sharp noise exploded and a bruise appeared on Xuanyuan’s arm. Xuanyuan couldn’t care less and ran forward. His fist struck against Qian Kuai’s chest.

There was sound of broken bones, Qian Kuai coughed up blood. His lungs were damaged. Xuanyuan’s arm hurt but was not paralyzed. His heart was singing,

“I was right!”

Not far away, Yun Zhenluo smiled slightly,

“He is an intelligent boy. Dragon scale powder is not any ordinary sacred instrument. A little bit of poison cannot easily pierce through the skin protected by that powder. It cannot paralyze Xuanyuan.”

Qian Kuai’s face turned pale. His eyes filled with killing intent and he shot the poisonous dart at Xuanyuan.

“Go to hell!”

When the dart hit Xuanyuan’s chest, there was a clear sound of an impact, but he was not injured despite the sharp pain coming from his chest. He moved closer to Qian Kuai and gave him a strong punch. The strike was so powerful that it crushed his heart and his chest collapsed. His mouth opened and blood started pouring from it.

When Xuanyuan finally regained his composure, he realized the patch of grass where the dart fell had turned from green to grey. He was a bit scared when seeing this. Qian Kuai’s tactics were evil and Xuanyuan could have been killed. He moved his hand to his chest. It was still slightly painful. He took out the dragon scale he was using as chest plate. He sighed,

“looks like I was saved by the dragon scale given to me by my beautiful master.”

Yun Zhenluo witnessed Qian Kuai’s attack but she was too far away to help. It

was fortunate that he hid the Dragon scale on his chest, otherwise he would already be dead. Yun Zhenluo was relieved.

Xuanyuan had just killed someone. He had a hard time calming down, but he understood that he would be dead if he didn't kill his opponent. The dart on the ground was the best evidence. He slowly realized that when he fought his enemies, only one side would be allowed to live. Kindness to his enemies was cruelty to himself. He was relieved to not have Guxing fighting with him, otherwise Guxing may have died. For Xuanyuan, that would be a worse punishment than death.

He made a promise to himself, he would never again let his enemies live. Then he swiftly picked all the coin bags from the dead bodies. Qian Kuai was the wealthiest, he carried 380 warrior coins on him even when he was tracking an enemy. Xuanyuan collected 600 warrior coins from all the bodies. That put a huge smile on his face.

He combined this with his own savings of 5,400 fighter coins. It was quite a large sum of money.

After he finished, he told Guxing,

“Take care of the bodies. You can eat them if you like, but get them out of sight so their ugly faces won't annoy our beautiful master.”

He turned around and saw Yun Zhenluo was looking at him. He put on his trademark silly smile and scratched the back of his head. He sounded a bit guilty,

“Thank you master, for your gifts. If I didn't have the dragon scale with me, I would've died.”

Yun Zhenluo didn't criticize. She merely shook her head and said,

“You never know what's on people's mind. You're still young. You must be careful and don't show any weakness when facing your enemies.”

Xuanyuan nodded heavily and went silent.

Another five days passed.

During these five days, Xuanyuan practiced day and night without slacking. He finished the bottle of dragon scale powder and finally, all his pores were

cleansed.

The sensation throughout his whole body was incredibly refreshing. Every single pore, every inch of his skin was breathing in Qi.

His face became bright and radiant, his skin smooth like a beautiful jade piece, but it was also very tough. He whipped himself with Qian Kuai's whip, but he was not hurt at all. It only left a small red mark.

Xuanyuan had already reached the peak of the fighter realm. He now possessed the strength of eighteen bulls. It was way beyond Yun Zhenluo's expectation.

Who knew how powerful Xuanyuan would become when he reached the warrior realm. His strength was already comparable to an ordinary warrior. Except for the exceptional warriors, no one could harm him.

Guxing stayed close to Xuanyuan during the past five days. Its strength grew from six bulls to ten. Its torso became more muscular, and fur softer. However when it was provoked, its fur became piercing spikes.

"Now you have to advance past the fighter realm, and aim to become a warrior. In order to do so, you have to sense your material body, and if you can understand the connection between refining your skin and your flesh, only then you will be able to break through your limit. Fighters refine their skin, warriors their flesh. You have to absorb the spiritual Qi into your body and close all of your pores, so you can refine your flesh." Yun Zhenluo's voice moved away from the tree house. He nodded in agreement.

He had killed the housekeeper of Yue Family. He was probably on the kill list of that family now. It would be stupid for him to go into the city. He could only strive to improve his strength and in the end, get his revenge.

His power grew so much that he was starting to consume even more food. He now ate twenty jin of meat with every meal.

Only eleven days passed, but he had grown taller. He used to be about one hundred and sixty centimetres, he was now one hundred and sixty five. He is still shorter than Yun Zhenluo, but he's only fourteen years old. There was still time to grow.

“Beautiful Master, we’re almost out of food. I’m going out to hunt.” Xuanyuan said, then started to ride Guxing, who was now a metre tall when standing all fours, they ran towards the Beastly Forest.

## Chapter 10 – Yuerong

Xuanyuan sat on top of Guxing, feeling its soft fur. It was incredibly comfortable.

There were only two people he trusted wholeheartedly, Guxing and Yun Zhenluo, his beautiful master.

You can say that Yun Zhenluo gave him a chance to live a new life, so he could get revenge on the Yue family. Of course his hard work contributed to his achievements as well.

Xuanyuan knew that even though he achieved eighteen bulls strength, he's still like an ant compared to Yun Zhenluo. She could crush him with her fingers. He was not arrogant to pretend he's invincible just because he was now among the best fighters. He had to enter the warrior realm first.

With Xuanyuan sat on top, Guxing ran towards the forest. Suddenly, there was a fast clapping sound moving in their direction. He stopped Guxing by pulling its fur. They were in the middle of the road, looking at a woman on a red horse.

“Get out of my way.”

Xuanyuan looked at her. She was quite pretty, but not even close to Yun Zhenluo.

But she seemed much more difficult to deal with.

Guxing let out a low growl and scared the red horse. The horse neighed in fright, it almost threw the woman onto the ground. Luckily, she was a good rider and pushed the horse back down. The four horseshoes were now three-inches deep in the ground but the horse was not hurt. She was skilled when riding a horse.

“How dare you. I ordered you to get out of my way. Didn't you hear me?” She was wearing exquisitely embroidered red clothes, contrasting the difference between her and Xuanyuan, who was wearing dirty, ragged linen.

“You lowly man. How dare you delay me. I was going to the disciple selection of the School of Yuehua. You will pay.”

She lashed out with her horsewhip. A power close to eighteen bulls poured

out. Xuanyuan was very surprised that the woman was a warrior. Even a fighter with nine bulls of strength would be killed instantly from her attack.

Xuanyuan didn't expect a pretty girl like her could be so ruthless. He said, "You are not bad looking, but your heart is evil."

He wielded his whip and struck against hers. The two whips tangled together and her horsewhip immediately broke.

She recognized the poison snake whip. Her eyes sprung open with surprise, and she said,

"Where did you get that whip? Are you working for that filthy servant Qian Kuai? I didn't know my Yue Family had someone like you, so young, but having already acquired eighteen bulls of strength. However, you have yet to become a warrior. It seems like you have a special physique. Qian Kuai is lucky to have you, but from now on, you take my orders. Come to the School of Yuehua with me. It'll do you some good."

The woman's speech made Xuanyuan frown. Since the Yue Family was the most powerful in Moonwaste City, she wouldn't have thought that Qian Kuai, the housekeeper of Yue Family was already killed and all his possessions were taken by Xuanyuan, including his money, the whip and the dart.

"Who are you? How did you recognize my whip?"

"I am Yuerong. Haven't you heard of me?" Yuerong said while looking dignified.

She then said slowly, "You must be new. That's probably why you don't know me. I left the Moonwaste City over a year ago, but even Qian Kuai, who gave you the whip, serves me. Now you know who I am. Let's go back to the house. Why are alone out here anyway?"

Xuanyuan finally remembered this woman from his memories. He smiled,

"Now I recognize you! You are Master Yuejue's second elder sister, lady Yuerong. I have just acquired this whip and am not very familiar with the workings of the family. Since I've been struggling with money lately, I wanted to hunt some magical beasts in the forest to earn some more."

Yuerong seemed pleased and nodded,

“Very well. Qian Kuai trained a good servant. Not thinking of how to squeeze money from my family, but depending on yourself. I’m giving this to you. Follow me and you will be rewarded.”

She took out a big bag of coins and threw it to Xuanyuan as if they meant nothing. Xuanyuan took a look inside the bag, there were at least a thousand warrior coins.

“Hahaha, thank you milady.” Xuanyuan hung the flowery fragrant bag on his waist and then whipped toward Yuerong. A bloody lash appeared on her arm. Yuerong was both startled and furious, she screamed,

“What a daring servant to hit your master!”

Xuanyuan moved backwards on Guxing. He made a clicking sound with his tongue and said,

“I’m not a servant of your family. I took the whip when Qian Kuai brought his men to kill me but was instead killed by me. You are really generous with your money. I’ll take the money as compensation for being beaten by your little brother.”

Yuerong didn’t think there were people who would dare to challenge the Yue Family so close to the city.

She was furious but her body was paralyzed from the poison. She cursed,

“Damn, the poison on the whip can paralyze people.”

Yuerong wanted to move her horsewhip and run away, but it was too late. Xuanyuan’s whip wrapped around her and pulled her down from the horse.

Yuerong’s strength was paralyzed from the poison so she now only had the strength of nine bulls. She was no threat to Xuanyuan. She was extremely scared and screamed,

“You lowly servant. What are you doing?”

Xuanyuan grinned,

“Thanks for your kindness, milady. I don’t kill people who haven’t hurt me. But

milady, you keep calling me a lowly servant. What would you do if you were harassed by one?"

The color drained from her face, she said sternly,

"How dare you!"

Hearing this, Xuanyuan put his hand on her thigh and squeezed. He was pleased,

"How nice, nice and firm."

Yuerong started trembling. She didn't doubt any longer that Xuanyuan would rape her.

"Don't touch me. I'll give you whatever you want."

He looked at Yuerong like she was an idiot and said,

"Well, right now I can do whatever I want?"

Xuanyuan was smiling. He stared at her tightly wrapped breasts. He appreciated the shape,

"Nice, nice. The old beggar used to say it is all about the shape of the breasts."

He searched under her clothes and there was a large bag with five hundred master coins. They were worth five hundred thousand fighter coins. Yuerong was on a trip, of course she would bring a large sum of money.

"Wow, milady is rich." His hands were sliding up and down on her body as he searched her. Her cheeks were bright red. She kept screaming and tried to hit Xuanyuan. But Xuanyuan's power was now double hers. Her strikes were not effective.

He discovered that Yuerong was wearing a protective piece of armour under her clothes. He wasn't going to be a creep and strip her, but she did had a sword. When Xuanyuan touched her sword, she screamed,

"Don't touch my Blue-edge sword!"

But Xuanyuan didn't care. He took the sword from its sheath. The sharpness was like a clear wave that stuck him. Xuanyuan nodded,

"Great. This sword looks very nice."

The sword was silver and shiny. It looked much better than his rusty dagger. So he took the sword and its sheath.

Then he put Yuerong on her horse and slapped her bottom while laughing,

“Tell your brother Yuejue to come after me himself if he dares. Stop sending those useless scum. They won’t be able to hurt me.”

He slapped her butt cheeks again. Yuerong was furious. She squeezed the words through her clenched teeth,

“Be careful, I’ll come back! I’ll remember you!”

He laughed again and slapped the horse. The red horse neighed loudly from the pain and rushed towards Moonwaste City.

“Don’t forget me!” Xuanyuan said as he jumped back onto Guxing. They went towards the forest. Xuanyuan was so happy that he started singing,

“I’ve got a mule I never ride, but some days my mood is high...”

## Chapter 11 – The Token of Yuehua

Xuanyuan had calculated the risks from his actions.

Yuerong needed to rush to join the selection for the School of Yuehua, so she wouldn't have time to send people after him. Also, her pride would not let her tell people about the shameful experience.

So Xuanyuan wasn't bothered and went hunting in the forest.

A few days after, the mass grave had accumulated even more corpses. Those people were probably those that died from hunger, disease or murder. They were all unfortunate souls. Xuanyuan couldn't do anything but sigh. He wouldn't be able to help them even if he tried.

In this world, it's difficult to survive. He should take care of himself first.

Powerful beasts seldom lingered around the outer edge of the forest. He was extremely unlucky to have encountered the magical bear which had the elixir. He was lucky enough to be saved by his mysterious dagger.

The dagger was hanging on his left side, the blue-edge sword on his right, and the whip was in his right hand. He jumped off Guxing and slowly walked into the Beastly Forest.

He found many hares and birds, but they were all too small and would not even count as a snack. He did not want to unnecessarily kill a large number of small animals. He decided to only kill large beasts that could satisfy his appetite.

At the same time, he heard a tiger roar.

He was startled, but his increase in power and his experience with fighting gave him a new found courage.

Guxing's eyes sparkled with a dangerous light. They ran straight ahead. Even though the trees were everywhere, they weren't bothered by the obstacles.

Xuanyuan closely followed the sound. After a while, they discovered a black magical tiger. It looked bloodthirsty. It was a lot larger than Guxing and about two feet taller. It was two metres long from head to tail. It was extremely muscular. It had at least a thousand jin of meat.

A magical beast's flesh was so much more tender and nourishing than a wild boar.

Xuanyuan remembered that Guyue was killed by a magical tiger and he suddenly erupted with fury. He leaped up and lashed his whip towards the magical tiger.

The tiger couldn't have foreseen such fierceness from Xuanyuan. It was not fast enough to evade his attack and was struck by the whip. It let out a scream of pain as it was struck by the whip.

This tiger was not particularly strong, but it was not weak either. It had fourteen bulls of strength. Normal people couldn't withstand such power.

But Xuanyuan's whip crushed the bones of its front paw. It couldn't escape any longer.

Xuanyuan took out the sword with his left hand and shoved it into the tiger's back, piercing its heart. It died in an instant.

The unwilling roar that the tiger gave out before its death lingered in Xuanyuan's mind. Who knew how many magical beasts dwelled within this forest?

If three beasts attacked him, he would be long dead.

Xuanyuan put the tiger on his back and jumped back onto Guxing, he laughed,

"Let's go. We have avenged Guyue's death by killing a tiger. It weighs at least one thousand three hundred jin and its meat is so much more tender than a boar. We won't go hungry for a while."

Guxing howled and carried Xuanyuan out of the forest.

On their way back to the treehouse, they saw a man and a woman.

These two people were both on horses. Xuanyuan remembered the breed of the horse, they were called Bloody Moon horses. This breed of horse was very strong and fast, they could run eight hundred miles each day. They were superior when compared with Yuerong's red horse.

They were both wearing long white robes. On the front and the back of the

robes, a full moon was embroidered.

The man was tall and strong, the woman was clean and elegant.

They looked amazed when they saw Xuanyuan and the tiger on his back. The woman called out,

“Please wait, young man.”

Xuanyuan paused, but he observed them cautiously,

“What can I help you with?”

“Where’s your family?” She was smiling. She didn’t seem dangerous.

“I’m an orphan and I hunt for a living. What do you want?” Xuanyuan said,

The man understood the woman’s intentions. He laughed and spoke loudly,

“Don’t worry, young man. We are inner sect disciples of the School of Yuehua. We accompany our senior disciples to solicit talents to join our sect. You are so young, and yet powerful enough to kill a black magical tiger. Would you come with us and take the test? Perhaps you’ll become a disciple. Then we’ll be brothers bound by our martial arts.”

Xuanyuan was moved by his proposal. He thought,

"Yuerong is the daughter of the Yue family, but she also wanted to become a disciple in the School of Yuehua and came back to the city in such a hurry. The school seemed to be a strong sect within the martial arts world. If my master would be willing to stay and teach me, I won't care much about the school. But she's leaving after the month. I should use this opportunity."

Xuanyuan nodded and smiled, but he looked apologetic.

"The School of Yuehua seemed wonderful, but I still have many things to take care of. I won't be able to join as I have things to do over the next twenty days."

The woman smiled,

"That's fine. We will stay in Moonwaste City for more than twenty days. We will send out the news that we are choosing disciples. Many people will come and take the test. You'll have plenty of time to handle your business."

Xuanyuan was overjoyed and said,

"Great!"

But immediately, Xuanyuan frowned and seemed hesitant. The man asked,

"Tell us your problem, young man."

"Well, the Yue Family of Moonwaste city is vicious and cruel. Look at the mass grave! Many corpses there were ruthlessly killed by them. A while ago, one of my brothers was beaten to death. They keep calling me a lowly peasant and said

that no one would care when I am dead. If I go into the city, I'm afraid I would be killed by their servants before I can take the test."

Xuanyuan sounded defeated and angry,

The man snorted coldly when he heard Xuanyuan,

"The Yue clan is getting out of control. We have to report this to second elder sister. Even though our first brother was from the Yue family, they still can't run riots. Young man, take this. This is the Token of Yuehua. People from the Yue clan wouldn't dare to hurt you as long as you have this!"

Xuanyuan was so excited. He gestured politely and said,

"Thank you both for your kindness. My name is Xuanyuan. I wonder what's your names would be?"

"I'm Shi Congyu. This is my younger sister disciple, Liu Piaoxu." Shi Congyu's skin was dark, a sharp contrast to his white teeth. He seemed to be a laid-back man. He gave Xuanyuan a token made from high quality white jade.

"I see. Then we shall meet in the city in twenty days time. I have to go now. Goodbye." Xuanyuan took the token and gestured his farewell. Then he rushed back to the tree house.

Liu Piaoxu looked at Xuanyuan and giggled,

"Xuanyuan, what an interesting name. We have discovered another great

talent.”

“That’s right. The lad has potential. He’s still very young, and has only reached the peak of fighter realm, but he’s capable of killing a black magical tiger that had an elixir... Let’s go. Second sister and first brother are quarrelling. We should hurry and discover more talents for second sister.” Shi Congyu smiled and urged his bloody moon horse to continue forwards. Liu Piaoxu followed closely behind.

## Chapter 12 – From Genius to Useless

Xuanyuan skinned the magic tiger skilfully and laid the pelt on a rock to dry.

The flesh of a magical tiger was much more muscular and nutritious than that of wild boars. Again, he separated the meat into two batches; one would be eaten freshly and another would be made into dried meat.

Even though Xuanyuan was wealthier than before, he couldn't go into the city to shop. All that money was useless because he still had to sustain himself by hunting.

He didn't keep the offer from Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu a secret.

"The School of Yuehua? Very well, you created this opportunity by yourself. It's a smart move. I can only teach you for another twenty days. It's the right thing for you to do." Yun Zhenluo was still wearing her white dress, and she seemed like an immaculate fairy.

Xuanyuan nodded and said,

"I wouldn't care about the School of Yuehua if you could stay and teach me."

Then he walked outside and sat next to the stream. His heart was uneasy.

His beautiful master came into his life in a mysterious way, but she had been nothing but nice to him. If not for her, he would have been long dead, and then there would have been no chance for him to join the School of Yuehua. That's

why he didn't hide anything from her.

He meditated for an hour, and his heart calmed down.

Judging from what he saw, Yuerong had already entered the warrior realm. It meant that if Xuanyuan wanted to become an apprentice of the School, he must become a warrior.

Yun Zhenluo's voice rang in his head, "In order to enter the warrior realm, you have to sense your body. If you can understand the connection between refining your skin and your flesh..."

Xuanyuan understood this immediately. All the pores on his skin were breathing and being cleansed by Qi; the impurity inside him was being forced out.

At this point, Xuanyuan could feel his skin trembling. For just one moment, he felt the flesh under his skin!

An energy suddenly burst from inside his muscles! He had been circulating the spiritual Qi from the universe in large quantities, which was also benefiting his muscles. The Qi rushed into his muscles, and there was a loud roar.

Xuanyuan felt his skin and muscles combining their power!

He knew that he had already entered the warrior realm. His strength was enhanced, jumping directly to twenty-four bulls from eighteen!

Even if a magical bear was standing in front of him, Xuanyuan was still confident he could defeat it.

Yun Zhenluo sensed his breakthrough and was surprised.

“He understands the connection between skin and flesh already. He only just stepped into the warrior realm but immediately acquired twenty-four bulls of strength. That’s twice what normal people have when they become warriors. This apprentice of mine has the physique of a monster.”

“Good.” Yun Zhenluo stepped out of the tree house. She was holding a scaled armor shirt made from soft metal and handed it to Xuanyuan. It was covered in tiny scriptures and had some martial techniques engraved on the side of it.

“This is a sacred instrument for purifying your skin. The martial technique is called ‘The Five Taloned Dragon’. In the following training, you will have to absorb Qi into your muscles in order to enhance the strength of your body. Remember, to achieve the best results, you have to close your pores after absorbing a certain amount of Qi, so the Qi won’t leak back out. This armor is named ‘Fire Dragon Scales’. I give this to you.”

Xuanyuan took the armor. He was incredibly excited and carefully memorized all the writing on the sides. Then he slipped the armor under his top. The soft armor suited him perfectly and was very comfortable. He believed that the protective power of the armor was much stronger than the dragon scale. His life is much better protected with this armor.

“All right. Now I’ll demonstrate ‘The Five Taloned Dragon’.”

Yun Zhenluo's shoulders were showing from her dress. Her dark hair danced while her jade-white fingers gathered into a fist. Suddenly, she looked like a flying dragon. She punched out, and a dragon-shaped wave rushed from her fist. Her dark hair was floating, and in a second, all of her pores closed.

“The strength of a bull is about brute physical strength. The stronger the physical power, the stronger the force. Strength can crush everything, but the power of a bull is only the most basic of strengths. When you reach an even higher realm and gain the strength of a dragon, you'll understand what I mean.”

Yun Zhenluo was like a dragon ascending to heaven – elegant and swift. She looked intimidating. Xuanyuan could only look up in awe.

“Warriors use Qi to refine their flesh and strengthen the body. This is to build up a solid base for the higher realms. You have to keep as much of the Qi inside your body as possible. To do that, you need to close your pores. If your Qi leaks out, your strength also disperses. I trust that you can imagine the consequence of that.” She finished her demonstration as she finished speaking. She breathed out. The air she breathed out hit the ground with such force that it created a small ditch.

“Qi cannot be forced into your body. In order to strengthen yourself, you need the help of a sacred instrument which turns Qi into fighter Qi, so it can be absorbed into the body. It depends on the person to understand the practice method.”

Xuanyuan observed seriously. The atmosphere that radiated from Yun Zhenluo transformed when she was demonstrating the Five Taloned Dragon. Her dark hair and dress were floating on the air as she moved.

Xuanyuan suddenly realized the great gap between himself and Yun Zhenluo. They live in completely different worlds, a world he could not reach.

She left immediately after she finished.

He nodded but didn't say a word. He quickly sat down on the ground and started to absorb Qi into his body, then closed his pores. He started to practice the Five Taloned Dragon. He had already memorized all of the movements.

Xuanyuan was not very familiar with martial techniques, but after a few hours, he became much better. His power was purer, transforming into fighter Qi.

Just when Xuanyuan was going to absorb the Qi into his muscles, his strength drained away suddenly. All that hard work was in vain. He didn't understand what had happened. Not even Yun Zhenluo understood.

The same thing happened continuously over the next seven days.

By practicing the moves, Xuanyuan's strength grew from twenty-four bulls to thirty bulls. However, every time he tried to absorb the Qi into his muscles and turn it to fighter Qi, it would disappear. Xuanyuan was extremely frustrated.

Knowing that Xuanyuan was upset, Yun Zhenluo gave him an encouraging smile,

"Go and eat something. It is perhaps related to your special physique. Don't give up."

Her encouragement was the most effective boost to Xuanyuan's confidence. He learnt from Yun that a fighters' limit was nine bulls of strength normally, but his limit was eighteen, on par with an ordinary warrior. When he entered the warrior realm, his strength was double that of an ordinary warrior who had just broken through. Because of his special physique, it was only normal that he would encounter more difficulties than other people.

"Beautiful Master is right. I'm not an ordinary man. I'm a rare genius. A little setback won't matter. At least I've memorized all the moves. Even if I won't be able to enter the master realm, it's not Master's fault." His smile surprised Yun Zhenluo, but she understood soon after.

"As long as you don't go into the heart of the Beastly Forest or provoke people who are extremely powerful, your strength will be more than enough to keep yourself safe." Yun Zhenluo would be leaving in ten days. She still couldn't fully comprehend Xuanyuan's special physique. She had heard of a special type of physique. People with that physique would be very strong when they were still fighters and warriors, but they would have great difficulty breaking through to certain realms. Perhaps Xuanyuan was someone like that. It would be terrible for his ego – since he considered himself a prodigy – but in the end, not all young talents could blossom into greatness. Yun Zhenluo still wished for him to live a happy and safe life. Maybe he wouldn't become a master, but he could still live a comfortable life.

Xuanyuan's eyes dimmed. He wasn't an idiot, so he understood that Yun Zhenluo wanted him to stay safe, but he was still frustrated. He felt like he was falling from the sky.

"I understand, Master."

## Chapter 13 – It's either you or me

Xuanyuan was Yun Zhenluo's apprentice after all.

Yun Zhenluo had made sure to examine Xuanyuan's body meticulously. He was much stronger than normal people, but other than that, there wasn't anything abnormal. They didn't know what the problem was.

Yun Zhenluo didn't know what to do.

In the following twelve days, Xuanyuan practiced at least twenty hours every day. He worked his absolute hardest. As a result, his strength grew to thirty three bulls. However, his muscles were not purified and refined by the spiritual Qi. Every day, the fighter Qi he spent so much time to refine would disappear.

Yun Zhenluo was worried about him, he worked extremely hard every day, but there wasn't anything she could do. He was too stubborn to accept that he might not grow any further. Yun Zhenluo couldn't stop him from trying.

The only good thing that happened in these few days was that Xuanyuan learnt to let his skin and flesh work together by understanding the martial techniques, so his body worked more harmoniously. A normal warrior, even at their peak, would not be able to defend against a strike from his five taloned dragon.

The great surprise was that Guxing grew from ten bulls of strength to eighteen. The wolf was extremely intelligent. It was able to understand the essence of the five taloned dragon by observing Xuanyuan. When the wolf went hunting, it seemed to move like a heavenly dragon.

“Xuanyuan, the month’s deadline is up. I should be leaving. Don’t be too hard on yourself.” Yun Zhenluo looked at Xuanyuan, whose height only reached her shoulders, and frowned. She seemed hesitant to go. After a while, Yun Zhenluo took out a pearl from the pocket on her waist and said quietly,

“Xuanyuan, this is the Pearl of Heavenly Fighters, it can help with your training by accelerating the transformation of Spiritual Qi to fighter Qi by a hundred fold. Whenever you carry the Pearl on you, a day of training is equal to training for a hundred days. It’s of no use to me. Take it as my last gift to you and take care of yourself.”

Yun Zhenluo wouldn’t let him refuse the gift. She hung the thumb-sized pearl onto a silver chain and put it around his neck.

She turned around to leave. Xuanyuan wanted to say something but no words came out. Yun suddenly turned back. She pressed her fingertip between Xuanyuan’s eyebrows. There was a tinge of golden light flashed on her fingertip when she did that.

“You only have yourself to rely on from now on. I won’t be here to look after you. Stay alert.”

And then she left. Xuanyuan stared at her back until her silhouette disappeared. He knew he wouldn’t be able to convince her to stay.

Even Guxing looked sad, as if it could sense Xuanyuan’s mood.

“There’s only one way to go, the School of Yuehua.” He mumbled to himself as he returned to the treehouse alone. Except that he wasn’t alone, there was an

old man.

“Who are you?” Immediately, he was immediately on guard, ready to use the five taloned dragon.

“Not bad. Good posture. The old man here hasn’t seen anyone as strong as you in the warrior realm. Such a shame, having an abnormal physique, but never being able to enter a higher realm.”

It’s almost like the old man didn’t notice Xuanyuan and was talking to himself.

“He is blessed by Lady Zhenluo to learn the sacred methods of the Yun Family. It would be really nice if the boy is capable of improvements, but unfortunately, he’s just useless.”

When he mentioned the sacred methods of Yun, the old man looked as if he envied Xuanyuan’s good luck, but it was not vicious. He only showed loyalty to the Yun family.

“Even I didn’t get to learn the sacred methods. It’s the family’s secret, but the boy got to learn it. The Book and the martial techniques, they are the basics. Still, I can’t let him take the secret with him to the school of Yuehua.”

Xuanyuan realized that the situation was bad. The old man even knew about the martial techniques and the training method. He must have followed him for the entire month, he just didn’t realize the old man was there.

“What do you want?” Xuanyuan pulled out his sword and pointed it towards the old man, trying to conceal his fear.

“I don’t want much, just your death. You are a lowly existence and can never comprehend how powerful the Yun clan is. You are simply unlucky.” The old man was not threatened by Xuanyuan. He stepped forward, he moved so fast it was impossible to see the old man, the sword was suddenly shattered between the old man’s fingers.

“Lady Zhenluo was good to you. She even gave you the pearl. The pearl is precious even to a great martial arts practitioner like the lady herself, but it belongs to the family. I’ll have to take it back.”

“Aren’t you scared that Master will kill you when she knows about this?” The old man’s strength was incredible, but he refused to be threatened.

“Very smart, but this is not enough to intimidate me. I serve the Yun Family with my life and my death. My body belongs to the Family. So if Lady Zhenluo should kill me, my life is hers to take.” The old man was calm.

Xuanyuan was incredibly helpless. His chance of staying alive was extremely low. The only fortunate thing was that Guxing was not in the tree house and it didn’t know what was happening here. At this point, he could only wish that Guxing would continue to survive.

“Before I die, can I make two requests?” He felt very calm when his life was hanging on a thread.

“Of course! You are Lady Zhenluo’s first apprentice, I’ll fulfil all your requests.” His smile was too kind for a man who was about to kill Xuanyuan in the next moment.

“The wolf, Guxing, grew up with me. After I die, please let it take the bear’s elixir to enhance its strength. So it can protect itself better. Please let Guxing live.” Xuanyuan carefully put the elixir on the rug.

“No wonder Lady Zhenluo liked you. You are good to your friends. An animal is no exception. Very well, I will fulfil your request.” The old man looked disdainfully towards the elixir, but he was patient, because he was sure Xuanyuan wouldn’t be able to get away.

“Second, take one attack from my dagger. If you’re still alive after that, I’ll kill myself. Then Master won’t be able to blame you for my death. You can tell her I couldn’t endure my mediocrity and have decided to end my own life. Then if she comes and check my body, she’ll see that I took my own life.” Xuanyuan said with a heavy heart.

The old man’s eyes revealed both his disdain and admiration for Xuanyuan, “Go on then. I shall not evade or take defensive action from your dagger.”

“If the boy’s physique wasn’t so mediocre, he would have been a good apprentice, but it all was wasted. No matter how hard he works, he will not become any stronger. Even if we can bring him back to the family, his mere existence would be controversial. Since he’s not a family member, and yet he should be respected for being Lady Zhenluo’s apprentice. If he only knew the basic training method and martial techniques, I would have let him walk free. However, Lady Zhenluo taught him the sacred scriptures. I cannot allow any possibility to have our family’s secrets leaked out. If they are leaked to the wrong hands, the consequences would be unthinkable. Lady Zhenluo, please forgive me.”

How would Yun Zhenluo react if she knew her kindness to Xuanyuan had killed him?

Xuanyuan took out his rusty dagger.

The old man felt even more disdain when he saw the dagger. He thought to himself, such a dull and rusty dagger wouldn't even cut him.

Xuanyuan didn't have much faith in the power of the dagger, but this could be his only chance to survive.

"My life depends on your powers now, mysterious dagger!" Xuanyuan's heart screamed, he aimed at the old man's heart. "Only one of us can live after today, it's either you or me!"

## Chapter 14 – The Power of the Mysterious Dagger, Revealed!

There was a green landscape where animals were running free and birds flying through the sky. It was incredible scenery that soothed any weary heart.

Next to a huge lake, tens of thousands of strong cattle were resting and slowly drinking from the clean lake water.

Everything seemed peaceful, and yet it was filled with danger. Many Magical beasts, such as lions, tigers, wolves and bears were staring at the cattle hungrily. They were waiting for one that was vulnerable.

Suddenly, a black shadow appeared in the middle of the clear lake. With a great roaring sound, a gigantic mouth swallowed a few cattle. The cattle were crushed under the gigantic teeth, blood was flowing and bones were cracking.

The cattle all cried out when they saw the scene...

They were startled by the sudden attack. They ran in all directions frantically.

Tens of thousands of cattle stampeding was a scary sight to behold. All the predators surrounding the lake couldn't react and escape in time, they were crushed into a bloody pulp under the feet of the cattle.

Just when the cattle were running, a dragon flew out from the mountain and spread its giant wings. It dived into the crowd of animals and shredded them into pieces. Its fangs pierced into their bones as it ate the cattle one by one. The cattle were panicking, but there was nowhere to go. They were like sheep to the

slaughter, running around aimlessly.

The flying dragon was satisfied and flew away after swallowing almost a hundred cattle, leaving behind the bloody body parts, many frightened cattle, and a land tainted with blood.

Not very far from here, under the same sky, was woman with long white dress and black hair. Her face calm and undisturbed by the bloody scene. She saw something and sighed.

“Lady Zhenluo, please follow your humble servant and come back home. Your older brother is leading an army outside, and he’s worried about you, so he sent us to protect you. Please be considerate of his worries.”

“My safety wasn’t the concern. He was scared that if something should happen to me, we won’t be able to join with the Hai Family through marriage, isn’t that right?” Yun Zhenluo said calmly, but a killing intent flashed through her eyes. She turned to the old man,

“Good, very good. The two of you are my brother’s right hand men. You helped him win many wars. However, you dared to touch my apprentice. Wu Dong has already gone to kill Xuanyuan, isn’t that right? You must think very little of me. If I taught him the secret scriptures of the Yun Family, do you think I wouldn’t leave something to protect him? Do you think I would teach an irrelevant boy the Yun martial arts? How dare you insult me like this.”

Wu Ming, who was very close to Wu Dong, knelt down immediately and begged,

“Lady Zhenluo, please forgive me. However, I’m sure you know already, that the boy will never be able to make a breakthrough to the higher realm. He’ll be a warrior forever. There are many realms, master realm, spiritual realm, wild realm, king realm, grandmaster realm, imperial realm, and emperor realm... He’ll never be able to reach any of them. Please, lady Zhenluo, have mercy for Wu Dong. He served the Yun clan with utmost loyalty. Please don’t kill him.”

Yun Zhenluo was still unmoved. After a pause, she gave a long sigh,

“How could I blame you? You are loyal to the family and put the family’s interest as your top priority, even if that means you’ll have to die. I wouldn’t do that to you. Wu Dong probably hasn’t attacked yet, otherwise my protection would have been activated. If Xuanyuan’s in danger, I would have felt it.”

Just when Yun Zhenluo finished, Wu Ming started shaking. He screamed out in surprise,

“Wu Dong... has already been killed. Impossible, how can that boy kill him? Is lady Zhenluo aware of any danger?”

Yun Zhenluo was surprised too, and she shook her head and said,

“It’s not activated. No matter how he died, he wanted to kill Xuanyuan. He had no one else to blame other than himself for being killed. Wu Ming, stop pursuing Xuanyuan or there will be consequences. You know full well even my brother would be mortally injured if I use the ‘Light of the Heavenly Dragon’ on him.”

She had seen enough deaths like this through her years in the Yun Family. They wouldn’t be able to scare her. She was disappointed about her betrothal to the

Hai Family and chose to leave.

Wu Ming didn't dare to say anything else but "Understood."

\*\*\*\*\*

Wu Dong didn't think Xuanyuan could hurt him, so he put his hand behind his back, waiting for Xuanyuan's attack, then he could kill the boy.

He did not expect this rusty dagger would pierce through his body into his heart like it was cutting soft clay. Wu Dong was a powerful practitioner and his heart was strong. Even though his heart was stabbed, he would not die immediately.

Fighters refined their skin; warriors their flesh, masters their bones, spirituals their veins, wilds their marrows, kings their five organs. Wu Dong didn't practice "The Way of Heavenly Dragon" to refine his five organs, but his power was still within a higher realm. Even if his five organs were dug out from his body by an upper ranked sacred instrument, he still wouldn't die immediately.

However, when Xuanyuan's rusty dagger pierced through his heart, a black light radiated throughout the treehouse. Thousands of black threads reached out from the mysterious dagger and pierced into Wu Dong's body. It was as if Xuanyuan had become the dagger and he felt that the muscles in his body were being purified.

His power increased exponentially from thirty three bulls.

"Thirty eight!"

“Forty three!”

“Forty nine!”

The increase in power only stopped when it reached forty nine bulls. He could feel the fighting Qi lingering in his muscles. It was like he had inexhaustible strength, he felt incredibly strong.

Wu Dong’s body was wilting in an alarming speed. A large part of his power was sucked into the dagger.

Some of the rust fell from the dagger and a black light shone. If you stared at it, you felt as if you would be swallowed by it.

Xuanyuan was dumbfounded and couldn’t react for a while.

“What a powerful dagger.”

Suddenly, Xuanyuan was shaken because Wu Dong’s body imploded into a cloud of gray dust. There was nothing left of him, except for a sword and a ring on the ground.

## Chapter 15 – Greedy old bugger

Just when Xuanyuan let out a long sigh for getting off the hook, a black light – in the shape of a man – formed in front of him.

“He must have been suicidal! I spent a very long time looking for this body, a body formed by all of creation. How dare he try to touch it?” The face of the black shadowed man was blurry and his features unclear, but he possessed a power much stronger than Wu Dong. The shadow turned to Xuanyuan and nodded with satisfaction. “Not bad. Only a body formed by all of creation could be my master. You are good! You not only have the previous body’s determination but also intelligence and cunning. Only someone like you could create a better destiny. I didn’t waste my strength merging my soul with your body.”

Xuanyuan was struck by the shadow’s words. He couldn’t believe that he was the master of this shadow. Many details of his previous life flashed in his mind. Xuanyuan was a very smart boy in his previous life. He always had the best grades, and earned a full scholarship. In a few seconds, he understood everything.

“You were behind this. The fighting Qi I distilled from twenty days of hard work was absorbed by you, and the one who sucked out the old man’s power and gave it to me was you. You enhanced my strength, correct?” said Xuanyuan.

“Not bad, smart boy. The soul-merging spell almost put me into deep slumber. I didn’t fall into slumber because I absorbed the power from the magical bear. Only the body born from all of creation could improve so quickly when training. You would have been dead if you didn’t refine all of that fighting Qi.” The shadow laughed.

“Bullshit! If you didn’t eat all that Qi, I would have entered the master realm already. Then even if my master left, that old man would bring me back to the Yun Family as an apprentice. Then I would meet my master again. You ruined everything!” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes and yelled at the shadow. When he was done, he sat straight on the ground and felt very tired. The shadow couldn’t react.

“The knowledge of the Yun Clan cannot be compared to that of the Devouring Emperor. Techniques are divided into various classes: Yellow, Black, Di, Tian, Xian, Shen and Tao. The knowledge that your beautiful master taught you was merely of Tian class. That’s nothing compared to the great technique of the Devouring Emperor! It’s much greater than the technique of the Yun Clan.” The shadow was so angry at Xuanyuan’s scolding it started laughing.”

“The Devouring Emperor? Sounds cool!” Xuanyuan’s eyes brightened.

The shadow was satisfied to see his excitement. It nodded and said, “Of course it is. Will you learn it or not?”

Xuanyuan stood up energetically.

“Of course I will! Which class does this technique belong to? Is it really more powerful than the Yun Clan’s technique taught by my master?”

The shadow nodded in slight embarrassment.

“So far, it’s yellow class.”

Xuanyuan almost passed out from anger. “The Devouring Emperor...” The shadow made it sound like some divine technique, but it was only in the yellow class! He wanted to strangle the shadow. He yelled,

“Are you kidding me?”

“Show some respect! I’m old enough to be your great-great-great-grandfather. Do you know how many people would die to learn this higher knowledge? Only the body born of all creation could study my technique. Otherwise, why would I bother to look for you?” The shadow was also furious.

“Then don’t. I don’t give a shit.” Xuanyuan stood up to leave, but the shadow stopped him.

“The great knowledge belongs to the yellow class right now, but it could become a tao class technique. But you have to keep devouring in order to achieve that. Think! Why do you think that you are different from normal people when you train? Why are you stronger? Why do you eat more? I dare say, if you don’t learn what I have to teach, you’ll never find your beautiful master again.” The shadow was desperate. It was scared that if the boy did not understand then he would leave. So it told him of the benefits and tried to take advantage of the admiration he held for his master.

Xuanyuan stopped and said confusedly,

“This technique, will it make me strong enough to find my master and defeat her?”

“Haha, of course. Not everyone can learn it, only the body born of all creation.

The body born of all of creation can absorb everything. If someone without this special physique tried to practice this technique, they wouldn't be able to tame the devouring power. They would be incompatible, and the person would implode and die. The body born of all creation is much stronger than an ordinary body, so it is best suited to train by using my technique." When the shadow regained Xuanyuan's attention, it started to explain.

"I don't get it. What's so special about your technique? Explain." Xuanyuan demanded.

The shadow explained patiently,

"The scripture your master taught you aims at distilling your flesh, which is good. However, you can't practice multiple techniques in a lifetime, because most techniques are incompatible with each other. But it's different for the devouring technique. You have the body born from all of creation, and thus can practice even the best of techniques. However, if you don't practice the devouring technique, then you can learn the technique of the Heavenly Dragon but that is all. Your body would be wasted with this technique. The mildest consequence would be that you are stuck in a lower realm, the worst would be death. Do you understand now? Even a pig could understand this."

Certainly, Xuanyuan understood immediately, he tried to give examples,

"What you meant is that even though the devouring technique appears to be a lowly ranked technique, there's no limit to its growth. However the technique of the Heavenly Dragon taught by the Yun clan would only be Tian class. That's the limit for the person's strength development? If that's so, then I can find those with the strongest techniques and devour their power. Then I can use the devouring technique to learn the knowledge of every clan. Then I'll become the strongest man in the universe?"

“Hahaha, nice. You are indeed, quite smart. It was worth it to spend my power merging into your body. Even though you have already trained the Heavenly Dragon with Burning Scales and The Five Taloned Dragon, you can still learn the devouring technique. Fighters refine their skin, warrior refine their flesh, masters refine their bones, spirituals refine their veins. When you have your veins refined, then you can learn the method to release your fighting Qi. The more fighting Qi a technique can contain is determined by its class. You only need to devour other techniques to improve your own after you reach the wild realm.”

The shadow was very happy with Xuanyuan. It is difficult to find someone like him. It took a step forward and put its hand on Xuanyuan’s head and said,

“I am going to teach you the first few parts of the devouring technique, ‘The Way of Absorption’, ‘The Way of Refining Flesh’, ‘The Way of Refining Bones’, and ‘The Way of Refining Veins’. These were all created by the first body born of all creation, the first Devouring Emperor. After I give the knowledge to you, my power will be exhausted. I will absorb part of the fighting Qi you refine, which will slow down your process, but this is the only way. Every time I show myself, it will take up a lot of my power. Unless you can find fighter stones, jades, crystals or something even purer, I won’t be able restore my power quickly.”

The shadow shone with a black light and merged with Xuanyuan’s mind. The four ways of training suddenly appeared within his mind.

After that, the shadow became more transparent, Xuanyuan was worried asked,

“Are you okay?”

“I am fine. I will live. Work hard and go to the School of Yuehua. It’ll be safer for you.” The shadow smiled and summoned the sword lying on the ground. It looked at it and nodded.

“It’s a nice sword and a spiritual instrument. Sacred instruments were also divided into many classes. The lowest is just a sacred instrument, the next class is spiritual instruments. This spiritual instrument is called “Sword of Swimming Dragons”. The Swimming Dragon is a branch clan of the Heavenly Dragon. This sword was made from the bones of a swimming dragon. It lacks some refinement, otherwise it would have become an earthly instrument. You can use this for now.”

Then it looked at the ring and released the binding on the ring. The shadow nodded and said,

“There are quite a lot of things here. You can put all of your money into this ring, it had about a single room worth of space inside. The best thing about the devouring technique was that it was made for your body. So you can train anytime. With that pearl given to you by your master, your training will be more efficient. Your master was really kind to you. The pearl is still a very useful thing even to someone of her rank, yet she gave it to you. It shows how much you mean to her.”

When Xuanyuan heard that, his heart felt warm and fuzzy.

He took the sword. His blue-edged sword was shattered by Wu Dong, but it’s worth it to exchange it for a much better sword, the Sword of Swimming Dragons. He also put the ring on his finger.

Too many things happened today, but Xuanyuan was sure that he now

obtained all the necessities to survive. Given the time, he would grow into someone great.

“What’s your name?” Xuanyuan looked at the thin shadow and asked.

“Me? Call me Greed...Hahaha...” Greed slowly merged back into the dagger. Xuanyuan nodded heavily,

“Good, I’ll call you ‘Greedy Old Bugger’.”

The dagger trembled and the shadow screamed,

“I’m not old....”

## Chapter 16 – The Body of All Creation

Xuanyuan was in a good mood. He didn't expect things would turn out this way.

He was now the owner of the Sword of Swimming Dragons and the Fighter's Ring. Inside the ring, there were some high quality items that he didn't recognize and a lot of money.

There were a thousand wild coins. Do you have any idea how much that is worth?

Martial arts practitioners aimed to enter higher realms. There was the fighter realm, warrior realm, master realm, spiritual realm and wild realm. It also meant that ten fighter coins could be exchanged for one warrior coin, and ten warrior coins for one master coin, ten master coins for one spiritual coin, and ten spiritual coins for one wild coin. Each currency was worth ten times more than the one before. After all, one couldn't bring trillions of fighter coins with them. People in different realms usually dealt with the coins of their correspondent realms to handle their wealth. So it was an extremely large fortune for a warrior like Xuanyuan to own so many wild coins. All those coins he gathered in the past month were nothing in comparison to what used to be Wu Dong's wealth.

Xuanyuan was riding on Guxing and grinned as he thought of the money he possessed. His face could be perfectly described, at this moment, as smug.

He promised Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu that in twenty days, he would go to Moonwaste city and enter the selection process to become an inner disciple of the School of Yuehua.

On his way, Xuanyuan steadily sat on Guxing and started to recite the "The Way of Absorption". Since he was already familiar with "The Book of Heavenly Dragon", combined with his special body and the pearl, he finished practicing "The Way of Absorption" in an hour.

As the name suggested, "The Way of Absorption" allowed its practitioner to absorb spiritual Qi from the universe continuously, even when they were not meditating. So after he successfully practiced the technique, Xuanyuan's body

was refreshed; his skin became even tougher, stronger and softer, soft enough to shame many beautiful women.

Xuanyuan's strength grew from forty five bulls to fifty four bulls as he completed in practicing "The Way of Absorption".

He still hadn't reached his upper limit within the warrior realm. His strength would surprise everyone who saw it for the first time.

Since normally, the upper limit for warriors was thirty six bulls. There weren't many people who could break through this limit. Those who could were all geniuses in the martial arts world.

And Xuanyuan was a genius among all geniuses because he had the Body of All Creation. However, for those who had a special physique like this, they must work extra hard. Xuanyuan on the other hand had help from the Devouring technique which aided his practicing process.

However, the greedy old bugger told Xuanyuan that he shouldn't show off until he reached higher levels. Therefore, when he had almost arrived at Moonwaste City, he closed his pores after he absorbed a large amount of Spiritual Qi, even though Xuanyuan had completed "The Way of Absorption" to its perfection, he was now using the method his beautiful master taught him.

Xuanyuan realized the technique that the greedy old bugger taught him existed purely for the Body of All Creation. His muscles were vibrating. Each vibration indicated that the Qi inside his body was being refined and slowly, but surely, it turned into pure fighting Qi and then was absorbed into his muscles. By constantly practicing the fivetaloned dragon he never needed to purify Qi.

With the Body of All Creation, he was unique. Only he could practice the devouring technique. Xuanyuan was even happier when he thought about this.

Tao realm, the supreme beings.

He arrived at one of the gates to Moonwaste City.

The gate was an eight meter tall building made from gray stones. It was not a particularly big gate. The people guarding it were all men of the Yue Family.

More people were coming in and out of the than usual. It was probably related

to the disciple selection. With Guxing under him, many people cleared a path for Xuanyuan to reach the gate and it alerted the guards.

The boy riding a wolf was on the kill list of the Yue clan.

They didn't expect him to come to the city; did he have a death wish? A dozen guards with nine bulls of strength were rushing forward, looking to kill Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan smiled coldly and didn't let this bother him. He lashed his whip forward. The leader of the guards was struck by the whip and his chest caved in, his bones shattered like glass.

The guard deserved it. Xuanyuan remembered that those guards always demanded "taxes" for poor people to enter the city. People who couldn't afford it would be denied entry. Many people smuggled themselves into the city. All of those caught trespassing into the city were either killed or gravely injured.

The sounds of a whip were followed by pitiful screams from the guards. All of them were lying on the ground in pain as their bones were crushed under the whip.

"Take this as a lesson and stop blackmailing poor people. We won't just take your bullying."

Xuanyuan continued to ride forward on Guxing. The people were cheering. They were used to being exploited and humiliated by the guards. Now they rushed through the gate when the guards were defenseless, in case another team of guards would come and they would miss the opportunity to enter.

Inside the Yue Family.

The news of the guards being defeated arrived. Yuejue, who had an ugly face, was screaming as he threw his cup which smashed against the wall.

"This bastard is out of control. How dare he come into my city and cause trouble!"

There were two men sitting next to Yuejue. The clothes they were wearing indicated that they were inner disciples of the School of Yuehua. They were snuggling with women that Yuejue offered them. And just when they were

having fun, a page boy came in and whispered something to Yuejue that angered him. That interrupted their enjoyment.

“Hey, Young Master Yuejue, don’t get mad.” Said one of the inner disciples, called Shi Zhengfeng. He already reached the upper limit of the warrior realm, only one step away from becoming a master realm practitioner. He was dismayed at Yuejue’s screaming. But the first disciple was from the Yue Family, he had to give his respect to Yuejue.

“We can offer our help if you need it.” Han Mu, the other man said with confidence. He was just as strong as Shi Zhengfeng.

“Respectful brothers, I was rude to have shouted, but this boy was outrageous. He keeps challenging my family. More than a dozen servants were killed by him. Even my sister’s sword was taken by him. She scolded me for this when she was back.” Yuejue was angry from his sister, Yuerong’s scolding. Yuerong realized it was her little brother’s actions and her own carelessness that ruined her dignity and pride. She got extremely angry thinking of Xuanyuan’s unwanted touches.

Shi Zhengfeng said angrily upon hearing Yuejue,

“What? He killed Yue Family’s servants and took Lady Yuerong’s sword, that’s outrageous. Don’t worry. I’ll make this boy beg for death.”

Han Mu glanced at Shi Zhengfeng, and thought to himself coldly, “Shi Zhengfeng wants to please Yuerong and get on her good side. This way he could be related to the first brother by marriage. He will be my rival in the school.”

Han Mu smiled,

“Let’s go and check out this boy who dared to offend the Yue Family. I’ll also make his life a living hell.”

Yuejue’s plan was to associate himself with the inner disciples, so he could get into the school easier. It was great news to him when they were willing to help him.

“Someone lead us to the boy!”

## Chapter 17 – Out of His Depth

Xuanyuan was riding on Guxing and attracting lots of attention on their journey to Moonwaste City. More guards were watching the gates if Xuanyuan tried to sneak out of the city. Many people came from the surrounding villages to join the selection of inner disciples of the School of Yuehua this month, so the gates could not be closed.

But Xuanyuan was fearless because he was powerful. When a person obtained power, his disposition and courage would increase several folds.

A few weeks before, Xuanyuan wouldn't dare to even sneak into the city, but now his power allowed him to walk proudly down the middle of the street. There were many people who worried about his future's safety. He defeated the much hated guards who kept exploiting and bullying the poor people of the city. However, there were also others who couldn't wait to see Xuanyuan taste the consequences of his actions.

Isn't he the kid who was almost killed not very long ago? How come he's gotten so powerful?"

"Who knows. I hope he'll be fine. The Yue family has the city exits guarded, it seems like they want to hunt him down and kill him.

"Ha, the kid's out of his depth getting on the wrong side of the Yue clan. Didn't he know that the first inner disciple of School of Yuehua, Yueteng, was from the Yue family? What a cocky and ignorant kid, we will see him die."

"Young kids don't know their proper place. Once they've obtained a bit of power, they become really cocky. Doesn't he know that Yueteng could kill him with the tip of his finger."

"....."

Xuanyuan listened to the gossiping locals, but didn't let them bother him. He was invited by Shi Congyu and Liu Piao Xu. He knew that, Yueteng, the first brother of inner disciples and the second sister of the school were not in good terms from Shi Congyu and Liu Piao Xu's conversation.

Suddenly, a dozen men blocked his way. Guxing crouched down and growled threateningly. It had eighteen bulls of strength now, its growl was extremely intimidating. Its low growl scared the wits out of the men standing next to Yuejue. They only had nine bulls of strength. They didn't run away only because two inner disciples from the School of Yuehua, Shi Zhengfeng and Han Mu, were by their sides.

Guxing grew up and hunted alongside Xuanyuan. It had numerous experiences in killing, which made it much more intimidating than those vile servants of the Yue clan, who knew nothing but how to bully ordinary citizens.

Even Yuejue was a bit shaken. He just entered the warrior realm, and understood that he might not be able to defeat Xuanyuan's wolf.

"Is it you who killed a dozen servants of the Yue family and took away Lady Yuerong's Sword?" Shi Zhengfeng clenched his fist and slowly approached Xuanyuan.

"It is me, what about it? Who are you?" Xuanyuan jumped off Guxing and looked at Shi coldly.

"I am an inner disciple of the School of Yuehua, Shi Zhengfeng." Pride flashed through Shi Zhengfeng's face. He didn't take Xuanyuan seriously because he was a young boy, "Since you've killed Yue Family's servants and robbed Lady Yuerong. I will take your arms and legs as compensation. I won't kill you, but you will wish that you were dead."

"How dare you! I was invited by Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu. Aren't you worried that your second elder sister would be furious if you attack me?" Xuanyuan took advantage of his indirect invitation from the second sister. His words surprised everyone. Shi Zhengfeng was conflicted, but he couldn't step down now.

Han Mu was smarter. He took a step back and didn't say a word.

A woman in tight red clothes moved towards the conflict. Wasn't that Yuerong? Shi Zhengfeng saw that she was coming and thought,

"If I stop now, Lady Yuerong would think that I'm weak. Then I won't be able to pursue her and marry into the Yue clan. This is my chance to show my loyalty to the first brother. I don't believe that second sister would punish me with the

protection from first brother. If I kill the boy, it would be a humiliation to the second sister, then first brother would promote me! The boy is unlucky, he must die.”

Shi Zhengfeng made up his mind. His face was twisted and he rushed towards Xuanyuan like a wild bull.

“Don’t try to threaten me with the second sister. You killed Yue family’s servants and robbed the Lady. Even if the second sister herself came to protect you, I wouldn’t let you get away. Besides, it’s only Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu.”

Shi Zhengfeng’s thirty six bulls of strength poured out. However, Xuanyuan was more powerful than him, it was like child’s play before him. He turned around and his right hand clenched the base of Shi’s arm with a movement called “Heavenly Dragon Striking”. When Xuanyuan pulled back his hand, a stream of blood exploded from Shi Zhengfeng’s left shoulder. Xuanyuan was holding Shi Zhengfeng’s arm, which he had torn off from the shoulder. Everyone who watched this had a chill run down their spines.

Shi Zhengfeng covered his now armless shoulder and screamed. Xuanyuan threw his arm into the air as if it was junk and then kicked Shi Zhengfeng in the chest, launching his body twenty metres backwards. Shi Zhengfeng landed on the ground as a corpse, who died upon impact.

Yuerong was stunned by the scene,

“How is this possible? It’s only been a few days and he’s grown so powerful. He even killed an inner disciple, a peak warrior. Who is his master?”

Yuejue looked pale and stepped backwards, fearing that Xuanyuan would target him next. Han Mu was sweating nervously. Luckily he was smart enough to not attack.

“The one who is out of his depth is you. Those people who were killed by me were all evil and murdered many innocent people. Killing them was a kindness to their victims. As I’ve already said, I was invited by Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu to join the selection of inner disciples for the School of Yuehua. Whoever blocks my way is disrespecting the second elder sister and for that they deserve to die.”

Xuanyuan smiled cruelly. His speech silenced many people who were talking.

This young boy defeated a peak warrior. He's definitely on par with someone within the master realm. He also got invited by the second elder sister of the School of Yuehua, Yan Ziyun. A bright future was all that awaited him.

However, just this second, an aggressive wind rushed towards Xuanyuan. He estimated the enemy to have at least seventy bulls of strength. He wouldn't be able to defeat him.

The man didn't say anything and punched straight towards Xuanyuan's face. Xuanyuan didn't evade the attack, instead, he shifted his weight and punched upwards. That was the movement of "Heavenly Dragon Revealed" from the "Five Taloned Dragon".

Their two blows collided with each other. It didn't seem to affect the man, but Xuanyuan felt a sharp pain in his hand. He was pushed a few steps back from the shock. He took out the Token of Yuehua immediately.

"I was invited by the second sister of the School of Yuehua. You can't attack me!" He could feel that his strength was greatly reduced by that man's attack. This man was surely a master realm practitioner, who had already refined their bones. Even though Xuanyuan had the Body of All Creation, it was not easy to take that hit.

The man was indeed surprised by Xuanyuan's ability to defend against his attack with strength in the warrior realm. The man, Shi Tiancheng, was a bit shaken. He was the older brother of Shi Zhengfeng, the right hand man of Yueteng. He took care of many important affairs for him. He smiled with contempt when he saw the Token of Yuehua and said,

"I wouldn't dare to touch you if it was the Spirit Token of Yuehua. However, it's just a common token, which I also have. It's not enough to stop me killing you."

Shi Tiancheng aimed to kill. His own brother was killed by Xuanyuan, there's no reason to let him off the hook. If he killed Xuanyuan, second sister would be embarrassed. He would be in the good graces of Yueteng.

Xuanyuan's face darkened. Things were more complicated than he thought.

## Chapter 18 – The Match

“Shi Tiancheng, have you no respect for me?” A shadow sprang out from a dark alley and launched their fist directly at Shi Tiancheng’s head. The fist was at least seventy bulls of strength, comparable to Shi Tiancheng’s attack. Shi Tiancheng didn’t want to take the hit directly, so he turned to the side to evade the fist of Shi Congyu.

Shi Congyu stood next to Xuanyuan to protect him. His eyes were sparkling and he nodded with satisfaction,

“Good, good, Xuanyuan my lad. You are true to your word for coming here. You don’t have to worry even though you killed Zhengfeng. You are worth a hundred of him as long as you join the School of Yuehua.” Shi Congyu’s muscles were bulky, his voice deep and coarse. He laughed loudly, which made Shi Tiancheng’s face darken.

“Shi Congyu, we were both from the Shi Village. How could you betray your own brothers from the same village for a stranger?” Shi Tiancheng said coldly.

“What a joke. This young lad here already told you that he was invited by me and sister Piaoxu, but Zhengfeng still wanted to kill him. Why should I care about him being killed? Xuanyuan, let’s go. The School of Yuehua values strength. Your strength is comparable to us already!” Congyu laughed again. He grabbed Xuanyuan’s arm and moved away. Shi Tiancheng didn’t dare to stop them, since he could not justify a reason to stop them.

“Thank you for your help, brother Congyu.” Xuanyuan grinned and whistled to the wolf, “Guxing, let’s go.”

All the foul-mouthed people from the Yue family and the people on the street were astounded. They couldn't fathom that an ordinary, lowly boy gained the strength that was comparable to people of the master realm like Shi Tiancheng and Shi Congyu.

Shi Tiancheng looked vicious. He didn't even glance at the corpse of Shi Zhengfeng before he turned and walked away. He seemed to be plotting something.

Yuejue's face was pale and as white sheet. He wondered if he would have to worry about his safety, if he entered the same school, now that he was on the wrong side of Xuanyuan.

Yuerong was also surprised. She didn't think things would end this way. Xuanyuan could've killed her the other day. She survived only because he wasn't interested in killing someone who had done him no wrong. Still, Yuerong couldn't bare the humiliation he put her through.

In the centre of Moonwaste City.

On a tall stage made from giant stones, a man and a woman were sitting side by side. They were the first disciple, Yueteng, and the second disciple Yan Ziyun. Liu Piaoxu was standing next to Yan Ziyun. Next to Yueteng was Shi Tiancheng, who was whispering something into Yueteng's ear. Yueteng frowned when he heard the news of what had happened.

Below the stage, it was packed with people.

On the stage were the people who were already selected as inner disciples. Less than ten people were remaining to take the selection test. They had already selected many new disciples over the past month.

The candidates were queuing up to punch the stone and pass the test. The stone was about three metres tall and two metres wide. A man stepped forward and attacked the stone. A light emitted but it quickly faded away.

“Nine bulls of strength. There is a chance you can enter the warrior realm. We will take you as an outer disciple.” Yueteng spoke when he saw the results. The man was ecstatic, he started bowing and saluting Yueteng.

“Thank you, first brother!”

He was soon led to the side by one of Yueteng’s servants.

Another man stepped forward. His strike emitted an even brighter light around the stone, but it faded very quickly as well.

“Eighteen bulls. Not bad. You have great potential and there is a chance to enter the master realm. Go and collect your supply as an inner disciple.” Yueteng said after witnessing the results.

Shi Congyu brought Xuanyuan onto the stage. Xuanyuan looked at the people there. Yueteng and Yan Ziyun sat in the middle with a dozen inner disciples standing next to them. He saw that Liu Piaoxu was smiling at him, and he returned the gesture.

“Xuanyuan, my lad. This is a stone rune that can test a person’s strength and

potential. When it's your turn, just strike with all your strength." Shi Congyu instructed.

Xuanyuan nodded.

It would soon be his turn.

"Look, this is a man handpicked by the first brother. Sounds like a strong character. Rumour has it he's already in the master realm."

"I wonder how strong he is."

Listening to these people gossip, Shi Congyu mumbled to himself,

"If the second sister doesn't get a master realm as a disciple this time, she will be beaten by the first brother again."

Xuanyuan realized the conundrum at once. This is in fact a test for the first brother and second sister on their ability to run the School of Yuehua.

The young man discovered by Yueteng attacked with all his strength. With a loud bang, a strong light that outshone all the other candidates exploded. The light shone from the stone in each direction for about a ten meter radius and didn't dissipate until a long time.

Yueteng was pleased. He nodded and smiled,

“Very well, sixty four bulls. Well done.”

Normally, the peak of the fighters was nine bulls of strength, warriors thirty six and master realm was ninety nine. If one got a breakthrough and entered the spiritual realm, his strength would then be counted in dragons. A dragons strength was the symbol for entering the spiritual realm.

“I wouldn’t be as strong as today if not for brother Yueteng’s instructions.” The man was very handsome and he sounded proud. He stepped down after complimenting Yueteng’s ability as an instructor.

Yan Ziyun was an extremely gorgeous woman. Her beauty and elegance made her a pleasing sight to behold. However, she wasn’t particular pleased at this. She didn’t expect Yueteng to recruit the young master of Brightsun City, Sunzhi.

Shi Congyu put a hand on Xuanyuan’s shoulder and said, “Young lad, go and show them.”

He nodded and stepped forward. Many people gasped in surprise.

“It’s him! He’s the young boy who killed Shi Zhengfeng. He could even take a direct hit from Shi Tiancheng without getting killed!”

“So what, he’s nothing compared to the guy before him. That guy could reach the spiritual realm!”

“True, a lowly peasant cannot be compared to the young master of Brightsun City.”

Xuanyuan ignored those people talking and thought to himself,

“The greedy old bugger said I have to keep a low profile. Don’t show off.”

Xuanyuan took a step forward, and kept his power to the minimum, he used the “Heavenly Dragon Revealed” to strike against the stone. He only used his brute force to hit the stone rune.

A bright light shot through the air, a meter wider than the light before that. The light lingered around for a long while before it faded.

Shi Congyu laughed,

“Great! Xuanyuan, my lad. I didn’t realize you already have fifty four bulls of strength and you’re extremely talented. Who has ever heard of a warrior with fifty four bulls of strength?”

In an instant, A smile appeared on Yan Ziyun’s beautiful face. She glanced at Yueteng, whose face had darkened, and she stood up from her seat.

“This must be the young boy you mentioned, isn’t it, Shi Congyu? You are called Xuanyuan, right? Very talented. I’m sorry, but I will take him as my disciple, first brother.” Yan Ziyun moved towards Xuanyuan and put her hand on his head. She was in a good mood.

Yueteng didn’t show any emotion. He had already learnt about Xuanyuan from Shi Tiancheng and felt like he had everything under control,

“According to the school’s instruction, the strongest disciples we acquire should have a match to determine our status.”

Yan Ziyun said coldly, “First brother, aren’t you bullying Xuanyuan? He only had fifty four bulls of strength, and is still a warrior. How can he fight against Sunzhi?”

Yueteng chuckled, “Then you’ve already admitted that brother Xuanyuan is not as powerful as my disciple. Thanks for your compliment, second sister.”

Yan Ziyun smiled,

“Of course they should have a match, but it can wait until we’re back in the school. It would only be fair if the match is witnessed by all the Elders and the Head of the School.”

“Impossible. The match has to be now or never. Not everything has to be witnessed by the Elders and the Head of school. Second sister, you are a woman after all, you are not determined enough.” Yueteng replied. He insisted upon this because he was afraid he would lose his advantage to Yan Ziyun if they were back on school grounds. Xuanyuan gave him a strange feeling. For his strength to exceed the warrior realm, only someone with a special physique could achieve that.

Yan Ziyun was about to say something, but Xuanyuan was faster.

“Cut the bullshit. I’ll fight him.” He surprised both Yan Ziyun and Shi Congyu. Yueteng’s disciple was already in the master realm, and stronger than him by ten

bulls of strength. A master ranked fighter had refined their bones, which would be a great disadvantage to Xuanyuan during the match.

Yueteng didn't expect Xuanyuan would welcome his own defeat. He laughed, "Great, brother Xuanyuan. I'll grant you your wish. Sunzhi, go and take care of your 'brother'."

Yan Ziyun lost her smile. She knew it was too late to stop it. Why must Xuanyuan be so headstrong? Young people just couldn't control themselves!

## Chapter 19 – Farewell to Moonwaste City

“Brother Xuanyuan, be careful.” Yan Ziyun warned before she sat back in her seat.

Xuanyuan nodded and picked up his whip, which made even Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu dumbstruck. It was only a lower rank instrument. If they could lend him their weapon, they would surely do so, but it was not possible now.

“Heh, that kid only has a low ranking instrument, what an embarrassment. How dare he fight with master Sunzhi. He’ll die for sure. No one can save him.”

“That’s right. Master Sunzhi has a lower rank spiritual instrument called the Sword of Dragon’s Well. It’s made using water from a Dragon’s well and still has the dragon’s scent on it. It’s a truly strong weapon. The kid won’t be able to fight against him.”

The people surrounding the stage all gave out disdainful sniggers. They mocked Xuanyuan’s unrealistic confidence, he thought he could fight against the young master of Brightsun City.

Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu were angry but couldn’t show it. This was just bullying.

Guxing was an intelligent animal. Sensing their anger, it also growled lowly.

Sunzhi had changed into a long, white robe, with a full moon embroidered on both the back and the front. That was the uniform for inner disciples of the School of Yuehua. Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu were wearing the same robes.

“Brother Xuanyuan, I’ll teach you a lesson.” Sunzhi smiled viciously and took out his Sword of Dragon’s Well and attacked Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan also lashed his whip towards Sunzhi, but he didn’t evade the whip, instead, he cut the whip in half using his sword.

Yan Ziyun was even more worried. Xuanyuan was not as strong as Sunzhi, he even had the advantage in weapons. Xuanyuan didn’t have much chance of winning.

“But he has great potential. I can’t let Sunzhi hurt him. When we are back in the school, perhaps he’ll grow into a worthy competitor for Sunzhi with proper training. He should fight Sunzhi then.”

Sunzhi’s sword made a stroke towards Xuanyuan’s chest. Xuanyuan stepped forward and used his “Heavenly Dragon’s Walk” from the “Five Taloned Dragon”. He looked like a lightning fast dragon strolling leisurely across the stage as he evaded the sword.

Seeing this, both Yan Ziyun and Yueteng were surprised. Surely Xuanyuan had some battle experience, otherwise he wouldn’t be able to do that. The techniques he possessed were not ordinary techniques. It was at least as strong as the top ranked techniques from Yuehua’s “Glazed Moon”.

Even though Xuanyuan was not hurt, Sunzhi had very good sword skills. He immediately turned and the tip of his sword almost pierced straight through Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan was not affected by this at all. He quickly stepped forward, with the poisonous dart hiding in his sleeve.

Yan Ziyun was anxious and she approached the duelling pair. However, Yueteng foresaw that. He stopped her and laughed,

“Second sister, do not lose your temper. He’s only an inner disciple. It doesn’t matter if he dies.”

Yan Ziyun exploded in fury, strength emerged from her palm,

“Out of my way!”

Yueteng wouldn’t let go. He took her attack into his palm and neutralized the power. The strength of three dragons was revealed from the impact. It was astonishing.

When their palms touched, a wave gathered around them and pushed everything around them outward. Yan Ziyun’s heart sunk,

“Damn it. Xuanyuan is going to be killed. He has so much potential.”

But everyone suddenly gasped, “How is this possible!”

Yan Ziyun and Yueteng immediately turned around. Sunzhi’s sword tip was against Xuanyuan’s chest, but it hadn’t pierced through him. It only made

Xuanyuan cough a small amount of blood. Xuanyuan smiled cruelly and launched the poisonous dart inside his sleeve towards Sunzhi's unprotected neck.

Yueteng saw his sneaky move and was furious. He rushed towards Xuanyuan and swung his fist aiming to kill him,

“How dare you, using such despicable weapon!”

“First brother, it's only an inner disciple. It doesn't matter if he dies.”

The whole situation turned completely around. Yan Ziyun had a big smile on her face and pushed her palm towards Yueteng's lower stomach. Yueteng was startled and knew that if he took her hit, he would lose all his power and might even die. So he stepped back and moved away from her attack, but he was trembling from anger.

The dart of poisonous snake struck Sunzhi's neck. Black blood was oozing out from every possible orifice of his body. His neck was quickly starting to rot. He was most certainly dead.

Xuanyuan stared at Yueteng and said quietly,

“Even a low ranking weapon has the power to kill.”

No one could utter a word against Xuanyuan's remark. Guxing was very proud and grimaced at those who mocked Xuanyuan before.

Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu were extremely anxious for Xuanyuan. So when Xuanyuan killed Sunzhi, they could finally breathe freely, they screamed with excitement,

“Well said, brother Xuanyuan!”

Other inner disciples were also stunned.

Yueteng's face darkened, he yelled, “How dare you murder your fellow disciple. I'll kill you.”

Yan Ziyun's smile was as beautiful as a spring blossom. She stood in front of Yueteng, “Why couldn't Xuanyuan kill him? Every move Sunzhi made was aimed to kill Xuanyuan. You're being too unreasonable.”

Yueteng was even more dismayed, and said, “Sunzhi was the young master of

Brightsun City. That lowly country boy cannot be comparable to him. Now that Sunzhi is dead, are you going to calm his father's fury?"

Yan Ziyun smiled scornfully, "The City of Brightsun is one of the ten cities under the School of Yuehua. It is definitely much stronger than your family. The Yue clan is scared, but why would I be scared of them. Let the master himself come after me. I'll have to see if he dares to hold me responsible. Just tell him it was me who killed his son and see if he dares to act."

Yueteng couldn't do anything. He gave Yan Ziyun one last angry glare and left, "You haven't seen the end of this. You'll have to report this to the Head."

She showed her white teeth as a large grin appeared on her face. She laughed and said, "You don't need to worry about that, second brother."

When he heard that he was demoted to second place within the School, Yueteng wanted to kill Xuanyuan even more.

Thus the event on the stage came to an end.

Yan Ziyun knew there're many powerful people inside the Yue Family. To get away from possible trouble, she led the hundreds of inner disciples she acquired and left Moonwaste City.

## Chapter 20 – A Bet

Xuanyuan was wearing the uniform of inner disciples as he rode on Guxing next to Yan Ziyun and her bloody moon horse. In the line of over a hundred horses, he was especially eye catching on his wolf.

Every inner disciple would get a hundred warrior coins, the books related to the school's teachings, a low ranking sword, and a bottle containing thirty pills. These pills would last for a month, they were to take one every day to replenish their strength to the maximum for training. Xuanyuan no longer needed to hunt and eat to restore his strength; it was a time consuming task. He also got the clothing meant for inner disciples, a rough introduction to the techniques of the School of Yuehua, "The Book of Moonlight", but Xuanyuan was not interested in that. He was more interested in another book he got, "The Record of the East".

That was exactly what he needed. Xuanyuan knew next to nothing about this world, so this was a precious item to him.

First, there was an explanation for each realm.

Fighters distilled their skins, warriors their flesh, masters their bones, spiritualists their veins, wilds their marrow, kings their five organs and grandmasters their blood. Then there was even the imperial realm, the emperor realm, and the legendary Xian realm.

Grandmasters could already establish their own schools. The Head of the School of Yuehua was a top ranked grandmaster, who also happened to be the author of the "Record of the East".

The East was one of the territories of this world. It was extremely vast.

The School of Yuehua was only one of the smaller schools in the East. There were two major sects in the East, the Fighting Dragons Sect and the Sect of Linglong. The School of Yuehua belonged to the Fighting Dragons Sect.

The Eastern Dynasty ruled the lands of the east, there were many cities and counties under it. However, the two major sects, each controlled their own lands which were at odds with the Eastern Dynasty.

Moonwaste City was under the rule of the Fighting Dragons Sect. The surrounding ten cities around Moonwaste were under the control of the School of Yuehua. In turn, the school would have to pay tribute to the sect by giving them the most talented disciples. The sect would also present them plentiful rewards for that.

Hidden under the vast lands of the East was the underground magical race – Mo. They were cruel; often tormenting and killing the people of the East. Therefore, schools and sects like Yuehua were necessary to keep the common people safe from harm.

There were also the beasts dwelling inside the mountains. Beasts like wolves, tigers and bears were only the low ranking members of the beast race. There were still many terrifying existences in the world. Some of which were so powerful, even the Fighting Dragons Sect wouldn't dare provoke them.

Reading the record, Xuanyuan realized how big the world really was. There were many things he never imagined. He checked the map. Moonwaste City was about three thousand miles from Yuehua City, where the school was located. Even on the bloody-moon horses, it'll still take four days.

Just when he was concentrating on his reading, he heard the energetic voice of Shi Congyu behind him. In his hand, there was a globe like object covered with a white cloth. There was blood still dripping from the bottom of the cloth.

“My lad, Yuejue has answered for his sins.”

Xuanyuan smiled,

“Thank you elder brother Congyu. Just throw away his head. It's not a very pleasant sight to behold.”

When Yan Ziyun led everyone out of the city, Xuanyuan refused to leave. She learnt that there was a great grudge between Xuanyuan and Yuejue and he swore to kill the young master of the city. Since Yan Ziyun now out-ranked Yueteng, it wasn't a problem if she wanted to kill Yuejue and Yan Ziyun was very pleased with Xuanyuan, she was willing to make Xuanyuan's wish a reality.

In less than an hour, she had already gathered over a hundred witnesses to the gruesome crimes Yuejue had committed. Yueteng couldn't defend his little

brother. In the end, Yuejue was decapitated by Shi Congyu before a crowd of people.

Yueteng hated Xuanyuan even more because of this.

"Just thank first sister. It's all her doing. I only chopped off his head." Shi Congyu casually gestured and threw Yuejue's head away.

"No need for that. I became first sister thanks to Xuanyuan." Yan Ziyun smiled and asked tentatively, "Brother Xuanyuan, who taught you how to fight?"

Xuanyuan knew he wouldn't be able to evade this question, so he explained slowly and honestly,

"It was a woman from the Yin clan. She gave me the dragon scale as an armour, so I wasn't pierced by Sunzhi's sword. She taught me two techniques, the skin refining 'Heavenly Dragon Burning Scale' and the flesh refining 'Five-taloned Dragon'. I hope first sister would understand that I can't tell you the secrets of their techniques."

Yan Ziyun was surprised and gasped,

"Yin Family of the Eastern Dynasty, how could that be! Both the techniques are Heaven class. Even though our techniques were given by the Fighting Dragons sect, it is only Earth class. Why didn't you follow her to practice. She knows much more than the School of Yuehua. I've heard that if you studied Yin's secret techniques, there's a chance to reach the Xian realm. It's even comparable to the techniques of the two major sects of the East."

Xuanyuan was getting emotional as she spoke of his beautiful master. After all, he still wanted to find out the whereabouts of Yin Zhenluo. He recomposed himself and sighed,

"She saw that I was gravely injured and saved me. She only taught me for a short period of time before she left. I didn't even know who she was. Does first sister know?"

Yan Ziyun nodded,

"Of course. You are a lucky child, Xuanyuan. The Yin Family of the Eastern Dynasty is the leader of their imperial generals. Their Heavenly Dragon's practice

is famous throughout the lands. The woman who taught you must be a descendant from the direct bloodline of the Yin family, or she wouldn't be able to learn the secret techniques of the Heavenly Dragon. Even our Head of Yuehua would have to show her respect if they should ever meet. However, Xuanyuan, you are now in the territory of Yuehua under the Fighting Dragons Sect. If anyone knows that you have learnt the Yin's technique, you'd be in danger."

Xuanyuan frowned,

"Is there any grudge between the Yin clan and the Fighting Dragons Sect?"

"Both of them took their names from dragons. The Yin family was the clan of the Heavenly Dragons, our sect was the clan of the Fighting Dragons. Even if they aren't enemies, they still hate each other and were enemies in previous generations. There were many grudges between the Eastern Dynasty and the two major sects of the East. You should've gone to the Eastern Dynasty. It would have been the best for you." Yan Ziyun lowered her voice. The thing she was talking about was too important to be uttered aloud.

Xuanyuan smiled bitterly,

"People from the Yin clan wanted to kill me because I've learnt their techniques and was afraid that I would teach other people. Is there really a place for me in the Eastern Dynasty?"

Yan Ziyun's eyes brightened up from those words,

"Are you sure? How did you escape that?"

Xuanyuan took out his Sword of Swimming Dragons. The sword was full of dragon markings. It's a top ranked spiritual instrument!

Ziyun only had an upper ranked spiritual instrument, and Xuanyuan had already got the best ranked spiritual instrument.

"The sword was left over by the man who tried to kill me. He died because a mysterious man came to my rescue." He skimmed through the story about the greedy old bugger.

"Brother Xuanyuan. Do you really trust me this much? Aren't you afraid that I would kill you and take everything from you, including your sword? Then collect

a reward from the sect? If I'm not wrong, you have the techniques of the Heavenly Dragon with you, isn't that right?" She gave let out a sigh. She didn't expect that Xuanyuan was connected to such powerful people, but she had trained her heart and mind strictly and wouldn't feel anxious over such a matter.

"Yes, I'm betting my life on your character. I believe that people with similar qualities are drawn together. I can feel that you are trustworthy judging from Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu. It would have been easy for you to kill Yuejue, but you took the time to collect all the evidence and give him a fair trial, so even the Yue family couldn't argue that you were unjust. Even if you are not a good person, you're still a smart person."

Xuanyuan was wearing a huge smile on his seemingly innocent face as he continued,

"And a smart person doesn't give herself trouble. Since the Yin clan is so powerful, if you try to collect reward from the sect, then the School of Yuehua might be destroyed by the Yin clan. The struggle between great nations guarantees some sacrifices are to be made, especially when you become a burden. The Fighting Dragons Sect wouldn't protect you from the Yin clan. The Sword of Swimming Dragons might bring you trouble, but if you don't kill me, I can help you with many things. Even if the Yin clan came after you, you can say that you didn't know my past. Then they wouldn't give you trouble, but you can't explain to them what happened if you take my sword."

"Very well, brother Xuanyuan. You have far exceeded my expectations and you've won your bet." Yan Ziyun's smile brightened her surroundings.

## Chapter 21 – Elixir of the Ghost wolf

In the following four days, Xuanyuan took a pill every day. These pills were made from medicines that strengthened and revitalized the body, it's even better than eating magic tiger flesh. He fed the pills to Guxing as well.

When they were riding back to the school, Xuanyuan recited the “The Way to Refine Flesh” while sitting steadily on Guxing.

He could sense that his muscles seemed to come alive. Bit by bit, his muscles were like individual living organisms, absorbing Qi from the universe like hungry babies.

The Qi from the universe was not supposed to be absorbed without the technique and method for refining flesh. In order to be absorbed, Qi had to be transformed into fighting Qi. But, Xuanyuan was able to directly absorb Qi from the universe. There were prickling pains when he practiced the technique and recited the teachings, it meant that his muscles were devouring Qi and turning it into fighting Qi directly.

Only Xuanyuan, with the Body of All Creation, could do this. His unusual physique allowed him to absorb and devour everything in the world.

What's more was that the pearl given to him by Yin Zhenluo was an Earth class instrument that aided his practice. His body could devour everything without the fear of exploding from incompatible Qi entering his body, meaning he could quickly practice without rest because he required less concentration and improved tremendously.

Of course, if not for the solid foundation that he acquired from the twenty days of hard work under Yin Zhenluo's instructions and practicing the Five-Taloned Dragons, he would not have improved so drastically.

In only four days, Xuanyuan's strength grew from fifty four to seventy two bulls.

However, he hid his power within so other people couldn't sense his strength. When he reached the peak of his warrior realm, his power was comparable to

the master realm already.

“We have reached Yuehua City.” The sultry voice of Yan Ziyun brought relief from the new disciples. Even Shi Congyu and Liu Piao Xu, who were already within the master realm, were slightly tired, the newly joined disciples were all exhausted. It was good to hear that they had finally arrived.

“Congyu, Piao Xu, take the new brothers and sisters in the school first and report to the Head. I’ll take Xuanyuan to look around the city.”

Many of the new disciples were envious at his good luck. Shi Congyu and Liu Piao Xu smiled and brought the new disciples through the gate.

Xuanyuan was staring at the twenty metre tall gate of the Yuehua City. It was made with a giant dark stone. It was much stronger than the ones of Moonwaste City.

“First sister, is there a big market in the city? I would like to buy something useful.” Xuanyuan said.

“Sure, it depends on how much money you have.” She smiled at his question. The young boy looked like he was about fourteen, but sounded much older.

From the two lives that he lived through, Xuanyuan had seen all sorts of good and bad things. He knew very well that human nature could be shockingly cruel, so he had to protect himself. He wouldn’t hesitate if he could wear armour on every inch of his body.

“I have some money. Please lead the way, first sister.” Xuanyuan smiled.

They entered the city. It was much better managed than Moonwaste City. Vile characters like Yuejue were not allowed to exist here. Everyone was doing their roles. Ordinary people lived quiet lives, while martial arts practitioners lived a life of practice.

Yan Ziyun was admired in the city. She was still riding on her horse and many people greeted her and called her “Lady Fairy”. She did a lot of work for the people to gain their respect. Since not many people could practice martial arts and among them, not many people could practice to a high level, they relied on the protection from the school. The School of Yuehua had always protected the people in the city from harm, so the higher-ups in the school were usually

admired and the people were happy to show their respect.

Yan Ziyun smiled patiently at everyone who showed her their admiration, but the people were slightly afraid of Xuanyuan, who was riding on a wolf. However, the fact that his clothing was the same as an inner disciple calmed their concerns.

” ‘Lady Fairy’, you are very loved by the people.” Xuanyuan giggled.

“It’s nothing, our Head was called the ‘Old Xian God’. The world is vast. There exist many things that these people could never have imagined. It’s not a bad life to live a peaceful life here. It’s our duty to protect the people here.” Xuanyuan was touched by her words. What she said was similar to what Yin Zhenluo had once wished for him. She wished him a quiet and safe life, if he could not practice martial arts.

“Living an ordinary life – rising and resting with the sun. Working to make ends meet. People would only spare a few tears when you die. Never able to escape the wheel of suffering. What a pity it is to live a life like that...” Xuanyuan repeated what Yin Zhenluo once said quietly.

Ziyun glanced at him in surprise, then smiled,

“Let’s go. You are anything but ordinary.”

“Of course I’m not ordinary!” He was startled and thought to himself, “An ordinary man is no match for my beautiful master. I’ll find her one day and when I do, I’ll be stronger than her and successfully ambush her!”

They arrived at a market place following Yan Ziyun’s lead.

It’s wasn’t as innocent as the rest of the city. All sorts of people gathered here. Some were wearing shiny silk, some were in ragged clothes. Both men and women were hustling and bustling around, but they all recognized Yan Ziyun.

The market place was lent by the School of Yuehua. In return, the school received a small amount of tax, which was agreed upon. All the merchants here respected Yan Ziyun, she would soon become a true disciple of the school.

“Bear elixir. Top quality. Only three thousand fighter coins. Come get it before it’s too late!”

“The best instrument you’ll see on the market, the Blue-edged Sword. Ten

thousand fighter coins, cannot get lower than that!”

“First class medicine, only a thousand fighter coins each!”

Xuanyuan stopped when he heard the name of the sword. It was a mass produced product. Not so different from the one he robbed from Yuerong.

He already got a bottle of medicine from Yin Zhenluo, which was clearly superior to the ordinary stuff they sold here. He also had other pills and elixirs from Wu Dong. Even though the greedy old bugger told him that it was too strong for him, and urged him to buy some medicine, he still thought that the ones they were selling here were not good enough.

He heard someone calling him while he was riding on Guxing.

“The boy on wolf, come here. I’ve got an elixir of a Ghost Wolf. Give it to your wolf. It’ll enhance its strength. It might get even stronger if you’re lucky.”

Xuanyuan turned back and saw a foul-looking old man. He set up his stall on the ground and smiled at him, looking more like a fraudster than a merchant. Xuanyuan glanced at Yan Ziyun and she smiled,

“Don’t worry. No one would scam you when I’m here.”

He nodded and moved towards the old man’s stall. The man took out an elixir from a dirty bottle. The bottle was oozing out a strange and wild sensation.

“It’s indeed the elixir of a Ghost Wolf.” Yan Ziyun had a great knowledge of things related to martial arts and practice, she confirmed it’s the real product. Xuanyuan memorized what the Record of the East said about the Ghost Wolf.

The Ghost Wolf is one of the most fearsome of the wolf beasts. They could kill most master realm fighters with ease.

“It’s an elixir of a Ghost Wolf with ninety nine bulls of strength. How about that? You gonna get it, kid?”

Guxing was staring hungrily at the elixir. It was drooling over it. Apparently the elixir would be helpful to Guxing.

“How much?”

“Thirty thousand fighter coins.” The old man smiled.

Xuanyuan could have smacked the man. He yelled,

“That’s crazy. I’m not buying. Let’s go.”

Guxing also realized that the man was scamming them. So even though it really wanted the elixir, it still followed Xuanyuan.

Guxing turned around to leave. The man called out hurriedly,

“Let’s see what we can do with the price. It’s fortunate to meet you today, to honour the luck, I’ll only take twenty thousand then.”

Xuanyuan knew he could get a better deal and replied,

“A bear elixir of sixty bulls only costs three thousand. Yours has thirty nine more bulls in strength, I can only offer you eight thousand.”

The old man wasn’t happy. There weren’t many people who owned a wolf so he couldn’t easily sell the elixir. But the kid was being too stingy. The market price for the elixir was at least twelve thousand.

“Twelve thousand, I won’t do any less than that.”

“Ten thousand, I won’t do any more than that.”

“Sure.”

“That’s a deal.”

Xuanyuan took out nine thousand, three hundred and thirty six coins. He could finally use all the money he took from the servants of the Yue family.

“Sorry, old man, I’ve only got this much. Will you take it?” Xuanyuan frowned and pretend that this was all the money he’d got.

The old man was furious,

“No, ten is the lowest. Have you got anything that can compensate?”

Xuanyuan was, not exactly a bad person, but he had lived two lives without money and knew the value of it. He took out the bear elixir he’d got and said,

“This is the only thing I’ve got.”

The old man brightened up,

“Very well, that’s a nice elixir. Give it to me and pick a few things from the stall,

then we're settled."

Xuanyuan rolled his eyes. The old man knew how to make a deal. All his things were more or less broken or dirty. They all looked like antiques, but none of them were worth anything to a martial artist.

But a voice rang inside his head,

"Get that bracelet..."

Who else could that be, if not the greedy old bugger?

## Chapter 22 – Shopping Spree

Xuanyuan didn't understand at first, but when he looked at the bracelet on the old man's stall, he immediately realized it was similar to his own rusty dagger.

“Hahaha, you surely are deeply connected to the devouring emperor. The bracelet of devouring comes to you without any effort. This is one of the keys to the Palace of Devouring left by the emperor. There are incredible treasures hidden in the palace. If you can open it, you'll definitely be able to resume the glory that used to conquer the whole world of martial arts!”

Xuanyuan's heart started to beat faster when he heard that. Clearly the greedy old bugger wouldn't play with him about such a topic, so he pretended to look over a few things nonchalantly. In the end, he rolled his eyes and said in contempt,

“Old man, do you think that your broken things are worth a few thousand coins?”

The old man flushed red from Xuanyuan's comment, “Take it all then. These are all I've got. I haven't got any money. Just take all of it and we're settled.”

Xuanyuan snorted,

“Trying to scam me? These things are all crap. That's not fair.”

Seeing how insistent Xuanyuan was, the old man knew that he had gotten a really good deal, but he really didn't have anything more to give the boy.

Xuanyuan shrugged and sighed when he saw the old man was embarrassed that he really had nothing else,

“Whatever. It's hard for you, old man. Let's say the extra money is my gift to you.”

Xuanyuan shoved everything from the stall into his ring like shoving garbage into a dump.

Then he threw the elixir directly into Guxing's mouth and he swallowed it immediately.

The old man was petrified by what Xuanyuan did and screamed,

“Do you want to kill your wolf, boy?”

Immediately, there was a wild and frightening power radiating outwards from Guxing. The skin hidden by its fur was torn apart little by little. The wolf’s eyes grew murderous and bloodthirsty as it started to increase in size. All this scared Xuanyuan. The old man jumped up and pushed a light into the wolf to stop the power of the elixir from expanding any further.

Yan Ziyun was relieved, “Brother Xuanyuan, you were being ridiculous. Elixirs are the distilled essence of a beast’s life. They are extremely powerful, they also contain the spirits of the beast. It’s fortunate that it’s an elixir of a Spiritual Wolf and not a particularly strong willed animal. Otherwise, Guxing might have died. Or worse, its soul would have been devoured by the beast and lost its mind. The Spiritual Wolf would be reborn through Guxing’s body.”

Xuanyuan’s blood went cold when he heard Yan Ziyun. He practiced the devouring technique so he could absorb anything. He didn’t think Guxing would be different, and his mistake almost killed Guxing.

The old man was quite a strong practitioner. With the lights from his palm, he controlled the power of the elixir inside Guxing and turned it into something that the wolf could absorb. Its strength surged.

Twenty eight bulls...

Thirty eight bulls...

Forty eight bulls...

.....

Sixty six bulls!

It stopped when Guxing’s strength reached sixty six bulls. There was still two fifths of the elixir’s power left and it was sealed inside Guxing. Its eyes, which were bloodthirsty, had now cleared up. It grew in size as well. It was now almost five feet tall and eight feet long. It was more like a small horse.

“What a bad deal, a bad deal.” The old man was gasping for air and very sweaty. It cost him a great deal of strength to control the elixir.

“Thanks a lot, old man.” Xuanyuan nodded to him sheepishly. He felt a bit sorry for him, since he only gave him a few thousand coins in exchange for the key to the palace of devouring. That bracelet was invaluable, not purchasable even with a few thousand emperor coins and the old man even used his strength to save Guxing.

“Nevermind, nevermind.....” The old man packed the carpet stall and grabbed the bear elixir and left.

Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun grimaced at each other and laughed. Xuanyuan said, “First sister, is there any place that has better medicines for sale?”

Yan Ziyun was impressed by Xuanyuan’s bargaining skills. She smiled and said, “Of course, but you’ve probably spent all your money. So if there’s anything you want, I can buy it for you.”

Xuanyuan shrugged and jumped back onto Guxing. Guxing’s fur was even softer and shinier, its torso more muscular. All these changes delighted him. He wouldn’t give up Guxing no matter what. He straightened up his body and took out a few bags filled with warrior coins from his ring and smiled wickedly,

“I still have around two thousand eight hundred warrior coins, I have only spent fighter coins, that should cover the things I want. Please lead the way, first sister.”

Yan Ziyun rolled her eyes. She didn’t expect that her new brother disciple would actually be so rich.

“Let’s go then, the commerce centre should have some good stuff. Medicines, stones, instruments and techniques... they have everything.”

Yan Ziyun led the way and they soon arrived at a shop a hundred square metres in size.

In front of the shop, there were two boys greeting the guests. They both had nine bulls strength, at the peak of the fighter realm.

“Miss Yan, welcome!”

The boys bowed when they saw Yan Ziyun, and she nodded to them. Xuanyuan jumped off Guxing. Together, they followed Yan Ziyun into the Yuehua

Commerce Centre.

It was packed with people. All kinds of medicines, elixirs, stones, instruments, weapons and some unrecognizable things were displayed. Xuanyuan didn't know where to look.

People frowned at the sight of the giant wolf going inside, but they kept their dismay to themselves when they saw Yan Ziyun who was standing next to Xuanyuan.

A man with a big smile rushed over to them. He said enthusiastically, "Miss Yan, what brings you here today? Just tell us what you need, and we will prepare it for you."

She smiled at him, "I'm not the one who is looking to buy. It's him, my brother disciple."

The man was unsure of how to react, since he recognized most of the inner disciples of the school, but not Xuanyuan.

"I need some of the best healing medicines, the top antidotes for poisons, and the best strength replenishing pills." Xuanyuan said straightforwardly.

The man nodded and tried to determine his buying power, and said patiently,

"The best medicine we have is called 'liquid heart', and we have three of those; the best kind of antidote, 'Hundred Herbs', we also have three of those. Each of those costs five hundred warrior coins. As for strength replenishing, young master, third grade pills would be enough for you. They cost two hundred warrior coins each."

Yan Ziyun's eyebrows came together disapprovingly, the man knew what she meant immediately. He said with great enthusiasm,

"Since you are the brother disciple of Miss Yan, I will give you a discount, all of those only costs thirty thousand fighter coins, or three thousand warrior coins."

Xuanyuan nodded and smiled,

"How about two thousand, eight hundred and thirty warrior coins?"

The man wanted to tear up from Xuanyuan's bargaining. Yan Ziyun's lips tightened and she was trying hard not to laugh.

“Well, sure. You were brought here by Miss Yan herself, after all.” He gave the order to one of the boys to prepare the merchandise, and kept his enthusiastic tone, “Can I help with anything else, young master?”

“Do you have any spiritual class instruments for protection, like armour, boots, helmets or pendants? How much do they cost?” Xuanyuan kept on asking.

The man was slightly stunned, he thought the boy had run out of money when he said such an exact figure, but he still gave his explanations, “Well, for spiritual class instruments, the lower rank would be about five thousand master coins, middle rank would cost ten thousand, upper rank thirty thousand, and top rank would be a hundred thousand.”

Xuanyuan didn’t realize the price would differ so much for each rank. He could only afford to buy one top ranked spiritual class instrument. However, if he settled with the upper rank, combined with the strings Yan Ziyun could pull for him, he would be able to purchase a whole set.

From reading “The Record of the East”, he learnt that when martial arts families would cast a whole set of instruments, the set usually included a weapon, armour, helmet, boots and ornaments such as jade pendants. The pearl given by Yun Zhenluo was also a protective ornament.

Once you started using Earth class instruments and beyond, they required the bearer’s power to sustain them, but the lower class instruments, such as the ordinary sacred instruments and spiritual class, they could give adequate protection just by wearing it. Especially jade pendants, they are powerful in unexpected encounters.

“Then prepare a full set of upper class spiritual instruments for me, including armour, helmet, boots and a pendant. Remember to get the best quality ones suited for protection. Don’t try to trick me with any second grade products.”

His order astonished everyone, including Yan Ziyun. She only had one upper rank spiritual weapon and four middle rank instruments. Even Yan Ziyun, only got two thousand master coins each month from the school. It took her a long time to save her monthly earnings and she even had to hunt during her free time, she still only managed to buy a single upper rank spiritual instrument. Did Xuanyuan really have that much money? Many people also showed their

surprise. He was only a young boy, how could he afford that?

An upper rank spiritual instrument set would cost a hundred and twenty thousand master coins, which could be exchanged to a million and two hundred thousand warrior coins, and twelve million fighter coins! That's a colossal amount of money!

## Chapter 23 – Deadly Finger Tips

Cloud Helmet, an upper rank spiritual instrument. It was decorated with carvings of cloud patterns. The protective spell on it gave fairly good protection to the wearer.

Armour of Floating Clouds, upper rank spiritual instrument, was made from Cloud Iron. Blacksmiths refined and strengthened the iron to a thin sheet. The armour could deflect the strength from incoming attacks and gave wonderful protection to the body.

Boots of Flying Clouds were made from the silk from cloud silkworms. Instruments makers used special tricks to carve on cloud spells of protections. The wearer could climb a rocky mountain as if the terrain was flatland and have no restrictions. It's of great help when hunting enemies or running away from attacks.

The Jade Pendant of Clear Heart was taken from the Holy Mountain of Clear Hearts. Whoever carried it would not be confused by illusions or spells. They would be able to keep a clear mind at all times.

The Commerce Centre had even better medicines and instruments, but for Xuanyuan, these were suitable for now. He was very happy with the purchase. His goal was to protect himself. After all, you only have one life and you might not get another chance. What's the use of money if don't get the protection you need to continue living?

Xuanyuan wore all the instruments. His long hair was tied up by the helmet, the armour was under his white moon apprentice robes, the boots fit him nicely and the pendant was safely hanging from his neck, giving off a relaxing sensation. His composure was changed for the better. He looked like a gentle, elegant and harmless young boy.

"They are very nice. How much does this set cost?" Xuanyuan smiled.

The man from the Commerce Centre glanced at Yan Ziyun shortly, and turned to Xuanyuan with a smile, "Since you are Miss Yan's apprentice brother, they will cost you a hundred thousand master coins." Xuanyuan nodded with satisfaction.

The name of the School gave him many advantages in the city. Other merchants in the centre were jealous of the man serving Xuanyuan, he just sealed an incredibly huge deal.

There were many occupations in this world, alchemists, instrument smiths, coin minters and gemologists.

All of these occupations were essential. Alchemists refined pills, medicines and elixirs; instrument smiths could create instruments and weapons; coin minters made sure that different classes of coins were readily available in the world. Lower class coins weren't powerful, but the higher class ones possessed powers that could be used to make instruments; gemologists used their powers to search for stones, jades, crystals and even purer gems that contained special powers. They all have different and equally powerful skills. Alchemists and smiths could control a fire that ordinary people could not withstand. They mainly relied on various commerce centres to help with the selling of their products. Since the costs to make medicines and instruments were relatively low, they usually wouldn't mind lowering the price in order to sell. Although they would receive less money after the commerce centre took their commissions.

In many cities where a large practitioner school or sect was located, there was usually a commerce centre for production occupations to sell their products and practitioners to purchase. It was a perfect cycle.

Xuanyuan gave the man a small money bag from his ring and turned to Yan Ziyun, "First sister, let's go!"

She was a bit hesitant, but turned around nonetheless, but the man was exasperated, "Young master, I'm afraid this small bag is not enough to pay for everything."

Xuanyuan lifted his eyebrows, "Please look carefully."

The man opened the bag and was almost pushed to the ground by the wild force rushing out from the bag. He was astonished, "They're wild coins!"

Everyone was also astounded by this. None of them would have thought that this young boy would have wild coins. Yuehua City was a relatively small, secondary city, the main currency was fighter or warrior coins. Even master coins were rarely seen, only disciples from the school would use master coins for

trading. When exchanging for higher valued currencies, for convenience's sake, people would usually add ten percent to the value to earn a profit from the higher currencies. So, if you wanted a spiritual coin, you would require eleven master coins, then for a wild coin you would require eleven spiritual coins. So Xuanyuan's one thousand wild coins were worth one hundred and twenty one thousand master coins.

Yan Ziyun rolled her eyes and said,

"You should have told me you have wild fighter coins, so we could exchange them in the School for master coins. Then you could have over a hundred and twenty thousand master coins."

The man was afraid to offend Yan Ziyun so he said quickly, "We would of course give the young master back his twenty thousand master coins of change."

Xuanyuan shook his head and said calmly, "No need for that. Give the money to my first sister. First sister, see if you need any new instruments and use the change to buy it."

Yan Ziyun was overjoyed and kissed Xuanyuan on his cheek, "What a good little brother!"

Xuanyuan was dumbfounded by the kiss and his cold and composed stature crumbled instantly.

An hour later, a cheerful Yan Ziyun walked out of the commerce centre and headed to the School of Yuehua. Xuanyuan knew that Yan Ziyun combined the twenty thousand master coins with her own savings and bought an upper rank spiritual instrument, which made her a much stronger practitioner. Yan Ziyun getting stronger meant that she would be able to protect Xuanyuan better.

Yan Ziyun was a righteous woman, so she was not as rich as Yueteng, who robbed money from ordinary people. When he arrived at the school, he would have to stay away from Yueteng.

The money he just spent was not all of his wealth. In Wu Dong's ring, there were many precious instruments and medicines. However, Xuanyuan didn't want to waste anything precious, so he chose to purchase some of his own.

They arrived at the School of Yuehua.

The school was located on a green hillside, facing a clear lake. The scenery was stunning. A round and shiny moon statue was hanging from the gate of Yuehua.

You have to climb a thousand steps in order to reach the gate. Horses were forbidden inside the school, but they couldn't scold the two people who were riding a wolf. Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun were chatting and giggling, which was mind-boggling to the disciples who saw them. They greeted Yan Ziyun politely, but full of speculation in their mind. How could the first sister be embracing that boy?

Apparently Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu had already spread the news about Xuanyuan's fight with Sunzhi.

Guxing's sixty six bulls of strength allowed it to climb the long staircase as easy as walking on flat ground. Very soon, they reached the main square in the School of Yuehua.

All the inner disciples along the way were astonished. Their first sister was acting so sweetly to a young boy! Yan Ziyun didn't care about other people. She jumped off Guxing and said with a big smile, "This is the Yuehua Square, brother Xuanyuan. Welcome."

Suddenly, a cold voice said, "First sister, I wouldn't have imagined you would get so close with a young boy. That's not like you at all."

Yan Ziyun was in a good mood. She turned around and looked at the man, "Sunwen, that's hardly your concern."

"No, it's not. My concern is that boy. He killed my brother, Sunzhi. I will take his life for it." Sunwen had a rather feminine face, looked very similar to Sunzhi. He came up to Xuanyuan and raised a fist. A shadow of dragon flew out from behind him. He'd already entered the spiritual realm, with a dragon of strength.

Yan Ziyun was just about to defend Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan yelled, "Let me!"

Xuanyuan didn't evade to the side. He punched towards Sunwen's eye and white waves rushed out from his fist, the full of the strength of seventy two bulls. However, Sunwen wasn't bothered with Xuanyuan's attack. He believed

that he could crush Xuanyuan's chest and destroy his heart with a single blow.

It was a fight between two powerful forces.

Just when their fists had almost reached their targets, Xuanyuan displayed his "Killing Talons of Heavenly Dragon" and released his clenched fist. Instead, he concentrated his strength to the tip of his fingers. His fingertip attack wouldn't be as strong as a punch, but the fist strike was actually a trick. Yan Ziyun couldn't have foreseen that Xuanyuan would use such a trick and suddenly open his hand and strike early with his fingers.

Sunwen punched towards Xuanyuan's chest, while Xuanyuan used his fingers to strike towards Sunwen's right eye, Xuanyuan's strike landed first. Sunwen's eye exploded from the force of the strike. Blood splashed everywhere, followed by his pitiful scream. Immediately, his punch became a lot less powerful than before.

Xuanyuan felt the pressure on his chest, his blood and flesh was on fire underneath the pressure, but despite being pushed a few steps back, he wasn't hurt. He was wearing the armour he bought. It dissipated part of the force. It was indeed a good deal.

"I'm going to kill you!" Sunwen was furious after losing that exchange. He ranked third among all the inner disciples and was already in the spiritual realm. He had learnt how to release his fighting Qi within his attack. He would never have thought that a warrior could beat him.

There were many inner disciples in the square, and they were all amazed by Xuanyuan's attack. There were huge differences between each realm, so Xuanyuan must have defeated Sunwen with his skill instead of strength. It was going to be a great fight.

But a voice was raised, sounding cold,

"Enough."

Sunwen froze and didn't dare to move.

## Chapter 24 – Fung Lie

There were three types of disciples within the School of Yuehua: Outer, inner and true disciples. Yueteng and Yan Ziyun were the best amongst the inner disciples. They would have to enter the wild realm in order to become true disciples of the school.

However, strength was not the only thing that made a great leader. It was more about charisma and the ability to lead.

The School of Yuehua wasn't particularly big. There were a hundred thousand outer disciples, three thousand inner disciples and only ninety nine true disciples. The true disciples all trained behind closed doors. Not all of them were popular or had the necessary people skills. They were very useful in defending the city, but they would have ruined the School of Yuehua should they govern it.

Yueteng was no doubt very good at ruling. So was Yan Ziyun and she was also very charismatic. The school sent the best inner disciples to oversee the disciple selection, in order to test their ability to find disciples who could benefit the school.

The voice who stopped Sunwen belonged to Yuezen, also a member of the Yue family. He ranked eighty eighth amongst the true disciples. He was overwhelmingly more powerful than Xuanyuan.

"Sister Yan, you have great eyes for talents. This boy is ruthless, has great potential. Not bad." Yuezen was emotionless. He turned and stared at Sunwen,

"Is that how you welcome your brother disciple? Get down and go face the wall of regrets everyday for three months. Within this time, you shall not collect your allowance."

Sunwen didn't dare to talk back. He stared at Xuanyuan evilly and walked away quickly.

True disciples were the ones who learnt many true techniques of the School of Yuehua. They had absolute power over all outer and inner disciples. They could punish or even kill them, if they saw fit.

“It is Xuanyuan, isn’t it? Even though Sunwen attacked you first, it doesn’t mean you should ruin his eye. Rules are rules. Kneel.” Yuezen ordered coldly. His overwhelming power almost forced Xuanyuan down to his knees.

His head was spinning, his bones shaking. Guxing was not as powerful as him and was scared by the terrifying force. Blood spilled from his mouth. Xuanyuan’s heart sank, but he only glared at Yuezen and uttered slowly,

“I won’t kneel. I was not in the wrong.”

Whispers spread among the on looking disciples.

“That boy has got some balls disobeying Brother Yuezen’s order. Almost suicidal.”

“Young kids these days are out of bounds. The kid’s going to learn a lesson, maybe he’ll get killed.”

“Not even the first sister could save his ass if Brother Yuezen decided to kill him.”

“He thought he could be so cocky because the first sister likes him?”

Yuezen put even more force onto Xuanyuan, “How dare you. Do you want to get killed?”

Yan Ziyun yelled desperately, “What are you doing, Brother Yuezen, he’s only a boy, only a warrior. It’s not appropriate for you to do that, is it?”

Yuezen smirked, “I could punish or kill any outer or inner disciple. This is my right as a true disciple of the School of Yuehua. Sister, are you going to disobey the rules?”

She couldn’t think of anything more to say. She only stood beside Xuanyuan and released her strength to remove part of the force from him.

Xuanyuan’s bones were shaking and were being slowly crushed. It was extremely painful. He would definitely be crushed into pieces if he didn’t own the Body of All Creation. Is this the strength possessed by the wild realm?

“If Sunwen didn’t come after me, I wouldn’t have taken his eye. It’s his fault! I shouldn’t be punished. It’s because you have grudges against me, isn’t it? You are from the Yue family. That’s why you want me to yield.”

Xuanyuan's eyes grew blood red. His skin and flesh were all trembling. Without him realizing, he subconsciously recited "The Way to Refine Bones" and in an instance, his skin, flesh and bones connected.

Eighty one bulls!

Ninety bulls!

Ninety nine bulls!

He broke through to the master realm. Ordinary people only have forty eight bulls of strength when they entered the master realm and yet Xuanyuan already reach the peak strength of a master fighter. It was never heard of before.

All the surrounding disciples gasped.

"How could this possible? A master realm with ninety nine bulls of strength? This kid would be very powerful after practicing here."

"Yes, I've never heard of such thing before. Could it be possible that he has a special physique?"

"No wonder he dared to challenge Brother Yuezen..."

Yuezen was surprised at Xuanyuan's breakthrough, which was induced by his own force. He already possessed ninety nine bulls of strength. He could not cover up his surprise, and it only provoked him even more to destroy Xuanyuan before he could develop.

"Very well, a breakthrough under my pressure. I shall see how long you can stand." Yuezen concentrated his strength onto a single point towards Xuanyuan. Yan Ziyun felt the pressure remove from her and realized the situation had grown worse. She was not fast enough to defend him.

His bones were shaking under the pressure. If not for the breakthrough, his bones would have been crushed already.

"Brother Yuezen, Xuanyuan is a very rare genius. Are you going to destroy the hope for the school? We haven't had anyone summoned to the Fighting Dragons Sect for a long time!" Yan Ziyun screamed with fury. If she was strong enough, she would've fought back.

"He's vile and blood thirsty. If I let him off the hook this time, he will destroy

the school. Kneel!” Yuezen was jealous of Xuanyuan’s natural talent. He would’ve been summoned to the sect if only he had Xuanyuan’s talent.

Xuanyuan couldn’t stand any longer and kneeled with his left knee. Spider web-like cracks appeared on the ground.

His body was being pushed to the limit. He was almost crushed. Xuanyuan swore to himself, if he had the chance to practice, when he got stronger, he would kill Yuezen.

Suddenly, an even more powerful strength came from above to fend off Yuezen’s force. It was from an extraordinarily good-looking man on a dragon scale horse. The horse was covered with a dragon scale pattern, its colour was blood red. It was very powerful, also with a difficult temper, incredibly harder to tame. The man on it was much more powerful than Yuezen.

“I am the true disciple of the Fighting Dragon’s Sect, Fung Lie. The Fighting Dragons Sect demands all true disciples and inner disciple to gather up and ambush the evil nest of Mo near Brightsun. Brightsun City has been experiencing severe damage and casualties from them.”

Yuezen lowered his head in front of Fung Lie. Yan Ziyun bowed slightly. Only Xuanyuan straightened up and looked Fung Lie directly in the eyes, he was fearless.

A moonbeam shone out from the gate, a stern looking old man came out, he smiled at Fung Lie,

“The School of Yuehua shall obey.”

Fung Lie nodded at Xuanyuan and said in appreciation,

“Head Huatian, you’ve obtained another talent for the school. He’s only in the master realm and yet he shows such power and will. This is what practitioners of martial arts should be. You, if you can help with the ambush of the Mo race, then I will take you as an outer disciple of the Fighting Dragons Sect.”

He directed that last part to Xuanyuan. Then Fung Lie looked at Yuezen and said,

“Bullying those who are weaker, because of jealousy. You deserve to be

punished. If there's a next time, I will kill you."

Fung Lie waved his hand and a gust of wind hit Yuezen's face, distorting it. It swelled immediately and blood splashed all over his face. Yuezen didn't dare to say anything.

Xuanyuan's anger disappeared at once. He gestured "thank you" to Fung Lie, "I appreciate your help, Brother Fung Lie!"

"Well," Fung Lie smiled and turned to the old man, the grandmaster fighter and the Head of the School of Yuehua, "Head Huatian, I hope you don't mind that I disciplined your unruly disciple?"

"Of course I don't mind. Please rest assured, Master Fung Lie. The disciples of Yuehua will be able to leave soon." Head Huatian was still smiling. If he had been annoyed with Fung Lie, he didn't show it.

"Very well, I will head out first." He then turned around and left on his horse.

Yan Ziyun was feeling great. She smiled and thought, "Smart boy, calling Fung Lie Brother already. It seems like he really belongs with the Fighting Dragons Sect."

## Chapter 25 – The Young Master of the Yin Family

Fung Lie was extremely powerful. His status to the School of Yuehua was like Yan Ziyun to Moonwaste City. They both belong to a much bigger and much more powerful organization.

The Head of the School, Huatian, was in the same realm as Fung Lie, but he might not have much advantage when fighting him. It's because they practiced vastly different techniques, because Fung Lie was supported by The Fighting Dragons Sects.

The entire Land of the East was nine hundred million square miles, and the sect was in control of one third of that land. It was unimaginably powerful.

The hit Yuezen took from Fung Lie had completely crushed his pride. He was humiliated in front of many inner disciples of the school. He glanced at Xuanyuan with hatred and walked away.

But he knew that the ambush against the nest of Mo near the Brightsun City was a great opportunity. If he contributed enough to wipe out the Mo race there, he might be able to practice in the sect. There were many benefits from the sect once you entered it.

The Fighting Dragons Sect had Judgment Stands set up in all the subordinate schools. On the stand, people were punished for their crimes and mistakes, but rewarded for their achievements and contributions.

Everyone in the School of Yuehua was summoned. All of the true disciples flew out from their chambers. They had all entered the wild realm, and the top three among them had entered the king realm.

Yueteng led the inner disciples he recruited back to the school.

He glared at Yan Ziyun and Xuanyuan, but didn't say anything. It was clear to everyone that something serious had happened.

The Head and the elders responsible for teaching, guarding medicine and smithing weapons appeared.

Huatian was floating in midair and said slowly, "The nest of this Mo clan is

located a few hundred miles away from Brightsun City, one of the subordinate cities of the school. The nest is like an ants nest, there're many underground tunnels. There will be many fighters from the Mo race dwelling inside, so it will be a difficult battle. Every true disciple shall lead ten inner disciples in the master realm. Do you understand?"

"We shall obey!" ninety nine true disciples and a thousand of the qualified inner disciples replied in unison.

Huatian glanced at Xuanyuan knowingly. He felt strange from the point when Yan Ziyun and Xuanyuan entered the City of Yuehua.

He couldn't understand where Xuanyuan came from. So he didn't stop Yuezen when Xuanyuan was bullied. He wanted to examine the boy's worth. If Xuanyuan was indeed a genius in martial arts, he would surely bring many advantages. Now that he was noticed by Fung Lie from the sect, then he would surely be beneficial to the school, since he's such a good friend to Yan Ziyun.

Every true disciple had a small group of inner disciples that they were closer to. Yan Ziyun's family brother, Yan Liang, a handsome and strong man, was a true disciple that she could rely on.

Yan Liang was among the top ten of the true disciples. He was at the peak of the wild realm, soon he will enter the king realm.

Yan Liang was happy when he approached Xuanyuan, "I was just about to step in and stop Yuezen, but grandmaster Fung Lie was faster. Not bad, boy. My sister, Ziyun, picked the right person."

He patted on Xuanyuan's shoulder, then flew down the mountain and landed on a black horse. The horse was even bigger than the bloody-moon horse, with muscles like steel.

Yan Ziyun and Xuanyuan rode Guxing on the way down. He had luckily bought all the instruments to protect from such threats. They were useful immediately.

"First sister, does the sect usually give out precious prizes?" Xuanyuan asked.

"Of course. The sect once gave us a Heaven class technique, but not everyone got the chance to practice it." Yan Ziyun smiled, "But you are now being observed by the sect. There's a good chance you might be selected. When you

become stronger, don't you forget your first sister."

Xuanyuan grinned, "I won't, but the nest we are heading to is so close to the Brightsun City. I'm afraid they would make trouble for me. It might be dangerous."

"Don't worry, you are handpicked by grandmaster Fung Lie. They wouldn't do anything to you unless they wanted to be destroyed by him."

"They might use devious tricks if they can't kill me in broad daylight. I have to be careful no matter what." Xuanyuan said.

Yan Liang was riding on his dark-moon horse, taking the lead. Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun were on Guxing following closely behind. Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu and another six people, all Yan Ziyun's trusted disciples, were behind them.

"Five days until we reach Brightsun City. I'll practice along the way." Xuanyuan learnt from the "Record of the East" on how long it took to travel between different places, where he should go and where he should avoid. The nest near Brightsun City was a place to avoid.

But he was still excited about it. He was slowly learning about this world. The stronger he became, the closer he would be to Yin Zhenluo. He had his mind set on the Yin Family of the Eastern Dynasty.

He remembered Yin Zhenluo's face. She was as beautiful as a fairy, her dark hair like a silky waterfall. Her long white dress draping down, accentuating her quiet beauty. He couldn't forget about her, the woman that he grew to be very fond of.

On their way to the nest, there was a hill nearby. Wu Ming set up a giant mirror on the ground. The mirror was reflecting not the reality, but somewhere distant. A shadow appeared in the mirror. The owner of the shadow was a proud man.

"Young master." Wu Ming knelt down and bowed to the shadow. He reported everything that happened in this month.

If Yin Zhenluo didn't stop for a month to train Xuanyuan, Wu Ming and Wu Dong would never have been able to catch up with her. They only found out where she was seven days after she met the boy. Now that she left the boy, they

had lost track of her again. He could only tell this to the young master of the Yin family.

“My little sister got herself a useless disciple? She has thought this through. The pearl was my present to her, and she gave it to the boy. Without the pearl, you’ll never be able to find her, but the boy will not be so lucky. He must have some dark secret to be able to kill Wu Dong. Wu Ming, gather a team of assassins and kill the boy. Destroy the spell she put on him, and kill him. The School of Yuehua belongs to the Fighting Dragons Sect. He might give them our family’s secret techniques to promote himself within the sect. I’ve seen too many people like this.” The shadow sounded slightly surprised at first, then calmed down very quickly.

“Young master, I’m afraid this might not be a viable plan. Lady Zhenluo was fond of the boy and the boy doesn’t seem to be the type that would betray her. If the Lady knew about this, it might be more difficult to get her to come home.” Wu Ming said,

“Lady Zhenluo is an expert in strategy. She must have her own reason to give the pearl to Xuanyuan. If Young Master was in a fight with the Lady, you might not be able to defeat her. What’s more important is that Lady Zhenluo trained and led the assassin team of our family.”

The shadow was silent for a while, then said slowly,

“Never mind then. If the boy does not have the slightest amount of talent, kill him. Like Wu Dong, I will treat your family with kindness when you die. You know what you have to do.”

Wu Ming knew this day would come.

“However, if he has a hidden talent. Then protect the boy and bring him back. Don’t worry about what my sister will do. Just do what you see fit.”

Wu Ming bowed to the mirror and said with dignity,

“I shall obey.”

## Chapter 26 – Danger everywhere

Spiritual realm fighters could release their fighter Qi inside their attacks, but they could not fly. So even someone as strong as Yan Ziyun still had to ride on horseback.

Wild realm fighters refined their marrow and immersed them with Qi. When they were totally immersed, flying was possible, but it would drain their fighter Qi very quickly.

King realm fighters refined their five organs. When they finished the process, they were able to draw Qi from the five elements and use it to fly for a long time.

Above the School of Yuehua, three king realm fighters among the true disciples were hovering in the sky and observing the disciples following Yan Liang.

The three of them looked down with coldness. They dedicated their lives to martial arts and achieved the king realm, and yet they were rejected by the sect. The boy, Xuanyuan, had already gained the recognition of Fung Lie. It annoyed them.

“True Brothers, you must get revenge for me and kill the boy. You have been practicing for so many years and you were still rejected by the sect. The boy must have some heaven-class technique or trick, otherwise, how come he has ninety nine bulls of strength when he just entered the master realm? If we could kill him and take away his technique, then we could become even stronger and get recognized by the sect.” Yuezen’s face was not swollen anymore, but the wound couldn’t be healed so easily.

The first true disciple of the School of Yuehua was called Tung Xuan. He was wearing a long blue robe with jade belt. He possessed a full set of top ranking spiritual instruments. He was extremely wealthy.

“Brother Yuezen, he was handpicked by Fung Lie. It won’t be easy to kill him.” Said Tung Xuan who was tempted. Xuanyuan already had ninety nine bulls of strength after his breakthrough, he was obviously talented, otherwise Fung Lie wouldn’t have picked him as an outer disciple of the sect.

“That’s right. Do you have a better plan, brother Yuezen. The boy is protected by Yan Liang. It won’t be easy to kill him and take away his techniques.” Said the second true disciple, Lu Feng. His voice was loud and full of strength, he distilled his lungs to the purist.

“We might not get away from Fung Lie if we do this. Then we will be killed even if we take the technique. Fung Lie has a reputation for having a bad temper.” The third true disciple, Ting Han said. His smile was devious.

Yuezen narrowed his eyes and said,

“That won’t be a problem. The Mo are powerful and numerous in the nest. What if the boy dies inside it? Yan Liang has never been very respectful of you. He might also die inside the nest. Even if our plan becomes known, then we’ll just present the boy’s technique to the sect. I don’t think we’ll be punished then. If Fung Lie isn’t happy with this, we will swear allegiance to him. The four of us must be worth more than Xuanyuan and Fung Lie will see the benefit of bringing us into the sect.”

The top three disciples of the school brightened up from Yuezen’s plan. They all nodded and said, “Very well, brother Yuezen. We shall act according to the plan.”

They descended to the ground and each led a team towards the nest of Mo.

Yuezen was leading Yueteng’s team.

Yueteng was not amused by what he heard. Xuanyuan was only a lowly commoner and yet he was handpicked by Fung Lie to join the Fighting Dragons Sect. Jealousy was burning inside him. It’s like that young boy stole all the good blessings for himself. Yueteng would have enjoyed skinning the brat to ease his hatred.

“Brother Yuezen, what did the first true disciples say?”

“The boy will die. On our way to the nest, you should contact the master of the Brightsun City. We could use some more help. I don’t think the boy will survive with this many people wanting him dead!”

They both suppressed the urge to smile.

Xuanyuan rode steadily on Guxing, he crossed his legs to recite his technique. A large amount of spiritual Qi rushed into his body, through his skin and flesh and into his bones.

From skin to bones, from outside to inside, this technique aimed at refining every single part of the body. When every part of the body was refined, practitioners could break through the realm of humanity and enter the realm of Xian!

However, each realm was a great obstacle to conquer. The rift between the spiritual realm and the wild realm was one of the largest bottlenecks. Many people could only stay within the spiritual realm their whole life.

Xuanyuan didn't have to concentrate on the reciting of "The Way to Refine Bones", it recited itself inside his body. It's the special ability of the Body of All Creations.

Xuanyuan could sense that his bones seemed alive, breathing in the spiritual Qi. His bones were getting stronger every day. If part of the Qi was not being absorbed by the greedy old bugger, he could've grown even faster.

On the first day, Xuanyuan's strength grew from ninety nine to a hundred and ten, then a hundred and twenty.....

On the fifth day, when they arrived at the edge of the nest, his strength surged to a hundred and fifty bulls.

His bones were as strong as steel. He wouldn't even need to use any tricks to defeat Sunwen if they fought again.

Guxing was also absorbing the spiritual Qi gathered around Xuanyuan. Its strength enhanced by one bull every day. By the time they arrived, the wolf had seventy one bulls of strength. As its body was now becoming stronger, it could soon absorb the remaining Ghost Wolf elixir.

Xuanyuan's power was growing each and every second. Both Yan Liang and Yan Ziyun were aware of this and were astonished that Xuanyuan could even practice when they were on the road.

But they wouldn't spill Xuanyuan's secret. They respected him and kept his secret quiet.

Xuanyuan opened his eyes and saw the green scenery and smelt the damp air.

“We’ve already passed Brightsun City, haven’t we? They didn’t send people over to kill me?” Yan Ziyun laughed at Xuanyuan’s first words after he opened his eyes.

“We came here to crush the Mo race, inside this nest. We were doing Brightsun City a favour, since many people from their city were killed by the Mo. If they dared to attack us, they’d be in serious trouble. Even though they do have powerful characters that could kill my brother, they wouldn’t act rashly.” Yan Ziyun knew that Xuanyuan was scared of encountering a powerful enemy, so she explained patiently.

“I see. They want to kill us when we are inside the nest. Then it’ll be much easier, and they can hold the Mo responsible for our deaths. They are pretty smart.” Xuanyuan smiled.

“You think too much.” Yan Ziyun also smiled, but she was thinking the same thing as Xuanyuan, “Brother Xuanyuan is right. Our enemies will probably try to kill us when we reach the underground. We are in great danger. Even though Xuanyuan, Congyu and Piaoxu are not afraid, but the other inner disciples are not so fearless. They might be shaken by Xuanyuan’s words. I’ll have to teach him the art of keeping his mouth closed.”

Yan Liang glanced at Xuanyuan with an appreciative look. Young people were seldom and as smart as Xuanyuan. After a while, he gave out his order, “The swarm forest is in front of us. There are many poisonous beasts and bugs inside. Stay alert. Let’s go.”

## Chapter 27 – Deep into the Forest

Before Yan Liang's team was even within one thousand square miles of Swarm Forest, many other teams had already arrived from different directions.

The nest was protected by Swarm Forest, making it difficult for ordinary people to enter, but their outrageous behaviour provoked the Fighting Dragons Sect. So the sect ordered the School of Yuehua, nearest to the nest, to ambush them.

The dark-moon horse of Yan Liang was formidable. Many weaker beasts were scared off by it. The strength of the horse was about the same as Guxing. The wolf had more advantages in actual fights, but it would surely have its ribs broken if receiving a kick from the horse.

The feeling of a Ghost Wolf inside Guxing also warned the beasts dwelling in the forest to stay away. They knew very well about the rule of the jungle – the strong will devour the weak.

However, there were still many bugs and flies hovering above, such as Ice Blue Mosquitoes and Heart-Numbing Bugs. They looked tiny and insignificant, but it would be a hassle even for a warrior if they received a bite. If fighters were bitten, their blood would freeze and their heart would slowly numb until it stopped beating. The tiny spikes on the bugs and mosquitoes were like sharp mini swords. Xuanyuan didn't doubt that those small bugs could inflict great pain.

Yan Liang shielded his team from the bugs by releasing his fighter Qi, killing the bugs instantly. "Everyone stay alert. We are only at the edge of the forest. Those bugs were not strong, but as we approach the heart of the forest, stronger beasts will show up, as well as poisonous plants and insects. If you are hurt, then you would definitely die unless you have antidotes." Yan Liang's words put everyone on edge.

Yan Ziyun was impressed by Xuanyuan for being prepared, buying the medicine and antidotes beforehand. He's obviously used to living in the wild. His instinct is much stronger than those who were spoiled from living in the School of Yuehua,

like herself.

Without saying a word, Xuanyuan smiled and took out his Sword of Swimming Dragons. His sword was made from the bones of a swimming dragon, combining with many precious materials. The aura of a dragon radiated out from the sword, threatening every beast that approached.

Yan Liang was stunned by Xuanyuan's weapon. He was about to breakthrough to the king realm, and yet he still only had a top ranking spiritual instrument, the same rank as Xuanyuan's sword. This boy must have come from an extraordinary background. He was more and more mysterious in the eyes of Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu. Yan Ziyun was the only one who knew the truth.

Swarm Forest was much more difficult to traverse than a normal forest. They had to fend off poisonous insects and watch where they stepped. They encountered poisonous pythons hiding in the water a few times. Luckily, no one was hurt because of Yan Liang and Yan Ziyun's protection.

After a day of travelling, they were six hundred miles into the forest. Yan Liang found a place to rest and gestured to his team and said, "We'll rest here for the night and set off the tomorrow morning."

They all jumped off their horses and stayed inside a small circle of five metres. There were many beasts with strength comparable to warriors and even some as fierce as master realm fighters inside the forest. The beasts avoided them because of Yan Liang's strength. There might even be beasts with strength comparable to the spiritual realm as they moved deeper. They were rare, but not impossible to find.

Yan Liang also had great survival skills. He sprinkled some powder that repelled the insects, and used some dried faeces of spiritual realm beasts. He quickly rushed towards Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu when they tried to start a fire,

"You want to get us killed? Fire attracts powerful beasts. I put the dried faeces around us to trick them. All that would be useless if you set up a fire." He lectured Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu.

"You are right, Elder Brother Yan" They both realized their mistake.

"All right, you should all get some rest. It'll be a gruesome fight, but the

rewards are also great. Your hard work will be rewarded by the sect. Our first true brother, Tung Xuan made a great contribution once. Even though he was not chosen by the sect, he was rewarded with an elixir with king realm strength, which helped him breakthrough to the king realm.” Yan Liang encouraged.

“Really? An elixir of king realm strength!”

“I heard that story before. We should definitely do our best tomorrow.”

“That’s right. Gather your strength and we’ll destroy the Mo race’s nest tomorrow.”

All the inner disciple rallied their morale. A king realm elixir is a grade six elixir and it can aid with the breakthrough into the king realm. Those elixirs were extremely difficult to acquire. It’d cost you at least fifty thousand wild coins, a wealth that many people wouldn’t be able to earn even with a lifetime of hard work.

Xuanyuan knew that Yan Liang was only trying to raise morale, but he was also very excited. He spent almost all his money, the only money bag left was the feminine looking one he took from Yuerong. It contained five hundred master coins.

Xuanyuan learnt from his chat with Yan Ziyun that alchemists and instrument smiths were very popular in this world and you should avoid getting on their wrong side at all costs. Since practitioners could not produce medicine and instruments themselves these professions had a vast web of connections. The techniques required to make medicine and instruments were difficult to learn, and most of these techniques were not compatible with the martial arts techniques which most people studied.

There were some exceptions, of course – the makers who understood the secrets of using their inner fire. Fire existed among the universe and would feed on the essence of everything. In turn, it could destroy almost everything. There were seventy two kinds of inner fire in the world. This was the basic knowledge of the world.

Medicine and instruments could be refined to a higher quality when using inner fire techniques. Different kinds of inner fire would give the medicine and instruments various special qualities.

The products made by inner fire were all very expensive, which is why people yearned for money to buy the better medicines and instruments. This would allow them to better protect their lives and enhance their strengths.

“The Way to Refine Bones” was recited automatically by Xuanyuan’s Body of All Creation. When he stepped into the master realm, he discovered the technique of “The Heavenly Dragon” appearing in his mind and showing the way to refine bones. He didn’t know how the technique appeared in his mind, but he still recited it. He realized his bones now contained the scent of dragons.

“The Heavenly Dragon” was also a fighting art with incredible power. When he stood up, his body was like giant vortex, sucking in the bottomless spiritual Qi of the world. He started practicing the technique in his mind called “Bone Crushing Fist”. The technique taught him the weakest points of the human body. It also taught him how to reconstruct bones after breaking them.

The greedy old bugger looked down on the Yin family techniques, but Xuanyuan regarded everything Yin Zhenluo gave him as a precious gift. His fist rushed through the air and a dragon formed from the white waves of energy it emitted.

Yan Liang and Yan Ziyun were astonished. Each of his fists contained the power of at least a hundred and sixty bulls of strength, and they got more powerful with each punch. Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu wouldn’t have thought the boy they encountered a month ago with only eighteen bulls of strength, would now be this strong. They were amazed by him, not knowing that he was suffering from intense pain.

In order to use “Bone Crushing Fist”, the practitioners had to crush their own bones first.

He was refining all of the spiritual Qi in his body and it formed into the shape of tiny dragons which were released with his punches. His punches crushed his own bones again and again, while the Qi formed again and again.

Xuanyuan was not tired from his night of practice. By the time the sun rose, he had absorbed an enormous amount of spiritual Qi. However, he was still hiding his power beneath the surface. Everyone thought he was very mysterious.

## Chapter 28 – Beasts Attack

“Brother Xuanyuan, why didn’t you rest? Elder Brother wanted us to be prepared for the fights we might face today. Even if you have strength-replenishing pills, your mind will still be exhausted.” Yan Ziyun was worried about him.

He smiled, feeling energetic from the spiritual Qi. He said, “I don’t feel tired. The night’s practice made me even stronger.”

There was no fire through the night, so it’s difficult to see Xuanyuan’s practice with only faint moonlight. But they all felt the suppressive dragon power. The technique Xuanyuan practiced overpowered all the people surrounding him.

They all speculated that the technique he was practicing was of a higher realm than theirs. Probably earth-class, they thought. But only Yan Ziyun knew that he was practicing a heaven-class secret technique of the Yin family. Xuanyuan didn’t tell her the whole truth the other day, but she didn’t blame him. He trusted her with enough information already.

Xuanyuan’s bones were a lot tougher than before. His strength surged from a hundred and fifty to a hundred a seventy two overnight. But ordinary people couldn’t have known that he grew so much.

The Pearl was a tremendous help with his practice. Many people could only improve to a certain point, fighters, warriors, and masters. When they reached the peak of their talents, they would face great obstacles to even improve by one bull of strength. Xuanyuan, on the other hand, improved his strength by twenty two bulls in a single night, this proved that he’s a rare genius of martial arts. But he was not satisfied with the speed of improvement. He still hadn’t used all the Pearl’s power. The Pearl was an earth-class instrument. To use an earth-class instrument to its maximum potential, practitioners needed to insert their own fighting Qi as fuel, but Xuanyuan still lacked the strength to do that.

Yan Liang was amazed and appreciated his sister’s skills at picking talents. He sensed that Xuanyuan was growing every moment. He grew a few inches overnight to five foot five, so he concluded that Xuanyuan had fully refined his

bones as a master realm practitioner. Who knew how powerful Xuanyuan could become before stepping into the next realm! But Yan Liang kept his thought to himself, he only said,

“Let’s get on with it.”

They all followed carefully behind Yan Liang, but they moved with great speed towards the centre of the forest.

Xuanyuan, who was riding Guxing, was ravenous. He gave one of the strength-replenishing pills to the wolf and took one himself, but he still felt a deep hunger. So he took another. Then he felt a warm feeling emerging in his limbs and torso.

Yan Ziyun was surprised to see that, “Brother Xuanyuan, you took two pills at once!”

Xuanyuan giggled and said, “It wouldn’t hurt to take two, right?”

She sighed,

“I have already entered the spiritual realm, and I still only need one pill a day. Only the spiritualists at their peak would need two of those a day. That means you might already be stronger than me, if we only measure the strength of our bodies.”

Xuanyuan was overjoyed, “Don’t worry, first sister, I won’t bully you.”

He took out his lower rank sword given to him by the school, it didn’t even have a name. He didn’t want to reveal his Sword of Swimming Dragon, unless it was necessary.

After half a day of marching forward, they at last encountered a dozen hostile beasts.

“Enemies! Be on guard!”

The sword in Yan Liang’s hand was called Moonlight, it’s a top ranking spiritual instrument. When he took it out from the sheath, an overwhelming fighting Qi suddenly surrounded him.

Yan Liang gathered all the Qi onto his sword and it formed into thousands of shiny little spikes. He shot all those spikes towards the beasts.

The shiny spikes were tiny like toothpicks, but they left numerous blood marks on the beasts. They howled with pain, with desperate looks in their eyes. They were desperate, they could not see a way to escape. It only took a few moments before they were all killed by Yan Liang. Xuanyuan also butchered one of the panther beasts.

“Skin the beasts, their fur can probably be sold for a decent price.” However, just when the disciples were celebrating, an even bigger herd of beasts could be seen charging towards them.

Yan Liang frowned with dismay, “Something’s wrong. Be careful.”

Within five minutes, they were met with thirty eight master ranked beasts. Luckily, everyone worked as a team. Only a few weaker disciples had gotten hurt, nothing serious though.

After they finished, Yan Liang felt that this was odd and ordered, “Let’s go!”

They all got back onto their horses and ran deeper into the forest.

Xuanyuan understood why he urged them to run away. The beasts were not initially heading that way to attack them. Someone had provoked them to head towards their group.

The people who wanted to kill him finally acted and now that they knew where he was, their team would only become in danger more and more.

Yan Liang realized it was a deliberate attack instigated by other people. If they stayed where they were to harvest the beasts’ furs, they would eventually be surrounded by more beasts. He might be able to escape unharmed, but the disciples wouldn’t come out unscathed. He couldn’t afford to lose any of the disciples before they reached the nest of Mo.

“Someone did this to us.” Xuanyuan said.

“I know. Those people wouldn’t reveal themselves, but they wanted to kill us using the beasts.” Yan Ziyun concluded. She was being trained as the next Head of the School of Yuehua, she was skilled at analysis. Also, she was ruthless when it came to her enemies.

“We don’t know who’s behind this. The only way out was to go to the nest as

soon as possible and join the other brothers and sisters. Then they can't attack us with so many people around." A bright light exploded from Yan Liang's sword, along with fierce fighting Qi, shredding every beast in front of them.

After four hours of running, the forest became more and more desolate and the earth hardened. Not even poisonous plants could survive here, let alone ordinary trees.

However, there were noises and Qi was gathered in front of them. They could smell blood.

They rushed even faster forward. The environment brightened with less and less trees. The sounds grew louder and noisier. There were people screaming, beasts howling. When they finally arrived at the source of the noise, they saw that the disciples were all fighting with numerous beasts. And there was even a beast that reached the king realm.

## Chapter 29 – The Pythogon Grass

A while ago, Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Ting Han and Yuezen had already found out the whereabouts of Yan Liang's team. They forced the beasts towards Yan Liang's direction to create chaos for them, also, to attract more powerful beasts by the smell of blood. But Yan Liang realized their devious plan and headed straight to the nest. They couldn't do anything now, until they were inside.

On their way to the nest, they found a grass growing on a large rock. It looked like a dragon creature with mixed python blood, so it was called Pythogon Grass. It's an extremely rare natural treasure.

Like other things, Natural treasures were also divided into seven classes: Yellow, Black, Earth, Tian, Xian, Shen and Tao. The higher the class, the more difficult to grow and when they did grow, they might even possess intelligence and learn to protect themselves and attack enemies. They were usually protected by strong spiritual beasts. They were rare and all had special effects on the body.

The Pythogon Grass, for example, when taken, it would expand a person's veins and allow them to absorb more Qi. With more Qi gathered, it could be transformed into strength and the person might breakthrough the realms. The grass was even more precious than a king realm elixir!

Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Ting Han and Yuezen could hardly improve anymore because they had all reached the limit of their potential.

Their strength was comparable to any inner disciple of the Fighting Dragons Sect. However the sect wouldn't take people who didn't have the potential for improvement. It's more beneficial to leave them safeguarding the School of Yuehua.

However, their fate could be changed if they take the Pythogon Grass.

The four of them led their teams towards the rock, but all Natural treasures are protected by spiritual beasts.

The beast guarding it was a Rocky Dragon, with strength comparable to a king

realm fighter. Its scales were so tough and strong, they could even defend against attacks from a grandmaster realm fighter.

The dragon ruled over this piece of land, and it called upon many beasts immediately. A moment later, the teams led by the best true disciples were in the middle of a blood bath.

The corpses from a few dozen inner disciples from the school and a few hundred beasts were scattered around the rock where the grass was growing. Blood soaked into the soil, tainting it red and filled the air with the scent of blood.

Yan Liang arrived at the scene and saw the true disciples fighting the Rocky Dragon.

The dragon's torso seemed to be covered with rocks. The four men were struggling to fight with this twelve metre long dragon, but they managed to hurt it even though they were at a disadvantage. The dragon was growling in pain.

Sensing Yan Liang and his team approaching, Yuezen's face distorted to evilness for a split second, then he quickly pleaded to Yan Liang, "Brother Yan, help us kill the dragon. It's guarding the Pythogon Grass. That's a heaven-class treasure. It can expand our veins and aid our cultivation."

Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Ting Han understood Yuezen's hidden motive immediately. The beasts around them killed many of their inner disciples, they could only rely on the dragon to keep Yan Liang occupied and let the beasts kill Xuanyuan. Of course, they would have to kill Yan Liang in the end as well.

"Right, brother Yan, come help us." Tung Xuan ordered.

Yan Liang hesitated, but Xuanyuan stopped him before he moved and urged, "Don't go!"

"I am the eldest true disciple of the school. No one can disobey me. Do I have to punish you according to the rules?" Tung Xuan yelled at Xuanyuan.

"Xuanyuan, you're only an inner disciple. You have no right to intervene in our decision."

"You are only disciples of the school, while I am an outer disciple of the

Fighting Dragon Sect, specially appointed by Brother Fung Lie. You cannot tell me what I can and cannot do.” Xuanyuan looked at them coldly, “Brother Fung Lie ordered us to ambush the nest of Mo, and you are sacrificing the inner disciples for your own greed. You are disobeying and disrespecting Brother Fung Lie’s order!”

They were stunned by Xuanyuan’s words. None of them would expect that he would scold them using Fung Lie’s name. They couldn’t think of any counter argument.

“Natural treasures belong to anyone who is strong enough to take them. Of course we should pick the grass, otherwise, should we let the beasts take it? Even if Brother Fung Lie came here, he wouldn’t be able to resist the temptation.”

“What are you waiting for, brother Yan. Help us. You might be able to breakthrough to the king realm!” Yuezen softened his voice to lure Yan Liang.

Xuanyuan spoke before Yan Liang could open his mouth, “The order from the sect is of utmost importance. Brother Fung Lie ordered us to kill the Mo race and that should be the only goal. Fight for your treasured grass if you wish. I will finish the mission, maybe the reward would be much better than the grass. Let’s go!”

Xuanyuan knew full well it’s a trap. He could see it from their murderous gazes.

“Xuanyuan, stop using Brother Fung Lie to threaten us. You are not officially accepted into the sect yet. You are still our subordinate. Someone as weak as you will die as long as you step into the sect. Why postpone your death? We’ll kill you here and now.” Ting Han was bloodthirsty and driven mad by battle, he was provoked by Xuanyuan. He didn’t dare to offend Fung Lie, but killing Xuanyuan was a piece of cake.

Ting Han wielded his weapon and rushed straight at Xuanyuan. Yan Liang panicked, he was only in the wild realm, he wouldn’t be able to tackle Ting Han.

Suddenly an overwhelming pressure came from above, then a grey wind thrashed into Ting Han’s waist. Blood exploded in all directions – Ting Han was cut in half from his waist.

“Xuanyuan is a disciple of the Fighting Dragon Sect from this day onwards. The sect needs people like him. Who would dare to try and kill him? Come forward now.” A man on a dragon scale horse. The horse stepped forward. It was Fung Lie. Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen were horrified.

“Xuanyuan, what you said was correct. You certainly deserve my attention. I’ll take this Pythogon Grass and gift it to you.”

Fung Lie was very good looking, his manner was imposing and regal. His hand gestured a few symbols and the wind Qi gushed out from the ground, blowing Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen away. The trees around them were shredded into small pieces.

“Blades of Heavenly Wind!”

The blades of winds cut through the body of the rocky dragon.

Wounds appeared on the impenetrable stone skin of the dragon, blood spilled out from the wounds. The beasts around the dragon were all crushed.

The dragon wanted to escape, but it was too late. Fung Lie raised his finger and the dragon’s head was cut from its body.

## Chapter 30 – Suntao of Brightsun

“Greetings to Brother Fung Lie!” Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen were all trembling with fear. They were afraid that Fung Lie might kill them as well. They knelt on the ground and bowed to him.

But Fung Lie was not looking at them. He lifted his hand and the Pythogon Grass landed in his palm. A murderous pressure poured out from the grass, attacking Fung Lie, but he paid no attention. With a small wave of his hand, the vicious pressure dissipated. Tung Xuan gasped, as he would have been gravely hurt by the attack from the Pythogon Grass, and yet Fung Lie dealt with it so easily.

The rest of the team led by other true disciples slowly arrived at the entrance of the nest. Seeing Fung Lie, they came up and greeted him one after the other.

The scales of Fung Lie’s horse were moving along with the wind that surrounded them, making its figure even more imposing. Fung Lie looked at Xuanyuan with great satisfaction and said, “Take the Pythogon Grass. It’s my gift for meeting you.”

Then the grass landed onto Xuanyuan’s hand lightly. Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen were all burning with jealousy. They spent so much time and sacrificed many disciples to try and get the grass, and it was given to the boy they hated the most.

Xuanyuan gestured gratitude with his hands, “Greetings to Brother Fung Lie. Thank you for your gift.”

Yan Liang and other inner disciples knelt in front of Fung Lie, but Yan Ziyun hesitated. She greeted Fung Lie with a hand gesture, like Xuanyuan.

“Very well. The Tao of martial arts tells us that we should not lose our dignity at any time. If we bend our knee to everyone stronger than us then we will lose our sense of self, then how could we exceed our weak self?” Fung Lie laughed. He moved his hands and pulled from the dragon an elixir the size of a fist, along with the dragon’s spine, and gave them to Xuanyuan.

“This is the elixir of the Rocky Dragon, and the spine was the essence of its strength. They are worth a great fortune. They are my gift for taking you in as an

outer disciple of the sect. Xuanyuan, I am impressed by how much you improved in such a short period of time.”

This made even more disciples feel the burning jealousy welling up inside them. The elixir gave practitioners the power close to a grandmaster fighter. Not only that, Xuanyuan was also gifted the essence of the dragon. Xuanyuan breathed in deeply. He could feel the remaining dragon’s scent from the elixir and the spine.

Xuanyuan took the gifts and then walked up to the corpse of Ting Han and confiscated his top rank spiritual instrument, the Moon wheel. He even robbed all the money from the dead man. He was not embarrassed at all by his actions.

“Please give the order, Brother Fung Lie. What should we do next?” Xuanyuan asked.

“I am about to tackle the most powerful Mo warriors, meanwhile, all of you should kill the other creatures and the beasts inside. The more you kill, the more rewards you’ll get. Xuanyuan, test your strength with this. When this is over, I’ll bring you back to the sect. All disciples of the School of Yuehua shall concentrate on destroying the nest of Mo!”

Fung Lie pretended that he didn’t see Xuanyuan’s act of robbing the corpse of his fellow disciple. Then he rode on his dragon scale horse towards the nest. In fact, Feng Lie appreciated Xuanyuan’s thick skin. Practicing Martial arts required a lot of money, so what Xuanyuan did was not repulsive to him, but it was considered shameless by others.

“We shall obey.” The true disciples stood up one by one. Many of them were trying to establish their relationships with Xuanyuan already.

“Brother Xuanyuan, you have a bright future ahead of you. Don’t forget to recommend us to the sect.”

“That’s right, brother Xuanyuan. So talented at such a tender age, surely you’ll be a powerful practitioner in the future. Congratulations...”

“So I’ve heard that our school got a genius disciple who had a breakthrough twice already, and even defeated Sunwen. I see that the rumours were not false.”

“Brother Xuanyuan is such a handsome young man....”

All kinds of compliments were suddenly thrown at him, but Xuanyuan only smiled and climbed on Guxing. He took Yan Ziyun's arm to help her to climb on as well. Then he said, "Respectful brother and sister disciples, killing the wicked Mo race was our goal today. The more you kill, the better the rewards."

He then led Guxing and Yan Ziyun to the entrance. Yan Liang, Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu followed closely behind, So did nearly a thousand disciples.

From the entrance of the nest, there was nothing to be seen but darkness. The entrance was a thousand metres wide hole, inside a tunnel straight to the underground nest. A thousand disciples running into it made it glitter with incredible light.

The only people left in front of the entrance were Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Yuezen, Yueteng and a few other inner disciples. They looked miserable.

When facing the dragon, Lu Feng and Yuezen were slightly injured. The fight cost them a great deal, but there was no reward left to be gained.

"What should we do? Fung Lie is protecting him. He is immeasurably powerful. If we touch the boy, we will get killed."

"Ting Han died in such a viscous way! Fung Lie was too vicious in his attack, we would not be able to defend against him."

"Someone's coming." Tung Xuan, the strongest amongst the group, announced.

Eighteen people were heading their way. They were all spiritual fighters, one of them had even entered the wild realm. Yueteng yelled excitedly. They lost most of their inner disciples, and now there were even more powerful reinforcements.

"Master Sun!"

The man in the lead was the Master of the Brightsun City, Suntao!

"Greetings. I have come because Sunzhi was injured by Xuanyuan, and my nephew was blinded in one eye as well. If I don't avenge them, then I could not restore my dignity as the master of a city. So I brought all my elite fighters to kill Xuanyuan, as well as the Mo. We shall collect our rewards on the Judgment Stand of the Fighting Dragon together. What do you all think about this plan?"

Yueteng had already sent a message to Suntao beforehand, otherwise Suntao would not dare to state his intention to kill Xuanyuan aloud. They were already on the same side, there was nothing to hide. For Suntao, it would be beneficial to the Brightsun City if he could ally with two king realm fighters. He could kill Xuanyuan before he had a chance to react.

“Wonderful. With the support from Master Sun, we will be able to kill many Mo creatures and eliminate Xuanyuan.” Yuezen’s face was distorted with hatred. He knew that Xuanyuan was ruthless to his enemies. If he entered the sect, he would definitely kill them when he ascended to a higher status. Only one side could live.

“That right. I already have a plan to kill the boy, without giving excuses to Fung Lie to punish us.” Tung Xuan looked at the reinforcement, and a plan had already formed. He gave out an order, “Let’s go, every Mo warrior can be exchanged into coins. There are also many precious items inside the nest. It’s a great but rare chance for us.”

Under the lead of Tung Xuan, they headed towards the underground.

## Chapter 31 – Aim to Please

They were in the underground part of the nest.

When they first entered, it was pitch black everywhere. But after a while, they realized it was not complete darkness in there.

The grass was as tall as a child, growing densely everywhere, and they were glowing faintly.

Yan Ziyun was sitting on Guxing, pointing at the grass. She smiled, “This is glowing grass. With our eyesight, we can see a few dozen metres ahead with the help of the grass.”

Xuanyuan stared at the interior of the nest. It was like a whole new world. There were solid rocks, dark soils on the ground, streams flowing, tiny hills. There were also countless Mo plants everywhere. Xuanyuan suspected there might also be some be bloodthirsty gazes glaring at them. It was a terrifying atmosphere.

“There are many Mo beasts here. Stay alert. Mo beasts are less intelligent than regular beasts, the only thing they know is to kill and destroy. But if you encounter Mo creatures, such as Suras, Yaksha, Ghosts, and Demons, you should be extra careful. They can start to have a consciousness, though not very intelligent. It’s a good place to train your focus.”

Yan Ziyun was very knowledgeable. She explained patiently to Xuanyuan and Xuanyuan was very attentive. He knew too little about the world. It’s good for him to see it in reality.

In the middle of Yan Ziyun’s lecture, some strange sounds could be heard. One by one, the bloody moon horses collapsed.

Xuanyuan knew something was wrong immediately, he said, “Damn, it’s the evil air in here. Ordinary creatures cannot take it.”

The bloody moon horse was a good and strong breed, but it would not be able to survive this environment.

Xuanyuan took out the antidotes he bought. He took one, gave one to Yan

Ziyun, and one to Guxing. The wolf regained its strength immediately, it was no longer tired. The antidotes could not only neutralize poisons, they could also prevent the person from getting poisoned. Many plants that made the antidotes grew underground and fed on the evil air in the Mo nest.

The people following them also took out their antidotes.

Suddenly, countless Mo beasts appeared and charged at them.

Wolves, leopards, tigers, lions, bears, snakes, monkeys and even a giant rooster came out. The rooster's beak was steel sharp, its wings were powerful. It flapped its wings and flew a hundred metres. Its beak pierced through the heart of one of the disciples.

"Mo beasts! Be on guard!" In just an instant, many true disciples revealed their powers. Lightning gathered around them. The beasts were cut down like crops ready to harvest. In a brief instant, blood had spilled everywhere.

Xuanyuan gave Yan Ziyun the Moon Wheel he took from Ting Han's dead body.

"First sister, take this."

He then grabbed his dagger and jumped off Guxing. With the Boots of Floating Clouds under his feet, his body was light as a feather. He leaped up to more than ten metres in a single jump, and landed without a sound. He killed a few Mo birds in mid-air. He was impressed by the power of his instruments, "It feels like magic!"

His dagger cut through everything it touched and devoured the power from every creature it touched.

The battle between human and Mo was soon over. That's because when Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Yueteng and Yuezen arrived on the battlefield, the power of king realm fighters was able to see and destroy the remaining creatures in the darkness. The methods they used to destroy the Mo were beautiful and fascinating.

Elixirs from the creatures' corpses flew into the hands of the disciples. There were at least three thousand beasts killed during the battle. Tung Xuan and Lu Feng each got about twenty-five of the elixirs, the rest was taken by other true disciples.

Each of the creatures were as strong as a master realm fighter. Those elixirs could be sold for at least a hundred thousand fighter coins.

Tung Xuan and Lu Feng approached Xuanyuan and grinned, “Brother Xuanyuan, we might have offended you. Please don’t take it personally and take these elixirs as our gifts. When you arrive at the sect, don’t forget to say a few good words about us.”

“Lu Feng, Xuanyuan is officially a disciple of the sect, it’s not appropriate to call him brother. We should call him Young Master Xuanyuan. Young master was a disciple of the School of Yuehua for a brief but important period of time, so please don’t forget about all of the brothers and sisters of the school when you are in the sect.”

“Young Master Xuanyuan, we’ll protect you on this mission. We won’t let you get hurt.”

Xuanyuan smiled happily,

“Forget about our grudges. I didn’t mind that. Do I look like a greedy person to you?” And yet, Xuanyuan still put the elixirs straight into his ring without hesitation while speaking.

“You two useless scum, come up and apologize to the young master. He is very generous and forgiving. You should take him as a role model!” Tung Xuan shouted at Yuezen and Yueteng. They walked up sheepishly. Yuezen’s face was still swollen up like he had been stung by a bee. When he smiled, his face was even more distorted. He gave Xuanyuan a big bag of coins.

“Brother Xuanyuan, here is three thousand spiritual coins. Please take it as an apology and forgive my rudeness the other day.”

Yueteng also smiled to please Xuanyuan and gave him a big bag of coins. He said,

I also have two thousand spiritual coins. Please forgive the argument we had in Moonwaste City.”

Xuanyuan was indeed very pleased with himself, “Nevermind. You all apologized so sincerely, of course I’ll forgive you. But there doesn’t seem enough money here for me to spend.”

The faces of the brothers from the Yue Family twitched when they heard Xuanyuan. They wanted to strangle him but still kept the smiles on their faces,

“Of course, of course, we still have some more. Please take it, Brother Xuanyuan.”

They gave him five thousand additional spiritual coins. Their hearts ached from their loss.

Xuanyuan took all the money without shame. Ten thousand spiritual coins could be exchanged for a hundred thousand master coins. At last, he could get a top ranked spiritual instrument.

He didn't have any reason to rob Tung Xuan and Lu Feng, since they've never really had any disputes or even talked to each other face to face.

Under public scrutiny, the eldest two brothers among all true disciples, and brother Yuezen, apologized to Xuanyuan. It was humiliating to the other true disciples, but they didn't dwell on it. After all, Xuanyuan was backed by Fung Lie, and will be able to enter the Fighting Dragon Sect. He would enjoy a very bright future.

They were all glad that they didn't get on the wrong side of Xuanyuan.

“That's enough. Let the past be the past. Now we shall unite and fight the Mo race. That's the important thing right now.” Xuanyuan said nonchalantly and jumped onto Guxing. He put his arm around Yan Ziyun's waist and smiled, “Let's go down to the second level of the nest!”

Yan Ziyun was uncomfortable and blushed. She wouldn't have thought a young boy like Xuanyuan might be thinking about her like that. In fact, Xuanyuan didn't do it on purpose. He was just drunk with excitement and pride.

The army of disciples headed deeper into the nest.

## Chapter 32 – Evil Looming

There weren't any major obstacles in the first level in the nest with Tung Xuan and Lu Feng protecting them. All the Mo beasts were killed in an instant by the two king realm fighters. Even though most of the beasts were at the master level, their strength still varied. The beasts they faced before were all among the weakest of the bunch.

On the first level, around ten thousand Mo beasts were destroyed. Xuanyuan had seventy two elixirs from this harvest.

Tung Xuan and Lu Feng claimed that they didn't need more elixirs, so they were giving them all to Xuanyuan, in the hope that he would recommend them to the sect when he established his power. Xuanyuan of course had no shame when it came to money and would happily accept their bribes. He knew that if people weren't acting like their usual selves and acting against their usual nature, he knew they must be planning something. He might be frightened if they attacked him directly, but he wasn't afraid of them using tricks.

Tung Xuan's plan was to beg Xuanyuan to forgive them when everyone was watching, so he wouldn't be on guard when they acted on their plans. Then Tung Xuan and Suntao would go their separate ways and ambush Xuanyuan, in order to force him into a deeper level of the nest.

On the first level, the enemies were weak, but once you entered the second level, there were many creatures, such as white ghouls, that were as strong as the most powerful master realm fighters.

They arrived at the second level.

It didn't look much different than the previous level. The grass was still glowing faintly, tall Mo plants were growing everywhere, and many Mo creatures were lurking around the shadows.

The only difference was that the creatures on this level were more intimidating and powerful. The air was thick with evil. The evil air in the nest was like a source of nutrition for the Mo race, but poisonous to humans and ordinary beasts. These Mo creatures were all once normal beasts which stumbled into the nest and were infected by the air. The stronger ones that weren't killed by the air

would become the demented Mo creatures. They would slowly lose their mind and become killing machines.

The mission at hand was to kill all these evil creatures inside the nest.

Battle broke out once again, without any warning.

Tung Xuan and Lu Feng were at the very front. Their swords lit up like cold, sharp beams of moonlight that cut through the creatures in their way.

Xuanyuan's weapon of choice was his rusty dagger. He heard the voice of the greedy old bugger ringing in his mind, "Kill! Kill! Kill! The more you kill, the faster my power will be restored! This is not enough, now...You have to go find me more fighting stones, jades and crystals. Go and see if there's anything in the mines on the third level..."

Xuanyuan rolled his eyes. The Boots of Floating Clouds allowed him to stroll through the air like a flying dragon, swift and light. With his incredibly sharp dagger, he butchered the creatures in front of him one by one.

He killed a creature with each strike.

The battle in the second level was clearly more exhausting and difficult than the previous ones. Creatures were attacking them from every direction. Even though the true disciples were protecting them, a few dozen inner disciples were killed.

Just when Xuanyuan was finishing his thirty-seventh kill, a terrifying power approached him from behind at an alarming speed.

He felt his scalp going numb. He turned around and pierced through the enemy with his dagger. A pair of bloody red eyes were glaring at him. The face rotted, the hands had sharp, long claws. It was an evil creature, a white ghoul, and it possessed the strength of a dragon. With its white, dirty hair and rotten flesh, it was a terrifying sight.

But Xuanyuan's dagger pierced right through the ghoul, while his own clothes were torn from those sharp claws, but he was unhurt, because he had the armour for protection.

"Hahaha, Xuanyuan, my boy. You've got all those elixirs from the losers, I'll

take the essence from these creatures. I'll devour all of their power!"

The battlefield was chaotic, it was not possible to check all of the dead creatures to see if there were elixirs inside, so Xuanyuan didn't argue with the greedy old bugger.

The white ghoul froze once the dagger thrust into its heart. All the essence of its strength was absorbed by the dagger, it was left with nothing but an empty shell.

Another white ghoul ran towards him. Xuanyuan didn't run away, he instead used the technique "Fist of the Heavenly Dragon" and combined the power of his refined skin, flesh and bones, then punched a hole straight through the ghoul's body. The dead creature fell a few metres away.

On the other hand, Yan Ziyun's power was enhanced by the top ranked spiritual instrument, Moon Wheel. She wielded the wheel and cut through the creatures in front of her, leaving them in two pieces.

The second level of the nest was tainted with the stench of blood.

The battle ended when they finally approached the entrance to the third level. They had been fighting for twelve hours. The Body of All Creation absorbed the evil air and converted it into energy to fuel the body. If not for that, Xuanyuan would have been exhausted long ago.

Nearly forty thousand Mo creatures were killed, among them were many white ghouls, but the disciples also paid the price, almost a hundred inner disciples were killed.

However, many of the top disciples broke through to the spiritual realm during the battle. Liu Piao Xu and Shi Congyu were among of them.

Xuanyuan face was drained of colour. He sighed when he saw the carnage,

"Luckily, these white ghouls were only strong in body and didn't know any techniques or special methods. Otherwise, even more people would have been killed.

Xuanyuan's strength improved from a hundred and seventy two bulls to a hundred and seventy eight from the twelve hours of fighting. The connection

between his skin, flesh and bones was becoming stronger. But he knew that he had yet to reach the limit of his strength for this realm.

Guxing had reached ninety nine bulls strength. It had released and absorbed the power of the ghost wolf elixir during the fight. The wolf was wounded and blood tainted its silvery fur. Xuanyuan took out the medicine he bought and quickly gave it to Guxing. The blood stopped flowing from the wound and it quickly started to heal.

“How about we rest a while before going to the next level. The disciples won’t be able to go on like this.” He said to Tung Xuan and Lu Feng.

“Young master is right.” They replied, and took out a hundred and eighty master level elixirs and ten spiritual level elixirs from the white ghouls and handed them to Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan was not shy to accept even more gifts. He accepted the bribes with open arms and said he would remember them when entered the Sect.

Tung Xuan and Lu Feng smiled as they left. But Yueteng and Yuezen were not happy to see that they gave all the elixirs to Xuanyuan.

“Brothers, those elixirs are the proof that we killed all those creatures. Aren’t you being too nice to him?”

Tung Xuan was annoyed at Yueteng. He said with a cold smile, “When he’s dead, we’ll get our things back. You think I would just give him what’s mine?”

Knowing Tung Xuan’s plan, Yueteng smiled as well, “That’s right, we’ll get to keep everything when he’s dead. Keep him happy for now. It’s won’t last.”

“The Judgment stand can sense how many Mo creatures we’ve killed, and it knows if we’re lying. It always ends badly for those who lie.” Lu Feng had seen people who claimed that they had killed more than they actually did. The consequences made him shiver.

They continued to rest for four hours and the remaining eight hundred disciples headed towards the third level of the nest.

## Chapter 33 – The Sword of Swimming Dragons Revealed

The third level was a vast plain field, with a river flowing as far as the eye could see. There were still many Mo plants growing everywhere, but the light of the glowing grass was a lot brighter.

The evil air was much thicker on that level. Many of the inner disciples were unable to withstand it. So all the true disciples ordered them to go back to the school and collect their rewards from the Judgment Stand, because they wouldn't be able to fight any longer in this air. They would only be a burden to the rest of the team.

Four hundred people were sent back. Those who left behind were at least at the peak of the master realm with more than ninety bulls strength. They would become spiritual fighters eventually.

This level had a particularly spooky feeling. Danger was looming everywhere. Xuanyuan's voice echoed, "Everyone! You've been through enough battles of life and death, and your potential has been pushed beyond its limit, many of you have gained the potential to enter the spiritual realm. If you don't have the determination to move forward or if you are content to stay in the master realm. You should leave now. Are you going to leave? Or are you going to stay and fight?"

Xuanyuan's voice was encouraging to the disciples who yearned for strength. If the speech came from another person's mouth, the disciples would have held them in contempt, but they trusted Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan dared to straighten his back and look someone like Fung Lie in the eye. He was handpicked by Fung Lie. They believed in him.

"STAY. AND. FIGHT!" Their chanting was deafening. They were excited by the two bloody battles they had gone through. None of them were willing to stop with their current strength, or they wouldn't have chosen the path of martial arts.

"Great! Let's move forward!" Xuanyuan suddenly became the leader of the School of Yuehua, making Tung Xuan and Lu Feng very uncomfortable.

“We’ll keep him happy for a little while longer. When we reach level four and five, he will have plenty of reasons to cry, when he is faced with his own death!”

“It’ll all go according to plan. When we are deep inside the nest, even Brother Tung Xuan and Lu Feng would be fighting a tough battle, let alone this clown. He’s only recently entered the master realm. No matter how strong he is, he’ll die here. He won’t be so cocky for much longer.” Yuezen thought.

The other disciples were encouraged by Xuanyuan and marched forward like an unstoppable waterfall.

“Hahaha, well said, young master Xuanyuan. You will surely have a bright future in the sect. We are all willing to serve you when you’re there.” Lu Feng was continuing to lick Xuanyuan’s boots, so they would not be accused of killing him afterwards.

“That’s right. When this is over, we would love to have the honor of serving you in the sect.” Yueteng was doing the same thing.

Yan Ziyun was giggling very hard, and she whispered in a quiet voice, “Be careful, brother Xuanyuan. They are plotting something.”

Xuanyuan grabbed Yan Ziyun’s waist, but didn’t answer. Instead, he laughed loudly,

“No problem, Yueteng. I’ll take you as my servant. So you can come with me to the sect.”

Xuanyuan suddenly saw white everywhere in his field of vision. He tried to make sense of what he was looking at and his heart was racing.

There was a swarm of white ghouls. They were marching in a formation of squares, and there was at least a hundred of them in each square. Each of the ghouls had at least one dragon strength, some of them had two or even three dragons of strength.

Xuanyuan took a deep, worrisome breath. Ten thousand white ghouls and all of them are so powerful. The remaining disciples were all well equipped with high quality armour and weapons. They could probably defeat the ghouls, but it seemed like it would be a difficult and bloody battle.

But they had come so far, there's no going back now. He jumped off Guxing and looked towards Yan Ziyun, "Ziyun, stay with Guxing and protect him. If he's left alone, he'll die."

Then he turned around and shouted, "Everyone! Come with me!"

"This time, Xuanyuan didn't use his dagger, because the greedy bugger had said to him, "Don't let the others sense my power, use the Sword of Swimming Dragons. I can still absorb the ghouls essence."

He took out his Swimming Dragons sword and a blue light shone from the blade. A dragon roar could be heard. Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen who were floating in mid-air narrowed their eyes.

"Top ranked spiritual instrument!"

Xuanyuan had such a powerful weapon! The sword he had was even better than their own weapons of the same rank. A weapon that powerful was almost sentient. It could one day become an earth class instrument!

Some of the instruments could only stay as a top ranking spiritual instrument, because of the constraints in materials. But some of them were made of high quality materials, so even they didn't start out as a top ranking one, it was able to grow!

It was like elixirs, some of the beasts had them, some didn't. Those who had elixirs would have greater potential for growth!

Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen were lusting after the sword. It was made from the bones of swimming dragons and cost at least three hundred thousand master coins. If they put some effort into improving it, it'll become a lower ranking earth class instrument. Then it'll worth a million master coins!

Xuanyuan ran into the swarm of white ghouls. He encouraged all the inner disciples to follow his charge.

"Heavenly Dragon Descent!"

He twisted his wrists and jumped into the air. The sword in his hand was like a dragon descending from the sky. The sword cut off the heads of three white ghouls with a single stroke.

He stood in the middle of the swarm and was spinning like whipping top. He used the technique “Heavenly Dragon’s Fury” from the “Bone-crushing Fist of Heavenly Dragon” and replaced the fist with his sword. A dozen white ghouls were cut in half by the waist from his sword.

He was like a bloodthirsty dragon as he wielded his sword once again,  
“Dragon of the Flying Clouds!”

The overwhelming strength came through from Xuanyuan’s skin, flesh and bones to the sword, a few ghouls were killed with each attack.

But before he could react, six other ghouls had surrounded him. Their claws were like sharp knives, pointing at Xuanyuan. Their eyes only knew blood!

## Chapter 34 – The Elixir of the Beast Spirit

What was Xuanyuan wearing? The Armour of Floating Clouds and underneath the armour, he was wearing the Dragon Scale Armour. The protection they gave him was superb. Not to mention that Xuanyuan was now a master realm fighter. His skin, flesh, and bones were all refined. Even his naked body was as tough as steel.

He felt a slight pain from the strength of six white ghouls attacking him at the same time. It's like when a bullet hits someone wearing a bullet proof vest. The next moment, Xuanyuan had already attacked with his Sword of Swimming Dragons and cut off all their heads in a single swoop.

Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Yuezen and Yueteng were all stunned by how fierce Xuanyuan was. The boy was a lot more powerful than they had anticipated. It seemed like they won't be able to implement their plan on this level of the nest. They had to kill him in the next one.

The ceiling of the nest was lit by the glow from all of the attacks. To kill these white ghouls, Tung Xuan and Lu Feng didn't need to use any special skills. They could easily destroy them with pure strength.

Other disciples from the School of Yuehua had also rushed into the swarm of white ghouls to fight.

The battle had exploded into a full scale war.

Xuanyuan was unstoppable. If there was any Xian present, they would see that the life essence from the dead ghouls was being absorbed and devoured by a mysterious force. It was like a black hole that was never satisfied.

A dozen white ghouls charged toward Xuanyuan from behind.

He swung his arms in a full circle and used the move "Heavenly Dragon's Tail" to slice off their legs. They could no longer walk and could only crawl across the ground. Their screams were deafening.

A ghoulish figure with two dragons of strength approached Xuanyuan, its hand was holding a white ball of Qi, ready to kill him.

The enemies he'd faced so far were all ghouls with one dragon of strength. Now that he felt like his strength was growing and transforming him into a more powerful being, Xuanyuan laughed,

“Good timing! Heavenly Dragon's Pearl!”

Xuanyuan twisted his wrist and threw his sword towards the ghoul. The sword flew from his hand with a loud bang and pierced straight through the ghoul, the sword's power pierced through three other white ghouls before it finally came to a stop. Xuanyuan was already there and grabbed the sword's handle once again.

He saw a disciple being ripped open by a white ghoul with three dragons of strength, and the essence of life was immediately devoured by the creature. The creature was feeding on human strength to replenish its own. Three other disciples were surrounding it with their weapons in hand. But their attacks merely put a few shallow dents on the ghoul's body and only made it even more angry. It ripped another disciple into pieces.

“Damn it!” Xuanyuan yelled. Jumping with the power of his boots, he landed in front of the corpse and with a single strike he killed it.

Xuanyuan was like a dragon descending swiftly from heaven and cutting the ghoul in half from head to toe.

“Thank you, young master Xuanyuan!”

Every single one of the disciples were fighting with their lives on the line. Dead bodies accumulated on the ground, with the glow of the grass turning red from the blood.

But the swarm of ghouls kept rushing towards them, continuing the battle.

Every time he killed with his sword, every time he used the techniques of the Heavenly Dragon, Xuanyuan could feel that his skin, flesh and bones were becoming even more synchronized. The spiritual Qi coming from every corner of the universe was being refined into pure fighting Qi and absorbed into his bones. His strength was constantly increasing with each minute he spent on the battlefield, and it didn't stop until he reached a hundred and ninety nine bulls of strength. He could sense that he had finally reached the limit of his strength in the master realm. He now had to sense of his veins and start to refine them so

he could finally step into the spiritual realm!

The fight lasted for sixteen hours. He took off his blood soaked clothes and wiped the blood from his face. He took a deep breath, his body was exhausted so he quickly took a replenishing pill. The pill restored his strength. A warm sensation flowed along his muscles and bones, the power then finally reached his pores before leaving his body. He felt energized again.

Many of the inner disciples had pushed themselves and fought until the end. All their strength was exhausted. They sat on the ground and they were all breathing unevenly. Not everyone had the money to buy strength replenishing pills.

This battle reduced the four hundred disciples into less than eighty. But the remaining elites had all entered the spiritual realm. The biggest barrier to breakthrough was a mental one. From the bloodbath, they tested their determination and potential to become stronger.

Tung Xuan and Lu Feng flew casually in mid-air. They gave their one hundred and fifty elixirs from the white ghouls to Xuanyuan,

“Young master, these are the souvenirs we’ve got from the battle on the third level. Please be so kind as to accept them.”

Xuanyuan laughed happily, “Of course, of course. Don’t worry, I won’t ditch you once I’m in the sect. When I get a decent position, I’ll surely help you get in.”

After humouring them. Xuanyuan turned to the disciples sitting on the ground and said seriously,

“Don’t follow us to the fourth level. Your biggest gain was to breakthrough into the spiritual realm. Just turn back. All of the true disciples, follow me to the fourth level!”

No one objected. The fourth level would be much more dangerous. Those inner disciples wouldn’t be able to fight another battle like that.

“Right then, Xuanyuan my lad. We’re going back. Look after our first sister.” Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu fared better than the other disciples, but they were also exhausted. They could only gather the strength to straighten their backs and walk with their heads held high.

“No problem, little brother Congyu and little sister Piaoxu. Be careful on your way back.” Xuanyuan grinned as he teased them.

“Hahaha....” Shi Congyu laughed and led the inner disciples back to the second level of the nest.

Xuanyuan glanced at the true disciples and said regretfully,

“Well, it seems like we’re the only ones left. I don’t get many chances to fight like this, but I’m afraid I should probably go back as well.”

Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Yuezen and Yueteng were shocked to hear this. Was this kid toying with them?

Tung Xuan composed himself quickly, “Young master Xuanyuan, You fought so well with your excellent weapon. Why would you go back?”

“We will protect you and help you kill the creatures. So you can get a nice head start in the Sect.” Lu Feng said hurriedly, like he was worried for Xuanyuan’s future prospects in the Sect, like he wouldn’t be able to provide them any advantages.

Xuanyuan shrugged and pointed at Guxing,

“Guxing grew up with me. I’ll never part with my wolf, but the evil air in the third level is poisonous for it. It only has ninety nine bulls of strength, if not for Ziyun’s protection, it wouldn’t have made it. I won’t leave Guxing for anything.”

Tung Xuan saw the problem, “Does that mean you’d come with us if Guxing’s strength was enhanced? Otherwise, you won’t go to the fourth level?”

Xuanyuan nodded. Tung Xuan and Lu Feng shared a long glance at each other. Their heart ached for all the elixirs they gave him. They couldn’t let him slip away at this point. Too much had already been invested in their plan, but they did have an elixir of the beast spirit. It could enhance the wolf’s strength several levels, but this elixir was a grade four spiritual class elixir. It cost a hundred thousand master coins.

“Screw it. All the instruments that the boy owns are worth more than a hundred thousand coins!” Tung Xuan heavily sighed and gave Xuanyuan the elixir,

“Young master Xuanyuan, this is the elixir of the beast spirit, I’ve had this for many years. It’s a grade four elixir, it is extremely difficult to make. It’s a special pill for beasts, it’s able to help them enter the spiritual realm. Give it to your wolf.”

Xuanyuan looked at him with ‘gratitude’ and thanked him ‘sincerely’,

“Thank you, brother Tung. I won’t forget your kindness!”

He snatched the elixir from Tung Xuan and put it into Guxing’s mouth quickly, like he was afraid that Tung Xuan would change his mind.

Tung Xuan’s heart was bleeding. Even to him, a hundred thousand master coins was still a lot of money.

“Xuanyuan, I’ll kill you. I’ll take back tenfold of what you’ve taken from me!”  
He thought to himself.

# Chapter 35 – The Fourth Level

Xuanyuan squeezed the elixir into Guxing’s mouth and observed. The wolf swallowed it obligingly. Then a terrifying force boiled inside Guxing’s body and its skin was torn into pieces, instantly blood splashed everywhere. Xuanyuan screamed in panic, “Brother Tung, what’s going on?”

Tung Xuan’s eyes narrowed and he stepped up hurriedly. Qi gathered in his palms and turned into a light as soft as the moonlight, then he quickly pushed it into Guixng.

The wolf’s skin started to heal. Power flowed into every corner of its body and it grew even taller! It was now almost five foot five and three metres in length. The silky smooth fur became spiked like sharp thistles, its teeth were sharpened, its claws grew larger and thrust deep into the dark soil. The sight was both deadly and frightening.

Its strength surged instantly,

One Dragon of strength!

Two Dragons of strength!

Three Dragons of strength!

.....

Six Dragons of strength!

Guxing grew even more powerful than Xuanyuan. When Guxing finally absorbed all the power from the elixir, Tung Xuan was covered in a cold sweat. He used his own Qi to help Guxing absorb the elixir to the limit, and used the Yuehua healing method to cure its wounds, until it reached a full six dragons of strength. There was still half of the elixir left, sealed inside the wolf.

When it was done, Guxing was incredibly excited. The wolf’s eyes revealed a cunning much like its master’s.

“Brother Xuanyuan, you are being very inconsiderate. Guxing is only an ordinary wolf. You could’ve killed it by giving it the entire elixir.” Yan Ziyun

lectured Xuanyuan. Since similar thing happened before, she knew that Xuanyuan had done this on purpose. Guxing would not die as long as Tung Xuan was there to control the elixir. Even if he isn't present, she would also be able to help, but she still needed to pretend to be mad and shocked at Xuanyuan's actions.

"Sister Ziyun is right." Tung Xuan was very pale. Controlling the elixir was even more exhausting than killing thousands of white ghouls.

"Ha! Ha! Ha! I didn't know. Good thing that you're here. Now everything's fine. Master Tung, thanks for your help. I'll surely take care of you in the sect. Follow me, Guxing!" Xuanyuan laughed innocently and humoured Tung Xuan. He thumped forward and with each step he hurried to the fourth level of the nest. Guxing was carrying Yan Ziyun. Behind them, the other true disciples followed.

Tung Xuan was furious, but it didn't show on his face. He got what he wanted – for Xuanyuan to go to the fourth level.

"Xuanyuan, you won't be able to laugh for much longer."

Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen all showed their evil smiles. They thought that Xuanyuan thought he was invincible, he would think that until he meets the Mo creatures in the next level. They would rip him into pieces.

The fourth level of the nest.

In front of them was a vast plain field and a long and winding river. The long winding river was filled with thick, dark water. The glowing grass was everywhere. It was very similar to the last level, but the air was a lot thicker and more suffocating.

Xuanyuan, Guxing and Yan Ziyun all took the antidote to detoxify the poison in the air. The other true disciples were all within the wild realm, they could withstand this even without taking an antidote.

The air in level four wouldn't affect spiritual fighters that much, even if they've only recently broken through. Yan Ziyun already possessed six dragons of strength during the selection in Moonwaste City. After the battle, her strength improved to eight dragons.

Her improvement was not a slow one. Now that she was two dragons stronger,

with her upper ranking spiritual instrument equipped, and the Moon Wheel, a top ranking spiritual weapon, she could unleash an attack power of eighteen dragons of strength.

When they entered the fourth level of the nest, they felt an even more evil atmosphere on this level. Creatures that exceeded the wild realm were most certainly looming. When a practitioner entered the wild realm, their strength would usually grow to twenty seven dragons. It was an extremely powerful difference in strength. They could leave Xuanyuan badly injured with just a single punch.

Sensing the evil in the air, Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen all mustered up their wicked smiles. With a slight jump, the three of them floated mid-air.

The three of them concentrated their fighting Qi together and formed three thousand moonlight swords and aimed at the swarm of white ghouls that were five hundred metres away.

These white ghouls all had at least three dragons of strength. Some of the stronger ones even had eighteen dragons.

Those moonlight swords shredded a hundred white ghouls into tiny pieces. However, this only attracted more ghouls to join the battle.

The screams of the white ghouls echoed through the fourth level, but Xuanyuan wasn't shaken. He was now at the peak of his strength in the master realm, he needed even more stimulation to enter the spiritual realm.

He leaped upwards and landed on top of some sharp spikes. They were extremely poisonous spikes.

Goosebumps appeared all over his body. His Boots of Floating Clouds had protected his feet from being pierced. If he was wearing a pair of ordinary boots, he would already be dead.

"Be careful, everyone. There are spikes on the ground, they are extremely poisonous!" Xuanyuan warned. Many of them took his advice and avoided stepping directly onto the spikes. They were all equipped with protective equipment, but stepping on poisonous spikes was still very unnerving. It was better to avoid them.

Xuanyuan wielded his sword and cut out a large patch of the glowing grass. The blades of grass floated through the air like fireflies. He used this to distract the ghouls before stepping out and charging into the swarm of white ghouls.

Guxing now possessed the strength of six dragons. Its skin was tough so it could maneuver its way through the spikes with ease. It wouldn't get hurt even if it stepped onto the spikes. However, Yan Ziyun was worried about Xuanyuan, she urged Guxing forward while saying, "Guxing, follow Xuanyuan!"

Many of the true disciples were inspired by Xuanyuan's fearlessness, they all rushed forward to kill their enemy. However, Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen stayed out of the fighting and went in a different direction. They excused themselves from the battle,

"We are going to tackle the demons with their strength in the king realm. Be careful!"

The excuse was indeed impeccably thought out. Fung Lie also left with them to fight the most powerful Mo creatures.

Xuanyuan already knew their plan, but he was not afraid. He was going to strengthen himself and become strong in this world. Only by putting himself in the most dangerous situations could he forge himself into a genius with the deepest potential.

His Sword of Swimming Dragons cut a path through the swarm of ghouls, immediately he cut all the white ghouls in front of him, in half.

Xuanyuan's majestic display attracted even more white ghouls. Six of them, all with six dragons of strength, were headed straight for him.

"Good timing!"

Xuanyuan wasn't scared. Instead, he swung his sword and suddenly a burst of fire ignited, cutting the white ghoul in the front into small pieces.

The remaining five ghouls thrust their claws towards Xuanyuan. He evaded the attacks by twisting his body. This technique was called "Heavenly Dragon's Reverse". It saved him from sustaining mortal injuries by twisting his body away from the attacks. He then swung his sword again and before he had even touched the ground, he had killed another three ghouls. However, his wrist was

hurting from the pressure.

These white ghouls were enormously more powerful than him, with a body that could withstand the attack from spiritual fighters with six dragons of strength. They were very strong and their bodies were tough.

If not for the incredible sharpness of his sword, Xuanyuan wouldn't be able to cut through those ghouls. His body suddenly shuddered, when he was distracted by the pain, two white ghouls had hit him from behind.

## Chapter 36 – Breakthrough! Spiritual Realm!

His armour dispersed a quarter of the strength from the attacks, but even so, Xuanyuan's body was twisting in pain underneath his armour and his Qi was boiling beneath his skin.

He wouldn't be able to take any more hits like that. The ghouls' six dragons of strength was unbearable.

He had yet to enter the spiritual realm, and couldn't release his fighting Qi to enhance his attacks. He had only been using his muscle strength to fight. All his pores were closed to keep the Qi inside his body, but if he got injured, his Qi would leak out and his strength would be reduced. The move "Heavenly Dragon Reverse" prevented his neck from being pierced and his head from being crushed.

Even though his body was still in agony, he used another technique "Angry Fist of Heavenly Dragon" while still using his sword instead of a fist. Two of the white ghouls were destroyed instantly.

The situation, however, wasn't getting any better. Over thirty white ghouls turned their heads and looked at Xuanyuan. They all had at least six dragons of strength, the strongest had eight dragons of strength.

"Brother Xuanyuan, look out!"

Yan Ziyun's Moon Wheel flew down from the sky. With one strike, she killed six enemies. The ghouls were divided into two groups, twelve of them aiming at Yan Ziyun, twelve of them at Xuanyuan. Among them, Xuanyuan needed to fight against one ghoul with seven dragons and one with eight dragons.

Yan's support relieved a little of Xuanyuan's burden. However, it was still difficult for him to defend against all the enemies.

The strongest ghoul had claws that were sharper than Guxing's and it continued to aim towards Xuanyuan's chest. The claws were so sharp, you could hear the air being cut open with each swipe.

Xuanyuan didn't dare to fight with it directly, so he quickly turned using the

force of “Heavenly Dragon’s Tail” to spin his body and his legs while resembling the powerful tail of a dragon, kicked the ghouls’ chest. It successfully diverted the attack to the side, and pushed the ghouls to the ground. At the same time, Xuanyuan thrust the sword into the eye of the white ghouls.

The ghouls with seven dragons was killed instantly as the sword pierced through its eye and into the brain. Again, Xuanyuan used the move “Heavenly Dragon Reverse” to evade the incoming attacks from nine other white ghouls. People around him who saw this thought that he seemed like a dragon twisting itself as it flew through the air. One of the ghouls managed to reach Xuanyuan’s chest with its claws. He felt a slight pain, but he was not hurt. He wielded his sword again and when the sword came down, another stream of blood exploded into the air.

These white ghouls were not intelligent and could not practice special techniques. This was an advantage to the other disciples and especially to Xuanyuan, otherwise he would’ve been long dead.

The ghouls that were dodged had all struck against the ground with their claws. Many of the black stones on the ground were crushed into dust, revealing the power from their attacks.

The other nine ghouls all had the strength of six dragons. The first strike when he ran into the swarm had not affected the more powerful ghouls, so Xuanyuan needed to attack them separately. He was calm as a sleeping child, quietly observing their movements. In an instant, he started his attack and his sword swung down using a technique from ‘The Five Taloned Dragon’. It resulted in twelve arms being immediately cut from the attacking ghouls. The pressure he faced was slightly lifted.

The six armless ghouls screamed. Without their claws, they couldn’t threaten Xuanyuan any longer unless they moved close enough to bite him, but that wouldn’t be an easy task.

However, the remaining three ghouls, including one with eight dragons of strength, were aiming directly for Xuanyuan’s head. There was nowhere to go and the attacks would snap his neck with the impact.

His mind went blank from the impending danger and Xuanyuan suddenly felt

his skin, flesh and bones were starting to tremble, stimulating his mind. He could now see the numerous veins inside his body and how they were clearly connected with the skin, flesh and bones.

There was a loud bang from inside Xuanyuan's body.

An energy suddenly surged from within Xuanyuan's body and was absorbed into his limbs.

Faint shadows resembling dragons started to appear behind him. There was one, two, three, four, five of them appeared one by one.

Xuanyuan broke through into the next realm thanks to his body sensing the life threatening danger.

He could feel the transformation of his energy. Just like what Yin Zhenluo said, the strength of bulls was a simple one. It was just simple brute strength. The strength of dragons was based upon unity and connection with the energy inside the body. This new found power concentrated all his strength and made it even more explosive.

Even when facing the force of a hundred jin attack, if the force was spread out evenly, it wouldn't inflict much damage. But if that same one hundred jin of force was condensed into a single point, the force could pierce through a body with ease. The Sword of Swimming Dragons was able to help guide the strength of Xuanyuan's powerful strikes.

He could now maneuver his sword with more ease and elegance than before, this made his strikes much more powerful. Injuring his wrist from cutting down three ghouls at once would no longer be an issue.

The moment he entered the spiritual realm, he felt that the ghouls had suddenly become much slower. That's because his body had been transformed to a higher level. With his increased strength, he grabbed one of the armless ghouls with a single hand and threw it out towards other ghouls, then he thrust his sword towards the most powerful ghoul.

"Heavenly Dragon's Pearl!"

The sword cut through the air. Since Xuanyuan was much more powerful now, his attack was much more dangerous. The ghoul with eight dragons of strength

felt the danger contained in the strike, but it had no time to react. Xuanyuan's sword thrust into its heart and killed it.

As he pulled the sword out from the ghouls heart, he swung it behind him at other ghouls and instantly killed them as well.

Xuanyuan's breakthrough surprised Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen. But they didn't have the leisure to care about it. They didn't think Xuanyuan would be able to escape from there alive even if he was now a spiritual realm fighter. The plan they had set into motion should reveal itself soon. The other group should be arriving soon.

In Xuanyuan's mind, the greedy old bugger was howling with bloodthirst and excitement.

"Kill, kill, kill, kiiiiiiiill.....Wonderful! Kill more! I haven't felt so good in a long time!"

Xuanyuan ignored Greed. In his mind the, 'Heavenly Dragon's Burning Veins' suddenly appeared with detailed information.

He was stunned. He recalled the last thing Yin Zhenluo did before she left. Her finger pointed between his eyebrows – she was actually putting all of the techniques inside his mind.

Yin Zhenluo expected great things from him, so she left him with all the secret techniques of her family. The techniques would slowly be revealed to him as he entered each realm. He was very touched by Yin Zhenluo's kindness.

"Heavenly Dragon's Burning Veins" was part of a technique called 'The Heavenly Dragon's Long Strike'.

The moment he started reciting the "Long Strike", he could feel the major veins in his arms were sucking the Qi from the air and absorbing the Qi into his body. He held his sword out, ready to strike again. This time, he would practice cultivating while fighting. He would test the limits of his body!

## Chapter 37 – Danger Descended

Before, when Xuanyuan entered a higher realm, his body was almost crushed even though he was wearing his cloud iron armour, but now he exceeded the strength of bulls and stepped into the realm of dragons, his strength in attacking and defending were enhanced exponentially.

“This kid got a breakthrough, how’s that even possible? We all entered the spiritual realm with just one dragon of strength, and he already has five!” Yuezen gasped lowly. Xuanyuan’s potential was terrifying, five times more powerful than other spiritual fighters who had just entered the realm.

“That must be because he practices a special technique. The technique should be a heaven class technique. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able achieve this.” Unlike Yuezen, Lu Feng was excited. Even though Xuanyuan was frighteningly talented, he was still an ant when compared with his strength.

“Or it could be a Xian class technique.” Tung Xuan said coldly. He surprised the other two men. They wondered how a boy managed to get his hands on such a powerful technique.

“Wait, look at what he’s doing!” Yuezen noticed Xuanyuan left the swarm and closed his eyes. He seemed to be reciting something.

With his eyes closed, Xuanyuan was sensing every part of his body. His skin and pores were like dragon scales that were sucking in the Qi from the atmosphere. His muscles were like little dragons tangled together. His bones were emanating a powerful dragon’s scent and were as hard as steel.

Through all of that, he was sensing his veins. Spiritual fighters refined their spiritual veins which filled their whole body with fighter Qi, building a foundation for the next realm, wild realm.

Only when all the veins were refined, could practitioners insert Qi into their bone marrow using their veins. When the energy within the bone marrow was stimulated, the strength of practitioners would be enhanced to a completely new level!

Marrow produced the blood, which circulated through the body. Only when all the bone marrow was refined, could the blood be heated inside the body. In turn, the five organs could be sensed using that heat. When that happened, practitioners would enter the king realm!

When the five organs were completely refined. The five elements would be activated and practitioners would enter the grandmaster realm. Grandmasters refined their blood to connect their blood with the five elements, this would allow them to increase their strength to the highest limit. If they were using a high level technique, the power of their refining would be increased, and so their body would be refined to a higher level. When they entered the imperial realm, they could use the powerful blood Qi to stimulate the hidden acupuncture points in their own bodies.

Every realm refined a different part of the body. Forcing the practitioners to sense every change and sensation within their bodies. Everything within the body was tightly connected.

Xuanyuan was extremely satisfied with his progress. He took out the pythogon grass, the gift from Fung Lie. It's now the best time for him to use it.

"The power of the grass can merge with the hidden spiritual veins in your body and force them to reveal themselves. Then you only need to recite the heavenly dragon techniques to progress. The devouring technique is always active and is absorbing the evil Qi in the nest, turning it into nutrition that can help refine your spiritual veins." The greedy old bugger said, his tone showed that he was pleased with Xuanyuan's rapid growth.

"Heavens, the boy is going to consume the pythogon grass." Lu Feng was suppressing the urge to snatch the grass from Xuanyuan.

"Nevermind that. The technique he possesses could be Heaven, or even Xian class. It's much more valuable than the grass. I know what the boy wants to do. He wants to stimulate his body to advance using life threatening battles. Challenging himself in a bloodbath will only lead to a dead end because Suntao should be here soon." Tung Xuan's words calmed Lu Feng. They were flying in mid-air and had a clear view of the situation. Suntao, a wild realm fighter, was leading an elite team of assassins, all of them were spiritual realm fighters. They

were approaching Xuanyuan from another part of the nest. All they needed to do was to wait.

Xuanyuan swallowed the grass under the envious gazes from the men hovering above and from many of the other true disciples.

He felt like a gigantic tree had suddenly taken root inside his body. All his hidden spiritual veins were instantly revealed.

Normally, spiritual veins were hidden deep inside the body. They would only be revealed one by one under constant stimulation from the connection with the rest of his body. It was a gruesome and lengthy process to refine one's veins, but with the aid of the grass, Xuanyuan's spiritual veins revealed themselves in an instant.

The moment he gulped down the grass, he could sense that his veins were connected with the rest of his body, providing it with strength.

Spiritual Qi from the universe was being absorbed into his skin, then his flesh, then his bones and finally it was stored inside his veins. His veins in turn connected with his entire body, providing it with strength.

The grass was working its magic and transforming Xuanyuan's veins. He felt incredible bursts of energy in his body.

"Aha! You have tons of impurities inside your body which are blocking your veins. The grass' own impurity is also stuck inside your veins now. You've got to use fighting Qi to force the impurity from your body. The process will not be easy." The greedy old bugger observed the veins and laughed. Xuanyuan was irritated.

But the grass was incredibly effective and had already revealed all of his veins. His strength increased by leaps and bounds. Another shadow of a dragon appeared behind him. He now had six dragons of strength.

He recited the Heavenly Dragon's Long Strike to stimulate his body, turning spiritual Qi into fighting Qi. His veins slowly started to absorb the Qi and circulate it.

Xuanyuan started to move on his tiptoes, he was avoiding the spikes on the ground. He leaped into the air and rushed towards an even stronger swarm of

white ghouls. Each of the ghouls in this crowd had at least five dragons of strength, the most powerful had ten dragons of strength.

He was floating in mid-air, a trail of white waves were trailing behind him, he resembled a Heavenly Dragon descending from the sky as he attacked the white ghouls.

Yan Ziyun was startled by Xuanyuan's leap. He could now jump over seventy metres in an instant. He was already a few hundred metres away from them, with numerous white ghouls separating them. She would no longer be able to save him from danger.

So she shouted over to Yan Liang,

"Brother Liang, go find Xuanyuan. We can't leave him alone."

He nodded. He was impressed with Xuanyuan's bravery, but he was too young and rash. He could not become too proud because of his strength. Eventually, he might make a mistake and then his life would be over in an instant.

Yan Ziyun was riding on Guxing's back. The two of them worked together and killed all enemies in their way. Yan Liang was a wild realm fighter, so none of the ghouls could hurt him. He slowly approached Xuanyuan through the swarm.

Xuanyuan didn't know how worried Yan Ziyun and Yan Liang were. He was practicing complicated techniques with his sword and killed three ghouls with a single slash. Then he used the move "Heavenly Fury", his sword started striking in all directions. Ten white ghouls, each with six dragons of strength, were cut in half. It had become so easy for him to deal with the ghouls.

"Haha, wonderful! What a great fight!"

A white ghoul with nine dragons of strength clashed against his sword. He felt an intense pain in his wrist and almost dropped his sword from the impact. He quickly regained control of his sword and directly attacked towards the white ghoul.

This move had attracted the attention of Suntao. On their way here, a dozen white ghouls with eighteen dragons of strength, and a wild class demon had reduced the elite group of eighteen down to twelve.

“The boy hasn’t noticed us, go kill him, quick!” Suntao sliced the white ghoul that was charging at him in half with his Sword of Brightsun. The smell of burnt flesh invaded the atmosphere.

The twelve assassins all had at least ten dragons of strength, the best among them had the strength of eighteen dragons. They were all wielding a Sword of Brightsun, which burned with fiery Qi. They headed straight towards Xuanyuan.

## Chapter 38 – Dilemma

With the techniques of the Heavenly Dragon, Xuanyuan charged through the swarm of white ghouls while launching deadly strikes.

The Sword of Swimming Dragons cut a path through the ghouls. The sword was cutting through anything that stood in his path, but he realized that his own strength was still too weak.

He could even kill white ghouls with eighteen bulls of strength. The trick was to strike them before they could touch him. However, if he lost his sword, he would no longer be a threat to the swarm, even though white ghouls didn't practice martial arts, they were very strong.

Entering the spiritual realm, Xuanyuan's five senses became more sensitive and his pace was much faster. Combined with the techniques of the Heavenly Dragon from the Yin Family, his strength was comparable to the top ranked spiritual realm fighters. Even if he couldn't kill the white ghouls, escaping from them would still be easy.

He had just killed another six ghouls when he suddenly felt a fiery sensation rushing towards him. He raised his guard immediately and his eyes narrowed.

The fiery power burnt all the white ghouls around it. They couldn't even fight back. Xuanyuan knew that this power was from another practitioner. Someone had come to kill him.

With an explosion, a fiery fighting Qi burnt all the surrounding objects. Dozens of white ghouls were burnt into ashes. Xuanyuan was forced to take a few steps backwards. He finally saw the thirteen men approaching. They all held a long sword burning with fiery Qi; they were all looking at Xuanyuan with murderous gazes.

No doubt, their target was him. He continued to fight the swarm of white ghouls around him while staring at the uninvited guests.

"You are Xuanyuan, aren't you?" Suntao stepped forward, asking coldly.

"That's right." He was slightly distressed. He didn't recognize the people in the

group. They were not from the School of Yuehua.

“Weren’t you within the master realm? How did you improve so quickly in such a short time?” Suntao was in the wild realm, he could clearly sense that Xuanyuan was now a fighter with six dragons of strength.

Even if you combined six hundred bulls of strength and attacked Xuanyuan, it wouldn’t be able to move him no matter how they attacked. That’s how powerful six dragons of strength truly were. If he released his fighting Qi when punching, he could negate the defense of a top ranking sacred instrument.

It was extremely difficult to achieve six dragons of strength. The elite team of Suntao only achieved this level after thirty years of harsh training. Xuanyuan improved at such alarming speeds, this was an obvious clue that he owned a Heaven class technique.

Xuanyuan smiled cruelly and released his Qi. The power of a Heaven class technique gave out a threatening pressure to the spiritual fighters opposing Xuanyuan.

“You are all from Brightsun City?”

“What a clever boy. Today is the day of your death.” Suntao was about to kill him when one of the spiritual fighters interrupted him. The man was the strongest in the group of twelve assassins. He had eighteen dragons of strength. He was called Sunli.

“Brother Tao, let me handle this. He was the one who blinded my son’s eye. I’m going to gouge his eyes out, cut out his tongue, and cripple his limbs. Then you can take his life.” Sunli walked towards Xuanyuan and released his eighteen dragons of strength. The power was three times the strength that Xuanyuan possessed and he was not like the dumb Mo creatures that were not able to use techniques. Xuanyuan was not able to fight him and win.

“No problem, brother.” Sunli was the elder of the two, but he was not as powerful as Suntao, but Suntao could understand his brother’s hatred towards Xuanyuan.

“What will be your last words before I cut out your tongue?” Said Sunli as he pointed his sword towards Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan's face was red with anger. He took a deep breath and screamed, "Master Tung, Master Lu, and Master Yuezen, Help me!"

The assassins laughed. They all knew how talented this Xuanyuan was, but he was still a coward.

Suntao said, "We should let you know – They are the one who called us here to kill you. You will surely die today."

Suntao was a wild realm fighter. His voice could travel great distances. The three evil true disciples' faces darkened when they heard him openly announce their plan, "What a useless scum, he has exposed us."

"What should we do? Suntao wants us to share the blame as well." Yuezen understood Suntao's plan immediately. He announced that information on purpose, so the blame would not only be his.

"If he really wants to drag us down with him. Of course we'll oblige." Tung Xuan snorted.

"No, we can't! We'll be blackmailed by him once this is over. There're so many disciples from our school who heard that. We can't kill them all!" Lu Feng disagreed.

"You misunderstood me. Our plan is already exposed. We'll act according to the plan and kill Xuanyuan then take his technique. Suntao will also die here. We'll kill all the disciples here who can't be trusted, Yan Liang and Yan Ziyun. If they can keep a secret, we'll spare them.

"Good plan." Yuezen and Lu Feng said at the same time. The three of them descended from the sky and hovered above Xuanyuan. Many white ghouls were being shredded into pieces from the Qi they released. The other Mo creatures didn't dare approach them. The more powerful the creatures were, the keener their senses were. They would avoid people that felt dangerous to them. The field was cleared within a two hundred metre radius of the group. Only dead ghouls remained.

Xuanyuan didn't expect them to be so straightforward and clear with their intentions. He wondered if this was going to be the end for him. He looked at Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Yuezen with contempt and said, "So this was your plan,

to lure me here and let the Sun family kill me and force them to deal with Master Fung Lie's wrath. How cruel."

Suntao shuddered when he heard that. He glared at Tung Xuan but didn't clearly show his emotions.

"You are the enemy of Brightsun City! Don't try and pit us against each other. They only helped to let us know where to find you." Suntao couldn't guess what Tung Xuan and Lu Feng were thinking, but if they decided to kill him, he wouldn't be able to survive. So he would have to let everyone here know that Tung Xuan was the master mind behind killing Xuanyuan.

"Master Sun, please don't accuse us of something we didn't do. You are the only person who wants to kill Xuanyuan; we were never on your side." Tung Xuan smiled coldly.

Suntao's face stiffened, but he laughed, "Well, the boy is going to die for sure. Who would even care if he's dead? He's only been a disciple for a single day. Why would other disciples want to get on your wrong side by siding with this boy?"

Suntao's voice was very loud. Many disciples were fighting Mo creatures. They were shocked to hear that, but turned their concentration back onto the enemies, pretending that they didn't hear anything.

But Yan Liang and Yan Ziyun had finally reached Xuanyuan's side. Yan Liang looked at Tung Xuan and Lu Feng, who were floating in mid-air. Only these two people were strong enough to kill him. Yuezen was no threat.

"First True Brother, Second True Brother, what are you doing. Xuanyuan was admitted into the sect by Master Fung Lie. Are you going to let the school of Yuehua suffer Fung Lie's fury?" Yan Liang shouted.

Yuezen smiled slyly, "Brother Yan, what would you do if we kill Xuanyuan?"

Yan Liang pointed to the fifth level of the nest and announced, "I would have to report to Master Fung Lie so he will come and punish all of you."

Lu Feng narrowed his eyes. He took out his top-ranking spiritual instrument, The Sword of Moonbeam, which was releasing a brutal Qi. He pointed it at Yan Liang and said, "Then you shall die first."

## Chapter 39 – The Death of Yan Liang

Yan Liang's face lost its colour. He shouted, "You would dare to kill your brother from the same school?" He took the Sword of Moonbeam from his sheath. Wild Qi was pouring into the tip of the sword. He pointed it towards Lu Feng.

Two brilliant moonbeams crashed into each other. Everyone could clearly feel that Lu Feng was twice as strong of Yan Liang. The Qi surrounding them was terrifying. The people within ten metres radius were thrown backwards. Xuanyuan stared at them intently in a grimace of regret – he was too weak to be of any help.

Yan Liang's blood essence was burning and in an instant he shouted, "Blood Moon Sacrifice!"

The silver moonbeam surrounding Yan Liang turned blood red, radiating murderous intentions, and the intent was directed towards Lu Feng. Lu Feng was petrified as he screamed, "You've gone mad, Yan Liang!"

Lu Feng's sword couldn't withstand the explosion of Qi from Yan Liang's side and burst into pieces. He couldn't pull back his right hand in time and his entire arm was reduced to dust.

Yan Ziyun screamed in terror, "Brother, no!!!"

Yan Liang's handsome and lean figure was now covered in blood. He smiled at Yan Ziyun, and then collapsed onto the ground, leaving a sword that was covered with blood on the ground next to him.

Yan Liang was dead. The other disciples grimaced. They knew that this would be the end of them if they disobeyed Tung Xuan and Lu Feng, just like what had happened to Yan Liang. Tung Xuan was happy to see the reactions of the other disciple, but Lu Feng was furious, because he had lost one of his arms.

"Damn it, Yan Liang. Damn..." Lu Feng cursed

Lu Feng raised his left arm and summoned an overwhelmingly powerful Qi towards the dead body of Yan Liang. Yan Ziyun wanted to run to her brother's

side, but was stopped by Xuanyuan. They couldn't do anything to stop Yan Liang's body from being crushed into a bloody pulp.

Xuanyuan was angry. He screamed in his mind to Greed,

"Greed! Can't you do anything? Can't you kill them? You've devoured so much life essence; there must be something you can do!"

"It's not that easy. You must learn to deal with situations like this, if you are to become the great devouring emperor. The world is not perfect. Sooner or later, someone will give their life for you. Don't worry, you will get through this."

Greed's voice was completely deprived of emotion, "The previous devouring emperor waged a war against the other kings and emperors. Even I was injured during that war. The life essence of these Mo creatures didn't help much with my recovery. Well, there is someone who is lurking in the dark. I'll see how long they continue to watch."

Xuanyuan was startled. Who could that be?

Lu Feng came down from the air and picked up Yan Liang's sword and robbed him of his ring. He stared at Yan Ziyun cruelly, "You will be buried along with your brother. All of your Yan family will die for destroying my arm! Yueteng, aren't you the one who's always fancied Yan Ziyun? Would you dare to do her in front of all these people?"

Yueteng, who was standing behind Yuezen, grew very excited. His mind's full of obscene thoughts as he said, "Of Course!"

Yan Ziyun became extremely pale. The other true disciples were heartless. None of them stood up for her. Xuanyuan's face darkened. He yelled at Lu Feng,

"Kill me if that is your goal. Let Yan Ziyun go."

"Oh? Sure. We could let her go, if you fight against Sunli. If you win, she will be free. If you lose...how about you kill your own wolf? I've heard that you grew up with it. How would it feel to kill your friend?"

Lu Feng knew Xuanyuan's weakness, and forced him into this dilemma. To fight was the only way out.

Yan Ziyun shivered and looked at Xuanyuan. Sunli was a fighter with eighteen

dragons of strength. Even if there were eighteen hundred wild bulls pulling him, he could not be moved. Xuanyuan only had six dragons; there was no way he could win.

But there was no choice so Xuanyuan replied,

“Deal. I’ll fight.”

Lu Feng’s face was distorted with evilness, “We’ll play with you. Don’t think that you can run away. You’re just as weak as an insect before us. We are simply like cats chasing mice. Before we kill you, we want to play with you properly!”

Xuanyuan didn’t reply to that. He just turned to Yan Ziyun and said, “Trust me!”

Yan Ziyun contained her uneasiness and nodded, “I trust you!”

Her words invoked a few chuckles from the crowd. Yueteng was horny and thrust his crotch in an obscene gesture, “First Sister, You’ll enjoy what I have planned later.”

Suntao didn’t think that Tung Xuan and Lu Feng would be so cruel to their fellow disciples. Brightsun City was dragged into this chaos and could no longer wash their hands clean of this crime, so he decided to get as much out of this as possible, “I know Xuanyuan has a heaven class technique. I would like a share in his technique as well. In return, my city will send the two of you many beautiful girls and lots of money each year. How does that sound, do we have a deal?”

Suntao was a cunning merchant. The offer he gave was irresistible. Both Tung Xuan and Lu Feng were tempted. They needed lots of money to practice martial arts. For Lu Feng, if he could get more money, he could buy better medicine which would allow him to slowly regenerate his arm.

Tung Xuan had decided it was better to spare Suntao’s life. Letting Suntao live and having an extra income was the best solution. It was a beneficial transaction.

“All right. We’ll do that.”

Suntao was relieved when he heard the two king realm fighters’ answer. Heaven class techniques were not for sale even with all his wealth. It would be

perfect if he could get his hands on it. He turned to his older brother, Sunli, and said, “Brother, take care of the boy.”

Sunli smiled crookedly, “Don’t worry. I’ll leave him an arm so he can slaughter his own wolf.”

The fight began instantly. Sunli was extremely fast. He picked up his sword of Brightsun and thrust directly toward Xuanyuan’s head. The overwhelming strength almost suffocated Xuanyuan. He felt like all the air was sucked from his lungs. Sunli’s attack contained a burning sensation which made it difficult for Xuanyuan to protect himself.

Xuanyuan held the Sword of Swimming Dragons in his right hand and picked up another lower rank instrument with his left. The sword he used was the standard sword that was given to all inner disciples. He threw it directly towards Sunli’s eyes. His aim was incredibly precise, but Sunli didn’t evade, instead he used his weapon to block the sword and shattered the sword on impact.

“Child’s play”

However, Sunli was slowed down by the attack and Xuanyuan exploited that opportunity to retreat away. He was wearing his Boots of Floating Clouds, jumping seventy metres with each bound. He was very fast.

However, Sunli was faster than him. He was after all a top spiritual realm fighter; he had already refined every inch of his veins and could release fighting Qi as he pleased. He could jump a hundred metres with a single leap. His powerful leap even left two deep indentations in the ground.

Yueteng smirked at Yan Ziyun while Xuanyuan ran away, “First sister, your little lover boy left you with the wolf. He has abandoned you!”

Yan Ziyun paid no heed. She knew Xuanyuan did everything for a reason. She just continued to look on.

Deep inside the nest was darkness with the swarm of white ghouls scattered everywhere. Xuanyuan tried to run towards the more powerful groups of white ghouls.

Suntao sensed there’s something wrong, he said, “Cunning kid. He’s running to where the Mo are dwelling! He’s playing tricks!”

Tung Xuan shrugged and said, “Who cares, Fung Lie won’t have any excuse if he gets killed by the Mo.”

He would rather that be the result, so Fung Lie wouldn’t intervene.

Sunli laughed when he had almost caught up to Xuanyuan, “There is use in running away!”

Just as he said this, Xuanyuan suddenly turned around and did a very complicated manoeuvre called “Heavenly Dragon Surging into the Sky”; this attack was aimed directly at Sunli’s chest.

This was a Heaven class technique that he used. Sunli was suppressed by the imposing power of the heavenly dragon. It was like Xuanyuan had become a real dragon.

The Sword of Swimming Dragons let out a small cry and revealed its devastating power. Sunli was scared, because Xuanyuan was planning to kill him by sacrificing his own life.

Sunli immediately defended himself using his Sword of Brightsun and dispersed the power of Xuanyuan’s attack. He managed to loosen Xuanyuan’s grip from the sword, causing him to drop it, and it pushed him back a few metres, into a few weaker white ghouls.

“Hahaha, how are you going to fight me without your sword?” The most frightening thing about Xuanyuan was his sword. Now Sunli had nothing to fear.

Yan Ziyun was drowning in icy coldness. She shivered. Xuanyuan was planning to unleash a kamikaze attack, but it was impossible now.

Was this really the end?

## Chapter 40 – Servant and Master

Sunli laughed. He brandished his Sword of Brightsun and closed the distance between him and Xuanyuan.

In this urgent situation, Xuanyuan grabbed two white ghouls near him and threw them towards Sunli. The ghouls were a lot bigger than normal people, so they blocked Xuanyuan from Sunli's vision.

Then he quickly went for the dagger strapped to his waist, and concentrated a small amount of fighting Qi onto it. He thrust forward using "Heavenly Dragon's Pearl", which drained all his remaining strength.

Sunli released the fiery Qi with his sword and cut the white ghouls into four separate pieces. This time, he had underestimated the power of Xuanyuan's final attack. He quickly tried to block the dagger using his sword as he did with the other attacks. However, the dagger pierced through the sword and straight into Sunli's chest. Everyone witnessing the scene was in shock.

A mysterious power was released when the dagger entered Sunli's chest and it sucked out all his life essence. Nothing seemed to be different on the outside, but the life essence of Sunli was completely drained.

Xuanyuan ran up and pulled his dagger from Sunli's chest and picked up the Sword of Swimming Dragons on the ground. He pointed the sword towards Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Suntao and Yuezen while smirking, "You, lost. Release Yan Ziyun."

Finally, everyone realized that Sunli had lost. He was dead!

Yan Ziyun was over the moon. She was riding on Guxing and ran to Xuanyuan's side. She knew that Xuanyuan had a plan, but the ability to defeat a man with the strength of eighteen dragons while only having the strength of six dragons himself, was close to a miracle.

Guxing was also very cocky. It raised its head and snarled contemptuously at Tung Xuan and Lu Feng, who were hovering in mid-air.

"So what? Xuanyuan, do you realize that we are the ones who make the rules; you are going to lose no matter what you do. Do you understand?" Tung Xuan

smiled coldly.

“That’s right. We are the cat, you are the mouse. We only want to see you struggle, but you are a pretty good mouse.” Yuezen added.

“Sunli is too weak.” Lu Feng glanced at the dead body, then turned to Xuanyuan and smiled, “Who do you think you are? Ordering us to release her? I will let Yueteng rape her right here, right now. Let’s see what you can do about it.”

Xuanyuan’s face darkened, while Yan Ziyun grew even paler. Xuanyuan had already anticipated this possibility.

Lu Feng then dragged Yan Ziyun away. Even though he lost one arm, Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun still weren’t able to do anything against him.

Then a bright light burst forth in front of everyone. Lu Feng had already been slashed into two halves; his organs neatly fell into a pile on the ground.

An old man shakily walked up to Xuanyuan and knelt with one knee, “My name is Wu Ming, a servant to the eldest master. He has ordered me to protect you. Young master Xuanyuan did not disappoint Lady Zhenluo, for breaking through the realms at such a formidable pace. An incredible genius indeed.”

Behind the old man were ten people. They were all clearly assassins. All of them were among the strongest wild realm fighters. Xuanyuan was quite taken back by their cold aura. It was a pure murderous feeling. Each of their gazes was like a sharp knife, ready to bring forth death. He was also stunned by what the old man said. Then he recalled his conversation with the old man that he killed in the tree house. He suddenly realized something,

“He looked just the old man from the tree house! He must be from the Yin Family. The eldest master? Ah, should be master Zhenluo’s older brother. I knew it. He must have been the person following me in the dark. No wonder that greedy old bugger said wanted to see how long he would wait. Yan Liang wouldn’t have died if he had come forward sooner. He was testing me.”

Xuanyuan understood the situation immediately. His composure went through a hundred and eighty degree transformation. He looked at Tung Xuan, Yuezen and Suntao and announced slowly and coldly, “Good. Now, kill them. All of

them. Wait, no, don't kill all of them. Just cut off their legs and destroy their cultivation. Then throw them to the ghouls. Remember to take all of their money before you toss away the bodies. Don't waste anything."

The men in mid-air were shocked. Wu Ming nodded with a straight face, he said, "I shall obey."

He stood up and a black mirror appeared behind him, giving out a scary atmosphere. Xuanyuan stood behind Wu Ming and felt that Wu Ming's breath as sharp as a blade. His torso was withered, but he was full of vitality from the five elements. His heartbeat was like a strong drum. He was extremely powerful.

Tung Xuan was pale from the overwhelming power coming from Wu Ming. He was among the peak of king realm fighters. Tung screamed,

"Who are you?"

Wu Ming didn't answer. With a single signal, the ten assassins behind him moved instantly. Xuanyuan felt like they were swords that had just been unsheathed, ready to kill. It filled Xuanyuan with an icy coldness.

Xuanyuan was not the only one who was stunned. Tung Xuan, a modestly accomplished king realm fighter, was shaking. He knew that these people were top level assassins. They would do anything, even give up their lives, in order to kill their target.

They rushed forward like a terrifying storm. All the white ghouls that were in their way were minced into pulp.

In a few seconds, they had already rushed forward over hundred metres, and the heads of the men in Sun family were already rolling across the floor. A few moments later, there were a total of seventeen headless bodies on the ground. Xuanyuan's bloodthirst was increased as he looked on.

"Very nice. Don't kill the rest. Just take their legs. Wu Ming, do it now!"

Wu Ming didn't dare to contradict Xuanyuan's order. A bright light shot from the black mirror towards Tung Xuan's lower body.

"Lower class earth instrument."

Tung Xuan screamed. There's no time to react. The difference in power

between a top rank spiritual instrument and a lower rank earth instrument was tenfold. This mirror was called “Black Death”. It was almost a middle class earth instrument. It was clearly not a fair fight.

The violent fighting Qi from Wu Ming was absorbed by the mirror. A black light was shot towards Tung Xuan’s legs like a laser.

Tung Xuan screamed loudly as he fell from the sky. Blood was pouring from his mouth. He was gravely injured.

The ten assassins moved instantly. Yuezen, Yueteng and Suntao’s legs were all cut off and they fell heavily onto the ground. Shaking and screaming in pain.

Horror. Even though they were in the same realm, some were even more powerful, but they couldn’t even stop the assassins removing their legs. The assassins were born from battle and murder. Their will to kill shook even the strongest men.

The other true disciples didn’t expect that the situation would change so dramatically and so quickly. It was too late to regret the past. They could only hope that Xuanyuan wouldn’t blame them for not getting involved. Luckily, one of them had joined Tung Xuan in mocking Xuanyuan. They only needed to stay silent and mind their own business.

The true disciples of the school continued to pretend nothing was happening and continued their fights against the white ghouls. Xuanyuan didn’t say anything. His attention was on the assassins. He couldn’t see any of the assassins’ faces. They stood up straight, eyes cold and clear. Xuanyuan took a deep breath. It’s time. He walked up and asked,

“Wu Ming, are these the best assassins of the Yin family?”

## Chapter 41 – An Eye for an Eye

Wu Ming bowed to Xuanyuan. But his loyalty was not to Xuanyuan, but to the Yin family. Xuanyuan was under the good graces of the Yin family because he proved to be the genius Yin Zhenluo had expected. Wu Ming would be loyal to Lady Zhenluo's disciple.

"No. They were hired hands. We were in the jurisdiction of the Fighting Dragons Sect, not the Eastern Dynasty. We have to be careful." Wu Ming replied to the question.

Xuanyuan nodded, satisfied, "Great. It's good to be careful. We should utilize them if they are hired hands. Get them to kill all the creatures on level four and give me all the elixirs before they leave."

Wu Ming bowed again. He said slowly, "I shall obey master Xuanyuan. All of you, go."

Fierce fighting Qi exploded from the assassins. Without hesitation, they slaughtered the white ghouls and demons around them. It was like a training session for them, so none of them lifted an eyebrow at the order.

Tung Xuan was petrified. He didn't have Yan Liang's courage to sacrifice himself, "Who is this Xuanyuan? A king realm fighter bowed to him and called himself his servant. Only people from the powerful families in the Eastern Dynasty would have that power. But I've never heard of someone called Xuanyuan!"

He was thinking anxiously on how to beg Xuanyuan to let him go, when he sensed that Xuanyuan was looking towards him. He trembled at the stare, "Master Xuanyuan, please spare my life. It was all Lu Feng's plan. I wasn't responsible!"

Xuanyuan looked at Tung Xuan coldly, then he pointed his sword at Tung's chest and pierced it into his heart. But Tung Xuan was still a king realm fighter. He had already started to refine his five organs. Fighting Qi had concentrated itself in his heart. A cut from a sword could not take away his life, but it was still painful. He screamed in pain as he said, "Master Xuanyuan, please let me go! I'm

willing to give you all my wealth. It is not on me. But just let me go, I'll give you all of it!"

"Tell me, where's your money?" Xuanyuan twisted the sword, excruciating pain tortured Tung Xuan, who went into a state of convulsion. Seeing all the blood spilling onto the ground, Suntao, Yuezen and Yueteng all grew very pale.

"I'll spare you if you tell me where you hid your money."

"It's in the Moonsky City, under the Full Moon Cave of the Fighting Dragons Sect. I bought a mansion there, on the west side of the city, next to a thousand year-old pine tree. All the wealth I gathered all these years is in there!" Tung Xuan grew even more pale and pitiable with his lips trembling. He was a spiteful character so Xuanyuan wasn't able to pity him. He plucked his sword out from his chest and nodded to Guxing, ""Very well. Guxing, bite out his throat."

"Master, you said you are not going to kill me!" The wolf was approaching and Tung Xuan screamed at the sight.

"I said I won't kill you, but Guxing will. Die!" Guxing leaped forward under Xuanyuan's command.

"Then we shall die together!" Tung Xuan laughed hysterically, his faced twisted.

Tung Xuan started to release his fighting Qi, but Wu Ming was faster. His mirror shot out a bright light and erased Tung Xuan's Qi. Guxing then tore through his throat with its sharp fangs.

Yuezen, Yueteng and Suntao were all begging profusely, but Xuanyuan ignored them. He robbed all the valuables from the dead body, putting Tung Xuan's ring on his finger, and taking his set of top ranking spiritual instruments.

It included a sword, an armour, a pair of boots and a jade pendant. They were all made by the Smith Elder of the School, who was a grandmaster fighter. The instruments he made were all great quality. Usually, a grandmaster realm fighter would be capable of creating low ranked earth instruments.

He stored the set of instruments inside his own fighting ring. Yan Ziyun walked up to him with a sword in her hand.

“You take care of Yueteng.” Xuanyuan didn’t want to waste any time, so he quickly chopped off the heads of Yuezen and Suntao himself and robbed their bodies of their instruments, rings and money. Then he also took Lu Feng’s valuables and Yan Liang’s ring. It was a great windfall.

Wu Ming thought that Xuanyuan was funny. He wouldn’t regard the things Xuanyuan took as treasures, but no matter the value it was taken by Xuanyuan.

“First Sister, I was wrong. Please don’t kill me. Lu Feng forced me to do it. Otherwise he would’ve killed me.” Yueteng was shaking violently and had urinated inside his clothes. The stench from the urine disgusted Yan Ziyun.

“This is for killing my brother.” She said angrily. His head was then quickly separated from his body.

Xuanyuan took his valuables as well. Yan Ziyun didn’t know what to think about Xuanyuan’s behaviour. He just smiled bitterly, and tried to comfort Yan Ziyun, “We can’t bring back the dead. Brother Liang died in order to save us. We could only avenge his death. Ziyun, don’t let this trouble you.”

She understood, of course, but she still refused when Xuanyuan offered Tung Xuan and Lu Feng’s rings. “They are filthy.” she said.

Xuanyuan only rumbled, “I don’t mind it being filthy.”

She was amused by his reaction. The only comfort she could draw from this was the thought that Yan Liang could finally rest in peace. The path of martial arts was full of danger. She knew this day would come when one of them would die. It would be either her or her brother. At least, she was able to avenge his death. She would not continue to dwell in sadness for long.

“Wu Ming, kill all the Mo creatures in level four, then we can go to level five.”

“I shall obey.” The old man followed the order. Everything that the light from the Black Death mirror touched was obliterated immediately.

Xuanyuan also dived into the swarm of white ghouls with the Sword of Swimming Dragons again. He recited his technique.

Xuanyuan was carrying Wu Dong’s ring and sword. Wu Ming found it ironic that he now had to protect the boy who killed his adopted brother, but this was

his duty. Xuanyuan was a genius. Under his master's order, he needed to protect him, even if the boy killed his closest friend.

Twelve hours later, level four of the nest was covered with bodies. A dozen true disciples died in the fight, the rest was from the corpses and demons.

The Assassins cleared the scene. They gave Xuanyuan a hundred and twenty elixirs from white ghouls and twelve elixirs from the demons. The tremendous wealth was now safely inside Xuanyuan's deep pockets. Xuanyuan then dismissed the assassins. It cost quite a lot to hire them, but Wu Ming paid for the cost, and Xuanyuan earned a lot of money from them. This rendered Wu Ming speechless.

The assassins left without a word. The disciples knew very well that the old man was the scariest of the group.

"Master Xuanyuan, about what happened..." A disciple came up, but Xuanyuan didn't bother to look at him, he only said coldly,

"No need to explain. From now on, you have to swear loyalty to Yan Ziyun or I'll kill you here." Xuanyuan threatened. None of the disciples dared to object. Yan Ziyun was a popular leader in Yuehua City. It's not problematic for them if they had to answer to her.

"We shall obey, Master Xuanyuan." The remaining seventy true disciples answered in unison.

"Let's go to level five. Perhaps we can find Master Fung Lie there." Then he turned around and left. Yan Ziyun, Guxing and all the disciples walked behind him. Wu Ming frowned, but he followed nonetheless.

## Chapter 42 – Princess of Mo

The entrance of level five was on a tall platform. The atmosphere was surrounded by an intense evil Qi. Xuanyuan was the first to approach the edge of the platform and was the first to be shocked by the sight. Yan Ziyun, Guxing, and all the remaining true disciples followed.

Blood tainted the ground and created rivers. Body parts were scattered everywhere.

Uncountable demons were now dead and their bodies littered the entire landscape. Among them were some Yaksha, a Mo creature they've yet to encounter. Yaksha were extremely powerful, as strong as a king realm fighter.

Far from where they stood, Fung Lie was on his horse fighting with a man holding an axe. There was no apparent winner in the confrontation.

Fighting Qi of black and grey crashed against each other. Fung Lie was holding a long spear called "Wind Spirit". It was an upper ranked earth class instrument. Combined with Fung Lie's own martial arts technique, the spear was intimidating and deadly.

Wu Ming was surprised to see Fung Lie, a true disciple of the Fighting Dragons Sect in this location. Even though he was only ranked thirty third amongst all the true disciples, he was the youngest. He was also the favourite of many elders in the Sect. Wu Ming knew that the School of Yuehua was under Fung Lie's "Order of Fighting Dragon" to cleanse the nest. It was public information, that's how he was able to find Xuanyuan.

Numerous thoughts flashed through Wu Ming's mind. Even though he was a servant of the Yin Family, he didn't practice the Yin Family's technique. His identity was classified so Fung Lie wouldn't know his real identity. Perhaps there was something he could do.

The tall man with an axe was forced back by Fung Lie's attacks. Behind the man, there were ten figures in black capes. They were all Mo creatures, Ghosts, capable of reciting techniques that used their fighting Qi to summon other creatures.

The Ghosts were surrounding an altar full of mysterious markings. They turned their fighting Qi into beams of lights which shot towards the altar.

“Guizhan, you all have to die today. How dare to slaughter my fellow humans while I’m on patrol. I’ll kill you all.” Fung Lie’s voice was overbearing. He wielded his two-metre long Wind Spirit spear, his hair flowing with his movements. His handsome face was filled with killing intent and annoyance. He looked extremely formidable.

“You know full well we can’t control all of the Mo creatures with low intelligence. If we really want to kill your people, there would be a lot more people dead. Your people have come here to kill us, all the time. Fung Lie, don’t push it.” Replied Guizhan as he coughed up blood, he looked like a strong, huge man.

“How could a Mo creature be trusted? You don’t stay in your own territory, but come to our territories. You are definitely plotting something. Don’t think that I don’t know you’re stalling!” Fung Lie wouldn’t give the creature time to relax. He again wielded his spear. His horse gave out a loud huff and a string of fire was shot out from its nostrils, which combining with Fung Lie’s wind, that was sent rushing towards Guizhan.

Guizhan poured all of his black fighting Qi into his axe to defend against Fung Lie’s attack. At this moment, a blood red light shot out from the altar and the Ghosts howled,

“The sacrifice of blood and flesh calls for the shadow! The Eldest Princess has descended!”

From the tall platform, Xuanyuan could see that numerous demons and yakshas started to burn. Their blood and flesh formed into a stream which bore into the ground, leaving many powerful and tempting elixirs behind. Xuanyuan beamed and ordered Wu Ming, “Quick, grab all those elixirs for me. They’re all worth lots of money.”

Wu Ming was speechless. These elixirs were valuable indeed, even he wouldn’t even leave them behind, but even though he was the one doing the work, they all belonged to Xuanyuan. A swirl of Qi circled in Wu Ming’s palm and sucked all of the elixirs in towards them. There were a hundred and twenty wild class

demon elixirs, and eight king class yaksha elixirs. It was worth a fortune.

Feeling the disturbance of fighting Qi, Fung Lie turned around to see Xuanyuan leading the disciples from the school. He ordered hastily, "Xuanyuan, get out of here, leave the nest. You've accomplished your mission. You can't survive down here."

Xuanyuan slowly put all the elixirs inside his ring and said, "Ziyun, take Guxing and the rest of the disciples out of here. I'm protected by Wu Ming, I'll be safe. I want to see what will happen."

Yan Ziyun jumped up onto Guxing. She didn't try to convince Xuanyuan to leave with them. She knew he wouldn't do anything that he's uncertain of.

"Retreat!" She ordered.

All the true disciples were wild realm fighters, but even so, they wouldn't be able to defend themselves here. Wu Ming, on the other hand, was a king realm fighter. He could protect Xuanyuan, especially with such a distance between them and the fight.

The altar was shaking. An incredibly suppressing atmosphere oozed out from the altar, Xuanyuan and Wu Ming could also feel it spreading through the air.

"Imperial realm fighter. It's the pressure from Imperial realm fighter!" Wu Ming said lowly and hoarsely. "Go. If we don't go now, we won't stand a chance. Even if it's just the shadow of an imperial fighter, I won't be able to defend you."

Xuanyuan waved his hand, urging Wu Ming to calm down. He concentrated on what was happening.

"What are you so scared of? Master Fung Lie hasn't run yet. We are so far away. We'll be fine." He said.

Many magical symbols gathered in the middle of the altar. Then a blood red beam turned into the silhouette of a woman. The woman had bright red makeup and fiery long hair dancing by her side. Her face was delicate, seductive and sultry. Her snow white bosom supported a black magical lotus. Her long legs lightly rested in mid air.

A wave of seductive power spread in every direction. Wu Ming wasn't affected

by it, but Xuanyuan was. His mind was filled with illusions of beautiful women who were naked before him. He was extremely tempted.

Luckily, his jade pendent shook and exploded into powder, it injected a clear stream of clarity into his mind. His head cleared up immediately. Xuanyuan was shocked, “What was that witchcraft?”

Fung Lie was still sitting tightly on his horse. He showed no emotions in front of the sight. His voice was cold,

“The Eldest Princess, Shitan of the Mo Dynasty. You’ve reached the Imperial realm, but how can you defeat me with just your shadow?”

An adorable girl walked out from behind Shitan. She looked like a porcelain doll, she was very tiny. However, the black robe wrapped around her body indicated that she had a perfect female figure.

“Elder sister, so many Mo warriors died. How sad.” Her voice was childish and soothing, making it hard to imagine her as an enemy.

“Shiguan, lend me your fire.” From the shadow of the girl called Shiguan, a fire sparked from her chest and entered into Shitan’s body.

“The youngest princess, Shiguan. She’s a grandmaster alchemist, with the body of all alchemy! She can control many kinds of fire!” Fung Lie’s calmness vanished. He kicked lightly on his horse and released fighting Qi from his entire body. The horse ran towards the entrance immediately.

“Fung Lie, you overstepped the boundary. I’ve only just entered the realm of Imperial fighter, but my shadow is enough if I want to destroy you.” Shitan’s face was cold. She spread her fingers and five strands of fire shot towards Fung Lie.

Chapter 43 – The Trick

Fung Lie noticed Xuanyuan and the old man hadn't left yet so he waved his hand to bring them out with a strong swirl of wind.

Five strands of fire slashed through the air with mind numbing noise. Goosebumps crept up all over Xuanyuan's body, while the fire directly hit Fung Lie and burnt through his armour. Fung Lie was obviously shaken but he recited his technique once again and using that strength he brought the three of them back to level four.

Seeing that Fung Lie escaped, Guizhan, shouted with frustration, "He ran away, I'll get him!"

But just when he tried to step out, he coughed three times, each cough released more blood from his mouth.

Shitan said coldly, "Don't. Fung Lie was hurt, but you won't survive if he put his all into killing you. Their ambush killed many of our creatures. Open the gateways to the other nests and get some new blood. You are not going into the human realm to kill the humans any time soon. Fung Lie didn't destroy level five so we can keep the connections with the other nests safe. We might not have such good fortune next time. There shall be a great war between Mo and human, but now is not the time."

Guizhan bowed at Shitan's words, and slowly dragged his injured body back when Shiguan's soothing voice rang in his ears, "Take care of your wounds. Everything in its own time."

Guizhan bowed again, "Thank you for your graciousness, Princess."

Shitan glanced at her younger sister and sighed. They then disappeared into thin air.

\*\*\*\*\*

Under Fung Lie's protection, Xuanyuan and Wu Ming escaped safely. Fung Lie fell off his horse and there were five finger-sized wounds on his body. The skin surrounding the wounds was still burning. He then spat out a mouthful of black blood. In order to contain the fire that was rampaging inside his body, he

immediately sat in cross-legged position.

“It’s Sura Fire. It’s ranked thirty-sixth of fighter’s fire. Lucky it was only a shadow. Otherwise, I’d be long dead.”

Xuanyuan took out two water based healing pills and gave them to Fung Lie. Since water suppressed fire, it helped a lot with the wound even though it was only a grade four medicine. Fung Lie looked to Xuanyuan appreciatively.

“Is this place safe, master Fung Lie? They won’t follow us?” Xuanyuan asked.

“Don’t worry. They summoned the shadows from the altar. Those evil women cannot hurt us once we leave the range of the altar and Guizhan is badly injured. He won’t come out either. I need the two of you to shield me while I’m healing my wounds. My healing method cannot be disturbed, or I’ll have to start again, and the fire will spread. I have to force the Sura fire out of my body immediately.” Fung Lie instructed them. Then he began healing. Swirls of wind created by fighting Qi was surrounding him.

He took the pills from Xuanyuan and also added some of his own. They started the healing process, but he needed time to recover.

“Young master, do you know that master Fung Lie is from the Fighting Dragons Sect?” Wu Ming suddenly asked.

Xuanyuan’s heart jumped. He recalled the grudges between the Yin Family and the sect. He replied only after a few moments of consideration.

“Of course. What about it?”

“Our Yin Family is part of the Eastern Dynasty, the enemy of the sect. Fung Lie is one of the best disciples of the sect. If we seize the opportunity and bring back his head to the Yin Family, Elder master will appreciate it.” Wu Ming said heavily.

Fung Lie was shocked, “Xuanyuan was from the Yin Family of the Eastern Dynasty? Damn it!”

“How dare you? Master Fung Lie is my mentor. I will not kill him. Get out!” Xuanyuan’s face darkened. He was angered by Wu Ming’s methods, he even sacrificed Yan Liang to test him. He was not loyal to Xuanyuan, he is only truly loyal to the Yin Family. First, Wu Dong came to kill him, now, this Wu Ming came

to protect him. All of this sounded too flimsy.

Wu Ming grew angry at Xuanyuan's words. He was being provoked by the boy who killed Wu Dong!

"Then young master won't kill Fung Lie, is that right? So Elder master was right, you plan to give our secret technique to the sect to promote yourself. If that's so, I'll have to kill you." Wu Ming instantly accused him of something he hadn't done, leaving Xuanyuan speechless.

"Wu Ming, what a scoundrel you are. If not for Master Fung Lie, you would be dead already and you want to kill him? I know what you're thinking. You're afraid that I'll leak the secret techniques given by Master Zhenluo. So you want to kill me. Well, do it then, no need to find excuses." Xuanyuan already unsheathed his sword and pointed it towards Wu Ming.

Fung Lie wanted to stop the healing process but then he heard what Xuanyuan said and thought to himself, "So that's why, the Yin Family was afraid that he would bring the Yin's Family technique to the sect..."

Wu Ming smirked. With a lightning-fast movement, Xuanyuan was left with no sword and a sore wrist.

"Want to kill me with your strength? What a laughable idea." Wu Ming turned the Sword of Swimming Dragon towards Fung Lie. Xuanyuan stood in front of him and looked at Wu Ming coldly, "You'll have to kill me first."

At the same time, he was shouting inwardly, "Greedy old bugger, swallow him. These stupid servants of the Yin Family have gone too far."

"Hahaha, no problem, I can take care of a top ranked king realm fighter now, but we best use sneaky methods."

Wu Ming said without emotion, "You think you can stop me? Even though Lady Zhenluo put the 'Light of the Heavenly Dragon' on you, don't think that I can't kill you."

In fact, Wu Ming didn't dare harm Xuanyuan, but he was extremely fast. It wouldn't be a problem to kill Fung Lie, even with Xuanyuan between them. He wielded the sword and aimed at the cocoon formed by wind and Qi.

At this time, Xuanyuan took out his mysterious dagger and used the move “Heavenly Dragon’s Pearl”, thrusting towards Wu Ming.

The old man smiled with contempt, “Your dagger is no doubt very sharp, but I’m wearing a lower ranked earth class armour, you cannot hurt me...”

He couldn’t finish his sentence before a scary force sliced through the armour. The devouring power was unleashed, numerous black threads began to cover Wu Ming.

A clever thought rushed through Xuanyuan’s mind and he shouted excitedly, “Wu Ming, you old man, don’t you dare run away, I have already unleashed my ‘Light of the Heavenly Dragon’!”

Then Greed quickly understood Xuanyuan’s plan and screamed at Wu Ming’s voice, “Damn it, you devious scum. I didn’t think you could use the ‘Light of the Heavenly Dragon’ that was placed on you. Wait until the Elder Master comes, you’ll surely die. Ahhhh..... my body....”

When Greed finished, there was nothing left of Wu Ming other than a fighting ring, with twice the space of Wu Dong’s ring.

Xuanyuan finally relaxed and turned to Fung Lie. “Don’t worry, Master Fung Lie, I’ve already got rid of him.”

“You are indeed a devious scum. Hahahaha.... but this old man is a lot more nutritious than the ghouls.” Greed sounded happy.

Xuanyuan didn’t want to answer. He was now calculating his profits from what he had acquired on this expedition.

252 master class elixirs.

280 spiritual class elixirs.

132 wild class elixirs.

8 king class elixirs.

With only the elixirs, it was a huge windfall already. Xuanyuan was determined to purchase a full set of lower ranking earth class instruments after he collected his rewards from the judgment stand.

From Tung Xuan, Lu Feng, Yuezen, Yueteng and Suntao's fighting rings, there were 50,000 master coins, and some more spiritual coins. Combining this with his own money, he now had more than 100,000 spiritual coins.

There were even 3,000 wild coins from Tung Xuan and Lu Feng. The strongest true disciples were rich.

And that didn't count all the spiritual class instruments from them and all of the precious items Xuanyuan didn't recognize. In a nutshell, Xuanyuan had plenty of money...

## Chapter 44 – Massacre

After he counted everything, Xuanyuan looked up at the Dragon Scale Horse. The horse was explosive like a great fire. It already had the strength of a wild realm fighter, which was even stronger than him. It didn't take much to take care of it. It only required two strength replenishing pills a day.

He didn't waste any time and started to practice. Through the connection between his skin, flesh and bones, Xuanyuan could feel his veins. They were all very flexible yet tough, wrapping around his body like dragons. However, there were many impurities trapped inside his veins and the impurities were incredibly dense.

The greedy old bugger revealed his schadenfreude, "Hahaha, the Body of All Creation can absorb everything in the universe, but it also contains a great deal of impurities. Even though the pythogon grass strengthened your veins, it still left behind the impurity. Work on your veins. When you flush out of the impurity, you'll be extremely powerful."

Xuanyuan rolled his eyes at Greed. He absorbed a large amount of the surrounding evil air. The evil air was a type of the Qi in the universe, but it would impair a normal human's intellect and drive them mad. However, it wouldn't hurt the Body of All Creation. Xuanyuan recited the Heavenly Dragon's long strikes and began his practice.

Each punch from the long strikes resembled a dragon's claw. It contained an immense crushing power. With each attack, Xuanyuan punched out a dragon-shaped white wave. The sound was similar to a dragon's roar.

Fighting Qi was being refined with his continuous practice and concentrated into his veins. With the help of the Pearl from Yin Zhenluo, the evil Qi transformed into fighting Qi and was absorbed into his body with a speed that was hundred times faster than normal.

Each strike was exhausting. He had to take a strength replenishing pill every eight hours in order to continue his practice.

The veins between his arms were densely packed with impurity. It was being

torn apart and refined by the fighting Qi. The process, however, was extremely painful, but Xuanyuan endured. His strength increased with every second.

Three days past. All of his strength replenishing pills were gone and he hadn't slept during these three days. But at last, he refined all of the impurities within the veins in his arms. His strength quickly enhanced from six dragons to fourteen. His progress was alarmingly quick. Surely, he would be unimaginably powerful when he refined all his veins!

His arms were now full of fighting Qi, and he was able to release his Qi to attack. Even without his weapon, he could still kill anyone in the spiritual realm.

Xuanyuan finished his practice and was breathing heavily when the cocoon of wind finally burst. Fung Lie was completely healed. He stood up with overwhelming energy. Much more powerful than three days ago.

"Very well done, Xuanyuan. You have saved my life. Even though you have ties with the Yin Family, your conduct proved yourself." Fung Lie complimented. "Let's go. You're still too weak to be accepted as an inner disciple in the sect, but I will recommend you. That should be enough."

Xuanyuan shook his head and said, "Master Fung Lie. I will go to the sect, but please keep my secret. After all, Lady Zhenluo of the Yin Family taught me the technique. She saved my life. I would never betray her trust. I would never give the sect the Yin Family's secret technique."

Fung Lie wasn't angry, but proud, "Good. The old man was blind to not recognize your talent. You should never suspect those you should be loyal to. Xuanyuan, believe me. I won't reveal your secret."

"Thank you Brother Fung Lie." Xuanyuan called him brother immediately after his promise. Both the Yin Family and the Fighting Dragons Sect were not easy places to survive. But he couldn't go to the Yin Family now that he killed Wu Ming. The Elder Master of the Yin Family would certainly kill him. However, Fung Lie could protect him in the sect. He's young, talented and powerful. The best option was to follow him. Xuanyuan already had a plan.

"Let's go." Fung Lie and Xuanyuan rode on the horse and rushed out of the nest.

Xuanyuan sighed silently. If he didn't pretend to use the 'Light of the Heavenly Dragon' given by Yin Zhenluo, Fung Lie would definitely be suspicious about how he killed Wu Ming, someone so much more powerful than him. He wouldn't be able to answer it. Fung Lie didn't ask and Xuanyuan didn't say.

It only took the Dragon Scale Horse a few moments to leave the nest with the help of the wind Qi. They had almost reached the outer edge of the forest.

Suddenly a wolf howled, Fung Lie stopped and looked down. There was a woman on a silver wolf outside of the forest. They were looking up to the sky.

Xuanyuan said hurriedly, "Brother Fung Lie, I'll need to bring Guxing with me."

Fung Lie knew that Xuanyuan was very attached to his friends. So he let him go down to the ground and took out a token. The token was filled with powerful magic.

"This is the 'True Token of Fighting Dragon', representing the true disciples of the Sect. With this, you're protected in all the cities under the command of the sect. I will go back first. Come to the sect immediately when you are done taking care of all your business. Do you understand?"

He rode in the direction of the sect immediately after he gave Xuanyuan the token, without waiting for a response.

"You've waited here for three days?" Xuanyuan was speechless to see Yan Ziyun. He was touched. This was the first time someone was waiting for him.

Her eyes were slightly red. She nodded and smiled, "Yes, it's good to see that you've come back safe and sound. We'll go to Moon Sky City together. This is the last time I'll be able to see you."

She sounded a bit bitter. Xuanyuan knew that Yan Ziyun would miss him. He said, "I'll come back to visit you when I'm in the sect."

Then Xuanyuan jumped on Guxing with Yan Ziyun. The two of them headed to Moon Sky City.

Guxing already reached the strength of a spiritual realm fighter so it was very fast. It could run a total of five thousand miles a day.

After half a day of travelling, suddenly, a woman ran out into the middle of the

road and collapsed, blocking their way. The woman was wearing the clothes of the inner disciples of the school, with blood stains all over her body. Yan Ziyun recognized the woman.

“Piaoxu!”

She jumped off Guxing immediately and fed Liu Piaoxu a healing pill. Liu Piaoxu was already a powerful spiritual fighter. Normal people wouldn’t be able to hurt her.

“Piaoxu, what happened?”

A bit of colour came back to Liu Piaoxu’s face after taking the pill. She sighed with relief when she saw Yan Ziyun. She whispered, “First sister, go to the Shi village immediately. Congyu executed Yuejue, so the Master of Moonwaste City brought elite fighters to the village to take revenge. They wanted to massacre all the people there. Congyu helped me escape. Many people were killed. I didn’t think I would make it. First sister. Please go and save Congyu. He will definitely survive...”

Liu Piaoxu couldn’t stop her tears. She was engaged to Shi Congyu. They were soon to be married. They must have gone back to the Shi village en route to Moonsky City. What they didn’t expect was the Master of Moonwaste City leading a team of twelve spiritual realm fighters to commit a massacre!

Shi Congyu was probably already dead. Xuanyuan was shocked to know something like this happened. He was trembling with fury. Suddenly, a cocky laugh came their way,

“Let’s see how far you can run!”

## Chapter 45 – Bluff

Yan Ziyun collected the evidence prior to Yuejue's execution. The executioner was Shi Congyu. Xuanyuan was thrown off guard by how much pain he caused Shi Congyu and his village. He felt sick to the stomach. Shi Congyu and all the villagers died because of him.

The man who followed Liu Piaoxu was a spiritual fighter from Moonwaste City named Yuehung. His strength was on par with Xuanyuan at twelve dragons of strength. He was a forty year old, evil-looking man. He obviously had ideas about a pretty woman like Liu Piaoxu. His face lit up even more when he saw Yan Ziyun.

"Well, well, well...Another beauty. We can all stay here tonight and play." Yuehung licked his lips and picked up his upper rank spiritual instrument, Moonblade. It was extremely sharp.

The stare that Yan Ziyun gave him was filled with murderous intent, but Xuanyuan was faster. Xuanyuan took out his Sword of Swimming Dragons from his waist. He stepped forward and twisted his body, like a dragon ready to kill.

Xuanyuan recited the Yin family's Heaven class technique and flew towards Yuehung like a dragon. Yuehung felt like he was suffocating. The Moonblade released his fighting Qi towards Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan immediately used the move "Heavenly Dragon Reverse" to evade the attack. Then he slashed out with his sword. With one strike, Yuehung's torso was cut in two, before he could even react.

Xuanyuan didn't even turn to look at the body, he said to Yan Ziyun, "Bring Piaoxu, we are going to the village!"

Yan Ziyun knew that Xuanyuan was furious. She could feel his intense anger. His anger could burst out at anytime.

She carried Liu Piaoxu and climbed on Guxing. Guxing grew very strong, carrying three people with ease.

"Guxing, go!" It moved at once.

Within 15 minutes, Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun arrived at Shi village.

The village was built completely from stone. All the stones were cut into strange shapes, but they were good for making comfortable houses.

There wasn't any protection for the village, only a large stone tablet with the name of the village written elegantly on it.

A head was placed on the stone tablet. The head of Shi Congyu.

A strong ache exploded in Xuanyuan's heart. Yan Ziyun was trembling violently. Liu Piaoxu became extremely pale, she coughed up several mouthfuls of blood and died. She was gravely injured already and couldn't survive the shock.

Yan Ziyun held her disciple sister's body close, with teary eyes. Then she jumped off Guxing and put the body next to the stone tablet gently.

"Ziyun, we should go in. They haven't left yet." The Body of All Creation had incredible sensory ability. Xuanyuan could sense all the movements within a two thousand mile radius.

Yan Ziyun wanted to kill whoever did this to her brother and sister. She held the Moonwheel in one hand, the Moonbeam Sword in another and slowly entered the village.

On the outskirts of the village, there were two spiritual fighters with fourteen dragons of strength on guard. They were there to prevent anyone from escaping.

The moment Xuanyuan, Yan Ziyun and Guxing stepped in, they were stopped by the guards.

"There she is. Yan Ziyun from the School of Yuehua. Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu worked for her. Kill her. We can't let her go. Otherwise, we'll be punished." One of them yelled. He took the sword from his waist. A bright light was released from the blade straight towards Yan Ziyun.

Yan Ziyun's eyes were red with fury. Her fighting Qi concentrated on the moonwheel and she threw it straight towards the man. The power of an upper rank spiritual instrument was not to be underestimated. It cut through the air with a deafening noise, destroyed the incoming attack and sliced towards the enemy.

He quickly took out another weapon, however, it couldn't defend against the

moonwheel either and shattered into pieces on impact. Half of his body was wounded from the shattered pieces of his weapon, and he was thrown back several meters.

He screamed out, but Yan Ziyun was ruthless. The Moonbeam Sword she was holding released a moonbeam and cut the injured man into small chunks of flesh. Yan Ziyun was unmoved by all of this.

Xuanyuan was fighting the other man at the same time. His sword released the strength of fourteen dragons. The man saw that Xuanyuan was just as strong as he was and quickly summoned the strength of fourteen dragons. He was planning to kill Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan was using the secret technique of Yin Family, “Heavenly Dragon’s Pearl” with his sword. The sword transformed into a golden shadow of a dragon which shocked the man. The next moment, his heart was already pierced.

Xuanyuan noticed there wasn’t any fighting ring on either of them. Fighting rings were expensive. A single ring without anything stored inside would cost a hundred thousand master coins. These two men only had upper rank spiritual instruments as weapons, their armour was merely ordinary sacred instruments, they couldn’t afford higher ranked equipment.

But Xuanyuan never failed to steal from his victims. He easily found two bags of coins on their bodies. He estimated the total at around four thousand spiritual coins. They’d probably saved for a long time, but it all belonged to Xuanyuan now.

He turned to Guxing, “Guxing, go and help bury the bodies of Sister Piaoxu and Brother Congyu, and bring me their sword. I’ll have their spirits with me while I avenge them.”

The wolf growled lowly and turned around.

Quickly another four spiritual fighters, all with fourteen dragons of strength, arrived. The screaming from the fight drew their attention.

“They are from the school! Yan Ziyun!” One of the men became extremely cautious.

“The boy and his wolf. You’re the one who made trouble in Moonwaste City.”

“You will all die today.” Xuanyuan pointed his sword towards one of the men. He was fearless.

“We are the elite of the Yue Family. There’re only the two of you. You won’t be able to make it past us.” They all grabbed their weapons.

Xuanyuan laughed like he heard something funny.

“Liu Piaoxu sent us a message before she died. We knew that Yuehong led a team of twelve spiritual fighters to slaughter the village. Do you really think they only sent the two of us? Fellow true disciples, let’s fight!”

Xuanyuan’s laugh intimidated the men. True disciples of the School of Yuehua were all beyond the spiritual realm. The Yue clan would surely be exterminated. Looking at Xuanyuan, he didn’t seem to be afraid at all.

Xuanyuan knew his bluff was successful, and quickly used “Heavenly Dragon’s Pearl” again. Yan Ziyun knew how cunning Xuanyuan was and she concentrated her fighting Qi, ready to kill!

The men finally realized that Xuanyuan was bluffing, but it was already too late.

## Chapter 46 – The Talisman of Explosion

The Centre of Shi Village was a large square for people to gather, play, sing and dance. It was a happy place, but it had turned into a bloody murder scene with many headless bodies and heads scattered around. Those who survived were frozen in grief. Some were screaming, some wailing, some were just numb.

A middle-age man stood in the middle. He looked similar to Yuejue. His face was a combination of femininity and cruelty, like a serpent. Your heart would skip a beat in fear if you laid eyes on him.

He was the father of Yuejue, Yuehong, a wild realm fighter. Like father, like son. They were both sadistic. The poor villagers were unable to fight against him.

Yuehong was upset about losing a spiritual realm fighter to Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu.

He already gathered the best of the Yue clan to cleanse the entire village. The loss of a powerful fighter was not part of the plan. So he chopped off Shi Congyu's head to frighten the rest of the villagers.

Less than fifty villagers were left alive. They were all shivering in the middle of the square. Yuehong was holding a top rank spiritual instrument, "Moonwaste knife", an antique weapon he inherited from the previous masters of Moonwaste City, and announced it in all directions.

"Master Shilong of the Shi village, stop hiding and come out. As long as you give me what I want, I'll let everyone go. So many of your villagers died because of Shi Congyu, do you want me to kill the rest?"

His voice travelled far, but there was no response. He was starting to lose his temper. He wielded his knife and his fighting Qi cut off ten villager's heads, followed by ten streams of blood.

The rest of the villagers screamed at once.

"Master Yue, please, let us go. We know that Shi Congyu killed your son, but you killed him already. Don't kill us."

"Master Yue, we are innocent. Please..."

“Stop begging him! The fact that Congyu killed his son was only an excuse to come here and steal our treasure. We can’t let such scum take it, even if we have to die. This is the order from our ancestors!”

“Master Shi, don’t come out. Keep the village’s secret hidden. It’s our duty to our forefathers!”

“Yes, cut the bullshit, just kill us!”

“As you wish.” Yuehong was irritated. He killed the villagers who wouldn’t yield.

“Shilong, I’m going to kill them all! You’re going to let that happen? That’s something your ancestors wouldn’t like.”

At this time, he heard Xuanyuan’s laugh, “Liu Piaoxu sent us a message before she died. We knew that Yuehong led a team of twelve spiritual fighters to slaughter the village. Do you really think they only sent the two of us? Fellow true disciples, let’s fight!”

Yuehong immediately froze in terror. He only had four spiritual fighters left with him. They each had around sixteen to eighteen dragons of strength. They wouldn’t be able to fight against the true disciples from the school.

“Finish all of them and leave this place. We can’t let the people from the school know this.” All the fighters released their fighting Qi at once and slaughtered everyone who was left alive.

Blood tainted the square and filled the air around it.

\*\*\*\*\*

Xuanyuan pierced the heart of one of the spiritual fighters who then onto the ground, dead. He was killed instantly.

Another one didn’t have enough time to react and was killed by Yan Ziyun’s Moonwheel. They finally realized they were tricked by Xuanyuan!

Xuanyuan used the move “Heavenly Dragon Descends” with his mysterious dagger. He learned the secret refining technique’s of the Yin Family and refined his skin, flesh and bones. He was almost like a heavenly dragon himself and that terrified his enemies. The other fighter felt the pressure and shielded himself

with his sword, but his defense was broken immediately. His body was slashed by the dagger, which then sucked him dry of his life essence.

Xuanyuan's incredible speed intimidated the remaining fighter. Facing the attacks from Yan Ziyun, he didn't dare to take any strikes from her. Xuanyuan was quickly approaching, which scared the man. He yelled in fear, "Master, come quickly! They only have two people. They were bluffing! Come kill them. Otherwise Moonwaste City..."

He was a man with fourteen dragons of strength after all – his voice travelled loud and fast. Xuanyuan held his sword tightly and used "Heavenly Dragon's Pearl" again. A second later, the man's torso was nailed to the ground with his sword.

Yan Ziyun was behind him with three money bags in her hands. Xuanyuan also robbed a big bag of money from the dead spiritual fighters. He put the bags inside his own fighting ring and gave Yan Ziyun her brother's old ring,

"See what's inside Brother Liang's ring that we might be able to use. We are running out of time. If what Piao Xu said was true, Yuehong brought twelve men with him, that means they still have six men left. With our strength, we can't win a head on fight. We'll have to trick them."

The voice of Greed rang inside his head, "Xuanyuan boy, stick the dagger in one of the corpses, I can use the technique "Soul Devour" and control the body. Then you can trick them for a while."

Xuanyuan swore at Greed in his mind, "This greedy old bugger, why didn't you tell me earlier?" But he still followed Greed's instruction and used the dagger to stab into a dead body. Then he dragged Yan Ziyun and hid inside a nearby stone house.

Yan Ziyun looked into the ring and discovered a paper talisman. Her eyes brightened. She explained softly, "There's a powerful talisman. It targets a huge area, even if it can't kill, it can hurt a wild fighter badly."

Xuanyuan was clueless, he asked, "What's a talisman? It doesn't matter if it can't kill, we just need to stall them."

"You still don't know much about this world, huh? There's not only alchemists,

smiths, coin minters and gemmologists, there's also talisman writers. They use their fighting Qi to write markings onto talismans. Talismans are consumable goods, they can only last for a few uses. The one that brother Liang left behind is called "Talisman of Explosion". It's made by a talisman writer who can command fire. It's incredibly powerful."

Yan Ziyun tried to explain in a few short sentences. Then she added, "Those who can command fighter fire, fighter gold, fighter earth, fighter water, fighter wood, fighter lightning and fighter wind can also write them, maybe even more destructive and deadly talismans."

Xuanyuan nodded. Now he knew more about this world. He'd already seen fighter fire. Even the shadow of the fire could injure someone like Fung Lie. You could imagine how powerful it was and the other types were surely just as terrifying.

"They are here. Hide your power!" Xuanyuan sensed that Yuehong with four other spiritual fighters were approaching.

## Chapter 47 – Total Victory

Yuehong heard the man's final warning and knew that there were only two people attacking them. He was unsettled, Moonwaste City was only a small town on the outskirts of the area controlled by the School of Yuehua. It'd be easy for the school to destroy the whole city.

One of the reasons Yuehong came to massacre the Shi village was to avenge his son's death, another was for the secret of Shi village, told to him by his late father. He only dared to come after the death of the last village master.

If he could take the secret of Shi village, Moonwaste City could become much more powerful than the school and establish its own school independently. He didn't want to be under the school's control forever, so he took the risk.

Yuehong was leading four of his men. His face was dark with dismay.

"They are all dead. If they escaped and went back to the school, my city would be in big trouble."

"They must have gone back. Master, the village master is missing, and we've been discovered by the people from the School of Yuehua. What should we do now?"

"Check their bodies first. Perhaps there are some wounds made by special techniques. We'll learn what we can from the bodies." Yuehong ordered. One of his men then took the mysterious dagger from the dead man's body.

"A dagger like this can pierce through his armour? It seems like the enemy is very strong."

When he finished, a mysterious power started to gain control of his body. His eyes turned dull shortly before the life returned to his eyes. Greed had devoured the man's soul, memories, and taken over his body.

Everyone was an experienced practitioner. They all sensed that something was wrong.

"Yuexian, what happened?"

Yuexian turned his head and smirked, “Nothing. I know where they are hiding. Follow me!”

He pointed at the stone house opposite to the one Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun was hiding with the dagger and went straight towards that direction.

Xuanyuan knew that this was the greedy old bugger’s doing. They ran to the house opposite them, turning their backs to face Xuanyuan. They now had a much better chance to eliminate them. Xuanyuan was thirsty for their blood, he growled lowly, “Let’s do it!”

He concentrated his fighting Qi into his Sword of Swimming Dragons, while Yan Ziyun concentrated hers into the Moonwheel. Both the weapons were extremely deadly.

They rushed out of the stone house at the same time.

“Heavenly Dragon’s Pearl!”

“Moonwheel cut!”

Yuehong reacted immediately, as wild fighters were much quicker. He evaded Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun’s attacks instantly, but the rest of the men were not as lucky. One of them was killed by Xuanyuan’s sword, piercing through his back. Another was cut in half from waist by the Moonwheel.

Everything happened in an instant. Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun killed with deadly precision. With the help of their weapons, they killed two men with seventeen dragons of strength with ease.

Yuehong was not happy. He grew even more unhappy when he saw the silver wolf that appeared behind Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun. The wolf was carrying the dead body of Liu Piaoxu and Shi Congyu’s head, as it slowly approached. Shi Congyu died with his eyes wide open, as if he was watching everything. It was creeping Yuehong out.

Yuexian, the man controlled by Greed pointed at Xuanyuan with the dagger and yelled, “The two of you come and meet your death! Yuedu, take that sword, it’s a top rank spiritual instrument!”

The other uninjured man was ecstatic when he pulled Xuanyuan’s Sword of

Swimming Dragons from the corpse. He felt his strength was enhanced with the sword in his hands. He felt that he could probably defeat Yuehong with it.

“You, Yan Ziyun. You ordered the death of my son. You’ll die today. Shi Congyu and all the people of Shi village all died because of you. You will now have the chance to join them.” Yuehong recognized Yan Ziyun, and he guessed the identities of Xuanyuan and the wolf.

“Yuehong, you bastard. Your son tortured and killed many innocent people. His death was justified by the law, but your massacre of all these people was not. You are the one who’s going to die today.” Yan Ziyun was furious. Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu were her closest and most accomplished younger brother and sister disciples in the school. Of course she would be angry.

“No matter what you say, you’ll die here! Yuexian, Yuedu, go!” Yuehong injected his Sword of Moonwaste with fighting Qi. He had the strength of thirty-two dragons. Each dragon of strength applied to the sword was like a dragon wailing. Both Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun would not have a chance to defeat him.

Yuedu picked up Xuanyuan’s sword and smiled grotesquely,

“Master, Yan Ziyun’s got a very good body. Don’t kill her, just immobilize her. I’ll have a taste of the inner disciples of the School of Yuehua!”

Yuehong and Yuedu ran towards Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun. Only Yuexian remained in his place. They were moving too fast. Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun could only retreat. Until Xuanyuan said,

“Ziyun, now!”

A paper talisman flew out of Yan Ziyun’s long sleeve and she started chanting.

“Explode!”

With a bang, the talisman exploded and everything within a ten metre radius instantly burst into flames with a shocking explosion. Yuehong and Yuedu were within that range. The heat wave blasted through the air and even Xuanyuan was finding it hard to breathe. He felt like his whole body was boiling. He laughed,

“Hahaha...Right on target!”

A fighting Qi burst out from the fire. Yuehong retreated with unstable steps. He was covered with blood and looked furious.

Yuedu was not lucky enough to leave the explosion and all that was left was pieces of flesh and the Sword of Swimming Dragons. Even the coins he carried were destroyed.

“How dare you!” Yuehong’s eyes were burning with fire. The talisman was made by a wild realm fighter, someone even stronger than Yuehong. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have been hurt so badly.

He then took a healing pill. Slowly, the blood stopped pouring from his wounds. Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun could feel that his bones were trembling.

“You’ll learn today the real strength of a wild realm fighter! I don’t believe you have any more talismans left. You will both die today!”

Wild fighters refined their bone marrow, which was responsible for producing blood. Yuehong lost a lot of blood from the explosion, but he was making new blood! Normal people would die from the blood loss, but someone who has refined their bone marrow could replenish their blood quickly during a fight. If they were in a life or death situation, they could even stimulate their blood with fighting Qi and kill their enemy by sacrificing their own life.

Yuexian, who hadn’t moved until now, moved up to Yuehong and asked, “Master, are you all right?”

Yuehong’s attention was on Xuanyuan, but he felt lucky that Yuexian didn’t rush in, otherwise he would have died and left Yuehong alone in the fight!

“Fine, I’m going to kill them!” He screamed and ran while releasing his fighting Qi through his sword.

But at this point, Yuehong felt something in his back and heard an unknown voice in his mind,

“Not if I kill you first.”

It was Greed talking directly inside Yuehong’s mind. Yuehong froze immediately.

He felt the dagger cutting through his heart and all his life essence slipped

away in an instant.

Both Yuehong and Yuexian collapsed onto the ground. Their bodies were empty shells. The dagger quietly laid on the ground like a normal dagger. No one would even notice it.

## Chapter 48 – The Book of Acquisition

Yan Ziyun couldn't believe her eyes. How come Yuexian, a servant from the Yue clan, would kill his own master and suddenly fall dead? She recalled the details and seemed to understand something. She looked at Xuanyuan with wide eyes. Her heart skipped a beat.

“Xuanyuan had it all thought out to such a level? Does he know how to command a secret mysterious technique? Can this be true? What's happening?”

Xuanyuan guessed her thoughts but said nothing. The fewer the people that knew about the existence of the greedy old bugger, the better. It didn't do any good to know about this. So he just smiled at her and then searched the dead bodies. From the spiritual fighters, he gathered almost 20,000 spiritual coins and put it all into his ring. He also took Yuehong's ring.

“Let's go, Ziyun.” When he was done, he walked up to the central part of the village.

Yan Ziyun understood that he would have said something if he wanted to. She kept silent, she only nodded and followed him.

Dead bodies were scattered across the village roads. The way they died was horrifying. They were obviously terrorized before they were murdered.

The closer to the centre, the more dead bodies there were covering the ground. The central square was covered with corpses. You almost couldn't see the ground beneath the corpses.

Xuanyuan was burning with anger, but there was nothing he could do. He already killed Yuehong. He couldn't kill everyone in the Yue family. Because that would make him like Yuehong!

An eye for an eye, but he still couldn't blame the blameless.

Guxing put Shi Congyu's head lightly down onto the ground. Yan Ziyun held Liu Piaoxu's body close before she put her down next to the head.

"Brother Congyu, sister Piaoxu. You can rest in peace. We've done what we can. We have avenged your deaths. It's all my fault. None of this would've happened if I didn't insist on killing Yuejue. I did all of this."

Grief filled his heart. He was responsible for all these deaths.

"Xuanyuan, stop blaming yourself. No one could have known that Yuehong would dare to defy the School of Yuehua. I'll see to this when I'm back at the school." Yan Ziyun wasn't feeling much better than Xuanyuan, but she still tried her best to comfort him.

"All these people died because of me. We could only hope that they now can rest in peace." He then went ahead and dug a deep hole in the ground with the help of Yan Ziyun and Guxing.

The soil on the ground was soaked with blood. The scent of iron filled his nose, which saddened him even more, "From now on, if I'm to take revenge, I'll do it myself. I can't let other people kill for me."

It took them most of the day to gather all the correct body pieces. They then

buried them one by one in their individual graves.

They didn't know the names of these people. The rocks they put on top were merely symbolic.

The night fell when they were finally done.

At last, Xuanyuan put Shi Congyu's head into Liu Piaoxu's arms and buried them together. Yan Ziyun and Xuanyuan stood there numb for a while before he said, "We should leave. We've done all we can. We can't go on blaming ourselves."

Yan Ziyun nodded and jumped onto Guxing with Xuanyuan when a shadow appeared in mid-air. It said, "Wait."

Their adrenaline surged. They turned their heads, only to discover a pale old man, standing where they were moments ago.

"Old master Shilong!" Yan Ziyun recognized him. She sometimes accompanied Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu back to the village. She knew a few people within the village.

"Miss Yan..." He coughed blood. His eyes were teary and his voice coarse, "Thank you. You are very kind."

Xuanyuan immediately walked up to steady the old man.

"Are you all right?" He asked.

Shilong glanced at him, “You are called Xuanyuan, right?”

Xuanyuan nodded. The old man smiled bitterly, then his face calmed again. The calmness was a kind of hopeless despair from the grief in his heart.

“I’ve heard what you said. You’re not to blame for this. Yuehong came here because he wanted the stone technique, a secret technique of our village!”

The stone technique? Xuanyuan went into deep thought. He suddenly remembered an occupation he read.

“Gemmologist!”

Yan Ziyun was also shocked. The stone techniques used by gemmologists were unusual techniques. Not even the School of Yuehua had acquired one and one was hidden in this little village!

“There is a legend about our village. Once upon a time, there was a famous gemmologist who came to the Shi village. The village was a stone mine so he enjoyed it here. One day, the mountains collapsed. No one knew why. But the Gemmologist used his technique and saved everyone in the village. We are all in his debt. He left behind his stone technique. Only people with vast potential could study it, so they would be able to save our village when danger befalls us.”

“The legend became a story that every villager knows, but no one can determine whether it’s true or just a story. Only the master of the village can keep this technique. Every master would choose a person with great potential to study it. Now that the village is gone, the technique doesn’t mean anything to

me now. But I can't let the technique disappear from the world. So I'll give it to you."

Shilong looked at Xuanyuan. He knew that he had great potential. He could easily study the stone technique.

Shilong then took out an antique book from the cloth hidden in his chest. The book was made of bronze so it would never fade. The cover had four words engraved on it – The Book of Acquisition.

The greedy old bugger roared inside Xuanyuan's mind immediately, "The Book of Acquisition! It's real! Oh my, oh my, this is the essence of the Emperor of Acquisition's Technique about the study of the earth. Ah, I see, the village was located right on top of the ancient mine! The ancient mine is filled with dense Qi from the universe. So all the villagers would be healthy and enjoy long lives. They were all very strong and sturdy.

"The ancient mine was a dangerous place. There were many unusual stones. Villagers made their living from mining the ores and stones here, but they could never get very far into the mine. They thought that there was ancient god dwelling inside so they could never venture too deep. The Emperor of Acquisition found the mine and started to study it, but he must have accidentally destroyed the mine and caused the mountain to collapse. All that Qi was lost. It became a wasteland. The Emperor left behind the Book of Acquisition as compensation...."

## Chapter 49 – The Full Moon Trading Centre

Xuanyuan was completely stunned by the history of Shi village. He asked Greed, “This Emperor of Acquisition, was he powerful?”

“It took the Devouring Emperor lots of time and a great deal of effort to escape the traps set by the Emperor of Acquisition. Even though the Devouring Emperor learnt many stone techniques, his understanding on the subject was far below that of the Emperor of Acquisition. You are lucky to have come across such an item!” Greed didn’t hide his envy.

Xuanyuan took a deep breath and said seriously, “I will not fail you, master Shi!”

Shilong was content. He knew that there were many powerful tricks and secrets in the book, but he had only scratched the surface of it even though he studied it for all of his life. He did not have long left in this world, so he made the best of the situation by giving the book to Xuanyuan.

He put the book onto Xuanyuan’s palms, then formed a few symbols with his hands. A gush of fighting Qi surged from his body and into the ground, summoning nine stones the size of human heads that hovered mid-air.

Xuanyuan couldn’t hide his astonishment and asked loudly, “What’s this?”

“I do not know. The only thing I know about these stones is that there is incredible power dwelling inside them. I couldn’t explore all of their powers. Xuanyuan, remember, do not cut open the stones unless you are powerful enough, otherwise, you’ll bring disaster to the world. These were the last words

from our saviour before he left.” Shilong’s eyes went dim. He coughed even more blood. If not for Xuanyuan’s support, he would’ve already collapsed.

“They are the nine stones of magic, Xuanyuan. They were left by the Emperor of Acquisition, with exquisite things inside. Damn, kid, you’re lucky!” Greed yelled inside Xuanyuan’s mind with envy. But he regained his calmness quickly and said, “But that’s not strange at all. The Emperor destroyed the ancient mine, it’s only fair that he compensated the villagers. I wonder what the villagers would think if they knew that their saviour was the one who destroyed their mine? Without the Qi inside the mine, the villagers grew weaker and weaker with each generation.”

“Xuanyuan, kneel down and I’ll take you as my disciple. So the line of Shi Village won’t be completely lost.” The old man mustered up the last of his strength and said.

Xuanyuan looked at the withering old man. Without a word, he knelt down and kowtowed three times. He was meticulous and proper. The old man smiled.

“Good, good... the line of Shi Village will continue through you. I failed my ancestors. This is the least I can do. Xuanyuan, get u.....” He collapsed without being able to finish.

The nine stones that were controlled by Shilong’s power, now sank down to the ground. Xuanyuan’s heart sank with them, but he kept silent. Yan Ziyun remained silent as well.

They buried Shilong and kowtowed a few more times. Xuanyuan put the stones inside his ring, then left.

\*\*\*\*\*

Night fell. The only light twinkling on the road was Guxing's eyes. The wolf was running very quickly.

"Xuanyuan, what are you going to do next?" Yan Ziyun asked lightly. She sat behind Xuanyuan, holding him tightly with her arms. Her face was resting on his back.

"Go to the Judgment Stand in Moonsky City and get all of Tung Xuan's wealth from his mansion. Then I'll leave for the Fighting Dragons Sect." He didn't think twice about Yan Ziyun's embrace. They were exhausted, it was only natural for her to rest against him. He was totally honest with his intentions in the future. He could only get closer to Yin Zhenluo by studying in the sect. They were still worlds apart.

Yan Ziyun sighed. She kept everything to herself. She and Xuanyuan were walking down different paths. They could never be together. Her strength was limited and Xuanyuan was an unreachable star to her.

Yin Zhenluo was also unreachable to Xuanyuan. The only difference was that Xuanyuan never gave up fighting for what he wanted, Yan Ziyun hid her wish deep inside her heart.

The night was quiet when they arrived in Moonsky City.

Moonsky City was one of the main cities under the Cave of Full Moon. The cave controlled by over ten schools, including the School of Yuehua, Xinghua and Rihua.

Moonsky was a magnificent city. The walls surrounding walls were thirty metres high. Made from giant moon coloured stones. The guards were all at least in the warrior realm. There were also a hundred times more people than the City of Yuehua.

Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun attracted people's attentions, not only because they were riding a wolf, they were also covered in blood and carried a pungent stench of death.

Yan Ziyun had long stopped embracing Xuanyuan with so many people around. She visited this city a few times already, so she led the way and arrived at the trading centre of Full Moon.

The trading centre monopolized all trade of elixirs, instruments, fighting stones, gems, talismans and precious objects in the city. It was controlled by the Cave of Full Moon and was its main source of income.

The centre was five storeys tall, built from sturdy, well cut stones. At the top of the building, a symbol of full moon was hanging on top.

They came to the entrance of the building. Eight guards were standing on the two sides. They were all in the master realm. Signifying the power of the trading centre to the visitors – even the guards were in the master realm.

The guards stopped them from entering immediately, wrinkling their noses as if they were smelling something foul. One of them said, "Who are you? You cannot enter the centre with your dirty clothes. Both of you smell. Are you trying to cause trouble?"

Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun finally realized they looked awful from the battle in the nest and Shi Village. They were covered in dried blood and dirt. With all the things that had been troubling them, they didn't even think of taking a shower. Of course they smelt horrible.

"They look like some random hunters and think they can get into the centre for hunting down a few beasts. Go change your clothes before you come. Stop embarrassing yourself." Another man mocked.

"Well, can't we go in and get some new clothes?" Xuanyuan wasn't provoked. He was used to this kind of attitude during his long career as a beggar in his former life, but Yan Ziyun was not comfortable with it.

"Don't try to bully us. You can't stop us from going in." She said.

"Oh? You are going to force your way into the centre?" A clean-looking handsome man wearing white gown came out.

The guards immediately bowed to him, "Master Fangyuan!"

Xuanyuan was not impressed. "We are customers. Do you want to turn your customers away?" He said.

Fangyuan laughed, "Depends on what kind of customers. Filthy people like you would only disturb our business."

Yan Ziyun said coldly, "What can you do if we decide to go in?"

“You can try. I’ll have people break your legs.” Fangyuan smiled more obnoxiously. He thought very little of Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun.

Yan Ziyun took out her Token of Yuehua and smiled angrily, “I am the First Inner Disciple and the future Head of the School of Yuehua. Fullmoon Trading Centre should show some more respect. We bring you a great deal of profit every year!”

Fangyuan and the guards were taken aback. However, they had already offended them, they couldn’t rectify their actions.

“What about it? You two look like filthy beggars. We don’t welcome you inside the centre.” Fangyuan said.

People started to form a circle around them and pointed fingers at Xuanyuan, Yan Ziyun and Guxing as they discussed. They thought the two of them were causing trouble.

Xuanyuan was surprised that Fangyuan refused to show respect even after Yan Ziyun revealed her identity. He said, commandingly, “How dare you? You want the Cave of Full Moon to be punished as well? We were under the order of Master Fung Lie to cleanse the Mo nest and fought in a blood bath and you, the ally of the School of Yuehua and Fighting Dragons Sect, want to deny us access to the trading centre to buy medicine?”

Fangyuan’s face grew even darker when he heard Xuanyuan. Many people knew about Fung Lie’s order. The Cave of Full Moon should have assisted with the attack, but the school was sent instead because they were closer.

“I would like to see who’s going to break our legs. Do you want to insult Master Fung Lie? You’ve been warned!” Then Xuanyuan, Yan Ziyun and Guxing stormed into the trading centre.

## Chapter 50 – Fangyue

“Wait. You two can go in, but the animal stays outside. That is the law.”

Fangyuan didn't dare to stop Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun, but an animal, even one with the strength of a spiritual fighter, still couldn't be allowed.

“What's with all these stupid laws. I am the law. Let's go.” Xuanyuan looked at Fangyuan coldly. Two people and the wolf stepped inside the building, attracting the attention of many people. Fangyuan was itching to fight them, but when he remembered how the master of the cave was scared of Fung Lie's fury, he suppressed the urge. Many disciples from the school were in Moonsky City at the moment to go to the judgment stand. It wouldn't benefit them to fight against Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun.

Fangyuan glared at their backs and mocked them silently, “I'm going to see what can you buy. My father is the master of the trading centre, I'll have him raise the prices so you can't buy a thing!”

The first floor was full of mediocre merchandise. The strongest items were only middle rank spiritual instruments. After all, not everyone could afford upper rank and top rank.

Both Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun were covered with dried blood and smelt horrible, making many people frown. Guxing used its paws to dig through the blood soaked soil, so it was also filthy. Everyone around them was looking at them uncomfortably.

But Xuanyuan couldn't care less. He shouted loudly, “Get someone higher up out here!”

A middle-age man came out smiling, "I am Fangyu. I manage the first floor of the centre. How can I help the two of you?"

Xuanyuan nodded, but said nothing. He only took out everything he robbed from his fighting ring.

Tung Xuan's top rank spiritual instrument set, The Moonwaste sword that once belonged to Yuehong, and other eighteen upper rank spiritual instruments were laid onto the table.

Fangyu's smile froze. He heard Xuanyuan said, "Give me a price for all of these. If the amount is reasonable, I'll sell them."

Four other men came up and helped estimate the price of Xuanyuan's equipment. After ten minutes, Fangyu said, "Young master, we'll take all of these for 50,000 spiritual coins."

Xuanyuan frowned and said mockingly, "You are a good merchant, but don't take me as a fool. Go get the master of the centre to come."

Fangyu, who stood aside, was stunned by the sight of so many upper and top rank spiritual instruments, but he hid his emotions and laughed at Xuanyuan's words, "Hahaha, a filthy boy like you want to meet my father? You really take all your broken instruments as precious? How funny."

Fangyu heard the young master and also showed his impatience. "Two young masters, the instruments you brought are good, but they aren't worth much to the Full Moon Trading Centre. If you think they are so precious, please keep

them. We won't pay more."

Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun were sitting on wooden chairs, Guxing was resting on the floor. He didn't give much heed to what Fangyuan and Fangyu said. He closed his eyes and said coldly, "I repeat, get your master to come out or there will be consequences."

Fangyuan couldn't take it anymore. He ordered, "Someone come here and break their legs and throw them out."

A dozen spiritual fighters released their Qi immediately. People around them were all waiting for a show.

"Where do these embarrassing people come from? Master Fangyue is a king realm fighter. He wouldn't see this filthy boy."

"This is the first time I see someone being thrown out of the building. The trading centre was so powerful! There're dozen spiritual fighters on this floor already. Can you imagine what's on the second and third floor?"

"Wait and see. These two people will regret this. The wolf will surely die."

But then, an elegant middle-aged man came out. He was wearing a blue velvet gown. His features resembled that of Fangyuan. When he stepped out, all the fighters stopped instantly. He looked at Xuanyuan and asked kindly, "Young boy, you want to see me?"

"Father, they should have their legs broken. They are giving us trouble!" Fangyuan said.

“That’s right. He wasn’t satisfied with 50,000 spiritual coins for all of these. He wants to make a scene in the centre. We should kick them out.” Fangyu added.

The master of the centre frowned. Xuanyuan sensed his power as a king realm fighter and took out a token.

“Master Fangyue, do you recognize this token?”

Fangyue was astonished, “It’s the Token of Fighting Dragon! The symbol of Master Fung Lie!”

“You’re not completely ignorant then. I need money and I want to sell all the spiritual instruments I own, but your trading centre is trying to bully your customers: preventing us from getting in the door and then ordering someone to break our legs. Master Fung Lie had said that no one is to be disrespectful to me. For those who bully me, he swore that he will kill the person responsible and uproot their entire family tree. So, what are you going to do?” Xuanyuan said nonchalantly.

Then he stood up to leave. Fangyue panicked. He slapped Fangyu and instantly the sound of breaking bones could be heard. Fangyu flew through the air and hit the stone pillar. Then he kicked towards Fangyuan’s legs, breaking them both. Fangyuan was shocked that his father had actually attacked him.

“What disgusting scum. Take Fangyuan and Fangyu out of here and punish them with the house rules!” Four men took the two of them away immediately.

“Young master, please forgive them. I apologize on behalf of the trading

centre. I'll purchase all your spiritual instrument for 300,000 spiritual coins. How about that?" Fangyue smiled obligingly. The eighteen pieces of upper rank spiritual instruments cost 30,000 master coins each. The six pieces of top rank spiritual instrument could be sold at 120,000 master coins. All of the items were worth 120,000 spiritual coins. Now he offered Xuanyuan more than twice the amount!

Xuanyuan nodded. He wasn't as angry anymore, if Fangyue wanted to solve the problem with money, Xuanyuan wouldn't refuse.

"Well, Ziyun. Sell the sword left by Brother Yan Liang and all your spiritual instruments too." Xuanyuan told her.

Yan Ziyun nodded. She put all her top rank spiritual instrument she bought onto the table and asked, "Master Fangyue. How much will you pay for these?"

"100,000 spiritual coins." Fangyue was quick and generous and Yan Ziyun was satisfied. She took out her token of Yuehua and said, "Thank you master Fangyue. When I become the Head of the School of Yuehua, I'll make sure the school has a good trading relationship with you."

He was surprised to learn that Yan Ziyun was the future Head. This was a good deal after all.

"Excellent!"

"That's not the end, Master Fangyue. How much do you think this sword is worth?" Xuanyuan asked, and put his Sword of Swimming Dragon into Fangyue's hands.

The man's heart skipped a beat.

“This is the Sword of Swimming Dragons. It could transform into a lower rank earth instrument. This sword belonged to the Eastern Dynasty. How come this boy has it?”

Xuanyuan didn't want people from the Yin Family to find him because of the sword, so he planned on selling it.

“100,000 spiritual coins.” Fangyue gave a price immediately.

“Good. I'm going to sell these as well.” Then Xuanyuan took out the Mirror of Black Death and Wu Ming's set of lower rank earth instruments. The set was a matching helmet, armour, boots and jade pendant. Fangyue looked at them in awe.

“Please give me a price! Master Fangyue.”

## Chapter 51 – Tung Xuan’s Mansion

“The Mirror of Black Death was a lower rank earth instrument, but with small improvement, it could go up a rank. So how much do you think it’s worth, master Fangyue?” Xuanyuan smiled but his eyes were cold. He would never be comfortable possessing things from the Yin Family. If people from the Yin Family recognized him, he wouldn’t be able to survive another encounter. He wouldn’t get so lucky and they wouldn’t underestimate him a third time.

Fangyue picked up the mirror. He was certain that it was worth at least 20,000 spiritual coins. He could sell it for a profit, but his son offended Xuanyuan. In order to fix the problem, he needed to give a much higher price.

“50,000 spiritual coins. I’ll take it.” Fangyue was aching because of all the money he lost. He didn’t understand why Xuanyuan wanted to sell everything. His son, Fangyuan, was spoiled since he was a little kid, so he was reckless, but Fangyu managed this floor, he couldn’t afford to be so reckless with customers. When this was over, he would have Fangyu executed.

Xuanyuan nodded and pointed at the other instruments, “How about these four pieces of lower rank instrument?”

The armour was damaged, clearly made by a blade. Xuanyuan must have an earth class weapon that was at least at the middle rank!

“The armour is slightly damaged. But that’s not a problem. I’ll take these four pieces for a 120,000 spiritual coins. So the trading centre will pay the young master and lady 220,000 spiritual coins. I’ll change the coins to 22,000 kingly coins. How about that?”

“Xuanyuan took out a bunch of money bags from this ring. “There’re 50,000 master coins, 130,000 spiritual coins and 3,000 wild coins. Please change all of these to king coins. It’s more convenient that way.”

“Of course!” Fangyue smiled and ordered people to take all the instruments out of the room. He gave Xuanyuan his money, with some extra on the side to appease him. He didn’t want to imagine what would happen to the trading centre if the boy told Fung Lie of the Fighting Dragons Sect!

He also offered Xuanyuan, Yan Ziyun and Guxing to stay in a tavern for a night for free. It would cost them a fortune if not for the exemption. After a shower, they changed into clean clothes. Yan Ziyun was stunning. Xuanyuan, on the other hand, had a mysteriously elegant composure.

When they were about to leave, Fangyue stopped them.

“Please wait.”

Xuanyuan didn’t interpret his enthusiasm as friendship. He would’ve had his legs broken if not for the token.

“This is the golden moon token. You are the golden members of the trading centre now. We’ll give you twenty percent off of any purchase you make in the future when you present it. Please keep it safe. Three days from now, the trading centre will be holding an auction, please do not miss it. Young master and young lady.” Fangyue put in a lot of effort into keeping them happy, and Xuanyuan accepted his offer, but before he left, he said,

“Master Fangyue, I don’t hold any grudge against your son. You don’t have to worry. I’ll need your help later to exchange some money and auction off some land.”

“Of course! Any time!” Fangyue relaxed when Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun disappeared from his sight. The two of them drained a large sum of money from the centre. If not for many years of saving, the centre wouldn’t be able to afford it.

\*\*\*\*\*

Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun finally arrived at the west side of Moonsky City. There was indeed an old pine tree and a great mansion next to it. The mansion must worth a lot of money. It used to be Tung Xuan’s private property. Even Yan Ziyun didn’t know about its existence.

“This piece of land is situated in a nice area of Moonsky City. It’s probably worth at least a million spiritual coins. I’ve heard a few stories about Tung Xuan’s behaviour. Many people give him money and gems every year, so they can maintain a good relationship with him. Let’s go in and see what he’s hidden inside.” Both of them were showered and clean. He didn’t have anything other than the armour Yin Zhenluo gave him and his mysterious dagger. Xuanyuan wanted to get a set of earth class instruments.

“Well, it’s empty inside. Tung Xuan must have been very afraid that someone would find out his secret. There were many traps inside though. It wouldn’t be easy to break in. They’re all powerful, almost as powerful as the traps set up by grandmaster realm fighters. I wonder if Tung Xuan hired someone to set up his protection.”

“Greedy old bugger, can you break the traps inside the mansion? We can’t get in there.” Xuanyuan asked. He communicated with Greed through his mind, though he still did not understand how they were speaking.

“There’s no need to ask me. There’s a token inside his ring. It can control all the traps in there. If you destroy the token, all the traps will be shut down. Or you can go in while carrying it, you won’t get attacked.”

Xuanyuan found the token. It was synchronising with the traps inside the mansion.

“This should be able to control the traps. Let’s go!” He said.

They walked up the stairs and opened the door.

With the token, none of the traps were activated. He walked straight in.

The garden was full of flowers and green grass. It was decorated with hand-carved stone ornaments. They inspected every corner of the place and discovered nothing. Finally, they arrived at the study room.

There was a book, a table, a chair and some paintings on the wall. Other than that, it was empty.

“He tricked us? Looks like there’s nothing valuable here.” Yan Ziyun said.

“Ha, Tung Xuan was quite clever. There’s a secret chamber under the study room. The switch is among the paintings.” Greed only mentioned this after they

searched through the whole study room. Xuanyuan rolled his eyes as he thought, “The greedy old bugger is after all, greedy.”

“So what if I’m greedy? You got a lot of good stuff from my greed, didn’t you? If not for me, you wouldn’t know there’s a secret chamber!” Greed started mumbling, which Xuanyuan ignored.

“Let’s look around. There could be a secret compartment somewhere.” Xuanyuan got the hint and went straight towards the paintings. He took them down but found nothing until the last one. There was a handle hidden inside. Xuanyuan pushed the handle and then a staircase to underground appeared.

“Let’s go...”

Xuanyuan was in the lead, with Yan Ziyun and Guxing. They walked down the stair case into a chamber.

It was a stone chamber, with a ten metre long corridor, which was two metres tall and wide. Many bows could be seen inside the walls. Yan Ziyun tried to stop Xuanyuan, “Don’t. It’s a crossbow of explosion. Even more destructive than the talisman! It could injure king realm fighters! They are expensive and even more expensive to maintain. Tung Xuan had that much money?”

Xuanyuan waved his hand and said, “Don’t worry, I’ve got the token. They won’t activate.”

He could feel the connection between the token and the crossbows. Tung Xuan was definitely evil to lure them here. It was clear that he planned to kill them if they came here. It’s fortunate that Xuanyuan always took people’s

possessions after they died. That's how he found the token.

He summoned all the crossbows into his hand by releasing his Qi. He put all of them inside his ring. They then went inside the corridor.

Tung Xuan had practiced martial arts for a hundred years, he had been in the king realm for over a decade. He had definitely collected a large sum of wealth.

## Chapter 52 – Money, Money, Money

“Three days later, the trading centre is going to hold an auction, you can probably get some nice instruments, perhaps even a low ranked earth instrument. Ziyun, I’ll have to leave Moonsky City for the Fighting Dragons Sect after we collect our rewards on the judgment stand, let me buy you something before that.” Xuanyuan felt sorry for Yan Ziyun. Her brother and two friends, Shi Congyu and Liu Piaoxu all died because of him. He owed her too much.

“Xuanyuan, don’t say stuff like that. We can’t control how things work out in the end and I don’t need you to buy anything for me.” Yan Ziyun’s heart ached. Xuanyuan would have to leave and she was unable to stop him. She might be talented compared to ordinary people, but she was nothing compared to the best of the best in the Fighting Dragons Sect. She wouldn’t be able to go to the sect with him.

Xuanyuan fell silent. They walked deeper into the corridor, their footsteps echoed, until they reached the end.

Before them was a spacious chamber filled with oil lamps emitting dark red lights. A intoxicating sweet scent spread, alarming Yan Ziyun, “‘Illusion Oil’! Its scent can disturb one’s mind.” She quickly warned.

Xuanyuan nodded to show he understood. He said, “Don’t worry, the token will protect us.”

Indeed, clear white light glowed from the token and pushed the intoxicating sweet scent away. It was made from the same type of jade that the Pendant of Clear Heart was made from. It could protect people nearby from being harmed.

“Tung Xuan was very careful. People who break in would be killed by the crossbows. Even if they survived, they would be gravely injured then go crazy from the illusion oil.”

Yan Ziyun started to relax. She observed the spacious chamber. Dark red lights were flickering, causing their shadows to shake. Inside the chamber, there were fifteen large boxes stacked on top of each other. A furnace was situated in the middle of the room, which made Yan Ziyun’s eyes brightened.

“It’s a coin minting furnace. Who would have thought that Tung Xuan studied a technique for coin minting. No wonder he lived away from the school for all these years. He always lived close to Lu Feng and Ting Han though.” She said.

Xuanyuan dragged out a box, with Tung Xuan’s initials engraved. He opened it and golden colour reflected outwards. Yan Ziyun was astonished. “All of these are valuable materials needed for coin minting. Some of them were even good enough to make instruments!” She explained.

Xuanyuan nodded again and poured all the materials into his ring. Other boxes had Lu Feng and Ting Han’s initials on them. Something suddenly clicked in their minds. The three of them bought this mansion together.

All the boxes he opened so far were full of materials. He poured everything into his ring. When he opened the sixth box, a violent power crashed into him. It was a full box of king coins! It looked like there were at least 20,000 king coins!

It was almost as much as the entirety of his wealth. King realm fighters knew how to collect money, as he expected.

Xuanyuan was delighted at the sight. “Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Ting Han bought this mansion together. They shared the money as well. We will have to help them spend it. Hahaha!”

Yan Ziyun noticed it too. “That’s right. The crossbows cost 10,000 king coins each, the same as a middle rank earth instrument. It’s extremely powerful. Each crossbow contains eight arrows, each costs 1,000 king coins. Tung Xuan alone couldn’t afford it, but the three of them could. They probably set up the traps together, that’s why they’re almost as strong as the traps set up by grandmaster realm practitioners!” She giggled.

Xuanyuan was efficient in opening all the remaining boxes. Each of them contained 20,000 king coins. There were 200,000 king coins in total. Xuanyuan was now richer than rich. Tung Xuan, Lu Feng and Ting Han’s life savings were taken by Xuanyuan. If they knew, they would have probably died a second time from the anger.

After collecting the fifteen boxes of wealth, he also confiscated the furnace, it was a well made middle rank earth instrument. They’d probably spent a lot of money to buy it.

“It’s seems like there isn’t anything left. Let’s go and rest at the trading centre. We should go to the judgment stand after the auction is over.”

“Sure.” Yan Ziyun said, but deep down she was thinking, “Only three days left.”

Xuanyuan put the five boxes of materials and the furnace in front of Fangyue, surprising him. These materials were of the best quality. Expert coin minters could produce five boxes of king coins from one box of materials, if not more. The furnace was also in decent shape. It was worth a lot of money.

Fangyue immediately bought all the items with 260,000 king coins. He was certain that the trading centre would be able to make much more than the cost.

Xuanyuan and Fangyue were both happy with the deal. If he knew that Xuanyuan had an extra 200,000 king coins with him, he would be astonished.

Just when he thought the deal was over, Xuanyuan gave him a token and said, "I would like you to sell this mansion located on the west side of the city. I don't live here. I'll be going to the Fighting Dragons Sect very soon. So I have no need to keep it."

Then he went back to his room with Guxing. Yan Ziyun was staying in the room next to his.

Fangyue ordered one of his best employees to check the mansion. The result surprised even him. Expensive traps filled the entire mansion. Even though the decor was not particularly luxurious, it still cost a lot of money. Preliminary estimation indicated that the mansion was worth at least 60,000 king coins, and Fangyue offered an extra 50,000 to please Xuanyuan, who laughed and shook Fangyue's hand upon hearing how much money he would get.

"Master Fangyue, you are a great merchant." He commented.

The middle-aged man laughed with him before he excused himself. It was still a

good deal, as long as Xuanyuan didn't report to Fung Lie. The things he purchased from the boy would generate some profit in the long run.

His son was the one who offended Xuanyuan. He didn't want to exploit the father too much. The man had done enough to atone for the sins of his son.

He was now the owner of 514,000 king coins. A huge sum of wealth!

Xuanyuan was provided a room for practicing. He wanted to make good use of these three days to further refine his veins by practicing the "Dragon's Long Strikes". He needed to buy some strength replenishing pills. Who would have thought that he would be given thirty of them by Fangyue, free of charge? The Full Moon Trading Centre gave him a lot of money, a little bit extra on the side wouldn't hurt.

He wanted to study the Book of Acquisition, but he realized that he wouldn't understand much of it at this current level. First things first – enhancing his strength was the most important task at hand.

"Haha, Xuanyuan, it'd be much more difficult for you to refine your veins. You have The Body of All Creations, after all." Greed tried to provoke him, but Xuanyuan gave no heed. He punched out fist after fist, creating white waves that were shaped like dragons. The sound of a dragon's roar filled the air with each movement. They connected his skin, flesh and bones. A great deal of spiritual Qi was rushing into his body which refined everything impure, forming fighting Qi which slowly filled his veins...

## Chapter 53 – The Auction

The practice room was located on the third floor of the trading centre. It was the private quarter of the Fang Family. Normally, it was the practice room for Fangyue and Fangyuan. Xuanyuan was allowed to use the place as an honoured guest. The room was decorated with some magical markings to assist with the absorption of spiritual Qi. The floor was covered with black granite, giving the room a heavy and serious atmosphere.

Inside the room, Xuanyuan was moving according to the Heavenly Dragon's Long Strikes. He looked formidable. His shadow resembled an imposing dragon. The white dragon waves would not dissipate until they had travelled a few metres away from his fist.

Every punch cost him a lot of his energy. He now needed to take one strength replenishing pill every four hours, but the amount of spiritual Qi he absorbed was unimaginable. For every punch, he could feel that his veins were stretching like rubber. It was extremely painful, but with every movement, the fighting Qi strengthened his veins, refining his circulatory system...

He didn't sleep for three days. He spent all his time practicing. As a result, the veins in his upper body were all open and clear of impurity. His strength surged from fourteen dragons to twenty six dragons – much more than ordinary spiritual realm fighters!

“Hahaha, very nice... You'll have to refine your lower body, and finally your head. The head is the most important part. If you can get the veins in your head unblocked, you'll get a whole new sensation when feeling the world.”

Fangyue was shocked to see how much Xuanyuan had transformed in just

three days. “Just by taking strength replenishing pill, he managed to practice for three days straight. He has a very strong will. No wonder Master Fung Lie likes him!” Fangyue thought. He thought of the contrast between the industrious Xuanyuan and his failure of a son. It was a very bitter reminder.

“Master Fangyue, is the auction about to start?” Just when Fangyue was standing silently outside the room, absorbed in his own thoughts, Xuanyuan’s voice came from inside.

“Young master Xuanyuan made such progress with your practice! The auction is indeed going to begin soon. Many powerful people have come this time. Some of them are inner disciples from the sect. They are all ranked in the List of Merits!”

Xuanyuan frowned, “List of Merits? What’s that? Brother Fung Lie didn’t tell me much about the sect. He only gave me his token and asked me to find him in the sect.”

Fangyue was not surprised by Xuanyuan’s question. He investigated the boy’s background from the true disciples of the school who came to the judgment stand. Xuanyuan arrived at the school for less than a day before he was appointed to join the sect by Fung Lie. Fung Lie killed the true disciple, Ting Han, for Xuanyuan. This intimidated Fangyue even more. After all, not everyone could justify killing a true disciple, but Fung Lie did that for this boy. He also heard that Xuanyuan was protected by an old man, a peak king realm fighter. The old man called himself Xuanyuan’s servant. This boy’s identity became more mysterious with the more information gathered.

Fangyue was one of the elders of the Cave of Full Moon. He climbed the social ladder to manage the trading centre. Among all the elders in the cave, he was the only one that was a king realm fighter. He was the best merchant they had.

Naturally, he didn't want to make trouble for the cave. He could only do his best to please Xuanyuan and build a good relationship.

“Well, the Fighting Dragons Sect has set up two lists. The List of Merits contains the ranking of the thirty best inner disciples. The List of Fighting Dragons contains the ten best true disciples. Those who are on the lists are all elites in the sect. Master Fung Lie ranked first in the List of Merits before he became a true disciple. Soon after that he was ranked in the List of Fighting Dragons for his astounding potential! He is the most famous talent in the entire Land of the East.” Fangyue explained carefully, inserting a compliment to Fung Lie. He knew how to flatter.

“I see. Do you know any of the inner disciples who are coming to the auction this time, do they have support from other true disciples?” Xuanyuan knew why Fangyue was mentioning this and smiled as he asked.

“Master Xuanyuan is young and brilliant. He knew what I meant immediately. He is so much smarter than my son. I spoiled him too much.” Fangyue thought. He was in awe at Xuanyuan's intelligence. He was about fourteen years old, much younger than his own son, but much more talented. Sometimes you don't know how much was missing until there was something to compare it too.

“That's right. I would like to remind you to be careful not to get into a conflict with them. The true disciples supporting them might even be more influential than Master Fung Lie!” Fangyue replied. He was experienced in business. The power dynamic inside organisations like the sect was his expertise. He had a rough idea about who would rise to power and who would fall, so he was doing some early investments in Xuanyuan by purchasing everything from him and getting closer to him.

“Very well. Master Fangyue. Thank you for your reminder. I will be careful.”

Xuanyuan smiled, then turned back to his room. “Where is the auction? I will go there later.”

“The auction will be held on fifth floor. I’ve arranged a luxurious box for you. Box number six.” Then Fangyue left.

Xuanyuan arrived outside Yan Ziyun’s room just when she opened the door to come out. They looked at each other and smiled. Behind Yan Ziyun was Guxing. The wolf seemed to know that Yan Ziyun wouldn’t be with them for much longer so it spent as much time as possible with her.

“Come on. The auction is on fifth floor. There seems to be a lot of strong fighters gathering there.” Xuanyuan said.

She nodded shyly. Guxing growled to acknowledge what Xuanyuan said.

—

They arrived at the fifth floor. The place was extremely large. From the entrance there was a staircase going down to the auction stage. Below the stage were many small tables. People were sitting and chatting around. On the two sides, there were ten luxurious spectator boxes for honoured guests. Xuanyuan was offered one of the boxes during the auction. He gained special treatment because he was the appointed disciple of Fung Lie.

A sultry, voluptuous young woman approached them. Xuanyuan blushed at the sight, since she was wearing very exposed clothing, she showed off the curves of her body.

“If the old beggar was still alive, he would be over the moon. She is exactly his type.”

“Master Xuanyuan, Lady Yan? I was told by Master Fangyue to take care of you both. Please follow me.” The sultry woman’s voice was sweet.

“Please lead the way.” They headed straight to box number six.

From their box, they could get a glimpse of the crowded room below. There were indeed many powerful people here.

Many were curious about the wolf following them. The wolf had a decent amount of strength but it was not the most powerful beast, and yet they were heading towards the special boxes, that were reserved for grandmaster realm practitioners or people with powerful backgrounds.

Just when they arrived at their box, a slightly feminine man’s voice broke the air,

“I was wondering for whom this box was reserved. It’s just you two weaklings. Who the hell are you? I’ll break all of your limbs and kill that filthy wolf. Let me, Yuexing, teach you a lesson. So you know that someone like you cannot disrespect your elder brothers and steal my place in the special guests’ box.”

Along with the speech was a hostile gust of wind moving straight at Xuanyuan.

## Chapter 54 – Qi from all of Creation

Xuanyuan was disgusted when he heard the man's name was Yuexing. Another person from the Yue Family?

He reacted immediately and used the move "Heavenly Dragon Revealed". His skin, flesh and bones were connected as he punched out both his fists, looking like a dragon revealing its torso. Xuanyuan had mastered the Yin Family's Heavenly Dragon technique. The strength of twenty six dragons formed a white dragon shaped wave in the air!

Yuexing was suffocating underneath the pressure. Before he could react, Xuanyuan's fists already struck against his chest, sending it collapsing in on itself, crushing his ribs and destroying his lungs. Blood burst out from his mouth as he fell to the floor dead.

Yuexing was a peak spiritual realm fighter with eighteen dragons of strength. He would soon enter the wild realm. Xuanyuan had hidden his true power, while Yan Ziyun only had nine dragons of strength. So he underestimated Xuanyuan's strength and now he suffered the consequences of his actions.

"Young master Xuanyuan, he's your fellow disciple in the sect!" The sultry woman screamed, which made Xuanyuan frown.

"Was he a disciple from the sect? So weak? Then he was probably an outer disciple, ranked below me. He had the nerve to attack me and courted his own death." Xuanyuan's words and confidence was intimidating, but a man came up and said.

“Well, well, well. When did we get an inner disciple called Xuanyuan? I’m going to see if you’re as strong as you claim to be.” The man was holding a spiked club in his hands. His overbearing strength was revealed in each of his steps.

Xuanyuan immediately knew that he was a wild realm fighter. He had absolutely no advantages in this fight, especially without his weapon. The man was equipped with the best quality spiritual instruments while Xuanyuan had nothing. However, Xuanyuan did not back down, which surprised the man.

An errand boy came up to the man and whispered in his ear. The man’s overbearing stature shrunk back immediately.

“Oh? You were discovered by Brother Fung Lie? Then it’s Yuexing’s fault for provoking you. When we are back in the sect, we will see more of each other. I am Kuiya. Don’t forget my name.” His face was still dark and threatening when he went back downstairs. Fung Lie was not someone he could offend. Not to mention the rumours that this boy was protected by a peak king realm fighter who called himself Xuanyuan’s servant.

Fangyue sent the boy to Kuiya, so a fight could be prevented.

Yuexing’s body was cleared from the scene. The sultry woman elegantly brought the attention back onto herself. Xuanyuan couldn’t look away from her amazing body. He wondered if Fangyue had any idea when he arranged such a woman to serve them.

“Young master Xuanyuan, please come in. The auction is about to begin. The first item is very interesting.” She led Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun to the box while trying to peak their interest in the auction. However, Xuanyuan questioned about the people who would occupy the other boxes.

“Four of them are grandmaster realm fighters. The other five are all inner disciples from the sect, one of them is ranked in the top ten on the List of Merits...” She smiled and answered. Even though her voice was sweet, her explanation was short and to point. Xuanyuan nodded and memorized the details.

“There seems to be fierce competition between the true disciples. I’ll have to become stronger to intimidate more inner disciples before I go to the sect.” Xuanyuan was pondering.

Yan Ziyun had no idea what was on Xuanyuan’s mind. This was perhaps the last time she could spend time with Xuanyuan. That was the only thought that occupied her mind.

The air inside the box was fresh and comfortable, a sharp contrast to the chaotic scene downstairs. The trading centre knew how to please their influential guests.

The box wasn’t very big. Crystal blinds draped from the windows. From there, they could overlook the entire auction.

Guxing had grown huge, taking up a lot of space, leaving very little room for Xuanyuan, Yan Ziyun and the woman to occupy.

—

“The auction shall begin.” A thirty-something old woman spoke from the auction stage. She was also seductive, even though her dress was a lot less

revealing than the woman sitting next to Xuanyuan, but her sexy, yet dignified tone was something the younger woman next to Xuanyuan had yet to acquire.

“The first item is a heaven class technique, for refining the five organs.” The auctioneer was called Huayu. Her sultry and sexy voice stirred the imaginations of many men. However, people got even crazier when she mentioned the first item. It was a technique that would aid practitioners when entering the king realm. Many inner disciples only had earth class techniques. In order to get a heaven class one, they must first earn a lot of merits in order to be rewarded on the judgment stand. It was very rare to come by. They were surprised that the trading centre would have such a powerful technique.

“This technique was written by a an imperial fighter, it was named ‘Imperial Fire of Refining’. It’s a one star heaven class technique. Heaven class techniques are classified by stars, seven being the highest and one being the lowest. If the technique is stronger than seven stars, then it advances to a Xian class technique, but a one star heaven technique is already extremely rare.” The young woman explained to Xuanyuan. He stretched out slightly and his arms came into contact with something bouncy and soft. His heart started to pound when he realized what he touched. The woman immediately blushed as well.

“I get it.” Xuanyuan continued and pretended like nothing had happened.

He wasn’t impressed by the technique they were auctioning. He had the Devouring Technique, which was atleast a Xian class. The Heavenly Dragon Technique of the Yin Family could be improved to Xian Class as well. So this Imperial Fire of Refining was weak in Xuanyuan’s eyes. However, for people who studied fire Qi, it was precious.

“Does young master Xuanyuan study a fire technique? If you do, this would be very helpful!” The young woman also carried on as if nothing happened.

“Greedy old bugger, I don’t know what kind of Qi I refine. It just feels like it’s a pure Qi, without any type of elements in it!” Xuanyuan realized that the Qi he refined was not classified into any type of elements. He just devoured any Qi he could.

“Do you understand what the Body of All Creation is? You are the chosen one of the Devouring Emperor. You can absorb any Qi within all of creation, not just the fire Qi. You are still studying the basics of the Devouring Technique. You’ll understand when you learn more.” Greed was incredibly proud.

## Chapter 55 – You Got Tricked!

Xuanyuan observed impassively, while the people below were going crazy for the auctioned item, making Huayu the auctioneer smile.

“We’ll start the bidding on the ‘Imperial Fire of Refining’ at 10,000 king coins. Each new bid should be at least 3,000 king coins higher than the previous bid.” She said. That set many people off. 10,000 king coins could be exchanged to 100,000 wild coins or a million spiritual coins. You could buy ten lower rank earth instruments with that kind of money.

But someone from a seat below the stage gave his bid. “13,000 king coins.” He shouted.

People in this auction hall were all brimming with wealth. Even though Tung Xuan hoarded much wealth before his death, he still wouldn’t be able to sit in one of the boxes with his small sum. People sitting in the box were all extremely wealthy or powerful. Everyone else tiptoed around them.

Xuanyuan was quite surprised that he recognised the man. “Isn’t that Kuiya, the guy who wanted to fight me? Does he study a fire technique?”

The young, sultry woman next to Xuanyuan smiled and explained, “No, he doesn’t, but he probably wants to get that to bribe an inner disciple who does, Huotao. Huotao is one of the disciples on the List of Merits.”

Xuanyuan pondered for a while and said, “How come Kuiya has so much money? He’s just a wild realm fighter.”

“He isn’t an ordinary person. There’s a portal inside Moonsky City that goes to the Fighting Dragons Sect. It’s controlled by an Elder of the Fighting Dragon City and he is Kuiya’s father. They are fairly rich. Young master Xuanyuan. When you go to the Fighting Dragons Sect, be very careful when you use the portal. Kuiya might try to assassinate you there.” She continued to explain.

That caught Xuanyuan off guard. He thought to himself, he would kill Kuiya if he dared to try something like that.

“Looks like you are very knowledgeable about things. What’s your name?” He kept calm and smiled at the young woman.

“I am Bai.” Her voice was sweet, Xuanyuan had to force himself to turn his head and look at the people who were bidding crazily.

None who were sitting in the boxes made any bids. Clearly no one studied fire techniques in the boxes. The grandmaster realm practitioners amongst them wouldn’t need it either. They had already started to refine their blood, they had already refined their five organs.

“Lady Huayu is hosting the auction, I’ll have to raise the price. 16,000 king coins!” He clearly wanted to win over the beauty’s heart. The higher the bidding price, the more she earned in commission. The trading centre knew that Huayu would attract higher bidding. She was in fact a king fighter herself. She was both powerful and beautiful.

“22,000 king coins!” Kuiya was not expecting such competition. He gave a dirty look to the man, to intimidate him.

Huayu noticed the undercurrent, and smiled, “Every transaction within the trading centre should be fair and open. The Cave of Full Moon is part of the Fighting Dragons Sect, we ensure that no one will be harmed because of their purchase after the auction. You can rest assured that your safety is guaranteed. There are many rules within the Sect of Fighting Dragons regarding this topic. Those who violate the rules will face severe consequences.”

This made Kuiya grow even more unhappy. Huayu was a king fighter. It wouldn't do him any good to upset her. So he had to hide his discontent. They set the starting price low, so the trading centre was certainly expecting a huge profit from bidding wars. Kuiya's father worked for a city under the jurisdiction of the Cave of Full Moon, he wouldn't dare to make the cave unhappy.

Seeing this, the man regained his energy, “30,000!”

Many people were also drooling over the technique.

“40,000!”

“48,000!”

“57,000!”

Xuanyuan couldn't believe it. He wouldn't even be able to join the auction if he had not robbed Tung Xuan, Lu Fung and Ting Han's wealth.

“Does the trading centre hold this type of auction regularly?” He asked Bai.

“Every five years. It takes a long time to collect the items that we auction off. People also need time to gather larger sums of money.” She nodded.

“The trading centre isn’t inconsiderate after all.” He sighed.

Yan Ziyun giggled at his comment. Only she knew where he was getting all of his money.

He glanced at Yan Ziyun, who was cuddling Guxing lazily. He had made up his mind. Bai wasn’t able to decipher what he was thinking.

“68,000!”

“76,000!”

“83,000!”

“90,000!”

“120,000!” Kuiya couldn’t take it anymore. He shouted with all his strength. The extra 30,000 king coins he added immediately silenced everybody.

Huayu stared at him, then at the others who were shocked by his bid. She knew that the bid would end at 120,000 king coins.

“120,000, going once. Anyone else?” She radiated a big smile and tempted many people. However, the men couldn’t afford to offer more. There might be

other things they wanted.

Xuanyuan turned to Bai and asked, “Does she get more commission with a higher bid? If so, I might as well make sure that Huayu and the trading centre earns some more, given that she can protect me from getting harassed by Kuiya and his father.”

He killed Kuiya’s subordinate and thus there was already enmity, so he wouldn’t lose much if the grudge grew, but he could get on the good side of the trading centre and Huayu.

Bai laughed, accentuating the size of her bouncing chest, making Xuanyuan blush.

“I can guarantee you on behalf of Sister Huayu that Kuiya and his father will not be able to harm you.”

“120,000. Going twice” Huayu was looking pitiful before all the men who wanted to win her heart. They backed off from winning her heart with just 120,000.

With Bai’s promise, Xuanyuan put in his bid.

“150,000. Brother Kuiya. Thanks in advance.”

People were all shocked. Another rich person? They all turned and stared at box number six, recognizing the boy who was previously arguing with Kuiya.

Kuiya was furious. He laughed, “Brother Xuanyuan, you can’t win over me on this. 200,000!”

Xuanyuan, on the other hand, was cold, “230,000!”

“280,000!” This was the most he could put in for this bid. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to buy anything else he wanted. What he didn’t foresee was Xuanyuan’s next move.

“Hahaha, brother Kuiya. You are indeed very rich. I can’t fight with you on this. The technique is yours!” Xuanyuan said lazily from his box.

“He tricked me!” Kuiya realized immediately. He could’ve bought the technique with 120,000. He could’ve bought many other items with that extra 160,000!

Huayu was content. She knew that Xuanyuan was the one Bai was accompanying.

“280,000 going once.”

“Going twice...”

“Sold! Great! The ‘Imperial Fire of Refining’ belongs to young master Kuiya!”

Kuiya glared at Xuanyuan, cursing him. “Wait until we reach the City of Fighting Dragon. I’ll kill you when we’re there. Not even Fung Lie can save you from assassins!”

Huayu saw the evil thoughts going through Kuiya's mind, but she didn't say anything.

“The next item on the list is a set of middle rank earth class instruments. They are especially well-suited for female practitioners. The set is called Moon-star, it includes a sword, a helmet, a gown, a pair of boots and a pendant. They are made with the refined Qi of the moon and stars, by the hands of an expert smith. The bid for the set starts at 25,000 king coins!” She just smiled and moved onto the next item. “This is great as a gift for the beauty in your life!”

## Chapter 56 – Wronged

A lower rank earth instrument cost at least a million master coins. A middle rank earth instrument cost at least five million master coins. That was, given that they were normal instruments without any special functions. The coin minting furnaces, even though it was also a middle rank earth instrument, it was worth much more than that.

An ordinary middle rank earth instrument was worth about 5,000 king coins. The set had five pieces, so the price of 25,000 king coins was reasonable.

“The set was made by a grandmaster realm smith from the Cave of Full Moon. It is made with great quality. It can help Miss Yan’s practice.” Bai glanced at Xuanyuan, encouraging him.

Xuanyuan felt that he owed Yan Ziyun too much. She lost two friends and a brother for him. He couldn’t ever replace them. The only thing he could do was to compensate a little by giving her the set of Moon-star instruments.

“Xuanyuan, don’t. I’m not very strong. I can’t use the set to its full potential anyway. Don’t waste money on....” She said hastily.

“Money is not as important as your safety. This can protect you. I don’t know when we can meet again after I’m in the Sect of Fighting Dragons, so don’t say no to this.” Xuanyuan wouldn’t take no for an answer. Yan Ziyun glanced at Guxing, she couldn’t breathe for a moment, her heart was filled with a warm happiness, even though she didn’t say anything.

When Huayu announced the starting price, a king realm woman immediately

called out her bid.

“30,000!”

From the box number three, another woman also called out coldly, “40,000!”

“She is called Biyue, an inner disciple who studies a Moon-star technique. She’s already a king realm fighter. She is an unreasonable woman, she goes around offending people everywhere because she is supported by her brother, Biluo, a true disciple of the sect.” Bai explained who the woman was.

A man’s voice called out from the box number eight, “50,000!”

“That man’s called Xiang Tianku. An inner disciple, a peak king realm fighter. He ranks in the List of Merits. His sword is a middle rank earth instrument called the Sword of Starcrush. The reason he wants to buy this set is probably to give it to Longyue, who ranks third in the List of Merits.” Bai kept on explaining.

Xuanyuan nodded. Bai’s explanations were helpful, but none of that meant anything to Xuanyuan. No one is going to take away his gift for Yan Ziyun.

“60,000” He called out.

Three inner disciples were fighting over the set. Everyone else was holding their breath.

“65,000!” The woman downstairs wouldn’t let it go.

“70,000!” Biyue called out again.

“78,000.” Xiang Tianku added.

All eyes were on Xuanyuan. After a brief moment,

“100,000.” He said. The high price once again surprised everyone. They all knew that Xuanyuan was recommended as an inner disciple of the sect. Otherwise, they would suspect that he was sent by the trading centre to raise the price.

The woman downstairs bit her lips regretfully. The price exceeded her capability, she could only give up.

“120,000!” Biyue called out contemptuously. Her gaze was like lightning, striking at Xuanyuan through the shades of his box. The warning from Biyue was unsettling.

“130,000.” Xiang Tianku was not as invested as Biyue, but he was still confident.

Xuanyuan opened his mouth to call his bid when Bai warned him, “Young master Xuanyuan, the price for the Moon-star set is 150,000 at most. It wouldn’t be worth it if you pay more. Be careful with your bidding.”

“150,000.” He closed his eyes after he spoke.

A freezing glare shot his way. Guxing, a wolf of such great stature, still

trembled from the oppressive gaze. Biyue was a king realm fighter after all, even though she didn't dare to harm them physically.

"160,000." She said, then added, "Brother Xuanyuan, I know that Brother Fung Lie likes you very much, but you haven't even stepped into the doors of the sect. You don't know any of our rules. There are people you should not offend, otherwise not even Brother Fung Lie can protect you. It never ends well to whomever stop me from getting what I want."

A blatant threat.

Xiang Tianku was silent for a while. It wasn't worth stepping on the tail of the crazy woman, Biyue, just to please Longyue. He also would like to see how much Xuanyuan could take. So he said gently, "Sister Biyue, brother Xuanyuan. I won't bid on it any farther, this is your fight."

"Lady Huayu, what should I do? Even though I have the money, I can't bid on it anymore. Sister Biyue threatened me. She clearly has the power to destroy the Cave of Full Moon if she wants. I can't bid against her. The set of Moon-star instruments belongs to her." Xuanyuan sounded confused and disheartened.

"Please don't worry, young master Xuanyuan. Looks like lady Biyue doesn't think very highly of the Cave of Full Moon. Even though we are under the jurisdiction of the Sect of Fighting Dragons, we still won't be bullied by Biluo. Young master Xuanyuan, in the name of the Xian Fighters from Cave of Full Moon, no one will make trouble for you." Huayu added her own veiled threat. The Cave of Full Moon is a trading hub, the sect's main source of income. Biyue, an inner disciple of the sect, was clearly out of line.

Biyue couldn't utter another word for a while. She wasn't expecting

Xuanyuan's devious trick of using the cave as his shield. She was already being treated as an important guest by the cave, but she still not strong enough to threaten them. She is only a weakling in the eyes of those who rule the cave. She had a fiery temper, but she wasn't stupid.

"Well.... Xuanyuan, how can you say such a thing. I'll have to see how much money you can give. 180,000!" She was so angry, but she smiled instead.

But Yan Ziyun was worried sick, "Xuanyuan, let it go. I don't need it. I don't want to give you any trouble in the sect." She said.

"200,000." Xuanyuan ignored Yan Ziyun. He stretched a little bit, and said while sounding confused. "Sister Biyue, what have I done? You are the one who threatened me. I'm just scared of you. Is that my fault?"

"Stop pretending. 220,000!" Biyue yelled.

"250,000!" Xuanyuan added 30,000 to the bid. She was growing irritated. The bid was much higher than the value of the set. If she put in another bid, she would lose a lot of money.

"Haha, if you really want it, I'll let you have it. The set is only worth 150,000. Only a rich boy like you can afford to buy it at such a high price tag. I won't fight with you."

That's not what she actually thought though. The set of Moon-star instruments had a lot of potential to become an upper rank earth set. It suited her. With a whole set, practice would be much easier and much more efficient.

“Thank you, sister Biyue.” Xuanyuan smiled, he wasn’t embarrassed by the price at all.

“Then, the set belongs to young master Xuanyuan...” Huayu looked appreciatively at the box number six and ordered someone to send the auctioned item to him.

Yan Ziyun was still worried, “Xuanyuan, you’re too reckless. You’ve already made enough enemies!” She said.

Just at this moment, a servant girl came in with the set of Moon-star instruments.

“Ziyun, take this as my gift.” Xuanyuan said.

## Chapter 57 – Dragon Boots

Yan Ziyun was touched. She couldn't refuse the gift, since Xuanyuan already spent so much money in it.

Xuanyuan's bidding shocked Bai also. Fangyue told her that Xuanyuan had about 300,000 king coins. And he spent 250,000 to please a woman. That's 250 million master coins.

Bai thought, the best thing a woman could ever have is a man like Xuanyuan. Many men would say all the right things, saying how they would sacrifice many things for their women, like those who want to woo Huayu by bidding a high price. Yet they all backed down if it got too expensive. If they couldn't even part with money, they definitely couldn't give their life for them.

Once upon a time, a man also threw in a lot of money just to win Huayu heart, and she was touched by that. She was young then. These stories didn't touch her anymore.

Bai heard many things about Xuanyuan from Huayu and Fangyue. She also found out what Xuanyuan had done in the School of Yuehua, and his relationship with Yan Ziyun. They'd only known each other for a short time. He didn't have to repay Yan Ziyun, but he still did it. Even though he was heading for a bright future in the sect with Fung Lie, he still wouldn't forget those who were kind to him. That was indeed a rare quality. He's only fourteen, but much more of a man than all the guys sitting downstairs. Bai really thought so.

Xuanyuan took out thirteen boxes filled with king coins out from his fighting ring. "There you go. There're 260,000 king coins here. Check and see, then give me back the 10,000 coins." He said.

“Young master Xuanyuan, do you still have the golden moon token? That means you are the honoured guest of the trading centre. You only need to pay 200,000 for this.” Bai smiled sweetly. Xuanyuan was shy when he heard her voice. Fangyue did his best to please Xuanyuan, saving him 60,000 already just by giving him the token. Xuanyuan didn’t hesitate to take the discount. He had 514,000 king coins from the mansion, only half would be left after he paid.

“Good, then take ten boxes.”

“Wait, Hong. I’ll talk to sister Huayu later. Just take nine boxes.” Bai said to Hong, the servant girl.

“Of course, Lady Bai.”

Xuanyuan was surprised to hear Bai was called a lady. She was probably not an ordinary woman. Why did she serve him in this place then? But he kept it to himself and said, “Thank you, miss Bai.”

“Don’t worry about it. Sister Huayu would have done the same. There’re still many precious things to be auctioned. Take a look and see if there’s anything you need for yourself.” She chuckled.

Xuanyuan turned his gaze back to the stage. He accidentally elbowed a soft and bouncy location again and it sent his heart racing. Bai’s face was blushing red.

More things were being auctioned on the stage. Instruments, techniques, precious medicines and pills. Each of them was bought with an extraordinarily

high price. Xuanyuan “helped” with the auction by bidding up the price by several tens of thousands. Bi Yue was fooled twice by this.

The biggest winner of the auction was Huayu the auctioneer. There wasn’t many auctions as profitable as this one. On the other hand, Xuanyuan was shocked to see how much those grandmaster practitioners would pay for the things they wanted.

The auction went on for eight hours. All grandmaster realm fighters spent a handsome amount of money. Hundreds of items were sold. Many of the inner disciples of the sect got what they wanted.

With Xuanyuan’s aid, Huayu earned over an extra million master coins in commission. She had a victorious smile throughout the auction.

“It’s almost the end now. Only two items left. An upper rank earth instrument called “Dragon Boots”. The price starts at 50,000 king coins. Please make your bids!”

For an earth instrument, a lower rank piece was worth at least a million master coins; a middle rank five million; an upper rank fifty million. Fifty million was 50,000 king coins. The Dragon Boots were obviously powerful, judging from its name.

The moment the boots were placed on the table, Bai whispered in Xuanyuan’s ear. The warm, moist air from his ear stirred his imagination. “The Dragon Boots were made by an imperial fighter from the Hu family in the City of Fighting Dragons. It has the potential to become a top rank earth instrument. It has superb defense power and can stimulate your fighting Qi, so you can fly easier with those boots on.

Bai's skin was snow white with a rosy blush on her cheeks. Her voice tender and sweet. Xuanyuan was finding it hard to breath.

"I see. Let's take a look at how others are bidding first." He killed the thoughts going through his mind and concentrated on the auction stage. There were two images of dragons embroidered on the boots.

It's extremely rare to see an upper rank earth instrument. Someone as strong as Fung Lie also has one, his spear. They are precious. Everyone in the auction went into a frenzy for the earth instrument.

"That's so rare! Wait, isn't a dragon the symbol of the Yin Family?"

"That's right. I've heard that it was made by an imperial fighter from the Hu Family to insult the Yin Family. Those who aren't powerful enough shouldn't wear it, it might get them killed if they encounter someone from the Eastern Dynasty."

"Well, the Yin Family is very powerful in the Eastern Dynasty. I've heard that they have a marriage arranged with the Hai Family."

"It's the young lady of the Yin Family. She's going to be married with the young master Hai."

.....

Xuanyuan heard the conversation. The news of Yin Zhenluo marrying Hai

Family's young master struck him like lightning. His mind went blank. He suddenly felt a surge of murderous intentions fill his mind, this caught Bai off guard. Yan Ziyun was also surprised.

"Xuanyuan, what happened?" She asked.

Yan Ziyun's voice pulled him out of his thoughts. He smiled innocently,

"Nothing. I just remembered some old memories."

Looking at his smile, Yan Ziyun recalled the conversation from downstairs. She realized what the problem was and thought to herself, "The woman he is chasing after was lady Yin, then..." She smiled bitterly.

A voice from box number ten shook everyone back to reality, "60,000!"

Another bidding war began.

## Chapter 58 – Intimidation

“70,000.” Biyue joined the fight.

“80,000.” Xiang Tianku also wanted the boots. It was a beautifully decorated, rare, and good quality upper rank earth instrument. Disciples and masters of the sect would appreciate the irony of the name. They all felt the competition with the Yin Family of the Eastern Dynasty.

“90,000.” Another grandmaster fighter joined in, discouraging many other disciples. The grandmasters were extremely wealthy. There wasn’t much hope to win in a battle of wealth with them.

“100,000 king coins.” Another inner disciple from the sect who sat in box number nine called out. He was called Xiaotian, from Bai’s introduction. He was ranked on the List of Merits. A true disciple who was much stronger than Fung Lie protected him. He bid successfully for a few items before, indicating his immense wealth.

The competition for the Dragon Boots had heated up.

Some of the people started to hesitate and stopped bidding. “120,000.” Just when the bidding was getting quiet, Xuanyuan called out.

“Brother Xuanyuan, you’ve put in your bid for many items and successfully raised the price. People paid much more than they should have. Were you doing that on purpose? Are you doing it again?” Biyue smiled viciously. Her speech stirred up many people’s hatred for Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan helped raise the price on the three grandmaster realm fighters, and all of the seven inner disciples when they were about to get what they wanted.

“I like to put in my bids in at the very end. If I can afford it, I’ll buy it. If I can’t afford, I give up. I didn’t do it on purpose. Whether you can buy an item or not depends on how much you can spend, right? My bids are my estimation on the item’s value. I can only spend the money I have and not more. If you think you can afford the boots, sister Biyue, you can put in a higher bid.” He smiled as he responded.

The people’s anger slowly dissipated. After all, this is what an auction is about. Xuanyuan’s bid was never unreasonable. Those who got their price raised were not so angry anymore.

Still some people hated him. He also knew that he was stepping on the toes of many people, but he wasn’t afraid with the protection from the Cave of Full Moon.

Xuanyuan was wearing ordinary clothes, his pendant destroyed, his sword sold. Wearing his armour given by Yin Zhenluo, he didn’t need new armour urgently, nor a new pendant. His dagger was a great weapon, but he gravely needed a pair of new boots. Even if you couldn’t win a fight, you could always escape. He learnt the importance of boots after he encountered the poisonous spikes in the Mo nest.

“I see. 130,000. We’ll see how much money you’ve got, brother Xuanyuan.” Biyue chuckled, with foul plan in her mind.

“140,000.” Xiaotian sounded confident.

“150,000.” Xiang Tianku was also confident.

“160,000.” Another grandmaster fighter also put in his bid.

“200,000.” Xuanyuan was going to get the pair of boots. Losing the bid was not an option. He could afford to pay 400,000 king coins.

“Brother Xuanyuan, you are obnoxiously showy of your wealth, putting in 40,000 king coins. I’ll see how much you can pay. 210,000.” She looked excited.

“220,000.” Xiang Tianku said.

“230,000.” Xiaotian put in his bid.

“250,000.” The grandmaster lost his patience and added 20,000 to the bid. He often raised the price at the end, discouraging people from further bidding.

“Young master Xuanyuan, 280,000 king coins are what the pair of boots are worth. Be mindful.” Bai warned him.

He nodded in silence. Biyue frowned. She thought Xuanyuan couldn’t afford to pay more.

“Hahaha, brother Xuanyuan, I thought you are wealth, but you’re just pretending. 260,000!” Biyue laughed mocking.

But suddenly, from box number six, Xuanyuan’s voice blasted out with a clear

threatening tone and powerful aura of death.

“300 Imperial coins!”

Xuanyuan’s voice sounded like it came from the deepest depths of the underworld. Everyone was petrified.

“What is this feeling? That voice made me feel like I was standing before a god of death. It’s terrifying!” A man screamed.

“What a powerful murderous aura. Is there a more influential power supporting Xuanyuan? That must be the case, he has imperial coins after all.” Xiang Tianku thought. He was also surprised by the imperial coins. After a while of pondering, he said, “I give up.”

“Imperial coins! He has imperial coins!” Xiaotian was in awe. There was an angelic looking girl sitting next to her. She was scared out of her wits. She screamed, “This Xuanyuan was so powerful. He must have an imperial fighter supporting him. No wonder Lady Bai would accompany him.”

Her voice reminded Xiaotian of something. He also quickly renounced from bidding.

No matter what, there was no point in fighting for the boots anymore. The bid was much higher than its value.

“I shall give up also.” The grandmaster fighter declared. Xuanyuan had successfully intimidated everyone present in the auction house.

Only Biyue was left. There was also a girl next to her, who was pale from fright. She said while trembling, “What a scary voice. It felt like my soul was being pulled from my body. No wonder a king realm fighter would call himself Xuanyuan’s servant. He’s definitely not an ordinary person.”

Biyue was shocked by the information. She only paid the girl for the information on the items. She didn’t want to know anything about her competitors, because normally, no one dared to compete with her. What the girl just said unsettled Biyue. She was no longer contemptuous towards Xuanyuan. The voice had also intimidated her. She felt like her soul was going to be ripped apart.

“I give up.” There was no reason for her to fight over the boots, it was too expensive now.

Huayu looked at Xuanyuan in astonishment. She was also shaken by his voice. It was like the voice of death. He was extremely confident in his threatening bid!

“Very well. If no one is going to put in more bids, then the Dragon Boots belong to young master Xuanyuan!” Huayu’s smile remained, waking everyone from their shock. She sent a servant girl to give the boots to Xuanyuan.

“Next, we have the last item on today’s manifest. We don’t know how much it’s worth and are unable to identify it. Perhaps it’s a rare treasure.” After a while, she said. She sounded sultry and sensual again. She definitely knew how to control the scene. There’s a good reason why the trading centre hired her to host the auction.

A strangely shaped, black stone which was the size of a human head was put

on the table.

“We’ll start the bidding for the last item at 100 king coins.” Huayu’s voice was like bird’s song, comforting everyone. The atmosphere on the auction was slowly returning to normal.

## ***Chapter 59 - The Origin of Memory***

"Hahaha, you know how to bluff! But great, great! I like it. I was using a technique called "The Voice of Death". It's a seven star heaven class technique. It's enough to shut those worthless people up." Greed's voice was ringing excitedly in Xuanyuan's mind. It controlled Xuanyuan's body to use the trick. "I used a lot of power to do that. Boy, you need to kill more people to compensate me."

Xuanyuan relaxed. The greedy old bugger was a shadow following the Devouring Emperor. You could imagine how strong he would be at the peak of his strength. Not even imperial fighters would dare to fight against him, Xuanyuan was sure.

Powerful people all had imposing power in their auras. If they were not strong enough, they couldn't intimidate anyone. Very often, when powerful people were hurt, their enemies would hesitate to go in for the kill because of the intimidating aura.

A servant girl came in with Xuanyuan's Dragon Boots. The embroidered dragons looked alive. He immediately took out twelve boxes filled with king coins from his ring.

"Please see if it's the right amount."

The girl was dumbfounded. "Shouldn't it be 300 imperial coins?" She asked.

Xuanyuan chuckled, "Isn't 300,000 king coins the same as 300 imperial coins?"

Then the girl understood. Xuanyuan had the golden moon token to exchange for twenty percent off, so he only needed to pay 240,000 king coins. The reason he brought up imperial coins was to intimidate his competitors. In that moment, not only his voice, Xuanyuan's whole body became fearsome. Yan Ziyun was shocked, Guxing's fur puffed up from the fright. It took Guxing a while to calm down from its fright.

Bai was also slightly intimidated, but her eyes were twinkling. She liked Xuanyuan more and more by the minute.

Soon everything went back to normal.

"Just take 200,000 king coins." Bai ordered.

"Of course, Lady Bai." The girl counted the amount in ten boxes and put all of them in a fighting ring. Xuanyuan, on the other hand, took off his boots and changed into his new boots. Instantly, he felt like he was going to surge into the sky. He could probably defeat wild realm fighters, at least he would be faster than them, he thought.

He attempted to inject his fighting Qi into the boots. However, after he moved his fighting Qi to toes, he realized he still hadn't refined the veins in his lower body. It was almost impossible to activate the boots using his fighting Qi.

In his frustration, he sat down.

"Young master Xuanyuan, you are very smart." Bai didn't hide her appreciation. She liked intelligent men.

"That's nothing." Xuanyuan enjoyed being appreciated by Bai.

He estimated his expense. 200,000 for the boots, another 200,000 for Yan Ziyun's Moon-star set. He still had 114,000 king coins. It didn't seem possible to get the final item, but he still wanted to see what it was.

But when they put the strange stone on stage, Greed's voice rang in his head again.

"Xuanyuan, buy it. You must buy it!"

The scream brought on a headache. He shouted in his mind in turn, "Can you stop screaming so loudly? What the hell is that? Why are you acting up like this?"

"How can I not be excited? This is one of my Origins of Memory. You need that to practice the Devouring Technique and to refine your bone marrow, five organs, blood... It can restore part of my power. If I get that back, I can even defeat grandmaster fighters!" Greed was screaming, causing Xuanyuan's headache to grow. "After you study 'The Way of Absorption', 'The Way of Refining Flesh', 'The Way of Refining Bones', 'The Way of Refining Veins', you can study the technique from the Yin Family. You can't use the Devouring Technique to get rid of the restrictions of the Yin Family's technique. Then you won't be able to devour all different techniques, but if you have learnt 'The Way of Refining Marrow', you wouldn't be limited to studying the Yin Family technique. Do you understand? You won't be able to study other techniques, but if you use the Devouring Technique, you can study every technique in creation!"

Xuanyuan finally understood its importance, but Greed continued, "Your

power would only be revealed after you start to study 'The Way of Refining Marrow'. At that stage, you need to store a great amount of fighting Qi in your body. If you want to conquer the Sect of Fighting Dragons, you have to buy my Origin of Memory. Otherwise you'd have to collect numerous valuable stones and crystals to restore my power and my memories."

Xuanyuan needed to get that Origin of Memory.

"This is one of my Origins of Memory that got removed during the war between the Devouring Emperor and the other Emperors. You'll understand what I mean eventually."

His heart was beating faster. Looking at the Origin of Memory, many thoughts flashed through his mind. Would he be able to buy this valuable treasure with just 114,000 king coins? It wouldn't be easy.

He understood that if Greed regained this part of his power, he would be more powerful. He had got on the wrong side of numerous disciples in the sect. He already kissed a comfortable life in the sect goodbye. He needed all the power he could gather. Greed could tackle a king realm fighter already, but it needed to be discreet. Greed's power could fight against a grandmaster realm fighter if he was able to get that stone. His life would be much safer if he bought this item.

A grandmaster fighter called out his bid from one of the boxes, "It looks so strange. It doesn't have any energy flow. I'll put in 1,000 and play around with it."

"Haha, old friend. You are too stingy. I'll put it at 5,000." Another grandmaster fighter said.

"Honourable senior, this is like gambling, you could always lose the bet. The stone might end up being nothing. But I don't mind gambling on what it is." Xiaotian joined in, "10,000."

"Brother Xiaotian, why don't you give me a chance? So I can play with it. 15,000." Biyue was also curious about the stone.

"Sister Biyue, I'm also interested. I'll put in 20,000 to study it. If it's a useless stone, I can just toss it out." Xiang Tianku joined the bidding.

"Don't you all understand? If this was a real precious item, the Cave would save it for themselves. Why would they put it in up for auction? They just want to attract attention. I'll put up 23,000 and buy it." Xuanyuan spoke again, making everyone tense, but they soon recovered. They still felt fear, but he didn't sound cold and soul destroying this time.

"The young boy Xuanyuan is right. The trading centre isn't very thoughtful about the final item." One of the grandmaster fighters decided to not compete anymore.

"I'll leave all that to you. Not even the Cave of Full Moon can decipher what it is. We'll never be able to find out. Hahaha"

"The young master is very intelligent. I don't want it anymore. I almost got tricked by the trading centre." Another grandmaster fighter spoke. They were all very experienced. Even though they all really wanted the mysterious black stone, they stopped fighting after Xuanyuan spoke.

"Young people are smart. We almost got played. I didn't expect such a young

boy to understand what the trading centre was plotting, but he did. I won't put in another bid." Another grandmaster fighter laughed. He bought a lot of items that he long desired. He was satisfied.

The absence of three grandmaster fighters shook Xiaotian's determination. He thought back to Xuanyuan's voice, the cold aura of death that it brought to his body. He would do everything he could to avoid a fight with Xuanyuan. "Brother Xuanyuan, if you really want it, I'll let you have it, as your older brother in the sect, I'll give it to you gladly. But don't waste too much time on trying to figure out its mystery and forget about advancing."

"Thank you, brother Xiaotian. I just wanted to have a look at the item in detail. If I can't understand the secret, I'll let you have a look." Xuanyuan smiled.

"Well then. I want to study the stone first, 30,000!" Xiang Tianku thought Xuanyuan had an extraordinary background. The items he wanted must be precious. He was willing to fight for it, as long as it didn't get too expensive.

"That's right, brother Xuanyuan. I would like to have it as well. 33,000!" Biyue thought very differently from Xiang Tianku. She just wanted to make Xuanyuan suffer a higher price.

Xuanyuan stared at the two of them furiously. How come these two always got in his way?

## ***Chapter 60 - Jade from Huayu***

"I didn't want this crap so much at first, but now that you're all fighting for it, I think I'm going to buy it after all. 36,000 king coins." Xuanyuan snorted. He was fearless. Since everyone was fighting with him, he'd have to fight back. He estimated carefully, he could afford the bid up until 150,000 king coins with his golden moon status and the discount Bai would give him.

"Well, brother Xuanyuan has a lot of money to spare, but I'm really curious about this stone. Why don't you let me buy it. When I'm done studying it, I'll give it to you. How about that?" Xiang Tianku continued to bid, "40,000 king coins." Then he turned to the servant girl sitting next to him. With a bag of money in his hand, he asked. "Tell me what is that thing? If you can give me any information at all, this will be yours."

"Well..." The pretty girl stared at the bag. It had at least a thousand king coins inside. She could afford to buy everything she wanted with the money. "Well... okay. But master Xiang, you can't let people know that I told you or I'll be punished." She took the bag and whispered.

"This strange stone was found not long ago by an elder from the Cave of Full Moon in a desolate mountain. It does look suspicious, like young master Xuanyuan said, but everyone in the cave examined it, no one could find out what it was. It's probably just an ordinary stone, they said."

Xiang Tianku nodded. Xuanyuan would likely become a powerful competitor once he arrived at the sect, he thought, he would gain his trust and then kill him when the opportunity arose.

Biyue also pressed the servant girl with money in exchange for information.

"What's the top price of this stone?" She asked.

The girl took the money sheepishly, and said, "The master of the cave examined the stone. It doesn't seem to do much. They put it on the manifest as the last item because they wanted it to look like a treasure. This is probably a scheme to earn money from ignorant people. You know, people always think the last item is usually the most valuable."

Biyue was satisfied. As long as Xuanyuan bought the useless stone for a ridiculous price, she was happy.

"Brother Xuanyuan, I won't quit the fight. My bid is 45,000!" She called out.

"50,000!" Xuanyuan closed his eyes.

"Ah, I think I'm done, brother Xuanyuan. Even though I'm not poor, I shouldn't put my money into this, especially when you seem to want the stone so badly. Let's not fight. I don't want us to fall into bad terms." Xiang Tianku smiled brilliantly, but there was venom hidden in the smile. His plan was to turn Xuanyuan's anger towards Biyue.

"Oh? It's great that brother Tianku doesn't want to fight for it. It's only between me and brother Xuanyuan. 60,000." Biyue was beaming. She didn't want the stone. She just wanted Xuanyuan to spend a lot of money.

Xuanyuan smiled coldly, "This old hag, Biyue. This stone is more precious to me than all the money combined. She just wants to make me bleed. All right, we're

going to have a dog fight."

Xuanyuan pulled the crystal drapes to the side and looked straight at Biyue. He beamed.

"80,000. Sister Biyue. Don't say I didn't warn you. If you bid higher than that, I might not want it anymore." He said.

Biyue's heart skipped a beat. She already learnt the secret of the stone, Xuanyuan might know it as well. It looked like he had the same idea as she did – making the other person spend as much as possible.

After a moment of consideration, she smiled. "Well, brother Xuanyuan. If you really want it, I'll let you have it. You know, 80,000 king coins is a lot of money. You're young. Don't be so reckless with your money. You can buy a lot of fine lower rank earth instruments with that money. Hahaha...."

Xuanyuan shot a malicious glance at her, but he said nothing. "Wait until the greedy old bugger absorbs the Origin of Memory... Wait until I arrive at the sect... I'll see to it that you die." He thought.

"Then this last item is sold for 80,000 king coins to young master Xuanyuan. The auction has ended. We'll see you again in five years!" Huayu beamed. She picked up the stone and headed to the box number six.

All the audience was leaving.

The tall figure of Huayu came into box number six and handed Xuanyuan the strangely shaped stone. Xuanyuan took it and threw it into his fighting ring immediately. He said in his mind, "Greedy old bugger, take care of it yourself."

Greed couldn't hide his excitement, "It's worth it. If you didn't see it here, you'll never know where to find an Origin of Memory for me."

"For this stone, young master Xuanyuan only needs to pay 40,000 king coins." Huayu gave out the price tag herself. Her voice was soft, velvety, and seductive. Xuanyuan was easily seduced by it. He took a deep breath to calm himself. Then took out two boxes filled with coins before he headed to the door.

"Where is young master Xuanyuan going? You helped me earn a lot of money today, I can't let you go without a thanks." She said while giggling. The slight blush on Huayu's white skin and the voluptuous chest of Bai made Xuanyuan's head spin.

He tried his best to concentrate, "What do you want to do with me? Are you going to give me an earth instrument as thanks?"

Huayu toned down her smile and looked serious. She said, "You guessed right. I have had this upper rank earth instrument, the Jade of Water, for many years. Since you did me a great favour, I'm giving it to you."

She took off a jade pendant from around her neck. The pendant was connected to a chain made from snow silk. She wrapped it around Xuanyuan's neck and kissed his forehead lightly, startling him.

"This is my gift to you."

His face was burning. Huayu laughed at his embarrassment. Yan Ziyun didn't know it was possible to embarrass Xuanyuan. Only someone like Huayu would be able to succeed in teasing him.

Xuanyuan wiped the lipstick stain from his head and looked at Huayu sulkily. "Lady Huayu, I've made a lot of enemies during the auction. I'm afraid people will harm me. Perhaps you can protect me while I'm here?" Xuanyuan asked.

"Don't worry about it. The most dangerous place is often the safest place. You won't be harmed in Moonsky City. The sect, on the other hand, is very dangerous."

Huayu saw that Xuanyuan was confused, but she wouldn't explain any further. "You'll understand when you get there. The next stop is the Judgment Stand, right? Shall we go there together?"

The original plan was to buy a few pieces of upper rank earth instruments, but he already spent most of his money. He still had various medicines and pills that Wu Dong and Wu Ming left behind. After today, Xuanyuan realized exactly how important money was. Without money, there's no way he could continue practising!

"Yes! Let's go then. I want to see what I'll get as a reward."

## ***Chapter 61 - The Judgment Stand***

Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun were riding on Guxing, while Huayu and Bai were walking alongside them. They were speaking in a relaxed manner, but the strange ensemble still turned people's heads wherever they went.

"Young master Xuanyuan, are you going to the sect after you collect your reward?"

"Wouldn't you consider staying for a few days longer in the Cave of Full Moon as a guest?" Huayu still wanted Xuanyuan to be a guest in the cave. He was such an intelligent boy who would be a great asset to the cave, they could establish a stronger bond with the sect through him.

"I don't think so. It's too much trouble. I want to go to the sect as soon as possible. I can only grow faster in the sect." Xuanyuan declined the offer directly.

"Then you have to be more careful. With the amount of enemies you've made today, you will be targeted by many people." Huayu grinned, showing her dimples. Her long and straight legs strode, keeping up the pace with Guxing, who was jogging casually.

Every step Bai took, her breasts swayed a little, catching Xuanyuan's eyes every time.

"That's okay. I'm going to the City of Fighting Dragons as well. We can go together." Bai giggled.

"Why are you going to the city?" Xuanyuan was curious about Bai's true identity. Huayu was polite to her, she's probably someone of a high status.

"Well, it's nothing you should concern yourself about." Bai's smiled charmingly, silencing Xuanyuan. Behind him, Yan Ziyun was the only one who was neither relaxed nor happy. She was upset to part with Xuanyuan. She was wearing the set of Moon-star instruments, so although she was not smiling, she still looked angelic.

"Isn't that brother Xuanyuan. You are still a young boy, but you already have three exceptional beauties following you around. How enviable." Biyue suddenly arrived, her voice screeching through the relaxed atmosphere. Xuanyuan was wondering why this irritating woman continued to bother him.

He didn't know that it was a huge mistake to anger this type of woman.

Now he had angered Biyue by bidding the Moon-star instruments. She was furious to see that Yan Ziyun was the one wearing the instruments. She could have turned the set into upper rank earth instruments with some work. She felt like her precious items were stolen away.

"If you're jealous, sister Biyue, you can just get three men to walk with you. We have to run some errands, we will be leaving now." Xuanyuan laughed. He tightened his legs and urged Guxing to run faster towards the Judgment Stand.

Huayu and Bai, two king realm fighters, also picked up their pace immediately, leaving the angry Biyue behind.

Biyue shot vicious glare at the back of Xuanyuan. "Enjoy your moment while it

lasts. Once you're in the sect, I'll have someone kill you!" She gritted her teeth.

Then a man carrying a spiked club approached her.

"Sister Biyue, we should work together to get rid of Xuanyuan. He's too cocky. He hasn't even enter the sect and thinks that he's a genius with only twenty six dragons of strength. Doesn't he know that geniuses are one thing that the sect doesn't lack?" Kuiya said.

"Brother Kuiya, did you get the technique to give to true brother Huotao?" Biyue immediately mustered up an elegant smile. She's willing to show respect for Kuiya, because his father was an elder in the City of Fighting Dragons, also because the true apprentice that supported him, Huotao, wasn't on good terms with Fung Lie. No harm in having another alliance.

"Naturally, true brother Huotao has been nothing but good to me." Kuiya returned the smile and continued, "Xuanyuan killed Yuexing. I won't let him get away with this. I don't believe Fung Lie could attack me with the protection of true brother Huotao."

"True. Tell me if you need any help." Biyue then looked at Xiaotian and Xiang Tianku and thought to herself. "These two scoundrels. They must hate Xuanyuan as well. They put on those smiles for him, but want me to fight with Xuanyuan. Now this idiot Kuiya has volunteered. I just need to encourage him and Huotao to kill the boy for me. Fung Lie wouldn't dare disrespect Huotao. This is a good plan..."

---

On their way to the Judgment Stand, Xuanyuan grew impatient and shouted inwardly, "Greedy old bugger, are you done. How come you are so slow?"

"Yes, I'm done absorbing the origin. It feels so great to regain my memories." Greed sounded content. "Unfortunately, my power is still too weak. Oi, boy, you need to find me the rest of my Origins of Memory and a bunch of fighting stones, jades, and crystals. So I can absorb more power."

Xuanyuan rolled his eyes. He grumbled, "There's nine stones left by the Emperor of Acquisition, can't you absorb their power? You should be able to get a lot of power from them."

"How wasteful! How can you understand, boy? The stones left by the Emperor of Acquisition are extremely powerful indeed, however, the power they have is needed to protect the precious objects inside of them. If I absorb the power, the nine treasures would be destroyed. It wouldn't be worth it. I think you should only open the stones once you reach the imperial realm. Don't have any ideas before that, or they'll just bring you disaster."

Greed kept rumbling. "You know, once upon a time, I was powerful and handsome... one of a kind..."

Xuanyuan didn't want to listen to the nostalgia, he mocked, "Well now you're none of those things. It's no longer 'once upon a time' anymore. You should just focus on protecting me. When I'm powerful, you'll have your fair share of benefits. Stop your rumbling."

"How dare you tell me what to do? You obnoxious boy..." Xuanyuan ignored the rest of the rant.

There were less and less people on the road as they went on. After about fifteen minutes of running, they finally arrived at the Judgment Stand.

The Judgment Stand had four pillars on each corner. The Four Heavenly Dragons of the Yin Family were sculpted onto each of them. They were chained by heavy iron chains, their expressions painful. The iron chains connected each other through the top of the pillars, forming a cross in mid-air. A statue stood at the point where the chains were connected. It was a two-faced man. One of the faces had a friendly and warm smile, the other had a terrifying face with long sharp teeth. One hand was holding a treasure box, the other an axe dripping of blood.

The Judgement Stand was a tall, round stage, with many stairs leading to the top. People could step onto the stand from all directions. It was an imposing, formidable place.

## ***Chapter 62 - The Minister of Judgment***

"Is this the Judgment Stand?" Xuanyuan took a deep breath. The sheer size of it astonished him. It was a stand surrounding a thirty-three mile radius.

"That's right. Let's go up together. I can bid farewell to all of you at the portal." Huayu said. Her smile was still seductive, but Xuanyuan quickly got used to it, and wouldn't be so easily affected in the future.

"Xuanyuan, how many Mo creatures did you kill during the ambush?" Bai knew about the ambush, because two other true disciples from the sect also sent for the school of Xinghua and Rihua to attack some other locations near the nest.

"You'll know soon enough." Xuanyuan looked at Yan Ziyun and handed her half of the elixirs he collected in the nest, but she immediately declined.

"Don't worry, Xuanyuan, you already gave me a set of instruments. I'm very happy with your gift. You don't owe me anything. You can't control all the events that happen in life. Don't feel guilty." She said.

Xuanyuan didn't know what to do. He sighed in the end. "Alright, if that's what you want. We'll go up the stand then." Xuanyuan signaled Guxing. They all strode to the top of the stand.

Many disciples from the School of Yuehua came down. They all looked quite happy. Some of them were friends with Yan Liang, so they wanted to greet Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun, but their smiles froze once they remembered past events.

When they reached the top of the stand, they saw many disciples from the School of Yuehua and other schools.

Many of them were shocked to see Xuanyuan, while eyeing lewdly at Huayu and Bai.

"Who the hell is this? Riding a wolf up here, isn't he itching for punishment?" One of men from the School of Xinghua smirked contemptuously at Xuanyuan.

"People are getting unruly these days, bringing their dirty pets to the stand. He looks like some ignorant farm boy." Another one from the School of Rihua also mocked.

"Well, the two girls are nice though. Can you see the size of her chest?" One of the true disciples from the School of Xinghua said, making Bai extremely uncomfortable.

"I'd say the other one is better. Look at her legs and tiny waist." These people from the Schools of Xinghua and Rihua only dared to say something as disrespectful as this because Huayu and Bai toned down their strength. No one could see how strong they actually were.

"One more word, and I'll cut out your tongue and gouge out your eyes." Xuanyuan said coldly. The disciple thought he had heard the funniest joke in the world.

"What a moron. You can't even defeat Xingkuang, how dare you challenge me?" The man was called Huoyun, a disciple from the School of Rihua.

Xingkuang, whom he mentioned, was a true disciple from the School of Xinghua. He just stepped into the wild realm, with twenty seven dragons of strength, one more than Xuanyuan.

"You are just a spiritual fighter. You'll regret speaking like that to us." Xingkuang stepped forward and released his Xinghua Qi in a fist that rushed straight towards Xuanyuan's face.

Xuanyuan didn't try to run, instead, he also released his fighting Qi in a punch.

"Heavenly Dragon Revealed!"

Two waves of fighting Qi shaped like dragons hit the Xinghua Qi. It exploded into a deafening bang. Xuanyuan stepped on the ground lightly, but Xingkuang's arm almost broke from the pressure.

"How could this be? You're just a spiritual fighter. How can you harm me with just brute force?" Xingkuang was shocked.

The other disciples also stepped forwards. Even though they were slightly intimidated by Xuanyuan, they still couldn't let him insult the School of Xinghua.

Huoyun from the School of Rihua also moved over with hostility.

But at this point, a dozen true disciples from the School of Yuehua saw Xuanyuan and bowed to him, "Greetings to young master Xuanyuan."

Xuanyuan nodded at them, but said nothing. Huayu and Bai released their true power.

"What? The women were king realm fighters?" All the people were astounded. It was like a slap in the face for Huoyun and Xingkuang. They were so disrespectful to Huayu and Bai, who could've easily killed them like insects. The force of king fighters was suffocating. Many of the disciples from the School of Xinghua and Rihua couldn't take the pressure and were forced backwards. Xuanyuan took the chance and leaped forward, striking Xingkuang in the face. The man flew a few metres backwards and dropped to the ground. He coughed up blood and spat out a few broken teeth.

"How dare you!" A king realm true disciple from the School of Xinghua was furious, but Yan Ziyun took out her Yuehua token and announced,

"I am the future Head of the School of Yuehua. You know full well who started the fight. Be careful when you decide to take your next step."

Not very far away, an obese man was lying on a stone bed. Next to him were six beautiful girls massaging him. He was very curious about Huayu and Bai, but thought better of it when their true strength was revealed. He moved to one of the girls and started to softly caress her, ignoring the altercation.

"So what? You are only a school head in the future. I'm also going to become the Head of the School of Xinghua. How dare you threaten me? I'm going to see if this brat can take my attack!" The man was called Xingjian. He owned the Sword of North Star, a lower rank earth instrument, its power was not to be underestimated.

"Oh? Then I'm going to stand right here and see if you have the courage to

attack me." Xuanyuan stood still and slowly took out the token given by Fung Lie.

"Killing you is like killing a stray dog." Xingjian lunged at Xuanyuan with his sword.

When the token was taken out, a gush of strong wind started to swirl around. The obese man moved in an instant. Unlike his body shape implied, he was extremely quick and agile. He slapped Xingjian across the face, striking him down to the ground, but he didn't stop there. He added eighteen additional slaps before he stopped and moved over to Xuanyuan.

"Ai, isn't this brother Fung Lie's token? How come you have it, Young man?" The obese man was surprised.

"I'm under the order of Brother Fung Lie to head to the sect. He gave me this before he left, saying that no one can touch me as long as I have this. I didn't expect it to work so well." Xuanyuan glanced at Xingjian, who was crouching on the ground. His face was now badly bruised and swollen, amusing Xuanyuan.

The movements the man used looked simple, but the speed and strength implied that he was a powerful grandmaster fighter who was slapping with at least a hundred dragons of strength.

"I wonder what is the name of the elder brother who helped me? Thank you for your assistance, elder brother." Xuanyuan gestured gratitude to the man. The man was pleased to hear that he was called "elder brother."

"I'm Luogeng. You needn't call me elder brother, I'm not on the same rank as master Fung Lie. You are now my younger brother in the sect. I'm the minister of

judgment here. All the rewards and punishments are administered by me."

Luogeng said softly. His attitude transformed completely from sleazy to polite, it was like two different people!

## ***Chapter 63 - Merit Points***

Elder brother Luo, I'm here to collect my merit points. Please help me check how many I will receive." Xuanyuan's respect made Luogeng giddy.

"No problem. I'll check..." Luogeng was content.

Many disciples from the schools were dumbfounded. Xingjian was silent. None of them had thought of the possibility that Xuanyuan was a disciple of the sect. There was nothing left for them to do but to suck it up.

Xingjian glared at Xuanyuan, he thought, "Damn it, I'm going to talk to young master Xingyun. I can't do anything to Luogeng, but I can still get to Xuanyuan."

Even though it was Luogeng who hit him, no one could touch Luogeng, not even Xingyun, a man who was ranked higher than Fung Lie in the sect. The Minister of Judgment must be respected at all times, a rule directly enforced by the sect which no one disobeyed. The people hated Xuanyuan even more.

Luogeng was smiling. With all the fat on his face, the likeness between him and a shar-pei was unbelievable. He had heard from other disciples of the School of Yuehua, that Xuanyuan accumulated the largest portion of the wealth. He had a lot of elixirs from Mo creatures. Even though he was protected by Fung Lie, they could still take advantage of him.

"A child after all. Being nice to him and he trusted me immediately. Looks like I can get some merit points for myself. I've wasted all these years as a Minister of Judgment here. It's about time I make some profit out of it." He thought.

Xuanyuan, however, was no ordinary young boy. He was polite to the obese man, but deep in thoughts he was thinking, "No one of his status would be so nice to a junior for absolutely no reason at all. No matter how respected brother Fung Lie is, his status was not higher than a minister."

"Brother Xuanyuan, come, come, let me see how many elixirs you've got. So I can determine how many merit points you'll get. You can exchange merit point for instruments, pills, elixirs, fighting stones, money, techniques and even practice in the time dimension." Luogeng explained.

"What does it mean to practice in the time dimension?" Xuanyuan had absolutely no knowledge of the sect, of course he's going to ask questions."

"The time dimension was a space created by the sect. The space can be warped in a way that you can stay inside for a year, but only a day passes in the real world, this depends on how many merit points you've got, of course." Luogeng was ready to rob Xuanyuan of his merit points.

"Well, I see. That's really interesting." Xuanyuan nodded.

Hearing Xuanyuan's amazement, all the disciples from the School of Xinghua and Rihua smiled mockingly.

"What a farm boy. He got picked for the little talent that he has. I'm going to see how many elixirs he could get to trade for merit points."

"He's only a spiritual fighter, he probably just got ten master rank elixirs."

"That's right. How strong can a farm boy like him possibly be?"

"We're not disciples from the sect, we can't exchange for merit points, but I've heard that more merit points can get you better rewards."

"Not that the farm boy can get any."

Everyone wanted to see Xuanyuan fail. Xuanyuan just ignored all the remarks. He opened his fighting ring and poured out several types of elixir from the Mo creatures. Two hundred and fifty two in total.

All those elixirs were poured onto the stone table in front of Luogeng. His servant girls were shocked.

"That's a lot. How many merit points can he get?"

"Well, all those people who came to collect their merit points had only slightly more than this."

"Too bad they're all master rank elixirs. If he got some more powerful elixirs, he could get even more points!"

"Only one in a hundred creatures have elixirs. There's more than two hundred elixirs. Did this boy kill twenty thousand creatures alone"

The girls were screaming with their excitement, even Luogeng's eyes were sparkling with greed. Xuanyuan knew what he wanted immediately.

"Elder brother Luo, how many merit points can I get with these?"

"We'll get to that. Do you have more?" Luogeng was almost drooling, but he believed the intelligence he got, Xuanyuan definitely had more elixirs than this.

All the disciples on the stand were astonished. You probably had to be a king fighter in order to kill all those creatures.

"Of course." Xuanyuan then took out another two hundred and eighty spiritual rank elixirs. They were the elixirs from the white ghouls. The residual power of white ghouls exploded when he took them all out, forming an image of a white ghoul above the elixirs.

People were speechless, while Luogeng couldn't hide his excitement anymore. He was shaking with excitement. "Hahahaha, wonderful. Brother Xuanyuan, you're incredible. Do you have more? Take them all out!"

"Certainly!" Xuanyuan grinned. He took out another hundred and thirty two demon elixirs. They were all wild rank elixirs. This was another shock to disciples from the other schools.

"How is this possible? He alone slaughtered all those white ghouls and demons?"

"That's not possible. Those creatures are too powerful and there can't be that many elixirs."

"Who is that boy?"

"Brother Xuanyuan, so you have any more?" Luogeng was laughing fanatically.

"I do. These are the last." He took out the remaining eight Yaksha elixirs, which was just plain unbelievable to the disciples.

Luogeng was trembling in ecstasy. He was calculating how much he could scam from Xuanyuan.

"Hahaha... Great! I'll calculate your merit points for you."

Disciples were allowed to bring the elixirs of Mo creatures and beasts to collect their rewards or merit points. This time, since it was a competition between Fung Lie and a few other true disciples from the sect and the true disciples were not allowed to use the forces from the Cave of Full Moon, only its subordinate cities, the mission was much more difficult. The sect gave out orders that all merit points for this mission should be doubled. Luogeng wanted to take advantage of that and registered all the points on Fung Lie's account, then he would give half to Xuanyuan, and half to himself.

## ***Chapter 64 - Six Hundred Million***

"Listen, brother Xuanyuan, every merit point can be exchanged for one master coin."

"Every elixir includes the life essence of a hundred Mo creatures. Every creature with the strength in the master realm has the reward of a hundred master coins. You have 252 master rank elixirs, which is equal to slaughtering of 25,200 master realm Mo creatures. That's worth 252 million merit points. Each elixir collected is worth a thousand merit points. That's another 252,000 points for you. So for this batch, you can collect 2.77 million merit points. Very well done, brother Xuanyuan." Luogeng calculated extremely quickly and was very precise. Xuanyuan did the math himself, the math was correct.

"That's 2.77 million merit points for me! Hahaha! Still more to come. Nothing's better than this." Luogeng thought.

Xuanyuan had guessed the reason for Luogeng's excitement immediately, he was laughing from ear to ear. However, Xuanyuan was patient. He would wait until Luogeng was finished.

"Well, the 280 white ghoul elixirs are amazing, showing that you've killed at least 28,000 white ghouls. Such strength! You're brother Fung Lie's protégé after all! You can get 1,000 master coins for killing each Mo creature at the spiritual realm. That means you earn yourself 28 million merit points here. Each elixir is worth 10,000 merit points. 280 elixirs equal to 2.8 million points. So you've got 30.8 million merit points for this batch. Brother Xuanyuan, you're going to be a rich man this time."

With the sweetness of from the wealth he gained, Luogeng thought, "Another sum of merit points! The rule is normally to take the quality of the elixirs into consideration when calculating the points. But I'm going get half of the points, so I'm just going to regard them all as the best possible quality!"

Xuanyuan was smiling happily. "You're right. I'll surely give you some of the points I get for all your hard work, brother Luo!" he replied.

Huayu and Bai were impressed by the amount of elixirs Xuanyuan had gathered.

The disciples stood aside, their faces were dark and stormy. When they brought their elixirs, Luogeng wouldn't give them any leeway in terms of quality, but now he judged all of Xuanyuan's elixirs as the highest possible quality. They felt that it was unfair, but there was nothing they could do. Whoever doubted the judgment of the minister was doubting the judgment of the Fighting Dragons Sect. Even the head of a school wouldn't want to be accused of that.

"This is my job, it's not hard work! Don't worry, as the Minister of Judgment, I treat every case fairly. Brother Xuanyuan, don't mention that you're going to give me anything, that's bribery. I can't take anything from you." Luogeng suddenly looked serious, but he soon resumed his obliging smile, "I'm so happy for you, Brother Xuanyuan! We haven't had a genius like you for ages. I'm just so happy for you!"

After the white ghouls' elixirs, he started to calculate the demon elixirs. "Oh my, this is wonderful, brother Xuanyuan. You've got 132 demon elixirs, meaning you've killed 13,200 demons. If I was the one doing the killing, I'd be exhausted. You must have been so brave back in the nest!" Luogeng said, "You can get 10,000 master coins for each wild realm creature you've killed. That means you will get 132 million merit points!"

The fat man was almost dancing on the spot. "Another 132 million!"

His excitement caused the meat on his face to bounce and squash in a fascinating way, mesmerizing Xuanyuan.

"Each demon elixir is worth 100,000 merit points. You earned 132 million merit points! For this batch, you've gotten yourself 145.2 million merit points!" Xuanyuan took a deep breath. It was a great fortune.

"Eight king realm Yaksha elixirs, how great?! You get 100,000 master coins, which exchanges to 80 million merit points for all the king realm creatures you killed. Each Yaksha elixir is worth 1 million master coins as well. So you've got 88 million points." Luogeng was thinking about the sound of money going into his account. "In total, you've got 266.77 million merit points. The sect has a rule, you can get a bonus for earning more than 100 million merit points at once. I'll take the liberty to increase your total to 300 million merit points. You're a hero after all." He said.

But in his heart, he was thinking, "Hahaha, now I've got myself over 200 million points! Xuanyuan, you've given me so much money! Hahaa..."

"Brother Xuanyuan, I'm so impressed by you. Give me your token, I'll add it onto the record."

Xuanyuan shook his head, said earnestly, "Money is not important to me. Please give brother Fung Lie all the merit points. Let me be honest, he was the one to collect the 132 demon elixirs and 8 yaksha elixirs. He was almost killed by the princesses of Mo. If not for him, I'd be long dead...." Xuanyuan continued to speak about how one should always be grateful to their saviour....

Luogeng's smile turned stiff. He smiled drily. "Brother Xuanyuan. What are you talking about? I know Fung Lie, he doesn't care about money or merit points. You don't need to give him anything."

Xuanyuan was even more stubborn, "This is to show how grateful I am to him. It's not about the amount, it's about the gesture..."

Xuanyuan kept on the rambling for another fifteen minutes, Luogeng was growing more and more gloomy. His plan was to give half the amount, 266 million to Xuanyuan, and pocket the other half. The total sum was short of 600 million. Luogeng thought he was going to earn more than 200 million, so he didn't mind putting in his own points to make it a whole number of 300 million. However, now if he was to put 600 million into Fung Lie's token, he needed to give out his own points to make up the missing amount. Xuanyuan would not to be convinced otherwise.

"Alright! Alright! I get it, brother Xuanyuan." His voice was stiff. He could deeply feel the pain from losing his money, but he couldn't do anything, there were too many witnesses.

His hands were shaking with anger. With a shaky gesture, he summoned six dragons, each representing 100 million merit points from the treasure box held by the statue. The dragons swam into Fung Lie's token. There it was, 600 million merit points!

## ***Chapter 65 - Don't Look Back***

The 600 million merit points were worth 600 million master coins, which was equivalent to 600,000 king coins. Xuanyuan was delighted. All that money he spent at the auction came back to him right away. But he wasn't quite sure why the amount he got was doubled. He asked, "Were you mistaken, brother Luo? You gave 600 million instead of 300 million."

"No mistake. No mistake." Luogeng was stuttering. He couldn't think of an excuse immediately.

"Yes, there was. You've doubled the amount!" Xuanyuan wanted to know the truth.

"Well, well... since... the ambush was a competition between the true disciples of the sect, so the merit points they received were doubled. Since you gave all the merit points to Fung Lie, he got double, 600 million in total. Isn't it sad that you got nothing?" After a long while, he finally came up with an excuse. Even though his heart was bleeding, he still needed to keep up the act. He couldn't let Xuanyuan know that he tried to scam him.

"How nice for brother Fung Lie. 600 million is an immense amount even for a true disciple." Xuanyuan looked slightly regretful, slightly envious of Fung Lie's new found fortune.

At this point, Bi Yue, Kuiya, Xiaotian and Xiang Tianku arrived at the Judgment Stand, because the portal to the City of Fighting Dragons was located nearby. They were all shocked to see six merit dragons sink into the token in Xuanyuan's hand.

"Xuanyuan earned 600 million merit points! That's not the same as 600 million master coins. Not even 6 billion master coins could exchange for the value of 600 million merit points!" Xiang Tianku thought. Xuanyuan was indeed no ordinary person. He would be an immeasurable threat.

"No wonder he was willing to spend so much on the auction. He had a bunch of elixirs in his pocket. Good thing that I didn't leave him with any bad impression of me." Xiaotian thought, "When we're back at the City of Fighting Dragons, I must find a way to kill him. Otherwise, he might get promoted very fast with the recommendation from Fung Lie. Then I'll have more competition on the List of Merit."

"600 million merit points! The top true brothers and sisters couldn't earn half as much. Damn it. No wonder he fought with me to buy the Moon-star instrument set. Well, when we're in the sect, I won't let you walk away so easily." Biyue gritted her teeth. She was jealous of the 600 million merit points Xuanyuan had gained.

"This kid doesn't know how to stay under radar, he'll definitely have a hard time when he arrives at the sect. He killed Yuexing, I'm going to make him suffer once he's there." Kuiya looked at Xuanyuan with a dark face.

"I see, thank you brother Luo for your concern. To show my gratitude, I'm going to transfer 100,000 merit points over to you." Xuanyuan took out the points like he was giving money to a beggar.

Luogeng's enormous body jerked from the shock. He smiled drily, "Ha...ha... brother Xuanyuan, you're too nice."

"Don't mention it. Ziyun, go get your rewards. Then I'd like you to do something for me." Xuanyuan turned to Yan Ziyun.

She nodded, as her heart skipped a beat. From Yan Liang's fighting ring, she took out all the elixirs.

She didn't have the good luck of Xuanyuan. Luogeng calculated the qualities from each elixir carefully. Xuanyuan suddenly realized that Luogeng's original plan was to rob him of half the merit points. That's why all his elixirs were considered the best possible quality.

Well, that plan went south for him.

All in all, he was still an acceptable minister. He didn't take revenge on Yan Ziyun. All his calculations were correct and precise.

Yan Ziyun was not a disciple of the sect, she couldn't exchange for merit points.

Instead, she exchanged for an elixir of a wild ranked wolf and two elixirs for wild fighters. She realized that there was nothing she could get that would be useful for Xuanyuan.

"Take these, Xuanyuan. They're not very useful, but they're still my presents to you. I hope you can reach the wild fighter realm soon."

Xuanyuan took the elixirs, but not the elixir for the wild wolf. "Ziyun, I want you to help me with something. From this day onwards, you should take Guxing. It's too dangerous."

Xuanyuan looked at Guxing. It was sad and growled lowly.

"What?" Yan Ziyun didn't understand at first, but immediately she worked out the reason. Xuanyuan already made many enemies in the sect. Fung Lie could protect him. The sect wouldn't allow an ordinary beast like Guxing to enter. His enemies would find a thousand reasons to attack Guxing.

"No problem. I'll take care of Guxing from now on."

"Thank you. I will come back to the School of Yuehua more often to see the two of you." Xuanyuan smiled.

"Brother Xuanyuan. You're not that dumb then. It's better not to bring your filthy dog. Perhaps it'll make one of the elders unhappy and they would have it killed. You would only be able to cry." Biyue heard the conversation between Xuanyuan and Yan Ziyun, and gave out her unsolicited opinion.

"You're absolutely correct, sister Biyue. I'm too weak. One day, when I'm strong enough, I'll feed Guxing a Xian ranked elixir. Then even if Guxing is dumber than a pig, it would still be stronger and smarter than you, isn't that right?" Xuanyuan grinned, showing his pearly white teeth.

The pretty face of Biyue crashed instantly. How dare this boy compare her to a pig. She knew they were about to go to the sect and Xuanyuan was definitely going to suffer. So she laughed mocking. "Xian ranked elixir? Brother Xuanyuan, no one knows if you'll enter the imperial realm, not to mention the Xian realm. Stop dreaming."

Xuanyuan ignored her, when Xiaotian approached. He was friendly. "We're brothers once we arrive at the sect, Xuanyuan. If you encounter any problems, you can come find me. I'll help as best as I can." He sounded sincere.

"Thank you, brother Xiaotian." Xuanyuan nodded.

Xiang Tianku glared at the Moon-star set on Yan Ziyun, "She's only the future head of the tiny School of Yuehua. She doesn't have the right to wear my present to sister Longyue. You'll regret this, Xuanyuan." He thought.

But he maintained a friendly face and said, "Xiaotian was right. We are brothers, don't hesitate to come to me."

Xuanyuan made some small talk with them. Then he went back to Yan Ziyun.

"Ziyun, go back. I'll visit you in the school when I have time. When you become the head of the school, you can also come visit me in the sect."

Then he stroked Guxing's soft fur. "Guxing, Ziyun will take care of you. Don't leave her side. Do you understand?"

Guxing raised its head proudly and howled. Yan Ziyun climbed onto Guxing's back. Looking at Xuanyuan, she opened her mouth,

"Go, don't look back."

Xuanyuan was sad to leave her, but he had to.

"Ziyun, take care."

Then he jumped several hundred metres towards the portal.

"Miss Yan, farewell!" Huayu and Bai said at the same time. Then they followed Xuanyuan. Yan Ziyun was riding Guxing. She looked at Xuanyuan's back until she couldn't see him anymore.

## ***Chapter 66 - Please***

North of the Judgment Stand was the largest portal in Moonsky City. The portal was engraved with numerous runes, radiating a mysterious power.

"Greed, will anyone find out about you when we're in the sect?" Xuanyuan asked. After going through the portal, they'd arrive at the City of Fighting Dragons, not far away from the Fighting Dragons Sect. If someone discovered the existence of Greed, Xuanyuan would be killed for sure.

"Don't worry, even a Xian realm fighter wouldn't be able to sense my existence. I have a technique to conceal my aura." Greed's chuckle echoed in Xuanyuan's head. "You surprised me, boy. I thought you would bring your wolf to the sect. You made that decision after what happened to the Shi Village, right?"

"Indeed. In the School of Yuehua, we were under Ziyun's protection, Guxing was safe, but my life doesn't mean much in the sect, not to mention Guxing's. The feud between the true disciples will bring us a lot of trouble. I have to join in the feud because that's the quickest way to enhance my strength. Master Zhenluo wouldn't want to see me unless I'm strong enough to protect her." Xuanyuan told Greed.

"What a romantic! Your master Zhenluo only sees you as a child. Don't over think it. The Emperor once said, 'There's nothing more painful, bitter and poisonous than the suffering caused by love. Don't indulge in it...' Greed's voice was coarse.

"Oh? The Devouring Emperor was hurt by his lover?" Xuanyuan changed the

subject.

"Hahaha... I wouldn't tell you any gossip about the Emperor. Yin Zhenluo is a good goal to aim for, as long as you're only talking about enhancing your strength. You can't force a romantic love to bear fruit. When you meet her, she might not want you, and you'll have to accept that. Too many people couldn't come back from the rejection. Don't be one of them..." Greed's voice was fading.

Xuanyuan cursed silently at Greed.

"Young master Xuanyuan, sister Bai, I can only follow the two of you for a bit longer. I won't go into the City of the Fighting Dragons. Do take care of yourself." Huayu's mature charm was no less attractive than a woman in her youth, judging from the longing gazes she received along the way.

"Lady Huayu, I would like to ask if you can do something for me." Huayu was slightly taller than Xuanyuan, so he looked up and said solemnly.

"Well, certainly. You gave me a windfall. As long as it's something I am capable of, I'll help." She replied.

"It's about Yan Ziyun. She lost her best friends and older brother because of me. Guxing can only provide company for her. There'll be a lot of conflicts between the different schools. If you can help her if there's any trouble, I'd be very grateful. Of course, in the future, I'll help you with anything that you ask." He looked straight into Huayu's eyes. He had a face filled with conviction. He had a warm smile, he looked like a cute, innocent young boy.

Bai had already decided that Xuanyuan was a true, reliable friend to have.

Huayu pondered for a while before she chuckled. "Of course. As long as I'm here, no one can harm miss Yan, unless the higher-ups from the sect come to cause trouble. She is capable and well-respected within the City of Yuehua. I quite like her already. If she takes over the School of Yuehua, she'll have the support of the Cave of Full Moon."

Xuanyuan's eyes brightened up. "Thank you Lady Huayu! Well, I think it's time for us to go."

"Wait!" Huayu looked at the boy seriously, surprising him, which in turn delighted the playful Huayu. "Look at how nervous you are. Just don't forget you owe me one."

"Of course!" Xuanyuan wouldn't forget his promise.

"Sister Huayu, stop teasing him. We'll be heading off first." Bai smiled.

Then Bai and Xuanyuan bid farewell to Huayu and started to head towards the portal.

Looking at their backs as they moved into the distance, Huayu was smiling delightfully. She said lowly to herself, "Xuanyuan... what a good boy. Fangyue scouted a good talent, he'll definitely be rewarded."

There were all sorts of people going to the City of Fighting Dragons. A vulgar-looking man spotted Bai and whistled,

"Hey, pretty lady. Look at you. How come you're following such a scrawny boy? He can't protect you. Come with me, I'll make you ..."

Before the man could finish, Xuanyuan stared at him coldly and summoned the power of a Heavenly Dragon. The man suddenly couldn't breathe. He realized that Xuanyuan was a practitioner who studied a Heaven class technique. His vulgar friends all went quiet immediately.

"Hey! Brother Xuanyuan, wait for us." Biyue, Xiaotian, Xiang Tianku and Kuiya and three other inner disciples of the Fighting Dragons Sect arrived. They had been outside of the sect for a long time. They had to go back or they would miss the competition for the List of Merits that was coming up in the next six months.

"Brother Xuanyuan, when we're back at the sect, I'll show you all the best places." Xiang Tianku said in good humour.

The man who cat-called Bai was even more intimidated when he heard Xiang Tianku. Was the girl a member of the Fighting Dragons Sect? He was lucky that he wasn't killed.

"Thank you, brother Xiang." Xuanyuan then spoke casually with Xiaotian, Xiang Tianku, Biyue and Kuiya. He learnt that the other three were also inner disciples, but not as strong as Biyue, only slightly stronger than Kuiya.

"Everyone, pay the fee to travel to the City of Fighting Dragons." An old king realm fighter came up to Bai. She paid for both herself and Xuanyuan. The trip through the portal was a thousand king coins per person.

After everyone paid, the portal opened.

A bright light shone from the door. Xuanyuan thought, "The City of Fighting Dragons, here I come!"

## ***Chapter 67 - Challenge***

A few hundred people stood inside the portal, with powerful Qi surrounding them. The scenery of mountains, rivers, plains and oceans flashed past them in a blur. It was a portal that travelled hundreds of miles in an instant. It would take some time before they arrived.

"Brother Xuanyuan, when we're in the City of Fighting Dragons, I'll be a good host to you, the newest member of the sect." Kuiya spoke suddenly.

Xuanyuan's heart jumped a little. "It must be a trap. Kuiya would never do anything good for me."

"Thank you, but I think I'll be fine. I'm a farm boy from the country side. I might offend someone easily. I don't want to embarrass brother Kuiya."

In the sect, the most important thing was a person's strength. The more powerful that one became, the higher the status they had.

"Seems like you know your place. I won't force you. I can teach you the rules that you don't already know. Otherwise, if you do something wrong, you won't have enough lives to pay the price."

Xuanyuan narrowed his eyes, but thought better and decided to ignore Kuiya. He sat down. In the portal, he had finally realized how severe the conflicts between the inner disciples were. Even though they disturbed other people's lives, but no one would be stupid enough to provoke them. The sect would investigate if even a single inner disciple died. It was all about the reputation of

the sect.

"Young master Xuanyuan, it'll be three days before we arrive in the City of Fighting Dragons. When we are there, would you like to visit my place as a guest?" Bai asked, ignoring all the other grumpy inner disciples. She sat down beside Xuanyuan while remaining kind and friendly.

Xuanyuan was surprised to hear that it took three days to travel to the City of Fighting Dragons. He then recalled the Record of the East had recorded the distance between the sect and the school. Guxing could run a distance of 8,000 miles each day, and it would take Guxing three years to travel the distance if there were no breaks. You could imagine the vastness of the Eastern Lands.

"Of course, I'm still quite ignorant about many things. I'd like to learn more. During these three days, I'm going to practice so I can perhaps breakthrough to the next realm."

Bai smiled. She was content that Xuanyuan had agreed to come to her place. Xuanyuan's personality was something that attracted Bai. If she hadn't seen what he'd done for Yan Ziyun, Bai would've just treated him as a great talent, but it meant more for her to invite him to her private residence.

"Great, I'll leave you to your practice then." Bai stood up. The movement of her chest attracted the gazes of many people.

Xuanyuan was already concentrated on his practice. 'The Way of Refining Veins' was advancing every second and strengthening his veins even more. He was already ten times stronger than ordinary spiritual fighters. However, there was a large amount of impurity trapped inside his lower body. The veins below his waist were all blocked which hindered the flow of fighting Qi. He could only

release his fighting Qi from his upper body.

After he quietly recited the Heavenly Dragon's Long Strikes once, he jumped up from the ground and began his movements. Xuanyuan used the Devouring Technique to conceal the aura of the Yin Family's technique.

He had attracted the attention of many people. Kuiya mocked silently when he saw that Xuanyuan was practicing. "I'll have to see how much you can grow in three days. You'll be killed once we arrive in the City of Fighting Dragons."

Xuanyuan's heart was at peace, his eyes closed. Each punch was heavy, summoning wave after wave of white dragons. Each dragon travelled at least seven metres before they disappeared into thin air.

Every time he stretched his limbs, there was a numb but excruciating pain. Every movement refined some of the impurity blocking his veins.

He twisted his waist and stretched his spine, while he pushed his fighting Qi down into his lower body. He felt that the impurity was being crushed little by little. His veins were wider by the minute.

His practice continued throughout the journey.

It was exhausting for Xuanyuan, he needed to take a strength replenishing pill every two hours in order to sustain his level of training.

Xiaotian was astonished by Xuanyuan's moves. "What technique does he study? It feels like a dragon descending. Every movement summons a dragon formed by Qi!"

"He's no ordinary boy. The technique he has studied is surely a Heaven class, but how come I can't feel the aura? Was I wrong?" Xiang Tianku was shocked by Xuanyuan.

"Last minute practicing." Biyue rolled her eyes. Xuanyuan was already a dead man in her eyes, he didn't deserve her attention. She called Kuiya and commanded, "Kill him in the City of Fighting Dragons. Be quick and clean. When he's dead, I'll reward you handsomely."

Kuiya smiled evilly. Three days was all it would take until Xuanyuan met his end.

Xuanyuan showed an astonishingly strong will. He never stopped to rest during the three days. Bodily exhaustion could be replenished by pills, but not the mental exhaustion. The fact that he could practice non-stop proved the strength of his willpower.

On the second day, he had already consumed all of his pills. Luckily Bai was well-prepared. She got word from Fangyue and bought extra strength-replenishing pills, so Xuanyuan could continue his training.

On the third day, He unblocked all the veins in his lower limbs. Once he accomplished this, he finally stopped practicing. His strength had enhanced from twenty-six dragons to forty-two dragons. However, because of the Devouring Technique, no one could sense his strength. He was in fact, as powerful as a wild fighter now.

"Hahaa congratulations, brother Xuanyuan! You have improved so much!" Kuiya mocked. In fact, he couldn't feel any improvements in Xuanyuan's

strength. "Brother Xuanyuan, how about we have a match and test our strength?"

Xuanyuan looked at Kuiya. He was a peak wild fighter. Ordinarily, the limit of wild fighters was fifty-four dragons. Ordinary practitioners studied the less powerful yellow or black class techniques, but Kuiya studied a Di class technique. He is an elite disciple in the sect for a reason.

Xuanyuan still felt pressure from Kuiya's strength, but it was not as unbearable as before.

"How about this, we will have a bet to see whether you can resist a single strike from me or not. What do you think, brother Kuiya?" Xuanyuan looked at the inner disciples and smiled innocently.

"He doesn't know his limits. Kuiya is a peak wild fighter. Xuanyuan shouldn't agree to such clear provocation. I overestimated Xuanyuan." Xiang Tianku looked friendly enough, but his thoughts were ice cold. He said to everyone, "What a good idea. It's just one hit to showcase the hard work Xuanyuan put in during these three days. "

"Brother Tianku is right. I have high hopes for you, brother Xuanyuan!" Xiaotian also smiled.

"Do you really think three days could make a difference? Brother Kuiya, don't be so harsh on brother Xuanyuan. He's just naive. If you kill him, true brother Fung Lie might punish you." Biye was happy to see Xuanyuan fail.

"Don't worry. I'll go easy on you." He stressed that he would go easy. He

laughed and dropped his spiked club.

"Brother Xuanyuan, make your move!"

## Chapter 68 - The Gamble

A few hundred onlookers in the portal surrounded them to watch the drama unfold.

A king fighter commented on the imminent match between Xuanyuan and Kuiya, "The boy is about to die. He is just a spiritual fighter. No way he could take a hit from a peak wild fighter."

"That's right. The difference between the spiritual realm and the wild realm is immense. Wild fighters simply have much more fighting Qi and their bodies are much stronger." Another man commented. "And Kuiya has studied a Di class technique and has at least sixty dragons of strength. The boy probably only has around twenty dragons. One hit from Kuiya would be deadly."

"Young kids these days don't know how to keep their heads down. They think they're invincible for breaking into the spiritual realm. He'll regret his actions."

"Well, young kids should learn their lessons."

The audience started pointing and whispering, they were all giving Xuanyuan negative comments and pressure. So Bai stepped forward. "I'll be the house for this bet to see who will win from a single confrontation. The odds are 1:1. The house will bet on Xuanyuan. If Xuanyuan can't hurt Kuiya within the single confrontation, I'll lose the bet and will pay out whatever you bet. How does that sound?"

Xuanyuan was about to say something to stop the betting when Biyue laughed

mockingly in a high pitch. There were a few hundred people there, she doubted that Bai had the ability to pay that amount of money.

"Alright then, I'll bet on Kuiya for 100,000 king coins. You little girl, can you really give me back the money if you lose?" Biyue said contemptuously.

Bai glanced at Biyue and took out a token made from white jade. A golden character "Bai" was carved on it. "The Taibai Trading Centre surely has more money than you could even dream about." She said as she smiled coldly.

The token represented the Taibai Trading Centre. It was a world-class trading hub. Their power stretched across multiple kingdoms and lands. The golden token Bai was holding was not the most powerful of all the tokens, but it showed that Bai was equal to a true disciple of the Fighting Dragons Sect.

"All right. I'll bet against Taibai today. 200,000 king coins on Kuiya winning." Biyue gritted her teeth. She didn't believe that Xuanyuan could hurt Kuiya, there was the difference of an entire realm.

"Brother Xuanyuan, I'll have to bet on myself as well, 100,000 king coins." Kuiya laughed proudly and threw 100,000 king coins to Bai. This was all he had left after the auction.

"Brother Xuanyuan, please stop lady Bai. This isn't appropriate." Xiaotian advised.

"I can't stop Lady Bai, it's what she's decided. I can only do my best." Xuanyuan couldn't care less. He took a strength-replenishing pill to rejuvenate the strength in his body.

"Well, brother Xuanyuan, I can only bet on brother Kuiya. You are too young and immature. You can only improve once you've learnt to respect the differences between the different realms." Xiang Tianku sounded innocent, giving out a casual excuse. "I'll bet 200,000 king coins on brother Kuiya."

He knew how strong Kuiya was, one of the best wild fighters in the Sect. How could he be defeated by Xuanyuan?

"That's right. Brother Xuanyuan, you're too young and rash. If you don't learn how big the world is, you won't be able to get stronger. I'll also put my bet on Kuiya for 200,000 king coins." Xiaotian thought it was more appropriate that he put in a bet after Xiang Tianku and the other disciples. The Taibai Trading Centre surely had enough money to be the house. Those who carried the golden token had at least 10 million king coins to spend at any time. It was the largest trading centre in the East after all.

All the inner disciples put their bets on Kuiya. Bai was the only one who bet on Xuanyuan. She calculated the sum and announced, "Everyone who wants to join the bet has been counted. Total amount is 1.88 million king coins. I'll definitely deliver if I lose. The match will last until one side loses. Young master Xuanyuan, please try your best. If you are successful, you can have half the money."

Xuanyuan was excited at the prospect, "Haha, 900,000 king coins. I can buy lots of things with that money."

"Brother Xuanyuan, don't get too cocky." Kuiya said grumpily. He was jealous that Xuanyuan was supported by such a powerful woman.

"Damn this Xuanyuan. Why would someone from the Taibai would support

him? I won't kill him. That's too easy. I'll just maim him." Kuiya thought to himself.

"Cut the crap. We'll start the match. Brother Kuiya, prepare to take my attack!" Xuanyuan concentrated all his fighting Qi. The Qi combined with his Dragon Boots. He felt like the boots were now part of his body. With a small movement, he leapt out and rushed straight towards Kuiya.

Kuiya thought Xuanyuan would play some kind of trick, but he realized Xuanyuan had no intention of playing any tricks, "You want to compete with just brute force? That's suicide."

"Who does he think he is? He thinks he can harm a wild fighter so easily?"

"Kuiya can kill him with a simple punch."

Kuiya laughed while summoning his golden fighting Qi. His Qi was like numerous sharp spikes. They could cut through weaker practitioners.

"Brother Xuanyuan, you're really looking to die, aren't you?" With a punch, the golden coloured Qi struck out at Xuanyuan.

However, with a twist of his body, Xuanyuan used the move from the Heavenly Dragon's Long Strikes, "Heavenly Dragon Swims". With the help of his boots, he evaded the attack with astonishing speed. Kuiya's golden Qi only reached his shadow. Xuanyuan had disappeared from sight. Still in shock, Kuiya didn't realize that Xuanyuan swam through the air and was already next to him and ready to strike.

"Heavenly Dragon's Mountain."

Everyone saw the same image of a dragon clinging onto a small mountain as it struck Kuiya in the face. Xuanyuan didn't use anything but the strength of forty-two dragons. He slapped Kuiya's face, the shadows of forty two dragons appeared behind him.

Kuiya only felt a gush wind hit his face, but he had no time to react.

Despite the sixty dragons of strength, Kuiya still couldn't take Xuanyuan's slap without defending himself. He was thrown a few metres away and spat out a few teeth.

"How is this possible! A spiritual fighter with forty two dragons of strength?"

"What's going on?"

"What was that move? It was like he was possessed by a dragon, enhancing his power."

"The boots he's wearing are an upper rank earth class instrument."

"No wonder he can hit so hard."

In an instant, all those who put their money into the betting pool, realized they had lost, terribly.

Kuiya's face was stormy. He stood back up and attacked Xuanyuan from behind, deciding to take the fight outside of a simple match.

Xuanyuan didn't expect an attack from Kuiya. He tried to put his fighting Qi into his fist and take the hit. Golden fighting Qi and Xuanyuan's pure fighting Qi collided.

With a deafening explosion, Kuiya stood still, while Xuanyuan was thrown a dozen metres back.

## ***Chapter 69 - Lady Bai's Authority***

When Xuanyuan finally stopped, he spat out a tooth. He could taste the blood in his throat. Pain filled every inch of his arm.

The moment the fighting Qi of Xuanyuan and Kuiya collided, he felt like his arm was almost torn apart, before his bones were shattered, Kuiya's Qi was dissolved inside his body.

"Greedy old bugger, was that you??"

"Haha, no. It's the Body of All Creation. Your body can dissolve any Qi. That guy's golden Qi can't hurt you. He already refined his marrow, so his bones are as hard as iron. You haven't so your bones are soft like tofu, so it was luck that you only lost a tooth. Your body is being refined by Qi every moment. Apart from the unrefined marrow, your body is as strong as wild or even king fighters. Just keep on working harder." Greed replied.

Xuanyuan understood what happened, then he stood up.

"Kuiya, you broke the terms of the match." He looked at Kuiya and said coldly.

Kuiya thought he maimed Xuanyuan so he was stunned to see that he wasn't gravely injured.

"How can you still stand?"

"Haha, is that what you want? You wanted to cripple me? You lost and I won the bet!" Xuanyuan laughed.

All those disciples who bet, suddenly woke up with a realization. Biyue was the first to scream, "How is this possible? Kuiya, did you make a secret deal with Xuanyuan and lose the match deliberately? How could a spiritual fighter defeat you?"

200,000 king coins was the last of her savings. She took a gamble and lost everything. She was hysterical.

"That's not true! I wouldn't let him win deliberately. I don't even know what powerful technique he studies. A spiritual fighter with forty two dragons of strength. His movements were mysterious as well. I'd guess the technique he studies is at least a five star Heaven class technique."

Xiang Tianku and Xiaotian were much calmer in comparison. On the surface, at least.

"Well, True brother Fung Lie knows how to identify talent when he sees it. I didn't have faith in you, brother Xuanyuan, it's my mistake." Xiaotian said mildly.

But in his mind, he was pondering, "A spiritual fighter with forty two dragons of strength? That's too terrifying. If he gets any stronger, he'll surpass me in the rankings. I have to move into the first three places on the List of Merits. Any obstacle will be taken care of."

Xiang Tianku attempted to hide his dismay. Though the loss of 200,000 king coins was a huge slap in the face. "Brother Xuanyuan, you hid your talent so well.

That's very unlike True Brother Fung Lie. Still, I'm really happy that you won. You are a wonderful addition to the sect." Xiang Tianku's smile was tainted with a hint of anger. He was thinking very different thought,

"Damn it. How come there's another genius? It's getting more and more difficult for me to get into the first three places on the List of Merits. I'll have to do something about it..."

Kuiya was angry, but he knew better than to keep fighting, because Bai began to reveal her impatience. She was a king realm fighter. Xiaotian, Xiang Tianku and Biye didn't have confidence in fighting against her.

She was a member of the Taibai Trading Centre, meaning that the instruments that she's wearing were surely the best possible quality. They could enhance her strength immensely.

"Kuiya, what were you trying to achieve by hitting Xuanyuan from behind?" Bai stepped forward, releasing her Qi. Kuiya was suffocating from the pressure. He was on the verge of coughing up blood, and Bai hadn't even touched him.

"Lady Bai, please don't get angry. Anger must have gotten the best of Kuiya, that's why he ignored procedure and continued attacking. Please let him be. You won the bet after all." Xiaotian tried to mediate the situation.

"Well, since young master Xiaotian defended you, I'll let this slide." Bai said slowly. She raised her elegant chin and a cold ray of light shot from her eyes. Immediately, Kuiya was hit by the light and started to cough up blood.

Kuiya was shocked by her attacking him, but he didn't dare to scold her. She

was too powerful.

"We as the Taibai Trading Centre have a very high regard for the rules and procedures that we agree upon. Not one person, not even someone from the Fighting Dragons Sect would dare to violate one of our contracts. If any of you are not happy with what I just said, feel free to bring the master of your sect to dispute my words, but as I'm sure you can all imagine, it wouldn't end well for you. If the bet is agreed upon, you have to accept the loss once it's settled." Bai said authoritatively. Her transformation from a soft-spoken girl to a dominating leader shocked Xuanyuan.

He had read about the Taibai Trading Centre from the Record of the East. It was an incredibly powerful and wealthy trading centre. The Fighting Dragons Sect, Linglong Sect and the Eastern Dynasty all had solid trading relationships with it. Bai must be one of the more powerful members, Xuanyuan had easily come to this conclusion.

"Young master Xuanyuan, this is a Taibai king crystal. Every single one contains a million king coins." Bai turned back to Xuanyuan and smiled warmly. Her domineering aura disappeared in a flash.

"It's not appropriate, is it? We agreed that I'll get 900,000 king coins. This is more than that..." Xuanyuan smiled sheepishly. In his heart, he was impressed by her aura. It must be the aura of a core member of the Taibai trading centre. She would seize any chance to earn money and gain favours. She was surely not an ordinary woman.

"I was the house during this bet, but I failed to protect you. You lost a tooth from the match. Take the extra 100,000 as compensation." Bai's smile bloomed like flower. Her reasoning was sound. "Are you going to take it or not? I'll take it back if you don't want it."

Xuanyuan immediately grabbed the crystal.

"Of course I'll take it! I'm not that dumb!" He said excitedly.

The crystal had the emblem of Taibai engraved on it. It was carved using a special technique. He put it inside his fighting ring, pocketing another fortune.

Suddenly, a bright light exploded from every direction, before it quickly faded.

Xuanyuan knew that they'd arrived at the City of Fighting Dragons.

Those who didn't join the bet had just seen a good show; those who lost money were grumbling and cursing as they left the portal.

Bai chuckled, "Let's go to the branch of the Taibai Trading Centre in the City of Fighting Dragons. With the money I just gave you, you can purchase a nice set of instruments. Otherwise, you'll be without protection when you enter the sect." She said.

Xuanyuan nodded. The two of them walked side by side.

## ***Chapter 70 - Fight for what I want***

"That's was unexpected. The sect acquired yet another talent. True brother Fung Lie is indeed great at scouting talents." Xiang Tianku said gloomily after Xuanyuan and Bai left. "Looks like we'll be surpassed very soon."

"Brother Xiang, don't be disheartened. We are all best of the best. Brother Xuanyuan is indeed talented, but it'll still take some time before he can catch up. Meanwhile, we should all work hard." Xiaotian smiled mildly.

"Brother Xiaotian is very kind. We've all just lost a large sum of money. I'll have to go back to the sect, or I'll starve." Biyue said with dismay and glanced at Kuiya, who was still sulking after his defeat.

"Xuanyuan, now that you're in the City of Fighting Dragons, you'll soon meet your death." He whispered.

"Brothers and sisters, I'll head back now." Xiaotian gestured his farewell, then flew away.

"I won't stay here for long. Sister Biyue, Brother Kuiya, head back to the sect as soon as possible." After that Xiang Tianku left as well.

"Sister Biyue, I'll go too. Don't worry, I'll take care of Xuanyuan." There was still a hand print left on Kuiya's left cheek. A few teeth on the left side of his mouth were missing.

"Xuanyuan went to the Taibai Trading Centre, don't do anything rash. Wait

until he leaves there, then..." Biyue ran her finger across her neck.

"Xiaotian and Xiang Tianku are both unhappy with Xuanyuan. Even if Kuiya fails to kill him, the two of them will surely have their own plans. Xuanyuan, you shouldn't have been so quick to make us all look bad with your ability. Now everyone hates you. I don't think you will make it to the sect alive." She thought. She also headed towards the Taibai Trading Centre, she was not going to miss such a great show.

\*\*\*\*\*

Xuanyuan and Bai walked side by side. The square was crowded, with thousands of people exiting from hundreds of different portals. This place seemed to be the main connection square, it had hundreds of portals connecting to multiple locations. Moonsky City was only one of the portal locations. It was an enormous square that was accommodating such a large number of people without getting cramped.

Xuanyuan had never felt as insignificant as he did now. Almost everyone there was a practitioner. Many of them were wild realm fighters, some were king realm fighters. He was sure that he even spotted a few grandmaster fighters, but there was no way to tell. The City of Fighting Dragons deserved its mighty name.

He would be totally lost in the streets, if not for Bai leading the way. She knew the city like the back of her hand.

"Lady Bai, you're an important member of Taibai, right? Then why did you go to the Full Moon Trading Centre and act as a servant girl? Wasn't that degrading for you?" Xuanyuan asked.

"That was a test for Huayu from the Taibai Trading Centre. The Full Moon Trading Centre is a very small branch of Taibai. The relationship is like the one between the Sect of Fighting Dragons and the Cave of Full Moon. I'm the examiner and I gave a tiny bit of help to Huayu." Bai spoke in a soft and tender voice. "When I arrived at the Full Moon Trading Centre, Fangyue took out some instruments from the Yin Family of the Eastern Dynasty. He said that you sold him those. I was the one who sold those instruments to the Yin Family a long time ago. I was curious to see them again. I was interested to see who you were so I made the arrangements to accompany you."

Xuanyuan finally understood what happened. He didn't think that selling Wu Ming's instruments would lead to this.

"Aha, I see." He laughed dryly.

"Tell me honestly, how did you obtain the Yin Family's instruments? Those weapons are incredibly valuable. With your current strength, it's impossible for you to kill the owners and take their weapons." Bai smiled, but her eyes were clear and calculating.

Xuanyuan considered for a moment and looked back. "If I tell you how I did it, you have to answer a few of my questions. Deal?"

"Sure. As long as it's something I know." Bai said sincerely.

"I killed them and then took their instruments. There are many different ways to kill someone." Xuanyuan replied. He opened his fighting ring and took out a crossbow of explosion. "This is one of those ways."

She suddenly relaxed. A strike from the crossbow could definitely take down a king realm fighter.

"Alright. I will keep this our little secret." She smiled. "What do you want to know? Ask me whatever."

"Lady Bai, I know that the Taibai Trading Centre had a lot of information about the Eastern Dynasty. You probably know a lot about some of the most powerful factions there, right?" Xuanyuan was testing the water.

"Of course, what do you want to know about?" She looked at Xuanyuan curiously while leading him to the Taibai building. They were almost there.

"I'd like to know the strength of the Yin Family and Hai Family from the Eastern Dynasty." He got straight to the point.

"The Yin Family controls the entire military of the East. The Hai Family is trusted by the Eastern Royals and controls their intelligence network across the entire Land of the East." Bai also gave him a straight-forward answer. He finally realized the immense strength of his opponents.

"Then do you know Yin Zhenluo?" Xuanyuan continued.

Bai was surprised at the question, "Yin Zhenluo ventured into the territory under the Sect of Fighting Dragons a while ago. Do you know her?"

Xuanyuan's heart skipped a beat. Taibai deserved its name as the largest trading hub in the East, the intelligence network they controlled was no less than that of the Hai Family. They even knew the movements of Yin Zhenluo.

"Sort of. Can you tell me why the Yin Family wants Yin Zhenluo to marry the Young Master Hai?" Xuanyuan didn't trust gossip, he wanted the confirmation from Bai.

"Well, I don't know all the details. The only thing I'm sure of is that the Master of the Yin Family was sick for a few years. No one knew what the illness was. When you're someone as strong as the Master of the Yin Family, you'd have a higher chance of dying during a battle than getting sick. So it was quite serious when he fell ill. The Hai Family seemed to know how to treat the illness and was willing to help, but they wanted the Young Lady Zhenluo to marry their Young Master. Only the most powerful people in the Eastern Dynasty know about this." Bai didn't leave out any information. She told Xuanyuan everything she knew.

Xuanyuan was shocked to hear the reason. He had to become much stronger, that was the only way to stop the marriage.

"Is this Young Master of the Hai Family very strong? Stronger than Brother Fung Lie?" The Young Master Hai could be his future competitor, he needed to know everything about him.

"Of course. He's the expert using water. He's experienced with using 'The Heart of Sea', which ranks thirty-second on the list of fighting water." Bai explained.

"The list of fighting water! The Heart of Sea! Isn't it even stronger than The Fire of Sura?" Xuanyuan cried out in surprise. He remembered the Fire of Sura used by the Princess of Mo.

"That's right. Unless Fung Lie learns to use the wind that ranks thirty-second

on the list of fighting wind, he won't stand a chance of defeating Young Master Hai."

Xuanyuan's heart dropped. This was the man that was going to marry his Master Zhenluo. Could he really defeat him?

"How about Yin Zhenluo? Is she strong?" Xuanyuan continued.

"She's the 'Xian of the Heavenly Dragon'. A rare genius. You don't see someone like her very often. She can control the 'The Gold of Heaven', it ranks nineteenth on the list of fighting gold. Not even an imperial fighter can defeat her."

Xuanyuan was hit by another stroke of bad news. The difference between himself and master Zhenluo was enormous. It seemed impossible to reach her level.

"Young Master Xuanyuan. We've arrived at Taibai. Let's go get some instruments for you." Said Bai. She remembered back in the Full Moon Trading Centre, Xuanyuan had a shocking reaction upon hearing the betrothal between the Yin Family and the Hai Family and could guess what he was thinking.

"Thank you for leading the way, Lady Bai." He took a deep breath. He learnt a lot today. In his heart of hearts, he made a promise. "I'll fight for what I want but don't yet have. One day, I'll once again stand beside you, Master Zhenluo!"

## Chapter 71 – Huxuan

They arrived at the Taibai Trading Centre Building. They were chatting on the way, so Xuanyuan didn't pay much attention to the scenery. By the time he looked up, they had already arrived and saw the gigantic building.

The gate was a hundred metres wide, full of hustle and bustle, yet orderly. Outside of the wall, there were a hundred spiritual fighters on guard, giving out an imposing atmosphere. The Fullmoon Trading Centre was like child's play compared to it. Judging from the quality of the guards, you could guess that the people inside were all powerful fighters.

It's the main city under the Fighting Dragons Sect after all.

Bai heard Xuanyuan's gratitude for telling him the information, she replied, "No need to thank me. I only tell you what I know. Young Master Xuanyuan, do you consider us friends?" Bai smiled.

"Of course." Xuanyuan answered.

"Friends should help each other out. Perhaps someday I'll need your help." Bai's smile expanded, accentuating her dimples as they stepped inside the building.

"Greetings to Lady Bai." All the guards said the same thing when they recognized Bai. She nodded at them. Xuanyuan was still dwelling on his own thoughts, "I must work even harder. Otherwise I can't protect myself, let alone Master Zhenluo."

Inside the gate was a giant pond. A few colourful and valuable koi were swimming inside. They all seemed like the descendants of dragons. Their scales reflected the light from above and formed multi-coloured rainbows. It was a stunning scene. White lotus flowers grew on deep green leaves, giving off an intoxicating fragrance.

An old man came up to them and bowed to Bai respectfully. "My lady, you're back!"

"Yes, housekeeper. Thank you for all your hard work while I'm away. This is my friend. Please take out some of the best upper ranked earth instruments for him.

Bring them to the instrument tower.” Bai smiled warmly.

“Will do, my lady. Please follow me.” He answered as he led the way to the tower.

Bai must be an important figure inside the Taibai Trading Company. Many people’s gazes were locked onto her. There were also many people who were clearly infatuated with Bai. They even glared at Xuanyuan which gave him goosebumps. It seemed like people were willing to kill him for just walking together with Bai.

He smiled and sighed bitterly. “In this world, if you don’t have power, you will be killed by others...”

The Instrument towers was a large storage for their various instruments. It had a total of seven floors. The first was for top ranked spiritual instruments; the second, for lower ranked earth instruments; the third, middle ranked earth instruments; the forth, upper ranked earth instruments.

With the housekeeper leading the way, Bai and Xuanyuan arrived at the fourth floor. Many people greeted Bai from afar, and in turn she smiled politely. Many others were not so friendly when they directed their attention to Xuanyuan. If looks could kill, Xuanyuan would have died a thousand deaths.

The fourth floor was covered with beautifully carved granite. It was a circular space with a hundred square metres. Pieces of upper ranked earth instruments were displayed on the walls and many people were walking slowly as they looked around.

Once they arrived at their desired room, Xuanyuan could feel a suffocating aura. The aura was from the many king realm fighters inside, some of them were even grandmaster realm.

“Lady Bai, it’s been a while.” A handsome man suddenly approached them. He had a pure white cloth which he used to elegantly tie his long hair. Judging from the aura radiated from him, he was a grandmaster realm fighter.

“Ah, it’s young master Huxuan.” Bai smiled elegantly, as always.

“It’s been a long time since I last saw you. You’re still as beautiful as ever.” Huxuan looked at Xuanyuan and smiled gently. “Who is this young man?”

“This is my friend, Xuanyuan. He was handpicked by young master Fung Lie. I’m going to choose a few instruments for him to be better protected within the Sect.” Bai explained.

“I’m impressed, Xuanyuan. This is the first time Lady Bai has chosen instruments for someone.” Huxuan had only glanced at Xuanyuan for a brief moment before, but now he carefully observed the boy standing in front of him. Xuanyuan returned his gaze without a trace of fear. That was when he noticed that he was wearing the Dragon Boots made by one of the Elders of the Hu Family.

“Haha, Xuanyuan. Looks like you and I are connected through fate by your boots. One of the Elders from my family made them.”

Huxuan was astounded by the boy’s bravery when their gazes met. “Ordinary spiritual fighters would be scared by my gaze, but he’s completely fearless. Fung Lie has a good eye for talents, as usual.

“Greetings to Master Huxuan.” Xuanyuan gestured politely to him. From now on, he was going to be in the Sect which was very close to here, so it is always good to be cordial.

“Greetings to you too. I’m a good friend with Fung Lie. Let me and Lady Bai pick something good for you today.” He looked at Xuanyuan’s unruly hair and normal clothes. After a while of pondering, he gestured to one of the apprentices of Taibai towards him.

“Take out the Armour of Heavenly Gold and the Dustless Helmet.” He said. “These two pieces of upper ranked earth instruments should be the most suitable for you, Xuanyuan.”

The apprentice was quick to take out the requested items.

“The armour of Heavenly Gold has been refined for a hundred and eight cycles in order to purify it. The Spirit of Gold was injected so the armour has its own intelligence. It knows when to protect its wearer without manual activation. There is a protective spell on it, as long as you have enough fighting Qi in your body for the spell to activate, not even a grandmaster realm fighter could kill you.” Huxuan pointed at the armour.

“As for the Dustless Helmet. It’s made from dustless crystals, combined with stone of invisibility. When you are wearing it, there will be no trace of you. Given that you have enough fighting Qi to activate the spell formation, you can hide yourself from enemies and lie in wait to ambush them.” Huxuan pointed out the benefits of both instruments with just a few clear words. Xuanyuan knew immediately that these items suited him perfectly.

“Thank you for your recommendations, Master Huxuan, I’ll heed your recommendation.” Xuanyuan said sincerely.

“Alright. They are yours.” Bai was content. Huxuan was one of the many people who were courting her, but he was also the future master of the Hu Family and was known as a generous and sincere person. He would always give an honest opinion to Xuanyuan.

“Wait! I’m very interested in Master Huxuan’s recommendations. Let me, Xingcan, buy them.” Behind them, a man carrying a long sword approached and interrupted them which caused Xuanyuan to frown.

He’s a king realm fighter!

## Chapter 72 – Can You Tie My Hair?

“Xingcan? If I remember correctly, you ranked as number six on last year’s List of Merit.” Huxuan looked at him with admiration. Xingcan was young but he had already stepped into the realm of king fighters, surely he was a great talent. Everyone who ranked in the top ten on the list had a powerful support backing them. Xingcan was supported by a true disciple in the Sect called Xingyun.

“That’s right.” Xingcan bowed to Huxuan then turned his attention to Bai. He completely disregarded Xuanyuan. A spiritual fighter didn’t even deserve his attention. “Lady Bai, you wouldn’t oppose my purchase, would you? Taibai is a place for buying and selling, after all.

“Of course not.” Bai smiled. She was a senior member of Taibai, she had to be polite to all her potential customers. “However, these two pieces of upper ranked earth instruments are the gifts to my friend. Perhaps master Xingcan can see if there’s anything else that suits you in the tower. The instruments are a good match for my friend, but they might not be the most suitable instruments for you.”

“That’s alright. Let’s see how much brother Xingcan is looking to offer. The one who has the most money will receive the items.” Xuanyuan called out. He didn’t want Bai to step in and fight his battles for him. The money he had was from gambling, he couldn’t care less about spending it. He was determined to buy the two instruments no matter what. Also, the information Bai told him about the Yin and Hai families exceeded the value of a million king coins to him, he didn’t want to owe Bai any more than he already did.

Bai sighed. She knew that Xuanyuan didn’t want to put her in a difficult position with a potential customer.

At this point, Xingcan glared at Xuanyuan, “Who the hell are you. How dare you call me your brother? I’ve never seen you in the Sect. I’ll kill whichever imposter pretends to be a disciple of my Sect.”

He reached for his sword immediately. Xuanyuan was shocked to see such hostility. He took out the token from Fung Lie at once, “This token represents the true disciple, Fung Lie. You should kneel before it, Xingcan!”

Xingcan's eyes were as wide as dishes. He wasn't expecting to see a token from a true disciple. But he didn't kneel, so Xuanyuan smiled coldly, "Lady Bai, Master Huxuan. When I reach the Sect, please testify as a witness that Xingcan didn't kneel before the token of a true disciple, and in doing so violated the rules of the sect..."

Xingcan immediately kneeled and kowtowed to the token three times, "Greetings to True Brother Fung Lie." He uttered each word very slowly, each word was filled with hostility and powerful Qi, the pressure was enough to injure any normal spiritual realm fighter, but it was not enough to hurt Xuanyuan.

"All right, as true brother Fung Lie's representative, I'll allow you to stand." It was ridiculous that Xingcan wanted to use the rules of the sect against Xuanyuan.

Huxuan looked at Xuanyuan, pleasantly surprised. "This boy wasn't intimidated by the threats and instead he used his enemy's tactics against them. It looks like he's going to be Fung Lie's number two in the future." Huxuan thought as he watched the scene unfold.

Bai was surprised to hear that Xuanyuan was familiar with the Sect's rules. Seeing Xingcan embarrass himself and kneel down, she found it very funny.

Xingcan stood up and released his king Qi. A king realm fighter was the king above all those in the wild realm and below. The king of kings was a grandmaster. A grandmaster can be the ultimate power within a sect. Each realm had their own standing and needed be respected as such.

Bai also stepped up and released her king Qi, defending Xuanyuan. The fight between the armour and the helmet was inevitable now.

"Then we'll start with the armour of Heavenly Gold. The starting price is 200,000 king coins. We at the Taibai Trading company value a fair competition. Master Xingcan, name your bid!" She said.

An ordinary top ranked earth instrument would cost about 200,000 king coins, if it had already reached its limit for development. That's because an instrument with future potential was highly desired.

Xingcan knew what a "fair competition" meant and immediately toned down

his king Qi. He glared at Xuanyuan and said, “250,000!”

“500,000!” Xuanyuan replied immediately, his bid shocked everyone, especially Xingcan.

“Are you crazy? Can you pay 500,000 king coins?” Xingcan cried. He only brought 600,000 king coins with him today, he would much rather spend 500,000 king coins on a higher quality top ranked earth instrument.

“Of course I have enough money. You don’t need to worry about that.” Xuanyuan smiled. He suddenly had a lot of money thanks to the gambling, but the amount couldn’t intimidate Xingcan.

“I’ll see how much money you have left to fight for the Dustless Helmet.” Xingcan quickly gave up on the armour.

An apprentice from Taibai handed Xuanyuan the armour. It was a soft armour, with a top level protective function. It wasn’t as good as the Armour of Heavenly Dragon, but it wasn’t bad. He suspected the Armour of Heavenly Dragon to be a top ranked earth instrument.

He immediately put the armour on, soft golden light radiated in all directions. Xuanyuan suddenly looked like an elegant young man.

“Good, very good. The armour is superb. Thank you, Master Huxuan, for recommending this to me.”

“You’re welcome.” Huxuan smiled. He was curious to watch the bidding for the Dustless Helmet.

“The starting price for the Dustless Helmet is also 200,000 king coins.” Bai announced again. Many people surrounding them had already turned their attention to the bidding competition.

“Look at that spiritual fighter. Isn’t he embarrassing himself? Throwing away money like that.”

“Does he have the money left to get the helmet?”

“Not even Fung Lie has a million to spare, right?”

“Yes, you’re right. Fung Lie probably gave him the money.”

Xingcan opened his mouth, “300,000 king coins.”

Xuanyuan ignored Xingcan and walked up to the apprentice holding the Helmet. He took the helmet and walked back towards Bai and smiled, “Lady Bai, can you tie my hair back for me?”

The sound of gossip exploded among the audience. How dare the boy ask lady Bai to tie his hair? She wouldn’t possibly say yes!

But Bai returned his smile and said, “Of course.”

More gossip exploded on the scene.

Xingcan was furious. He pointed a finger at Xuanyuan angrily. “The helmet isn’t yours yet!”

To this, Xuanyuan coldly replied, “500,000 king coins. If you’re not happy with it, why don’t you offer a higher price? Put in 50,000 more, I’ll give you the helmet. Go on, say it!”

Xingcan blushed with anger. He couldn’t believe that Xuanyuan had so much money,

“I know you’re friends with Lady Bai. Is she going to pay for you? If you have money, why don’t you show it?” Xingcan said viciously. Many people on the scene were admirers of Bai. If Xuanyuan lets Bai pay for him, he would receive all of their hatred.

Even Huxuan frowned. He liked Xuanyuan, but if he spent Bai’s money on this, Xuanyuan would have to answer to him.

Xuanyuan chuckled, he took out his crystal, “Do you have eyes to see this?”

Then he gave the crystal with a million king coins registered on it to an apprentice of Taibai. Bai sighed, “He’s giving me back all the money already...”

Then she took the helmet from Xuanyuan and carefully tied his hair into the helmet. Her movements were both elegant and graceful. Many young men in the audience were jealous of Xuanyuan, even Xingcan was jealous. He came to Taibai Trading Centre because he heard that Bai had returned, but she had a man with her. He wanted to intimidate this man that she brought back, but was humiliated by him instead. Now he had to witness the woman he admired putting the

helmet he lost onto the man that humiliated him.

Huxuan, on the other hand, was extremely calm and collected.

With the addition of the helmet, Xuanyuan looked even more elegant. It seemed like he went through a sudden cleansing and all the dirt and dust on him vanished.

“Thank you, lady Bai. I still need to buy a few more things and would like lady Bai’s opinion. Master Huxuan, farewell.” Xuanyuan was wearing his newly purchased items, and looked like a graceful and innocent young man.

“Farewell!” Huxuan laughed with delight.

## Chapter 73 – Three Talismans

Xuanyuan and Bai continued walking side by side. The people around them were glaring at Xuanyuan and cursing his good luck.

Bai sighed and said, “Master Xuanyuan, we are friends, you don’t have to pay for these instruments. If you are willing, I can still gift the instruments to you. Not even Xingcan can fault you for that.” She said.

“Lady Bai, friendship should be a symbiotic relationship, not extortion from one side. Even if Xingcan didn’t fight with me, I would still pay for them. I’m very grateful for your kindness. It’s my pleasure to have gotten to know you.” Xuanyuan spoke with a kind and soft voice.

“Xuanyuan, you don’t understand. A million king coins can be exchanged for a lot of merit points within the Sect. Then you can obtain techniques, or practice in a time dimension to aid your training. Those are the things you can’t get outside the Sect even with money.”

“Lady Bai,” Xuanyuan glanced at the people walking by and lowered his voice, “Why do you think I killed the servant from the Yin Family, even though he didn’t attack me first? Why do you think he chased me with so much effort? You are bright. You should have already guessed part of it.”

Bai’s heart jumped, “Yin Family’s technique of the Heavenly Dragon! No wonder all his moves resembled a dragon. But, how come I can’t sense the Heavenly Dragon aura around him? What’s going on?” Bai thought. She started to feel that Xuanyuan was becoming more and more mysterious.

“All right. Xuanyuan, what do you want to buy next?”

“Fighting Talismans. Powerful ones, for both offense or defense. I just saw a place that was selling them. Shall we go and have a look?” The fight in the Shi village was won because of the talisman of explosion. They were extremely important in battles.

Bai smiled. She approved of his attention to details.

“Follow me then.” She said.

Xuanyuan followed her through the streets. They were moving farther and

farther from the gigantic building of Taibai Trading Centre but they still had not left the Taibai estate.

Xuanyuan could hear the sound of water flowing onto stones. He could gradually see a green bamboo field growing next to a few small ponds. Koi fish were swimming inside these small ponds and birds were singing in the trees. It was a Shangri-la. Clearly, ordinary customers wouldn't be able to enter this place.

They walked up to a wooden house. Inside, you could smell the fragrance of incense. Xuanyuan inhaled deeply and the scent cleared his mind.

"Lady Bai, what is this place?"

She smiled and showed her dimples once again, "This is where I live."

Xuanyuan was astounded, "Aren't we going to buy talismans? Why are we here?"

"To give you talismans, of course." Bai chuckled and took out an ice-blue talisman from her fighting ring.

"This is the Talisman of Ice. When you activate it with your Qi, it can instantly freeze a top king realm fighter to death. Even if they have powerful instruments, they still wouldn't have the power to defend themselves." She said.

She put the Talisman of Ice into Xuanyuan's hand. She then took out a grey coloured talisman, "This is the Talisman of Wind. You will be able to fly along the wind with it. Not even king fighters will be able to keep up with you."

She then continued to take out a dainty, golden talisman, "This is the Talisman of Protection. It can act as a shield. Unless its power is used up, you will be protected from even the grandmaster realm fighters. All three talismans are grandmaster class items. Keep them. They are my gifts to you. I'll get very angry if you bring up money this time."

Talismans, like everything else in the martial arts world, were ranked in different classes. The lowest being spiritual, then they went to wild, king, grandmaster and imperial. All of them were very expensive. Grandmaster class talismans were worth at least 100,000 king coins each.

Xuanyuan knew better than to argue with her, so he took the talismans and smiled. “Great, I won’t say anything more then. Since everything is settled, I should take my leave and head to the Sect. Brother Fung Lie must have been waiting for me. I really shouldn’t delay him.”

Bai rolled her eyes, pretending to be angry, “There’s a place for you to live here. I brought you here so you could stay a few days. It doesn’t matter if you arrive a little later.”

Xuanyuan smiled bitterly, “No matter what, time is important. I don’t want to delay things. The earlier I arrive at the Sect, the quicker I can start making progress.”

“So the time we spent inside Taibai is wasted? Young master Xuanyuan, you are just breaking my heart.” Bai looked at him accusingly, making Xuanyuan smile bitterly.

“You know that’s not what I meant, lady Bai.”

“Alright, alright, I’ll let you off the hook this time. You don’t have to call me lady anymore. Just call me by my name.” She laughed. She understood Xuanyuan’s determination to grow stronger, so she didn’t want to stop him.

“Thank you, Bai. Then I’ll get going now.” Xuanyuan left the house immediately. Looking at his back as he left, she frowned and sighed. “So many people want to be close to me, and you do your best to escape me. Am I really that scary?”

Xuanyuan left from the same route he was led by. Many people saw that he came from the Garden of Taibai and looked at him with suspicion.

“Isn’t he the boy who was following Lady Bai to the Garden? How come he is leaving by himself?”

“I wonder what they did inside. What a lucky bastard.”

“Lady Bai wouldn’t do that sort of thing. So many men have tried to win her heart, why would she fall for this kid?”

“Wait, what’s this smell? It’s agarwood! I’ve heard that Lady Bai’s house is built from agarwood. Was he inside her house?”

“Damn it. This kid has gone too far.”

“I knew that I hated him from the first glance. Let’s follow him and teach him a lesson.”

“Good. We’ll let him know that there’re things that he shouldn’t touch.”

Xuanyuan couldn’t make out what they were saying, but he could clearly feel the hostility in the air.

“I should get out of here.” He thought.

Just when he stepped out of the Taibai complex, he saw Huxuan, who was also on his way out. Huxuan smelled the agarwood scent from Xuanyuan, and a complicated expression flashed in his eyes, but after a short while, he laughed happily, “Xuanyuan, I always go to the Sect to visit Fung Lie. I’ll make sure to visit you as well. Take care on your journey.”

“Thank you, Master Huxuan. I’ll welcome you whenever at the Sect. I need to go now, otherwise the Sect won’t be happy that I delayed.” Xuanyuan knew that Huxuan was trying to protect him from the hostile gang that was following him, so he left after answering him loudly.

## Chapter 74 – Assassins

“What? He’s a disciple of the Sect?”

“I’ve never heard of him!”

“Didn’t you say that you want to teach him a lesson?”

“Get lost. I’m not going to commit suicide. Why don’t you go?”

“No wonder he is so close to Lady Bai.”

Huxuan mentioned in his brief exchange with Xuanyuan that the boy was a disciple from the Sect. He did that knowing the hostile gang would hesitate to attack Xuanyuan. After all, no one wanted to provoke the Sect.

Bai witnessed this from the distance and she admired what Huxuan had done for Xuanyuan. “He is equal to Master Fung Lie.”

Huxuan and his old servant then left the building together. The old man was not amused. “Young master, do you want me to kill him? It’d be unthinkable if the boy gets close with Lady Bai...”

Huxuan frowned. “Stop talking at once! Lady Bai would despise me for something like that. I can see that Xuanyuan is upright and honourable. He doesn’t have any bad intentions for Lady Bai. Nothing good will come from attacking him. Xuanyuan is an interesting character and he has a bright future ahead of him. Even though I deeply love Lady Bai, I won’t fight for her love while using despicable means.”

“Understood, young master.”

— —

Xuanyuan was relieved that Huxuan solved that problem for him. What he didn’t know was that there was a bigger problem ahead of him. He took out the Record of the East. It had all the details of the route to the Sect from the City of Fighting Dragons.

He left the city from the east, heading for the tallest mountain which reached the clouds.

With the help of the Dragon Boots, he felt like he was flying, without even

consuming any of his strength.

Outside of the city was a dense forest with many powerful beasts dwelling inside and most of them were at least as powerful as a master realm fighter.

However, with all the auras from his powerful instruments, the wild beasts didn't dare bother him, and he also chose not to disturb them. It's not easy to go to the sect. After the dangerous forest, there was still numerous mountains to cross and countless people had died just trying to reach the sect. Everyone who used this route had one goal in mind – to become a powerful martial arts practitioner, but not everyone can become a disciple of the sect. They must make their way through the dangerous wilderness first.

Xuanyuan was like a dragon swimming through the air, as he headed to the sect with great speed.

Suddenly, a cold metallic light shot out towards him. Xuanyuan didn't even have the time to react – someone had laid an ambush for him!

“I'm going to die!” The thought ran through his mind.

But his new armour suddenly shone with a bright golden light, and the cold light was blocked by a shield. The only downside was that a third of his Qi was already drained.

The instruments Huxuan recommended were very effective, despite using a large amount of his Qi, they had actually saved his life.

“Who is it?!” He could sense that there were six peak wild fighters surrounding him.

They were all wearing black clothes, and were covered from head to toe.

Assassins! Someone hired assassins to kill him! The most reasonable suspects would be Kuiya, Biyue, Xiang Tianku or Xiaotian.

“Oi, Greed, I can't sustain the armour with my own Qi. The devouring technique is really weak. It took one third of my Qi to defend against that one hit!” Xuanyuan cursed silently. “I can only run now. Give me cover!”

“What bullshit! Without the devouring technique, your Qi might have been drained completely. Didn't you see the weapon? It's a middle ranked earth

instrument!”

Greed was furious to hear Xuanyuan’s criticism. The Devouring Emperor was its previous master, it wouldn’t let anyone insult him. But Xuanyuan, the current master, would always say whatever he wanted.

“No need to run, I’ll give you more Qi. I can easily take care of these people.”

Xuanyuan mumbled, “Looks like I spent all that money on a good item.”

Greed was speechless.

Xuanyuan’s armour was still shining with golden light. The assassins were shocked to see that a spiritual fighter had an upper ranked earth instrument equipped. They thought Xuanyuan would run after the attack, but he only took out a black rusty dagger and lunged straight at the group.

With the Dragon Boots aid, Xuanyuan was a lot faster than all of them, but the assassins showed only contempt when seeing his speed. One of them wielded his sword and prepared to kill Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan didn’t run, instead he fought the assassin, who had fifty dragons of strength, head on. The assassin’s sword didn’t have the power to cut through his armour, since the sword was only a top ranked spiritual instrument. It couldn’t break the defence of the armour.

But the dagger easily pierced through the assassin’s abdomen. His life essence was absorbed with a single gulp.

Among the six assassins, the guy who was killed right away was the weakest of the group.

“We’ll kill him together. I’ll see how much Qi he has left after that to protect himself.” The leader of the group said. He was a man holding a middle ranked earth crossbow which had fired the initial attack.

He set a bolt into the crossbow and aimed straight at Xuanyuan. With a gentle click, the bolt broke through the air and split the atmosphere. The other four assassins used this opportunity and also attacked Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan stood his ground, risking his life to fight them. He lunged at another one of the assassins with his dagger.

The bolt was once again stopped by the armour, the swords that they used

couldn't even create a dent on the armour. The mysterious dagger, on the other hand, was extremely sharp and deadly. Xuanyuan immediately pierced another assassin and their life essence was used to replenish his Qi.

"There's something fishy going on!" The leader said. But suddenly, Xuanyuan coughed up a mouthful of blood. The light on the armour started to dim and he quickly took a strength-replenishing pill.

"Hahaha, I was wondering, why a spiritual realm fighter would have that much Qi. Kill him now. Don't let him catch his breath!"

"Kill him!" The leader shouted and shot Xuanyuan with another crossbow bolt. The other two people wielded their long swords and ran straight at Xuanyuan.

## Chapter 75 – A Man’s Responsibility

“Damn it, you greedy old bugger! Did you have to do that? I’m coughing up blood here!” Xuanyuan cursed inwardly. He wanted Greed to make him seem injured in front of the assassins, but he didn’t want to actually get injured.

But no matter how unhappy he was, he still clutched the dagger tightly and used the Heavenly Dragon’s Fist. With two small cuts to their necks, two assassins died with their life essence drained. Xuanyuan inhaled with a sense of surprise.

“The old bugger is getting much stronger. You used to only be able to suck out their life essence when the dagger was thrust up to the hilt, now you only need a tiny cut!”

“Of course! Why would I need you to buy the Origin of Memory otherwise?” Greed injected Qi into the armour and bright golden light shone again. Another crossbow bolt shot at him, but before it could even touch the armour, it was completely shattered.

“Alright, now we’ll kill the last one.”

Xuanyuan used the Heavenly Dragon’s Pearl. The dagger was like a dart, shooting out and piercing the assassins’ leader through the head.

“Done.” He moved over to the dead body and striped the dead man of all his valuables. Even though the leader was only a wild fighter, he owned a middle ranked earth instrument.

“Eh, what’s this?” There are three cylinders with crossbow bolts inside. The bolts were giving off a subtle glow.

“The Bolts of Dark Current. They have a strong poison covering them. They probably thought that you were too weak and didn’t use these on you. Now they’re all yours. They’re good for assassinations so keep them.” Greed explained.

“Haha, they were here to send me gifts instead of killing me.” He took every valuable instrument from the bodies. He obtained twenty lower ranked earth instruments and a middle ranked earth instrument. That was quite a lot of

money in total.

When he finished packing, two haunting auras descended.

“Someone arrived here before us.” A voice spoke and another group of shadows arrived.

“Is that the assassins from the Hall of Shangtian? Looks like this kid has made a lot of enemies. Did he really kill all the assassins from the Hall of Jiandao? He is only a spiritual fighter!”

Two powerful groups were approaching. At least four king realm fighters and six wild fighters. Xuanyuan felt the cold sweat forming.

“We are in the same business and we are all here for the same target. How about we join forces to kill him and both register the mission as complete?”

“Good. I agree.” The leaders from two assassination halls made an agreement to kill Xuanyuan.

Without hesitation, Xuanyuan activated his Dragon Boots and ran like the wind. The king fighters frowned when they realized the turn of events.

“Upper ranked earth instrument? I don’t even have one. Go after him!” Four powerful assassins released their Qi and started to give chase.

“Boy, don’t run and I will give you a quick death!” One of them laughed. He felt like he was the predator in a game of cat and mouse.

“That’s right. You are so weak, you can’t possibly outrun us.”

“Bullshit. Stop following me, or I’ll kill all of you when you finally catch up.” Xuanyuan yelled.

“It’s not that easy to run away. ‘Strike of Falling Stones’!” An assassin quickly used his technique. A yellowish Qi formed into a giant stone and rushed towards Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan barely managed to evade the attack at the very last moment. That was the power of a king realm fighter! Even though he was not directly hit by the attack, he did not manage to avoid it and was sent hurtling through the air, his body was smashed through several trees before he finally hit the ground.

“Old bugger. Why didn’t you do something? Activate the Dustless Helmet! If I

die, you ain't gonna benefit from it. That guy has at least a hundred dragons of strength!" Xuanyuan was hurting all over his body as even more blood was coughed up.

"Hahaa, I just wanted to test your reaction speed. You indeed reacted very quickly!" Greed laughed and activated the Dustless Helmet. A grey mist surrounded Xuanyuan and he immediately disappeared into thin air.

When the assassins reached the blood on the ground, they started to look around in confusion.

"Where the hell did he go? He just disappeared?"

"Let's search in different directions. The brat is hurt, he can't run very far."

Then four king fighters and six wild fighters all went in different directions to look for Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan glared at the leaders. It'd be easier to start with the smaller group. One of those guys was the one who injured him.

They were not in a hurry in searching. Xuanyuan heard one of them say,

"The boy's only a spiritual fighter, but someone wants him dead so badly. He's worth a bounty of 100,000 king coins. The person who hired us said we have to bring back his fighting ring. You reckon there's precious treasure inside?"

"Probably. The boy has quick reactions. He's probably studying a Heaven class technique. We'll thoroughly search through his body after he's dead."

"Can you smell that? It's blood."

"It's very close to us."

They couldn't see Xuanyuan, but he had a clear view of them. Xuanyuan was holding a crossbow of explosion in his hands. It was an extremely deadly weapon, but you could only use it once. Once the eight arrows were shot, the crossbow could not be used again.

Xuanyuan aimed towards their heads with the crossbow, and pulled the trigger continuously.

"Go to hell! All of you can go to hell!!" He laughed hysterically as he shot the

crossbow.

Fiery red arrows appeared out of thin air and shot towards the assassins. The arrows exploded immediately upon impact.

The assassins were all killed in an instant. They didn't even have the time to react or run away. The explosions consumed them in an instant, all that was left were bodies charred black.

Xuanyuan didn't mind the burnt flesh – he swiftly took off all the instruments and fighting rings from the dead bodies. These assassins were very sensitive, Xuanyuan thought to himself. They were able to smell his blood when he was invisible.

The explosion attracted the attention of the others, but they couldn't see Xuanyuan as he was cloaked by the Dustless Helmet. He stood silently next to the dead assassins and stared menacingly at the approaching men. Xuanyuan was holding a crossbow in each hand and pointing directly at them.

The assassins started to check the dead bodies. One of them said, "It's definitely the Crossbow of Explosion. The kid has very valuable weapons on him, no wonder he's worth 100,000 king coins. We have to be very careful."

But it was already too late. With the sounds of a trigger being pulled, two fiery red arrows pierced through the head of two men. Their bodies were torn apart and exploded. The rest of the men were dumbfounded and froze at the sight.

Xuanyuan laughed hysterically as he shouted, "Die!"

He continuously pulled the trigger of the crossbows. The remaining assassins were all blasted into chunks of flesh by the continuous explosions. When he was done, the magical markings on the crossbows started to turn dull and shattered.

Xuanyuan didn't care about the smell of burnt flesh in the air, he still robbed everything from what was left of those dead assassins. "It's a man's responsibility to take the money when he can...." He thought.

There were thirty pieces of lower ranked earth instruments, twenty pieces of middle ranked earth instruments, 30,000 king coins, and many pills and potions that he didn't recognize. He could give them to the Sect and exchange them for merit points.

After he finished packing everything, he headed straight towards the Sect. No one else could guarantee that he would be safe from assassinations.

The more he experienced, the more he agreed that money was the utmost important thing in life. If those assassins had upper ranked earth instruments that could protect them automatically, they wouldn't have been killed so easily by him.

## Chapter 76 – Lives are Worthless

After Xuanyuan left, a shadow swiftly descended from the sky. It was Biyue and she was extremely unhappy with what she saw. She was really looking forward to seeing Xuanyuan's dead body and not the opposite.

"What's going on? Why are they all dead?" Biyue quickly went and checked the bodies. She realized what had happened after she carefully examined the aftermath of the fight.

"He has crossbows of explosion. But king fighters should be able to defend themselves from the crossbows! They shouldn't die like that!"

Behind Biyue, Kuiya had also arrived on the scene with another middle aged man. The man was much more powerful than a king fighter. He was clearly a grandmaster!

"Sister Biyue, all the men that I hired were killed!" Kuiya was shocked. If he was the target of all these assassins, he would have been killed many times over. However, the powerful group of assassins was wiped out.

Biyue looked at the middle aged man, "Grandmaster Kuixue!"

"I've heard about what happened from Kuiya. If Lady Biyue wants to kill Xuanyuan, I can help, but there is a condition, Master Fung Lie cannot know of my involvement. I can't afford to make an enemy of him while I am already fighting Huxuan." Kuixue was a formidable man. He waved his hand and a surge of power pulled two figures out from the shadows. They were Xiaotian and Xiang Tianku.

"Brother Xiao, brother Xiang! Why are you eavesdropping here?" Biyue asked with a smile on her lips.

There was a clear difference in power between a grandmaster and a king realm fighter. Xiaotian and Xiang Tianku couldn't give even the slightest resistance against Grandmaster Kuixue.

"You were the ones who hired the other two assassination teams, correct? We're all in the same boat, it's not wise to waste time on falsehoods here."

Kuixue said straightforwardly. He said slowly, "Do not try to deceive me. Xuanyuan insulted my son, I will be sure to kill him. If this is also your intention, then we are on the same side and should work together. What do you think?"

Xiang Tianku felt the pressure in the air. Grandmaster Kuixue was known for being unpredictable, but he did have a point, there was no use in pretending.

"Grandmaster Kuixue is right. I was the one who hired two of the king fighters to kill Xuanyuan, since I deemed it inappropriate of Xuanyuan attempting to tarnish brother Kuiya's reputation. I planned to send him on his way." Xiang Tianku explained. His words sounded fake, but his boot licking stroked Kuixue's pride. He was also implicating Xiaotian by only taking responsibility for sending half of the assassins.

"Grandmaster Kuixue has misunderstood. I was only passing by, I was actually on my way to the Sect. I didn't see anything, nor hear anything. I will leave you all to your business. Farewell." Xiaotian only shrugged off the implication of him being involved in this. He gestured politely and smiled before he turned away to leave. Kuixue wanted to stop him but he was weary of forcing the matter. Not only was Xiaotian one of the most important inner disciples, he also had an extremely powerful backer.

Grandmaster Kuixue only nodded and did not pursue the matter. Xiaotian smiled at the rest as he left saying, "Brothers, sister, please excuse me."

Xiang Tianku was annoyed. He was shocked after being pulled out by Kuixue and now he didn't even have the support of Xiaotian.

"All of you should go back to the sect, Xuanyuan is very cunning. You can no longer stop him from joining the sect. Make sure to keep an eye on him after he arrives. When he next steps outside of the sect, there'll be another opportunity to kill him." Kuixue flew away after he said his piece. The colour returned to the faces of Xiang Tianku and Biyu who were relieved that they were no longer suppressed by his powerful aura.

Kuiya looked extremely happy now that Grandmaster Kuixue was involved, but he hid it well. He only said "Brother, sister, let's go."

They all started heading back towards the Fighting Dragons Sect.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Hahaha, so amazing! I was worrying about how I was going to support myself once I was in the Sect, I didn’t think there’d be a group of benefactors waiting to supply me with their equipment and money!” Xuanyuan was happily talking to himself as he headed to the sect.

“Don’t get too excited. Exchange all your merit points into fighting stones, jades and crystals and give them to me. You think it will be easy once you are in the Sect? If you’re not careful, I might be discovered.” Greed interrupted.

“IN YOUR DREAMS! Go and absorb the nine stones inside the ring. Then you will regain your power and we’ll be safe. Don’t be so fussy.” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes.

“What do you know? How many times did I say it? There’re mysterious objects dwelling inside the stones, I might be the one to get absorbed instead, I’m still not powerful enough. I have to regain a portion of my power first. If you have a death wish, why don’t you try using the stones? You think I don’t want to absorb their power? It’s not that simple...”

Greed continued his ranting for another fifteen minutes, which exhausted Xuanyuan.

“Alright, alright. I’ll get you as many fighting stones, jades and crystals as your heart desires. Just please shut up.”

“That’s better.” Greed was satisfied with his victory.

“What a greedy old bugger. I’ve never seen an old bugger as greedy as you...”

“I’m not old!” Greed screamed in protest.

The path through the forest was filled with beasts. Even the weakest of the beasts had the power of a spiritual fighter. It was the correct decision to leave Guxing. With him, they might never make it through the forest. If Guxing was hurt or killed because of him, Xuanyuan would never forgive himself.

Just when Xuanyuan was bantering with Greed, he discovered that there were some traces of fighting Qi on the ground and in the trees around him. He could see that it was the aftermath of a battle and the area was covered in pieces of

red scale covered flesh.

“Those are red spirit snakes. Once you go through the forest of snakes, you will finally reach the Sect.” Greed’s voice rang inside Xuanyuan’s head.

“The Sect is indeed one of the three main powers of the East. How many people have died just attempting to make this journey? It’s cruel.” Xuanyuan sighed.

“The way of martial arts is cruel.” Greed said quietly.

Xuanyuan fell into silence as he swiftly entered the forest. Many trees on the path were destroyed, numerous dead snakes could be seen off in the distance. Poisonous smoke was leaking from the bodies of the dead snakes. Xuanyuan quickly swallowed one of the antidotes left by Wu Ming to counteract the effects of the smoke.

He noticed that there were also dead fighters laying on the ground next to a colourful, giant snake. The snake’s corpse was emitting a highly corrosive smoke, corroding the dead bodies of everything around it.

“It’s a five coloured snake. They are extremely poisonous and are as strong as a wild fighter. Those dead guys are wearing uniforms, and are probably guards from some large family, escorting their young master to the sect.” Greed explained.

“Is that allowed? Will the sect take those people as disciples? They relied on the protection of others to make it into the sect.” Xuanyuan couldn’t believe it.

“Of course. It’s also part of their power to influence others to die for you. You think there’d be people willing to sacrifice themselves for a powerless, poor man? The sect knows the power dynamic very well. The sect is like a tree with solid roots and many different branches. In this world, the lives of the weak are worthless.” Greed thought he knew what Xuanyuan was thinking.

But Xuanyuan only grinned and replied, “Well, the dead have no use for riches. Let’s see if they’ve got anything valuable on them.”

Without waiting for a reply, he dashed forward and started to search the dead bodies.

## Chapter 77 – The Forest of Million Beasts

Xuanyuan was pocketing all the valuables he could find from the dead bodies on the way. It was an easy action for someone who used to be a beggar. He was counting all the money he was earning as he stripped the corpses bare, “Wow, this is a lot. What family was this. The guards are all at least wild realm fighters. 300,000 king coins! 98 elixirs from the red spirit snakes, 10 elixirs from the five-coloured snakes and some more bottles with a multitude of medicines. Isn’t it wasteful to leave all of this behind?”

“But come to think of it, if this family is so wealthy. Wouldn’t it be better to hire a grandmaster to protect their young master? Wouldn’t it be more worthwhile to hire a grandmaster? There’s no need to sacrifice all these people and waste so much money.”

“Keeping the young master alive is the most important thing to them. Look at it this way. When it comes to a struggle of life and death, who is thinking about money?” Greed was impatient, “The forest surrounding the City of Fighting Dragons is nicknamed the Forest of a Million Beasts. Everyone must pass through the forest to reach the Sect. The Sect recommends that you don’t use anyone above a king fighter to protect you during the journey. There was once an imperial fighter guarding a rich young boy as he went through the forest, but his imperial Qi attracted a beast of similar strength to his own. Wild fighters and king fighters would only attract beasts at a similar level, which means there’s still a chance to defeat the beasts and escape alive. But when it’s a beast at the grandmaster level or above, the aura alone is enough to kill any young master. Do you still think it’s worthwhile?”

Xuanyuan took a deep breath. He thought this was only an ordinary forest but clearly, its size and the beasts dwelling inside it proved otherwise.

“The forest is that dangerous?”

“Of course, the three most powerful sects of the East have endured years of challenges. They are all extremely powerful. In fact, they are the ones who keep so many powerful beasts inside the forest.” Greed explained.

Xuanyuan was stunned into silence. He continued in silence. Who knew what might be inside the forest? It was not as easy as he thought to become a disciple

of the Sect.

“Don’t worry. The beasts that are kept by the Sect won’t go out of their way to attack people who’re weaker than them. I’ve got to say, all of the disciples in the Sect are very talented. Each of them has passed through this challenge while risking their life. They are strong, both physically and mentally. You think those rich young masters weren’t afraid when they witnessed their guards being slaughtered? They are on a knife’s edge. None of those who made it to the other side are weak.”

Xuanyuan was astonished to hear that. There were many surprising things when it came to the recruitment of disciples. It looked like he was going to face many more challenges after he arrived.

“If you want to get through easier, you can take out the token Fung Lie gave you. It has the power to command all the beasts in the forest.”

“I won’t need that. I can only become stronger through a lesson taught with blood. I’ll get through this using my own power and you, old bugger, are so greedy that you probably want to suck the life essence from the beasts instead of commanding them, right?”

“I’m not old!” Greed screamed again.

“Hahaa, you old bugger...” Xuanyuan bantered with Greed on his way, while robbing all the wealth he laid his eyes upon.

“I’m not old! Have never seen money before? I wouldn’t say anything if you took money from dead people here and there. But you have stopped to rob every single corpse without fail. You’re the heir to the Devouring Emperor. You’re tarnishing the name of the Emperor!”

“So what? You’re not happy with me robbing? I don’t have other people to rely on, only myself! Why shouldn’t I take money when it is in front of me? Even the Devouring Emperor died in the end.”

“Do you understand what true devouring is? It’s taking everything, absorb everything, devour everything! That’s what it means to be truly powerful. Not robbing corpses like you.”

“I don’t give a shit. I’m not that powerful. The Emperor wasn’t born an

emperor, right? He still needed to practice until he reached that point.”

“That’s right.”

“Old bugger. Do you reckon that one day I can be as powerful as the Devouring Emperor?”

“You wish! Do you know how many challenges he had to overcome? How many times he faced death? He devoured all those techniques through uncountable deadly situations. You’ve still got a lot to learn.”

“I’ll definitely be as powerful as he was. I’ll call myself Emperor Xuanyuan, how about that?”

“You’ll never be as powerful as he was. It’d be a miracle if you can manage to keep yourself alive. I reckon you won’t be able to live long.”

“If you let me die young, you won’t be much better. I guarantee that I will let people know about your existence before I die.” Xuanyuan said maliciously.

“What’s a vicious boy.” Greed yelled. “Stop being so annoying. There’s a huge disturbance of Qi in the front. Many people are gathered and there are at least a hundred!”

As Greed was regaining his power, he could sense Qi fluctuations at greater distances. Before Xuanyuan could see anything, Greed had already given his warning.

Xuanyuan didn’t encounter anyone over the next twenty miles, so he robbed every single corpse he came across. He pocketed another 420,000 king coins, 21 five-coloured snake elixirs. However, there wasn’t any medicine on the bodies. They probably used everything up already.

The scenery was growing more bloody. The ground was covered in bloody remains of the five-coloured snakes and the bodies of guards. The trees and the ground were littered with holes created by Qi attacks.

Xuanyuan finally came across living snakes. They were as wide as two thighs and ten metres in length, with their eyes as large as fists. The snakes were hissing and the sound was mind-numbing.

There were about a hundred people carrying varying weapons and wearing all

different kinds of instruments. It was mostly wild fighters who were guarding their young masters. They were desperately fighting their way through the snakes.

As Xuanyuan approached, many people recognized him. Many people started to frown at the sight of him. Xuanyuan was definitely not a popular person.

But with the fight ahead, they couldn't waste time caring about Xuanyuan. Also, Xuanyuan was only a spiritual fighter, they didn't need to pay attention to a weakling like him.

One of the king fighters wielded his sword, and with a golden light, he chopped a snake in half. But a snake cut in half was still writhing and whipping its tail. Each strike contained at least forty dragons of strength, unearthing the ground below. The eyes of the snake were closed but its eyes suddenly opened and it quickly bit onto a wild fighter who was fighting with another snake. The fighter was overcome with poison in less than a minute.

The fight had reached the most crucial point.

Just when Xuanyuan was getting closer to the battlefield, a voice yelled at him,

“Who are you? Get out of the way. Or I'll kill you!”

## Chapter 78 – Who will Die

Xuanyuan was stunned by the rudeness of these people. But they had to fight their entire way here, they were likely not in a pleasant mood. He was also giddy with all the money and instruments he had pocketed, so he wasn't angry.

"I'm on my way to the Sect to register as a disciple."

"Hahaha, a boy who doesn't know his place. You're just a spiritual fighter and you want to become a disciple in the Fighting Dragons Sect? Get lost, you won't make it there. You can probably go to the Cave of Full Moon and become an inner disciple. But the Sect is too far-fetched of a goal for you. All inner disciples of the Sect were at least wild realm fighters. Who do you think you are?" A king fighter said mockingly while wielding his sword.

A cold and arrogant looking young master was standing next to a man with an axe. The boy was contemptuous of Xuanyuan, who had clearly taken advantage of the path they cleared. He said, "Kill him and feed him to the snakes."

The axe wielding man nodded, "If not for us, you would never have been able to reach this point. You're not going to leave here alive." The muscular man said. Xuanyuan noticed that his axe was a middle ranked earth instrument and he had at least a hundred dragons' strength.

Xuanyuan was about to dodge his attack, but another king realm fighter who was holding a long sword attacked the axe wielding man. The axe and the sword powerfully collided in the air.

"Fang Wujian! How dare you attack me?" The man with the ace yelled, releasing his Qi.

"Nuhu, how come you have time to bully a spiritual fighter? Go back and protect your young master." Fang Wujian was cold and distant. He was a peak king fighter, with an upper ranked earth instrument as his weapon.

"Young man, join the Fang family's team. But it's up to your own ability on whether you make it to the Sect." Fang Wujian had spotted Xuanyuan's instruments and knew that they were all high-quality, even though Xuanyuan took the time to hide the power of his instruments, but from the design it was clear that they held some power.

“Thank you for your assistance.” Xuanyuan’s eyes narrowed and he glared at Nuhu. Then he leaped upwards while taking out his dagger and thrust it towards a giant five-coloured snake.

“You think that with your power of a spiritual fighter, that you can fight your way through just because you have a few pieces of middle ranked earth instruments? It won’t end well if you provoke the snake.” Lie Yun, who was also holding a sword, said spitefully. He was not a hothead like Nuhu. With Xuanyuan hiding the instruments’ strength, he thought that Xuanyuan’s instruments were only middle ranked.

The snake quickly turned and attempted to bite Xuanyuan’s face. A poisonous smoke was shot from its mouth. It had the power to easily kill a wild fighter.

But Xuanyuan wasn’t hurt at all. He activated the Dustless Helmet so the poisonous smoke couldn’t even touch him.

Nuhu screamed like a little girl, “It’s an upper ranked earth instrument! It can protect its wearer automatically! Who is this boy?”

The young master stood next to Nuhu was also surprised. He only had middle ranked instruments. Upper ranked earth instruments were all very expensive, especially those that could protect its wearer automatically, since they all had the potential in becoming top ranked instruments.

Another boy was standing next to Lie Yun. He was holding a long sword which was covered in blood, clearly he had been fighting a long time. The boy said coldly, “Lie Yun, you were mistaken. Kill that boy when you have a chance. All the instruments on him are very valuable.”

Lie Yun nodded. He had failed to recognize upper ranked instruments, it was embarrassing.

“He’s only a spiritual fighter, he won’t be able to activate those instruments for long. They belong to whoever can get them.” He mocked.

However, Lie Yun was greedy and didn’t want to wait. He released his golden fighting Qi and rushed straight towards Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan used the technique of Heavenly Dragon and moved through the battlefield while killing every snake in sight. He turned around and immediately

split another snake in half. The blood oozed out, after a few moments of screaming, the snake had lost all its life essence to Greed. Xuanyuan had also absorbed a part of the essence.

The dead snake started to rot immediately. Xuanyuan asked, "Greed, what did you do?"

"I have a lot of tricks up my sleeve. It's called the Way of Rotting Dragon. I used this so no one can guess my existence. Be careful, those two king fighters are not friendly." Greed giggled.

"That's okay." Xuanyuan said indifferently. Another snake was about to bite him, but he didn't evade instead he cut directly into the snake's head. The force from the snake was at least fifty dragons, but it only shook him a little. The protection provided from the armour was superb.

The snake started to rot and was gone in less than a minute, again. Everyone was shocked. There must be poison on the dagger, they thought.

Suddenly two powerful Qi's, from an axe and a sword, were shooting towards Xuanyuan. They were from Nuhu and Lie Yun. Before the Qi could cut Xuanyuan open, the armour he's wearing emitted a golden light, shattering the Qi. But half of Xuanyuan's Qi was consumed in the process.

Fang Wujian couldn't stop his face from darkening when he saw this from afar, "Nuhu, Lie Yun, you two are outrageous."

"Haha, Brother Fang, what are you saying? I just entered the king realm. I can't control my Qi very well. You must understand. It was just an accident." Lie Yun with a cocky tone. He thought to himself, "I'm going to kill him no matter what, I dare you to stop me."

"That's right, Fang. Unlike you, we are just rookies. We can only get better with experience. But don't you worry, just protect your young master! Otherwise, you'll be in big trouble if your young master dies!" Nuhu was cocky as well. He wouldn't be able to defeat Fang Wujian alone. But if he needed to defend both his young master and Xuanyuan, he might have a chance.

Next to Fang Wujian, there was a handsome young boy. The boy was holding a sword, which was a piece of upper ranked earth instrument. With just one gush

of Qi, he slashed a snake into six pieces.

“The Sect wants to test its disciples’ ability to fight. Wujian, you don’t have to protect me. Take care of that boy. Don’t let the others kill him.” The handsome boy said proudly.

“Young master, it’s not appropriate...”

Fang Wujian was in a dilemma. He couldn’t afford to risk his young master being hurt. Xuanyuan couldn’t believe that Lie Yun and Nuhu would bully people so publicly. The young master Fang was clearly kind hearted, but Xuanyuan didn’t want to trouble Fang Wujian. He had his own mission, after all.

“Don’t worry about me. No one knows who will die!”

## Chapter 79 – The Kill

All the guards were shocked. Xuanyuan dared to challenge king realm fighters!

“Does the kid know what he’s talking about?”

“He must be scared stupid. He’ll be dead very soon.”

“He challenged master Lie Yun. The last time a young king fighter did that, he was decapitated!”

“Even the bones of a king fighter would be crushed by Nuhu. The kid doesn’t know his place!”

“He’s out of line. Killing him is like killing an ant, too easy!”

“I’m not sure. The kid might have some powerful background. Otherwise, a spiritual fighter couldn’t have bought upper ranked earth instrument!”

“.....”

The people who were slaughtering the beasts all had their own thoughts.

“Hahaha, you are bold. Let’s see who’s going to die!” Lie Yun laughed. His sword unleashed a golden Qi which formed into a giant blade. He hit a swarm of snakes while Xuanyuan was standing near the edge of his attack.

Xuanyuan didn’t run, but got closer to a snake and thrust his dagger into the snake. Greed immediately sucked out its life essence. The essence turned into pure fighting Qi which quickly replenished Xuanyuan.

“Greed, you do your thing. I also want to test myself with this fight. Unless it’s urgent, don’t activate the instruments for me.” Xuanyuan said in his mind.

“Great.” Greed wanted to observe Xuanyuan’s growth as well.

Lie Yun’s attack once again pushed towards him. The armour stopped the attack easily, but Lie Yun was not upset. He was in fact excited. It would be easy to kill Xuanyuan, he thought, but it was still too early to say who would get his instruments.

Two-thirds of Xuanyuan’s Qi were gone when the armor activated once again.

He finally understood the importance of having a large reserve of Qi in your body. In order to replenish the Qi, he leapt onto another snake and killed it with his dagger.

But at this point, a violent gush of Qi landed right next to him. He was almost hit by the attack, but was protected by the armour once again, though it cost him half of his Qi.

“Haha, it wasn’t intentional. I just stepped into this realm from being top wild fighter, I can’t really control this...” Nuhu smiled twistedly.

“I know, Nuhu, me too. I wonder if there’s a better way to control fighting Qi?” Lie Yun also laughed.

The young master of the Fang family wanted to let Fang Wujian go protect Xuanyuan, but he thought better of it, “Whether he’s able to escape this depends on his fate. He has already refused our help. If he can’t get through this, he won’t be able to survive in the Sect.”

Xuanyuan was furious, “I can’t take this anymore!”

In his left hand, a bright red crossbow appeared. It was flickering with dangerous sparks. He killed a snake with the dagger in his right hand and filled himself with fighting Qi.

Then he aimed the crossbow straight at Lie Yun. Lie Yun saw the crossbow and was paralyzed with fear. Before he could react, Xuanyuan had already pulled the trigger four times. Four red lights shot towards Lie Yun.

In the last second, Lie Yun covered himself with fighting Qi and when the red light hit him, the arrow exploded violently. Two snakes were killed immediately by the blast. The last bolt collided with Lie Yun’s armour and sent him flying backwards as he coughed up blood.

Everything happened too suddenly. Xuanyuan turned around and pulled the trigger four more times, this time his target was Nuhu.

Nuhu was expecting Xuanyuan to aim for him next, he wasn’t expecting it to happen this quickly. He didn’t think that Xuanyuan would turn and aim at him before killing Lie Yun. He immediately concentrated his fighting Qi onto his giant axe and hid behind it. The bolts hit the axe, and there were four large explosions,

propelling Nuhu thirty metres backwards. His body was numb and filled with a burning sensation. He also started to cough up blood and his hair was half charred.

“How dare you!” Lie Yun and Nuhu shouted simultaneously.

“Hahaha, sorry. This is the first time I used this type of crossbow. I couldn’t control my aim correctly. I really didn’t mean to.” He smiled innocently and shrugged as the crossbow shattered and hit the floor.

“Young master, that boy is powerful.” Lie Yun said to the young master of the Lie family, Lie Yan.

“Kill him. No need to sneak around. He’s just an ant, why are you hesitating?” Lie Yan said angrily.

“Yes!”

“Young master, what should we do?” Nuhu also turned to his young master, Nu Qian.

“Cut off all his limbs. He thinks he can be so out of line with just a few instruments?” Nu Qian ordered.

“Yes!”

“This is bad, young master. They are getting angry from the embarrassment. They are going to kill the boy!” Fang Wujian said urgently.

“Go help him.” The young master of Fang family, Fang Yuyou ordered.

But Xuanyuan was not afraid, he smiled coldly,

“You want to kill me? What a joke! I can kill you easily.” Then he activated the Dustless Helmet and disappeared from everyone’s sight.

Lie Yun and Nuhu was petrified. However, Fang Yuyou was wielding his sword elegantly and killed three snakes. He smiled,

“No wonder the helmet was so familiar. It’s the Dustless Helmet from Taibai. He is now invisible and undetectable.” Fang Yuyou said.

Lie Yun and Nuhu screamed, “Get in formation! Protect the young master!” The guards from the two family’s immediately formed a formation surrounding

their young masters.

“Haha, too late!” Xuanyuan’s Qi was already low and was running out fast from using the helmet. He could only last another minute more before he ran out of Qi. So he strode to Lie Yun and thrust the dagger into his neck.

The sound of a blade thrusting into flesh broke the tension. Lie Yun couldn’t move as he was in shock. Lie Yan’s face was twisted with panic and anger as he screamed,

“I...” Before he could finish, all his life essence was drained and filled Xuanyuan with fighting Qi.

Lie Yan collapsed and his body instantly started to rot.

“Kill, kill him!” Lie Yun went berserk and screamed. However, Xuanyuan was like a ghost hiding in the night. No one was able to see him or sense his presence.

## Chapter 80 – Despicable

Lie Yun screamed and leaped into the air to avoid touching Xuanyuan. A spiritual fighter could not fly, so he only felt safe in the air.

When looking at the terrified faces of the Lie Family's guard, Xuanyuan showed no sympathy. He activated his Dragon Boots and Dustless Helmet. They started consuming his Qi at a rapid pace, he only had 10 seconds worth of Qi, but he was willing to fight!

With his Qi quickly depleting, Xuanyuan used the devouring technique and consumed the energy around him for a brief moment. He quickly covered up the disturbance that the technique created and surged to the sky like a heavenly dragon. He was holding his mysterious dagger and before Lie Yun had a chance to realise what happened, he thrust the dagger and pierced it into Lie Yun's head. At that moment, he reappeared so everyone could see what happened. Lie Yun and Xuanyuan were connected by a black dagger which impaled Lie Yun.

Lie Yun's enormous Qi was absorbed by Xuanyuan which quickly replenished his tired body. Of course, Greed also absorbed his fair share of the powerful Qi.

After seeing Xuanyuan's reappearance, Nuhu's young master, Nu Qian, yelled, "This is our chance, kill him!"

Using the axe in his hand, Nuhu released his overwhelming Qi which merged with his axe to form a giant axe which was sent flying at Xuanyuan. At the same time, Fang Wujian jumped out and stopped the Qi-imbued axe with his sword and the axe was shattered immediately. A wave of shattered Qi crushed the trees nearby before dispersing.

"Fang Wujian!" Nuhu screamed, "What are you doing? You think you can get pass the forest without the help from the Nu and the Lie family? Don't forget we are in the same boat!"

Fang Wujian smiled coldly, "I only know that the fewer people we have to worry about, the fewer the beasts that will encounter. We can fight if you're not happy."

"You..." Nuhu was flushed with anger. He would never win against Fang Wujian if they fought.

When the two were talking, Xuanyuan landed lightly on the ground and covered himself with the Dustless Helmet again.

The Lie family guards were all panicking, when Xuanyuan suddenly appeared and thrust his dagger through a guard's back. The man's body started to wilt and rot immediately. Xuanyuan was like a ghost in the dark. A second later, another guard fell lifelessly to the ground.

"Come out! Come out! Sneaking around in the dark... you coward."

"Come out and fight with me!"

"Despicable! Is that all you've got?"

"You're going to die for..." The man's head was suddenly pierced by the dagger.

Xuanyuan was like the god of death, harvesting life and crushing the spirit of the guards.

"Kill.....kill him..... don't let him near us." One man was on the verge of breaking down. He wielded his sword in frenzy with no specific target and wildly slashed at the air. His head was severed from his body, a short moment after. The guards were pushed into a corner, their formation was broken, their spirits had collapsed.

More than a hundred snakes had sensed the blood in the air and started to swarm in the group's direction. The Fang family was prepared, as they retreated while slaughtering the snakes. The Nu and the Lie families were not as prepared. They fought valiantly to protect their young masters, but many were killed in the chaos.

While they were fighting against the snakes, the guards from the Lie family would be killed by Xuanyuan in short intervals. The guards were falling into despair.

"Run! We'll be killed..."

"No, don't kill me...."

Some of them even started screaming gibberish under the pressure.

With his Dragon Boots, Xuanyuan was swift in moving from one target to the

next, almost as fast as a king realm fighter.

The Nu family's guards were also petrified. Why did they have to make such a powerful enemy?

Fang Yuyou frowned, "Does he have an infinite supply of strength-replenishing pills? It needs incredible amounts of Qi to activate the Dustless Helmet, doesn't it?"

Fang Wujian also felt the situation was odd. Every instrument had its own flaw. The Dustless Helmet and the Armour of Heavenly Gold had top-notch abilities, but they consumed too much Qi. Even a king realm fighter couldn't activate them for too long. In other words, those instruments were only suitable for grandmaster fighters.

"Who is this boy? A spiritual fighter that can do this?" Nu Qian was shocked by Xuanyuan's ability.

"Young master, what should we do? Retreat? I don't have the confidence to say I can kill him." Nuhu frowned. Xuanyuan was too cunning and seemed to have an infinite Qi supply for his powerful instruments.

Shortly after, all thirty-one people in the Lie family were slaughtered by Xuanyuan. He then deactivated the Helmet and appeared a dozen metres away from the Nu family.

"You are next." Xuanyuan said slowly. The people from the Nu family felt like a bucket of ice cold water was poured onto them, while Nu Qian was burning with anger. These men were all top ranked wild fighters and they were so easily intimidated by a mere spiritual fighter! He couldn't tolerate such an embarrassment.

"Damn it. Everyone, release your fighting Qi. Kill everything that moves. I don't believe that this brat can overcome our combined power." He ordered.

Thirty men immediately followed the orders, however, Xuanyuan ran in the opposite direction from them and instead ran towards a swarm of snakes in the distance. One of the snakes had a crown shaped differently from all of the others. He knew that it must be their leader, so released his Qi to attack it. The snake hissed painfully and howled as it was struck by his Qi.

In an instant, a few hundred snakes were chasing after Xuanyuan, they were clearly sent to chase the person who injured their leader.

“Haha, chase after me!” Xuanyuan laughed.

The snakes grew even more provoked at the human laughing at them, while Xuanyuan headed straight to where the Nu clan was standing. The swarm of snakes was a terrifying sight to behold. Nuhu and Nu Qian were both stunned when they saw the snakes chasing Xuanyuan.

“Damn it, I’ll kill you...” Nuhu was incredibly angry. He was a king realm fighter, but he couldn’t possibly protect Nu Qian when he had to fight off a swarm of snakes.

“Kill that brat for me.” Nu Qian screamed, but Xuanyuan had already activated his helmet and boots, completely disappearing.

Fang Yuyou’s face twitched, as he mumbled, “That’s despicable...”

Fang Wujian understood that the Fang Family was not part of this fight.

Just when they turned around to leave, a voice came from behind Fang Yuyou, “That’s wisdom, and skill, my lady. You look very fetching when you dress like a boy. Your features are much more delicate than mine.”

It was of course Xuanyuan. He pointed two crossbows of explosion at the Nu clan with a look of disdain. The Nu clan was doomed...

Fang Yuyou was speechless. Who was this Xuanyuan?

## Chapter 81 – It's Not Easy to Be Me

The light of Qi was shining on top of an axe as it dismembered the five-coloured snakes that charged towards it. At least twenty-five of the snakes were killed by this axe. Nuhu wielded his axe, once again attacking the leader in the swarm of snakes and the snake was chopped into two halves. The severed body of the snake continued to writhe on the floor and it launched two of the Nu Family's warriors out of their formation.

Suddenly, the gallbladder exploded inside the snake's body and a nauseating stench contaminated the surrounding area.

Nuhu screamed and quickly released a surge of Qi from his body to push the poisonous air away. He grabbed Nu Qian and fled. The guards who were left behind were killed by a combination of the poison from the gallbladder and the sharp fangs of the snakes.

Suddenly, a bright red beam shot towards Nuhu and Nu Qian. They were bolts shot by Xuanyuan and the crossbows in his hands. The crossbows were activated and were glowing red. Xuanyuan started to shoot an endless stream of bolts, as if he didn't care if he wasted these weapons since he had an abundance of them.

Nuhu kept releasing his fighting Qi and shielded himself and Nu Qian from the bolts. However, the shield was becoming weaker and weaker under the endless onslaught.

Sixteen bolts exploded in the air, creating a bright red flower in the sky. Nuhu continued to release his Qi into the shield protect Nu Qian. Escaping was the only thing they could do at this point. They wouldn't dare to fight back, or take the risk that Fang Wujian might help Xuanyuan. If they stuck around, they would surely be killed.

Xuanyuan followed closely behind them and took out another crossbow as the last one crumbled to pieces. In his other hand, he was holding his mysterious dagger. He was like a hunter chasing after his prey.

Four bolts hit Nuhu at the same time and his armour finally cracked.

He screamed as the crossbow bolts pierced through his chest, he then fell from the sky. Nevertheless, he was still alive. King realm fighters were strong even if

they were gravely injured.

“Don’t kill me.” Nuhu begged. But he didn’t show any mercy when he was trying to kill Xuanyuan, so he wouldn’t be spared. Xuanyuan pulled the trigger once again and pierced Nuhu’s heart, his head was then cut off from his body.

Nu Qian also fell from the sky when Nuhu fell. When he gathered his wits and looked to where Xuanyuan was standing, there was no longer a shadow in sight. He violently cursed, “Just you wait! When I go back to the Nu Family, I’ll gather an army of men to kill you!”

Nu Qian took a jade pendant from his pocket and pondered for a while, when he felt an icy coldness flush over his entire body. Before he could see the sharp dagger piercing through his chest, his life essence was already sucked out to replenish Xuanyuan. Nu Qian used the last ounce of his strength to shatter the jade pendant in his hands.

With a cracking sound, a light surged to the sky.

“No! It’s the Jade of Remembrance. The Nu Family will know about everything that happened here. They will surely inform the Lie Family of everything!” One of the guards from the Fang Family cried.

“Don’t fret. We didn’t kill them and since when are we afraid of the Nu and the Lie family?” Fang Wujian said coldly which made everyone grow quiet.

“Young master is very talented. Killing all those wild and king fighters with just the strength of a spiritual fighter. I’m impressed.” Fang Yuyou approached Xuanyuan. She was still disguised as an elegant young boy. If Xuanyuan didn’t smell the feminine fragrance when behind her and notice the lack of an adam’s apple, he wouldn’t have been able to see through her disguise.

“That’s nothing.” Xuanyuan grinned, “I wonder if Lady Fang would do me a favour.”

“What is it? I will help if I can.” Fang Yuyou brightened up. It would be a very good thing to have him owe her a favour.

“It’s not a big favour. I just want to ask all your guards to help pick up those earth instruments and fighting rings left by the Nu and the Lie Family members. It’s a waste to leave them.” Xuanyuan laughed happily. Fang Yuyou was stunned

for a while. This boy was asking her to clean up his mess. In the end, she could only give the order, “Clean the place. Take everything that belongs to the Fang warriors. Give this young master everything that belongs to the Lie and Nu Families.”

Xuanyuan sighed pretentiously, “I’ve got to take care of my expenses. I can only rely on myself, unlike you, having a big family to fall back on. I’ve earned quite a lot from scavenging dead bodies. I hope I can earn more. It’s not easy being me....”

Fang Yuyou was speechless. Fang Wujian, on the other hand, thought that what he said was perfectly normal.

---

The extra sets of hands made the speed much quicker. They cleaned up the scene in less than an hour and collected a hundred pieces of lower rank earth instruments, nine middle rank earth instruments, a million king coins, thirty elixirs from the five-coloured snakes. Xuanyuan gave all the other bottles of medicine and pills to the Fang guards, which earned the guards respect. Fang Yuyou knew that all medicine was precious in the forest. So Xuanyuan was extremely generous with this act.

When they were cleaning, Xuanyuan learned that her name was Fang Yuyou and her family was one of the five families under Fighting Dragon’s Sect. The Nu and the Lie Families were not as powerful as the Fang family. They were not able to compare themselves to the five families, but they were still strong enough to be compared to the Cave of Full moon.

Xuanyuan was shocked to hear this piece of information, “Then... I just offended two families that are supported by Xian fighters?”

“Don’t worry. They won’t touch you as long as you enter the sect, but of course, you have to arrive there first.” Fang Yuyou reassured him.

“I’m not scared. I’m excited! It must be really amazing to fight against a Xian. They are probably very powerful...” Xuanyuan laughed while putting everything into his fighting ring. Everyone was shocked to hear his statement and wondered if the boy was extremely powerful or just extremely stupid.

Xuanyuan earned a large sum of money, so he felt exceptionally good. Members of the Fang Family had also gained a fair share of spoils, so no one looked at him with jealousy. Especially when they witnessed Xuanyuan's strength. A strong man deserved to be respected.

"Young master Xuanyuan, will you accompany us for the rest of the way?"

"Of course. We just need to pass the snake forest, right? Are there any family teams other than yours?" Xuanyuan said.

"I don't know about that. When we get through the snake forest, we will probably encounter other families. There are so many people who attempt to cross through the forest every day. Some of them arrive at the sect. Some of them meet their end in the forest." Fang Yuyou smiled.

Xuanyuan nodded. He activated his boots and rushed to the front. "Let's go. If we stay here any longer, we'll be suffocated by the poisonous gas from the snakes." He said.

"Young master Xuanyuan. Please be careful. There might be beasts as strong as king realm fighters ahead of you." Xuanyuan froze and slowed down his pace.

"We should go together." He said sheepishly.

Fang Yuyou giggled. Her face blushed and her eyes curved like a bright moon.

## Chapter 82 – Recruitment

“Young master Xuanyuan, what kind of technique do you study? You need a vast reserve of Qi to activate those instruments, right?” Fang Yuyou, who was still disguised as a man, asked.

“I’ve got hundreds of strength-replenishing pills. That’s all.” Xuanyuan took out a few big bottles of the pills left by Wu Dong and Wu Ming. These pills were of the best quality and exuded a wonderful medicinal fragrance.

He took them out to deceive Fang Yuyou, but her eyes widened, clearly surprised by the pills.

“Young master Xuanyuan, would you mind if I take a look at those pills?”

Xuanyuan didn’t understand the reason, but he handed her the bottle nonetheless.

“You can have it.”

“Thank you.” Fang Yuyou accepted gracefully and poured out a pill. She was pleasantly surprised, “I knew it! It’s the pills made by the Fighting Fire that ranks number sixty, “Fire of Transformed Heart”. The pills medicinal power is extremely condensed. Taking one of them is the same as fifteen times of ordinary strength-replenishing pills. Only that...”

Then she stopped to observe Xuanyuan, who looked totally at ease. He even asked, “Only what?”

Fang Yuyou stared at him intently and uttered each word clearly, “The Fire of Transformed Heart is controlled by the Yin Family of the East Dynasty. Which means these pills are from the Yin clan to be used by their elite warriors. They don’t sell them. Where did you get these?”

Xuanyuan’s heart skipped a beat. He never knew the secrets of these pills. Fang Yuyou was from the five families under the Fighting Dragons Sect, so she was knowledgeable about the world. However, even so, Xuanyuan didn’t show his concern, he smiled in reply, “Ah, so it’s that. I killed two king realm fighters and took these pills from them. That was the reason why Brother Fung Lie invited me to join the Sect. I’m in fact, already an inner disciple of the sect. I just

don't want to abuse the system. I want to be admitted to the Sect the same way everyone does. I want to test myself!"

Everyone from the Fang clan was shocked to hear that Xuanyuan was already an inner disciple under Fung Lie. Fung Lie was famous genius known far and wide, he was talented and determined. Fang Yuyou's doubt was erased after she heard his reply.

"He killed two king fighters from the Yin clan, that's really something. I was wondering where you got all those upper rank earth instruments, they must be gifts from master Fung Lie. Fung Lie doesn't rank very high among the true disciples, but he has extraordinary potential. The conflict between the true disciples will only get more and more serious with time. I'll also have to choose a side once I'm in the sect..." Numerous thoughts flashed through Fang Yuyou's head.

Xuanyuan knew that she was no ordinary woman. Just seeing them in person, she already knew so much about the strength-replenishing pills.

"I see. Young master Xuanyuan is very talented. Follow us. We'll head to the Sect as soon as possible. This forest is eerie. Everyone, let's go." Fang Yuyou smiled. Xuanyuan was relieved that she didn't show any signs of suspicion.

With her order, all the guards sprang into action and continued their journey towards the heart of the forest.

Perhaps it was because of the death of the snake leader, the five-coloured snakes were no longer united. Instead, they were moving around and attacking aimlessly. So it was much easier to kill them.

The mountain where the Sect was dwelling seemed so close, and yet it was impossible to shorten the distance. After a day of running, the mountain didn't seem to get any nearer.

They didn't get into much trouble during the day and had already marched over three thousand miles as the sky started to darken. After a full day's journey, many were exhausted even with the help of strength-replenishing pills.

"Let's take some rest and start moving again tomorrow, we are close to the sect now. All of you can become the outer sect disciples when we arrive. It will

give much better prospects than staying at the Fang Family as guards. If you have a breakthrough, you'll even be able to become an inner disciple." Said Fang Yuyou, unlike most spoiled rich children, she was polite and encouraging in her speech. Xuanyuan was hopeful that they could become friends, it was better than being a loner once he was in the Sect.

Fang Wujian was also experienced in surviving in the wilderness. Like Yan Liang, he forbade anyone from building a fire and ordered them to cover their aura. He also sprinkled some dried feces from the five-coloured snakes around them.

There was a full moon that night. The silver beams shone down on the Forest of a Million Beasts. The surrounding atmosphere was serene, despite the looming threats from the beasts that might be lurking in the darkness.

Xuanyuan was resting and Fang Yuyou was close by. She observed Xuanyuan's face while his eyes were closed. It was a face of someone with a strong will. She felt that Xuanyuan was like a black hole that could devour everything around him to achieve his goal.

Suddenly, Xuanyuan opened his eyes and looked at Fang Yuyou, "What are you staring at, lady Fang?"

She blushed, but was honest, "You."

Then Xuanyuan blushed. "There's nothing to look at."

"You look nice. It's quite comforting." Fang Yuyou shared her thoughts, "Young master Xuanyuan, it's hard to be alone all the time, isn't it? Why don't you join the Fang Family, so we can help each other when we're in the Sect?"

Fang Yuyou was the first to hold out an olive branch. Xuanyuan had a lot of potential. If he joined the Fang Family's force, the Fang clan could help nurture him. In turn, it might benefit them in the long run.

"It's not so bad being alone, many people have helped me. Why don't you consider joining Brother Fung Lie? Surely he can help your family." Xuanyuan grinned innocently, showing his white teeth.

Fang Yuyou was amused. She wanted to recruit Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan tried to recruit her instead.

“I will consider it. Master Fung Lie would make a powerful ally. If possible, I’d love to be your ally, if not, I hope we’ll never become enemies.”

Xuanyuan laughed,

“Naturally! Right, I’m going to breakthrough to the wild realm today. If you don’t mind, please help guard me.”

“I’d love to.” She replied. Fang Yuyou smiled sweetly. The masculine clothes she was wearing only added to her charm.

Letting her guard him while he broke through was a sign of trust. They needed time to build the trust between them.

Xuanyuan took out a wild elixir, a gift from Yan Ziyun which almost cost all of her wealth. Xuanyuan would make sure that he didn’t waste it. He was at the very last stage; the only thing left to do was to refine the veins inside his head and connect the veins to the bone marrows. Wild fighters refined their bone marrow.

Looking at the elixir, Fang Yuyou commented, “Even though it’s not made using Fighting Fire, it’s still a good quality elixir.”

Xuanyuan smiled and gulped down the elixir. He had one night of rest to see if he could enter the realm of a wild fighter!

## Chapter 83 – Six-headed Snake

The moment he swallowed the elixir, he could feel a violent force explode from inside his body. Xuanyuan had taken the Pythogon Grass to accentuate his veins, expanding them and strengthening them. The wild and passionate force didn't bring him any pain. Instead, it filled him with the ecstasy of power.

Apart from his head, an infinite amount of fighting Qi also started rushing into the rest of his body and begun to cleanse all of the impurities among his veins. His strength had been enhanced once again from forty-two dragons!

Forty-three Dragons!

Forty-four Dragons!

Forty-five Dragons!

...

“Forty-eight Dragons!

The cleansing in his torso and limbs already showed a substantial increase in power, but his strength was concealed using another skill from the devouring technique, so other people didn't notice any difference in his strength.

“Alright, boy. Bring all of that power into to your head. As long as you refine all of the veins in your head, you can step into the next realm whenever you like.” Greed's voice echoed in his heart. Xuanyuan turned the direction of his Qi towards his head immediately.

The Qi was breaking through the impurities in Xuanyuan's neck and rushing towards his face before it slowed down. Xuanyuan repeated the process.

Fang Yuyou saw his face getting redder and quickly realized what was happening. “He still hasn't entered the peak of the spiritual realm – he hasn't refined his head! Isn't he afraid that he'll damage all of the veins inside his head and render himself a vegetable?”

Veins were the lines which connected the entire body. It's critical not to damage them, especially the ones in the head.

One hour passed.

Two hours passed.

With an internal explosion, Xuanyuan's brain became apparent, followed by the impurities being removed from his body. After two hours of cleansing, all the impurities in his veins were gone!

Before he removed all the impurities in his head, Xuanyuan always felt that his head was heavy, like it was being weighed down. Now it was finally unstuck; he suddenly felt the ease from all over his body. From the connections of his veins, Xuanyuan's strength surged once again,

Forty-eight Dragons!

Forty-nine Dragons!

Fifty Dragons!

...

Sixty-four Dragons!

Sixty-four dragons of strength as a peak spiritual fighter was unheard of. He was almost as strong as most peak wild fighters! Even if a practitioner studied a seven-star Tian class technique, he would only be able to use thirty-two dragons of strength at this stage, and Xuanyuan's strength was double that!

"Hahaha, not bad. Sixty-four dragons as a peak spiritual fighter! Very good!" Greed said.

"How many dragons did the Devouring Emperor have when he was a peak spiritual fighter?" Xuanyuan was delighted.

"The Emperor was not as lucky as you. He created his own technique. We only met when he became powerful. You think you can learn the Emperor's past like it's on an open book? Perhaps the Emperor's Journey would know about it! But I think that thing must be dead already. It's even more greedy than I am! I wonder if it survived..." Greed was nostalgic once again.

"The Emperor's Journey? What's that? Tell me..." Xuanyuan was eager to know more about the devouring emperor.

"You'll know when you know. Don't gossip." Greed dodged his inquiry once again, which Xuanyuan knew was coming.

“Don’t tell me then. I might not even care later! Quick, give me the way to refine bone marrow!”

“You haven’t entered the wild realm yet. The elixir only pushed you to the peak spiritual realm. Even though you’ve refined all the veins, but you need to connect your veins to bone marrow. So the marrows can then be nurtured by fighting Qi. Some people can never make the connections. I’ll teach you the way when you become a wild fighter.”

Xuanyuan suddenly jumped up and punched the air three times, which allowed his power to condense fully. He launched an attack with his head, and the force formed the shape of a dragon’s head and crumbled a tree a dozen metres away. The night crows were startled and started to caw. The head strike was the most powerful move in the Heavenly Dragon’s long strike, Heavenly Dragon’s Head Strike. During a fight, when the arms and legs were unmovable, the practitioner can attack his opponent’s face using this attack.

After his moves, Xuanyuan sat back on the ground. The guards from the Fang Family were all startled.

“Look at the strength! That was the power of at least fifty dragons in that strike!”

“I think I saw a giant dragon’s head!”

“Don’t you understand why the Lady was so eager to recruit him?”

They were all whispering.

“It’s a pity that you’ve yet to breakthrough to the wild realm. The elixir is not a guarantee that you will understand, the understanding of how to make the connection comes with insight. But with your talent, you can surely achieve it.” Fang Yuyou words were encouraging.

She sounded mild and unimpressed, but in fact, she was shocked by the power he revealed. She thought, “That strike was at least sixty dragons of strength. He was three times as powerful as regular spiritual fighters! Even a seven-star heaven class technique cannot give such power. Does he practice a Xian class technique?” Fang Wujian was also moved by Xuanyuan’s powerful display.

“Thank you for your encouragement, Lady Fang. I’ll try to sense the

connections.” Xuanyuan smiled and closed his eyes once again. He could see the inside of his body; the muscles were clinging onto each other; his bones were sharp like dragon’s bones; his veins were long and slim like pythons. Everything was connected with each other....

Nine hours slipped away. The sky lit up slowly.

Xuanyuan was observing his own body. He felt that his bones were strong in appearance but empty inside. This thought flashed through his mind. In an instant, he felt that his veins squirmed like they were living snakes. It was close.

But suddenly, Fang Wujian yelled, “Step back! It’s a six-headed snake! It’s as powerful as a king realm fighter!”

Xuanyuan’s sense of the connection was disturbed. He opened his eyes, and in front of him was a giant snake with six heads. Each head was as large as a huge bucket. Twelve human-head sized eyes were twinkling. The body was about five metres long, with grey, iron-coloured scaled covering its body. An ordinary lower class earth weapon could not pierce through the snake’s defence!

Xuanyuan was still collecting his thoughts, while the snake opened its mouth. With a rotten stench, six bright green arrows made entirely of venom were shot towards them!

## Chapter 84 – Women are scary

Fang Yuyou stood straight, with her Green Water Sword in her hand, not frightened of the poisonous venom from the six-headed snake. She released her fighting Qi, ready to release her techniques at any given moment.

Xuanyuan, who stood next to Fang Yuyou, was unaware that this girl was actually stronger than him. Fang Yuyou was a peak wild fighter, studying a five-star heaven class technique, the Plain Water Sword. Ordinary peak wild fighter only had fifty-four dragons of strength, but she had seventy-eight dragons of strength. Her power could be compared to a practitioner who just stepped into the king realm.

But in Xuanyuan's mind, women were delicate and born weaker than men, so they should be protected, so he quickly grabbed her waist and pulled her close to him. Her Qi was greatly disturbed by the sudden shock of being embraced. She had never been touched by an unfamiliar man, especially not around her waist. She could not stop herself from blushing, and wanted to slap away his hands from her waist.

"We need to go." Xuanyuan said, with his mouth alarmingly close to her ear.

With Fang Yuyou in his arms, Xuanyuan leaped through the air, while activating his boots. They continued to evade the poisonous venom that was shot by the snake.

"Lady Fang, are you hurt anywhere?" Xuanyuan asked seriously.

"I'm fine." Fang Yuyou could feel Xuanyuan's strong arms wrapped around her and she felt a strange sense of safety. She then turned her face to Xuanyuan. It was clear that he was truly worried about her safety, which made her anger start to dissipate.

She had a sword in one hand, ready to battle, while the other hand was pressed to Xuanyuan's chest. But suddenly, Xuanyuan let go of her waist and dropped her from the air. It was easy to fly for peak wild fighters, but even with Xuanyuan activating his boots, he wouldn't be able to dodge while continuing to hold her. He dropped Fang Yuyou like he was getting rid of the dead weight.

"I'm so sorry, Lady Fang. Please forgive me." He sounded very apologetic.

Fang Yuyou's face was flush red and burning. She wanted to strangle him to erase her shame. She was glaring at Xuanyuan, before releasing her Qi from her sword towards the snake. The violent wave crashed into one of the snake's heads and the snake screamed miserably as its scales were cracking inch after inch, with scarlet blood pouring from the wounds.

Xuanyuan was shocked to see such a violent power, "Women are scary!" He thought.

Xuanyuan looked down at the poisonous venom which were shot like arrows, each was three metres wide. The places where it landed had already corroded, even the ground was dissolving. There were thirty men in the Fang Family's guards, all of them were peak wild fighters. Eight of them were hit by the venom, leaving only a pool of blood and venom behind.

At the same time, Fang Wujian also attacked the snake with his sword technique. The Qi he was releasing was suffocating.

"Killing Strike: Four corners!" Suddenly Qi from all four directions shot down from the sky, decapitating four of the remaining five heads.

Then a red beam pierced through the air and into the un-damaged head, which then exploded into pieces.

Xuanyuan was holding a crossbow as it crumbled to pieces, leaving him empty handed. Fang Yuyou looked at him and thought, "It seems like he might have run out of crossbows."

However, Xuanyuan quickly pulled out another crossbow from his ring.

"I have underestimated him..." She was speechless.

The snake only had its injured head left which was roaring and writhing in pain.

Fang Wujian shot forward and struck the final blow and beheaded the snake completely.

"We should get out of the forest as soon as possible. My strength will only attract more six-headed snakes. I will stay here to stop any more that have been attracted here, protect the Lady and leave!" Fang Wujian ordered the remaining guards.

“Yes!” Only twenty-two men were left, but they were all determined.

Xuanyuan laughed, “Don’t worry. I’ll take care of Lady Fang.”

Fang Wujian was uncomfortable when hearing Xuanyuan’s proclamation, but said nothing. However, Fang Yuyou widened her eyes, she felt so much anger that she wanted to strangle Xuanyuan on the spot.

“Eh, Lady Fang, what’s wrong? I didn’t mean to offend you earlier.” Xuanyuan landed on the ground and started to approach her.

She started to remember how he was embracing her by the waist and felt incredibly ashamed. She blushed and glared at him, then turned away in anger.

Xuanyuan was stunned, he thought, “Why is she angry? I was just trying to be nice and she got angry at me. Hmpf...Women!”

The guards had never seen their young lady acting like a girl before. They were suddenly very interested in Xuanyuan.

“Kid, go and tell her you’re sorry.” Fang Wujian reminded Xuanyuan, who was completely clueless about what to do next.

“Tell her I’m sorry?”

Fang Wujian whispered, “She is a girl after all. She got embarrassed when you...”

“Oh, I see... I’ll go...” Xuanyuan suddenly understood and followed her immediately.

Fang Yuyou glanced at him angrily. Xuanyuan smiled obligingly, “Lady Fang, I was rude. I shouldn’t have done that. I’m sorry, please don’t be angry with me...”

She rolled her eyes and kept her head facing the other direction. “I’m not angry, what a stupid boy...” She thought.

Xuanyuan was sweating. After all, he had embarrassed her, so it was very normal for her to be angry. The old beggar said to him in his past life “If a girl is upset, then there’s only one thing to do, compliment her until she is happy again.”

“Lady Fang, you’re such a pretty girl. You must have it in your beautiful heart

to forgive me, right?”

“Lady Fang, your smile is as refreshing as the morning sunlight.”

“Lady Fang, your aura when you laugh is as charming as....”

Fang Yuyou couldn't help herself, she was amused. “I'll see what he'll say next.”

Looking at the slight smile that was leaking from the corner of her mouth, Xuanyuan knew that it was working. He was just about to relax, when a gush of vicious air rushed over them.

It was another six-headed snake, but much bigger than the previous one. It shot six venom arrows from its mouth, aiming at Xuanyuan and Fang Yuyou.

“Young Master Xuanyuan, watch out!” Fang Yuyou screamed.

## Chapter 85 – Outside of the Forest

Fang Yuyou didn't hesitate and she quickly released all of her fighting Qi. A stream of Qi suddenly became waves and the waves that roared through the air. While wielding her sword, she rushed straight towards the six-headed snake. Each strike felt like a tsunami was being unleashed from her sword.

However, the six-headed snake was a violent beast with the strength comparable to king realm fighters. The weakest force it would produce was a hundred dragons, allowing it to shatter Fang Yuyou's Qi waves easily.

Fang Yuyou started to grow pale as she panicked. She quickly started to change her tactics and attempted to block the incoming venom arrows.

But one of the arrows made it through her defences and was headed straight at her. Unexpectedly, Xuanyuan jumped in front of her and opened his arms to shield her, being struck by the venom.

"No..." She screamed.

The moment the venom arrow hit him, his armour was activated, but even so, Xuanyuan still received the impact. The armour had already consumed a third of his Qi. He had recently reached the realm of a peak spiritual fighter with sixty-four dragons of strength and was much stronger than he was previously. However, it was still not easy for him to take that hit.

At this point, a powerful Qi rushed over and sliced off one of the giant snake heads. It was Fang Wujian arriving.

"Guards! Protect the Lady and get out of the forest!"

"Yes!" The remaining twenty-two guards said in unison.

Fang Yuyou felt her heart relax when she saw that Xuanyuan was unharmed by the venom. She grabbed his arm and dragged him forward while asking, "Are you ok?"

"As long as you forgive me, then I'll be fine." He said innocently. She rolled her eyes and released his arm.

"Who said you offended me? I didn't say anything like that." She replied.

Xuanyuan couldn't reply. Fang Yuyou took out the bottle of strength-replenishing pills given by Xuanyuan and took one. Her body was filled with Qi again almost instantly.

"Fire of Transformed Heart indeed. No wonder my family wanted to recruit someone who can control a powerful fighting fire. It's truly magnificent." She thought.

She looked behind at the guards and Fang Wujian, who were still fighting the giant snake.

"We'll move ahead as quickly as possible." She ordered. They all released their Qi and rushed through the forest.

"I still can't understand what a woman is thinking." Xuanyuan thought to himself. Fang Yuyou had defended him from the arrows and it seemed like she wasn't angry with him anymore, that's all that mattered.

They faced numerous attacks from the five-coloured snakes, but they couldn't impact the morale of the group, since they had already faced an even worse danger.

Xuanyuan had his dagger in one hand and a crossbow in the other. Unless it was absolutely necessary, he wouldn't use the crossbow. He only had four remaining, he needed to be careful.

They ran continuously for six hours, a total of two thousand and three hundred miles. Xuanyuan looked back worriedly, "Will Fang Wujian be all right?"

Fang Yuyou frowned and pondered for a while, "A king class beast is not a great threat to Wujian. He also has an upper rank earth instrument with him, so he should be fine. Let's go, arriving at the Sect is the most important thing for us."

"Is being an inner disciple of the Sect more important than someone who cares for you?" Xuanyuan didn't understand her reasoning so he asked on impulse.

"There will always be sacrifices. When I'm in the Sect, I won't be content with just being an inner disciple, I'll eventually become a true disciple which will bring numerous benefits to my whole family. I'll surely treat the family members of the dead with kindness. The martial path is a cruel and merciless path. Every person

must accept this fact when they start practicing.” Fang Yuyou said honestly.

“Well, I guess you’re right.” Xuanyuan sighed.

They had also slaughtered many five-coloured snakes along the way, but they didn’t have the time to collect any of the elixirs, this left Xuanyuan feeling unsettled. Fang Yuyou was impressed at Xuanyuan’s swiftness and determination. It was hard to imagine that he was only a spiritual fighter.

Just when everyone felt like the forest was endless, a bright light appeared ahead of the group.

“We’re here, the exit of the forest!” Fang Yuyou was glad.

All the guards started to relax, that was when a six-headed snake suddenly leaped towards them.

This one was much bigger than the previous snakes they had encountered. The iron-grey scales were rough, and were able to negate the strikes from lower class earth instruments. It was eight metres wide and almost forty metres long. Six heads were all glaring at the group. Each head had a snake crown, this was obviously the leader of the six-headed snakes!

Without Fang Wujian, it would be very difficult to fight against such a powerful beast.

Xuanyuan was the first to react. Before the snake had time to attack, Xuanyuan pulled the trigger on his crossbow. With a series of explosions, eight bolts exploded onto four of the heads and the scales were instantly blown off!

Fang Yuyou was also quick in her reaction. She released her Qi and attacked towards the four injured heads. They were all weak and on the verge of being destroyed.

The remaining two heads opened their mouths and a rain of venom arrows filled the sky, contaminating the surrounding thirty metres of its body. The trees around it were all rotten and dying, the ground was sizzling and dissolving from the venom.

The guards formed a defensive shield with their fighting Qi and activated their instruments to protect themselves, but this was clearly not a permanent

solution. The snake seemed to have an endless reserve of venom.

Fang Yuyou was trying to locate Xuanyuan, only to discover that had vanished. Only a bunch of shattered crossbows remained. Her heart suddenly dropped, “Dustless Helmet! Is he crazy, he wants to sneak up on the snake?”

In the next instant, she saw his body reappear by the snake’s belly. He looked extremely small and insignificant when compared to the beast. He then leapt up and thrust his dagger into the snake’s belly. The dagger was so sharp that none of the powerful scales could provide any resistance.

Then a mysterious force started to absorb the life essence from the snake’s body. The mighty six-headed snake was nothing when compared to Greed. It let out a blood curdling scream and collapsed. Its body started to decompose to reveal six bright green elixirs.

“Haha six elixirs!” Xuanyuan laughed happily.

“Of course, the snake has six heads, three are males and three are females. When they break through to the grandmaster realm, they’ll become a nine-headed snake.” Fang Yuyou came up next to Xuanyuan and looked at the elixirs. They were all great quality and each was as large as a fist.

Xuanyuan nodded and smiled at her, “Do you want three of them?”

She shook her head, “No, you keep them. You killed the snake. If not for you, all of my guards would’ve been killed.”

Without asking again, Xuanyuan quickly put the elixirs inside his ring. “Let’s go, the sect is close.” He said.

Fang Yuyou, Xuanyuan, and twenty-two guards had finally set foot outside of the forest.

## Chapter 86 – Marriage Proposals

Before them was a range of mountains. The tops of the mountains were surrounded by white clouds and a few white cranes could be seen flying around them.

“So this is the Fighting Dragons Sect! These mountains are magnificent!”

“Right! No wonder so many people want a spot in the sect, even at the cost of their lives!”

“I can feel an abundant amount of Qi here. The progress of our advancements will be so much faster here!”

“Of course! This is the place where Xian live, after all!”

“We’re going to be the outer disciples of the Sect!”

“Wonderful...”

The guards were all excited.

The road to the mountains were smooth. They also saw a few other teams leaving the forest from afar.

“There are also some people from the other five families over there.” Fang Yuyou explained.

A white skysea bird flew out of the forest and across the sky, each of its wings were about ten metres in length when spread. It was circling around the sky with a graceful elegance, but normal people would surely be scared upon seeing such a large beast. The skysea bird was an eagle descent beast, it was as strong as a peak wild fighter. On this bird, there was a man and a woman. The man was wearing a taoist gown loosely, the woman was sitting in his arms as he continued to stroke her body.

“Beauty, can you see it? This is the Fighting Dragons Sect.” The man laughed next to the woman’s ear.

“I’d follow you anywhere!” The woman’s face was blushing, her voice coarse. However, she was in fact a king realm fighter!

The man laughed happily. Then he spotted Fang Yuyou and turned silent. “I

didn't think that I would meet my fiancée here. I should act more polite! Oh look, it's Xie Wuhen?" The man also spoke towards another approaching team.

Xuanyuan didn't say anything. Though Fang Yuyou had a look of disdain in her eyes. "That is Lu Yuxiang, the young master of the Lu Family, one of the five families under the Sect. The skysea bird he is riding is a rare beast, it's a very powerful bird."

On their right, a group of people approached them, the one in the lead was a handsome man who was riding atop a golden wolf. The golden wolf was also as powerful as a peak wild fighter. It was much stronger than Guxing, despite them both being wolves. Guxing was only a wolf with an ordinary bloodline.

This man was also holding a beautiful woman in his arms. She had watery eyes and a red face. Her clothes loosely hung from her shoulders, showing a great deal of her body. The man gave her a passionate kiss, making the woman blush even deeper.

"Young master, you're so rude!"

The man's smile was obscene. He said narcissistically, "Isn't that what you like about me?"

"Yes, I do." The woman said as she wrapped her exposed legs around his waist. They didn't care about the gazes of the other people. "Young master, it's my bad. I'm only a peak wild fighter. I let that bitch get ahead and enter the king realm!"

"Hahaha, don't worry. That bitch won't be able to defeat me even if she's a king fighter!" The man laughed. He then spotted Fang Yuyou and ordered the woman to tidy up her clothes. The wolf changed direction and approached Fang Yuyou.

Fang Yuyou was expressionless, "That is Xie Wuhen, also from one of the five families."

Xuanyuan nodded. They were all from similar family backgrounds as Fang Yuyou. Not someone he should needlessly offend.

Xie Wuhen was leading twenty guards, Lu Yuxiang was riding atop his skysea bird. Both were heading in their direction. Xuanyuan observed the skysea bird

and thought that it seemed to be faster than a top king fighter.

“Lady Fang, I didn’t think I would meet you here. It’s my honour.” Lu Yuxiang straightened his clothes and jumped off the bird. He bowed to Fang Yuyou, but he still had that unruly expression on his face.

“Lu Yuxiang, I thought you would be killed inside the tiger forest. I didn’t think you could get out alive. What a miracle! We’ll be brothers now that we are in the Sect, we should be nice to each other in the future.” Xie Wuhen also jumped off his golden wolf. The strength he released, suppressed that of Lu Yuxiang.

Lu Yuxiang looked at him coldly, “How unexpected! Young master Xie has already refined the heart, lungs and liver. Only your spleen and kidneys are left, then you’ll have completely refined your organs. Congratulations!” He said half-heartedly

But Xie Wuhen ignored Lu Yuxiang’s comment and turned to Fang Yuyou and bowed politely, “Greetings to Lady Fang.”

Fang Yuyou smiled mildly as she returned the bow. “Looks like we’re all going to be practicing in the sect together. We still have a few things to take care of, Young Masters, please continue your chat without us. Let’s go, Xuanyuan.”

Then she grabbed Xuanyuan’s hand and marched towards the mountains, with the Fang Family’s guards following closely behind. Lu Yuxiang’s face fell and Xie Wuhen glared at Xuanyuan’s back. Xuanyuan could feel the goosebumps on his back. He guessed immediately that he was now going to be the target of these two men. He grew angry,

“Why is she holding onto my hand! She intentionally wants them to misunderstand. She used me!” He thought angrily.

“Lady Fang, isn’t this inappropriate?” Xuanyuan sounded slightly angry.

But Fang Yuyou ignored his anger. She explained slowly, “Both the Lu Family and Xie Family have proposed marriage to me. I rejected both of them, but they wouldn’t let it go. They want to use the marriage between the two families to suppress the power of the other three families. I’m the only daughter of the Fang Family for them to marry, so they can only harass me. So please forgive me for doing this, young master Xuanyuan.”

Xuanyuan was not as angry as before. Yin Zhenluo also left her home because of a forced marriage. So he actually felt protective rather than angry towards her.

“Don’t worry. I’ll protect you from now on. We’ll see what they can do with me around!” He said confidently. Then he held Fang Yuyou in his arms and dashed towards the Sect. Fang Yuyou smiled obligingly and wrapped her arms around his neck.

Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen were furious.

“Looks like we have competition. Who is that kid? Where did he come from?” Lu Yuxiang said.

“Who knows. I don’t mind competition between the five families, but an ordinary boy shouldn’t get involved in our business. What do you think?” Xie Wuhen wanted to murder Xuanyuan.

“Kill him, of course, but don’t harm Lady Fang. We’ll work together on this. Let’s kill this brat in front of her, so she understands that an ordinary boy is not in the same league as us.” Lu Yuxiang said as he got back on his bird.

“Exactly my plan!” Xie Wuhen climbed up to his wolf at the same time.

“Xie Family guards. Capture everyone with the Fang Family, but don’t kill them, yet.”

“Lu Family guards. We’ll work together with the Xie Family.”

## Chapter 87 – The Verge of War

Xuanyuan was a bit light-headed with his arms around Fang Yuyou's waist. Her body felt slim and soft pressed against him, her arms were even wrapped around Xuanyuan's neck. They looked like a sweet, young couple in love. As he smelled the light fragrance from Fang Yuyou's body, Xuanyuan was finding it hard to concentrate.

Fang Yuyou looked over her shoulder and saw that Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen were following them. When their gazes met, she only pulled herself closer to Xuanyuan, which infuriated Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen even more.

They soon caught up with Fang Yuyou and Xuanyuan, with help from the bird and wolf mounts.

Lu Yuxiang was circling the sky and said coldly, "Stop. There's things here that we need to resolve."

Fang Yuyou narrowed her eyes and asked, "What do you want? Young master Lu?"

"Well, not much. I want what Xie Wuhen wants..." He stood on the skysea bird while waving a folding fan in his hand. It was called the Fan of a Hundred Fires, an upper rank Earth instrument. It could be activated using a person's Qi to release a powerful fire to burn opponents alive.

Xie Wuhen also came up and blocked the way. He was holding a dark claw, which was called the Ghost Claw and also an upper class earth instrument. It had a gruesome appearance. There seemed to be some unsettling ghostly screams leaking from the weapon.

"Young master Xie, what's your intention?" Fang Yuyou rested her head on Xuanyuan's shoulder like they were a sweet and intimate couple.

"I just want to ask, who is this boy to you, Lady Fang." Xie Wuhen pointed the claw at Xuanyuan.

"Him? He's my fiancé. Didn't you know?" Fang Yuyou sounded calm and natural, you would never have guessed that she might be lying.

Both Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen were blinded by anger. Xie Wuhen took a step forward, “Lady Fang, you rejected us both on the reason that we were not powerful enough. But he’s not even a wild realm fighter. I don’t believe you. Are you lying to us?”

Fang Yuyou felt the coldness coming from them, “Will they try to kill him? No, I can’t let them hurt Xuanyuan. I’ll tell them that he is already accepted as a Fang Family member so they won’t dare to touch him.”

Fang Yuyou was struggling but she made up her mind quickly. She stood closer and kissed Xuanyuan on his lips. Xuanyuan could smell the fresh fragrance from her lips. This was the first time he was this close with a woman. His head was spinning.

Before Xuanyuan could react, Fang Yuyou had already kissed him and pulled herself away. Her face was also blushing a bright red. She then smiled at Xie Wuhen and Lu Yuxiang.

“We’re engaged. There’s no need to keep our distance.”

“No, there’s not. Because this boy will have to die today.” Xie Wuhen’s face was dark. The aura of a king fighter was suffocating the Fang Family’s guards. At this point, the guards from the Lu Family and the Xie Family arrived and surrounded them.

“Xie Wuhen! If you touch Xuanyuan. The Fang Family will start a war with your Lu Family!” Fang Yuyou jumped off Xuanyuan and her Qi started to boil. She looked like she was ready to kill.

“What a joke. The five families wouldn’t start a war just because of you. All right, I won’t kill the boy, since you insist. I’ll just break his limbs so he will understand that he doesn’t deserve to be with you. He needs to know his place.” Lu Yuxiang wielded his Fan of a Hundred Fires.

“When I’m not here, you dare to bully the Fang Family?” A terrifying force rushed towards Xie Wuhen and Lu Yuxiang. They were shocked at first, but soon calmed down and defended themselves with their Qi. It was, of course, Fang Wujian. He looked at the two peak king fighters from the other families then said solemnly,

“Are you going to try to stop me?”

A Xie guard laughed cruelly. “Isn’t that obvious?”

“There’s only one of you. You can’t fight against the two of us, Fang Wujian!”  
The Lu guard added.

“Sure. But if we fight with our lives, I’m sure I can bring down your young masters.” Fang Wujian replied. Then he summoned Qi from all four directions and activated his sword. Some guards of the Xie and Lu Families screamed,

“Are you crazy, Fang Wujian? Are you trying to start a war with the Lu and Xie Families? Do you know how much it’ll cost the Fang?”

Fang Wujian toned down his Qi at once. He wouldn’t want to do anything that might harm the Fang Family. But he still looked at the guards coldly.

“Get lost. Or I’ll use my life to take the lives of your young masters!”

Xie Wuhen and Lu Yuxiang looked furious.

“You can try to stop us, but this boy must die today. No one can protect him. Don’t think you can kill us so easily, Fang Wujian. We can still protect ourselves.” Xie Wuhen said.

“I’ll have to see how powerful Fang Wujian really is. You claim you can kill us both?” Lu Yuxiang also said. He was confident that he could at least defend against Fang Wujian’s sword.

“So none of you respect the Lady of the Fang Family. If that’s so, we’ll have the war then. Everyone, get into position.” Fang Yuyou ordered. “Talisman of Lighting!!

The Fang Guards took out powerful talismans from their pockets and threw them at the guards of the Xie and Lu, activating them with their Qi.

The Lightning talismans exploded with deafening rumbles.

The Lu and Xie Family guards didn’t even have time to react. In the teams of forty-something guards, thirty-eight of them were already dead. A few of the swifter ones had evaded the explosions at once, including the women that were with the young masters.

They were frozen in shock though. The talisman of lightning was so powerful. If not for their strength, they'd have become minced meat already.

Within the eighty metres radius of the explosions, there was the scattered bloody remains of the guards.

Fang Wujian took the chance and attacked the king realm guard of the Xie family. They didn't even have time to react, when suddenly their body was almost split in two by Fang Wujian's Qi. Then the king realm fighter from the Lu family rushed forward to join the fight.

Lu Yuxiang was not expecting an all-out war against the Fang Family. He wielded his Fan of a Hundred Fires as a burning heat hit the Fang Family guards.

"Kill them all!"

"Kill!" Xie Wuhen screamed and so did his Ghost Claw as he lunged at Xuanyuan.

## Chapter 88 – Let Go and Kill

“Xuanyuan, run! They wouldn’t dare to kill me!” Fang Yuyou shouted. She released her water Qi and injected it into her sword. The violent waves fought against the fire which was released from Lu Yuxiang’s Fan of a Hundred Fires.

The opposite forces collided as white steam spread outwards from the collision. All the Fang Family guards injected their Qi to aid Fang Yuyou against Lu Yuxiang.

Hearing Fang Yuyou’s warning, Xuanyuan didn’t run, but stepped forward with a crossbow in each of his hands. He laughed, “Eat this!”

He pulled the triggers four times while aiming at Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen.

“Crossbows of Explosion!” Their faces were filled with terror. They couldn’t run, however their upper rank earth instruments activated automatically and defended against the attacks.

But the explosion still knocked them several metres backwards. Xuanyuan turned and aimed his crossbow at the injured king realm fighter from the Xie Family.

Even though the king fighter was gravely injured, he was still overwhelmingly powerful and he even seemed to be healing from his wounds. Fang Wujian was the last defence against him. Even if Xuanyuan could escape, the Fang Family would suffer a great loss and Fang Yuyou would be left alone with them. It’s a situation Xuanyuan didn’t want to see. Those people might do something to Fang Yuyou.

Xuanyuan oversaw the whole situation, so he targeted the injured king fighter from the Xie Family, which was unexpected. Normally, a spiritual fighter would never dare to challenge someone so much stronger than him.

The king fighter reacted very quickly and evaded two bolts, but six bolts landed on his injured body. He was instantly blown to pieces by the explosions.

Xuanyuan ran up to the dead body, making many people watch in confusion as to what he was doing. They were surprised to see that Xuanyuan hurried to

confiscate the upper rank earth instrument and fighting ring from the dead body.

Fang Yuyou didn't know whether to laugh or cry, while Xie Wuhen and Lu Yuxiang's faces turned red with fury.

"Kill all of the Fang Family guards. I'll deal with this Xuanyuan." Xie Wuhen said as he clutched his Ghost Claw. The claw unleashed a ghost's howling.

"Okay." Lu Yuxiang summoned a wave of fire from his Fan of a Hundred Fires. At the same time, he ordered his skysea bird. "Storm of Flames!"

The bird started to flap its wings and created a strong whirlwind. It merged with a wave of fire and then crashed into the Fang Family guards.

Fang Yuyou braced herself solemnly and ordered loudly, "Water Sword Formation!"

All the guards gathered to form a circle around Fang Yuyou. Their Qi was concentrated on her and her sword released a powerful Qi. A gigantic wave started to form above their heads, colliding with the Storm of Flames.

The collision did not dissipate for some time, it was a battle of attrition with the two forces. Fang Yuyou felt her bones start to feel the pressure, when suddenly, her five organs made a popping sound... In an instant, her strength started to surge from seventy-eight dragons to a hundred and seventeen dragons. The formation had now become much more powerful. Lu Yuxiang started to feel his Qi was running out.

"What? Breakthrough to become a king realm fighter?"

"Yan Yan, come help me!" Lu Yuxiang called to his servant girl. She was also a king realm fighter. Her Qi added into the attack made the storm of flames grow even more terrifying.

Fang Yuyou was the centre of the formation so her Qi was depleting much faster than everyone else's, she had already been forced to take a strength-replenishing pill.

With each strike, Xie Wuhen's claw cut through the air and unleashed a black wave towards Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan could see that there were many twisted, ghostly faces crafted onto the surface of the claw. Each of his attacks had at least a hundred and eighty dragons of power. He took out the last two crossbows and aimed directly at Xie Wuhen. He pulled the triggers frantically until the crossbows started to crumble.

Sixteen bolts headed straight at Xie Wuhen, but Xie didn't dodge the bolts. Instead, he swiped his claw towards them.

Five strands of Qi destroyed half of the bolts and the remaining eight bolts exploded onto him. The upper rank earth instrument he was wearing activated automatically and stopped the bolts from causing him any damage.

"I'll see how many crossbows you have." Xie smiled angrily. Once again, he lunged at Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan quickly activated the Dustless Helmet and disappeared.

His target was gone, leaving Xie Wuhen in shock, "The Dustless Helmet! This boy is not that simple, but a spiritual fighter cannot activate the helmet for long."

Then, he suddenly felt like his whole body had grown cold. Xuanyuan had moved behind him and thrust his dagger at his back. The instrument Xie Wuhen was wearing protected him from Xuanyuan's mysterious dagger. Even though he didn't manage to kill Xie Wuhen, Xuanyuan's dagger was absorbing large amount of Qi through the instrument.

Xie Wuhen was in shock, he could feel his Qi was being sucked away. His entire face started to pale and he immediately turned around and swiped with his claw.

"100 Ghosts!" His Qi transformed into the images of a hundred fierce ghosts. Xuanyuan didn't even have time to run, but his armour protected him from any damage.

He immediately activated his boots and leapt away, he then activated his helmet and vanished from sight. He had lost about 80% of his Qi, so he quickly swallowed a strength-replenishing pill.

"You are quite strong, boy, but you cannot kill me." Xie Wuhen's Qi had also disappeared very quickly from Xuanyuan's absorption, so he took a pill as well.

Xuanyuan was like a spirit of the night. With the dagger in his hand, he approached sneakily and thought to himself, “This will be a long fight...”

However, Xie Wuhen suddenly jumped onto his golden wolf, “Eyes of the Ghost wolf!”

Two rays of light shone from the eyes of the golden wolf. It scanned through the entire area and discovered Xuanyuan.

The golden wolf and Xie Wuhen cooperated and charged towards Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan’s heart froze. He quickly used The Steps of Heavenly Dragon and thought, this is my only chance. He needed to take the risk and go for the kill.

## Chapter 89 – Xingyun

“You think you’re invincible just because you have a few pieces of upper rank earth instruments? I’ll show you that you can never compensate for the difference between our strength!” Xie Wuhen grinned disdainfully. He wielded his claw and cut through the air with incredible speed, straight towards Xuanyuan.

With the help of the Dragon Boots, Xuanyuan was as fast as any king realm fighter. He was also using The Steps of Heavenly Dragon; revealing a heavenly dragon’s determination to sacrifice itself to kill its enemies.

Xuanyuan carefully toned down his strength so people would underestimate his strength. Xie Wuhen, on the other hand, had already revealed all of his hidden cards. He had already refined three organs and almost reached two hundred dragons of strength. He didn’t see Xuanyuan as a worthy opponent.

Looking at the suicidal Xuanyuan, Xie Wuhen attacked once again and released his overwhelming Qi.

At this moment, Xuanyuan ducked and injected a large amount of Qi into his boots. Suddenly, he lunged under the golden wolf and sliced off both of its front paws with his dagger. Then, while the wolf was still falling forward, he stabbed his dagger into its stomach and slit it open from front to back. In an instant, the life essence of the wolf was absorbed into the dagger and the body started to decompose.

Xie Wuhen had underestimated Xuanyuan’s fighting experience. He simply thought that this foolish young boy was planning to sacrifice himself. So Xuanyuan used this arrogance to trick him. Then he moved as swiftly as a peak king realm fighter to execute his plan.

Xie Wuhen was thrown off his wolf and onto the ground. The Ghost Claw crashed into the ground and created a five metre hole where it landed, the cracks even expanded for another twenty metres.

With the Qi from the golden wolf, Xuanyuan’s strength was restored to its best condition.

“Without the wolf, how are you going to find me?” Xuanyuan said as he activated his helmet again and disappeared from sight.

Xie Wuhen gritted his teeth, “Damn it! His target was my wolf, but he is underestimating my power!”

He stood up and waited for his prey to move closer. Xuanyuan appeared at his side and thrust the dagger at his waist. Xie Wuhen’s armour protected him again, but his Qi was being absorbed. Xie Wuhen took the opportunity and attacked towards Xuanyuan’s head with a full two hundred dragons of strength.

Even with the protection from his armour, Xuanyuan was still smashed into the ground, smashing the earth beneath him into a crater.

He used up the entirety of his Qi in order to activate the protection from his armour. The carvings on his armour seemed to dim as the last of his Qi was gone. As the blow landed on Xuanyuan, he felt that every fiber of his body in pain from the force of this blow. Xuanyuan couldn’t help but scream out in pain as his body’s potential was stimulated by the looming threat of death. He used the feeling of pain to understand the connections between his veins and his bones. Using only the brute force in his body, he stabbed Xie Wuhen with his dagger and started to absorb his Qi at an alarming rate.

“What the hell is that? It’s sucking out all of my Qi. I’ll kill him and take that dagger for myself!” Xie Wuhen was shocked, but he slashed out with his claw against Xuanyuan’s armour.

But this time, Xuanyuan was using Xie Wuhen’s Qi to support his own armour!

Inside Xuanyuan’s body, there was a great transformation taking place. He could feel the Qi that was slowly moving into his bone marrows. It was a subtle feeling which gave a completely new sensation. Xuanyuan’s power started to enhance,

Seventy-two dragons!

Eighty dragons!

Eighty-eight dragons!

Ninety-six dragons!

Behind him, there were ninety-six dragon shadows. He has just stepped into the wild realm!

“It’s impossible! A newly advanced wild fighter cannot have ninety-six dragons of strength!” Xie Wuhen was screaming inwardly. He knew that if he kept losing his Qi at this rate, his armour would not hold out for much longer. He was terrified. Suddenly, Xuanyuan leaped forward and used the “Heavenly Dragon’s Pierce”!

Xie Wuhen wanted to back away, but Xuanyuan was sticking to him closely. Xie Wuhen’s armour was almost destroyed when an imposing force started to suppress Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan felt like he was hit by a giant mountain as he crashed into the ground, coughing up blood.

He looked up in fear, as a man with bright light shining all over his body, stood close by. The man was carrying a sword on his back. His arrival shocked everyone at the scene, including Lu Yuxiang and Fang Yuyou.

Xie Wuhen smiled excitedly when he saw the man, “Master Xingyun!”

“Xie Wuhen. You are being embarrassed by a weakling!” Xingyun said. He was a true disciple of the sect, ranked thirty sixth, he was in competition with Fung Lie. He was one of the leading true disciples who went to ambush the Mo.

“This boy studies a strange technique. It’s creepy. He has ninety-six dragons of strength, but he just entered the wild realm! He also has upper rank earth instruments to protect him! I was just careless, that’s all!” Xie Wuhen didn’t tell Xingyun about the mysterious dagger, because he knew that Xingyun would take the dagger from him if he knew about it.

“Let me see, Dustless Helmet, Armour of Heavenly Gold, Dragon Boots. Quite impressive, but how dare you attack a member of the five families? Kneel!” Xingyun released his Qi, pushing Xuanyuan, who just stood up, back down. Xuanyuan coughed up a mouthful of blood again. His Qi was greatly disturbed, but he still had the power to take out the Token of Fighting Dragons and commanded solemnly, “I have Brother Fung Lie’s Token, how dare you order me to kneel!”

Xie Wuhen, Lu Yuxiang both turned very pale. Everyone from the Fang Family were pleasantly surprised — Xuanyuan was supported by Fung Lie!

Xingyun considered for a while before he smiled at Xuanyuan coldly, “You think you can intimidate me with Elder Brother Fung Lie’s token? I also have a token of Fighting Dragons. You dare to attack a member of the five families. I’ll kill you as a traitor on behalf of Brother Fung Lie!”

Xingyun’s Qi was more than enough to kill Xuanyuan without lifting a finger. Xuanyuan could hear his bones and joints were cracking under the immense pressure.

Xingyun was jealous of Fung Lie’s success in the battle of the Mo nest. He couldn’t attack Fung Lie himself, but he wouldn’t be intimidated by a little wild realm fighter. Otherwise, he would never be able to defeat Fung Lie!

Xuanyuan glared at Xingyun, “How dare you try to kill me?”

“Why can’t I kill you? What a joke!” Xingyun laughed.

Fang Yuyou screamed and thrust her Qi towards Xingyun, “If you kill him, I’ll kill you!”

## Chapter 90 – Fang Yun

Fang Yuyou attacked, followed by her guards. They formed together to create the Water Sword Formation. Alongside their attacks, there was the loud sound of a waterfall. The attack was like a waterfall of swords crashing towards Xingyun. He frowned, but stood unmoved.

“You think you can defeat me with this? Kneel!”

Xingyun waved his hand and shattered the waterfall. The counter attack caused damage to Fang Yuyou and the guards. They were all coughing blood. Xingyun’s power forced the guards to their knees. Fang Yuyou was the only one still standing stubbornly as she glared at Xingyun,

“Kill me now, or when I get to the Sect, my uncle Fang Yun will surely kill you!”

Xingyun hesitated. He knew that was a possibility, so he turned his attention to Xuanyuan. “I’ll see who’s going to save you!” He reached his arm forward then released his Qi towards Xuanyuan.

However, before the strike hit, the arm that Xingyun held out was cut cleanly from his shoulder. A stream of blood burst out from the wound and created a huge hole in the ground. Grandmaster fighters refined their blood to a shocking power, so that even their blood could harm and kill their enemies. However, a Grandmaster like Xingyun had his arm cut off like it was clay.

“Xingyun, you dare to attack one of mine. How disrespectful.” An overwhelming aura filled every inch of the sky. The man was riding atop a Dragon Scale Horse. The horse alone had the strength of a king fighter. Its rider was even more powerful.

“Imperial fighter!” Xingyun screamed, “You’ve achieved the realm of an imperial fighter!”

Xuanyuan saw the man and relaxed. Xuanyuan then walked up to Xingyun’s arm while holding his mysterious dagger. The arm on the ground was like a severed snake, twitching and turning. When Xingyun saw what he was doing, he screamed out loudly. If the arm was unharmed, he could easily reattach it. It

would take a great deal more money and effort to grow a new arm once the original was damaged.

“I dare you!”

Xuanyuan looked up and grinned coldly, “There is nothing in this world that I don’t dare!”

He then stabbed the arm with his dagger and absorbed all the life essence it contained. The arm started to rot as soon as the dagger entered, leaving only a fighting ring attached to a withered bone. Xuanyuan calmly picked up the ring and put it onto his finger. Who knew how much wealth a grandmaster fighter had gathered in his ring.

Xingyun was shaking with fury. There was nothing that he wanted more than to slaughter Xuanyuan now, but Fung Lie, an imperial fighter, had arrived at the scene. He couldn’t kill him no matter how much he wanted.

Xie Wuhen and Lu Yuxiang looked just as grim as Xingyun. Fung Lie had entered the imperial realm, which meant he ranked among the top twenty of all the true disciples.

“I sensed the force of my own token being revealed, so I came out to check. Xuanyuan, you didn’t rely on the token of fighting dragons to transport you directly to the Sect and instead you took the test like everyone else. Very well done.” Fung Lie looked on with appreciation. He had indeed spotted a great talent. Xuanyuan was already a wild fighter, surrounded by mystery.

“Thank you, Brother Fung Lie. I should return the token to you.” He threw the token to Fung Lie, who was floating in the air. Fung Lie caught it and his eyes sparkled with amusement as he laughed out, “Great, great, Xuanyuan. You gave me all the merit points you acquired from the Mo nest. 600 million in total. That’s really what I needed at the moment. Since you gave me this gift, I’ll give you something in return. Here, my spear ‘Wind Spirit’ is now yours. Also 5 million king coins and the crystal from Taibai trading centre. These were what I received from completing the mission.”

Xuanyuan took hold of the spear ‘Wind Spirit’. Instantly, he felt his body become much lighter and swifter than before.

“With your Dustless Helmet and Wind Spirit, you can probably kill most peak king realm fighters. You can buy whatever you need with the money. I won’t tell you what to buy.” Fung Lie stood in front of Xuanyuan and gave him the crystals and money.

“Thank you, Brother Fung Lie!”

“Let’s go then.” Fung Lie was about to bring Xuanyuan on the way when Xuanyuan stopped him. He looked at Fang Yuyou and her guards and saw that they were all hurt.

“Brother Fung, can we bring them with us? Or at least treat their wounds before we go?” He asked.

Fung Lie nodded. Then he glared at Xingyun, his gaze was like a powerful laser. Xingyun shook all over and coughed up even more blood. Pain was all over his body, but he didn’t dare to complain.

Fung Lie had stepped into the imperial realm. He was an opponent that he could never catch. Fung Lie was also sure that Xingyun wouldn’t play any tricks, so he let him go. He formed a sign with his hand,

“Drizzle of Spring.”

A tender Qi drizzled into Fang Yuyou and her guards’ bodies, healing their wounds. Finally, some colour started to return back to their faces.

“Let’s go, Brother Fang Yun has also arrived. We’ve done all we can here. I’ll bring you to the Garden of Beasts and choose a mount for you. It’ll be more convenient that way.” Fung Lie said. They both got onto the Dragon Scale horse and dashed into the mountains at incredible speed.

Xuanyuan turned around to look at Fang Yuyou, and saw that she was also watching him leave. Eventually, they disappeared from each other’s vision.

Fang Yuyou was grateful that Xuanyuan escaped unscathed. Then an even more powerful force than Fung Lie’s descended. It was Fang Yun, another true disciple of the Fighting Dragons Sect. He had only been practicing for a hundred years when he became a peak imperial fighter. The emperor realm was only a step away. He was hovering in the sky, glaring at Xingyun, who started coughing even more blood from the pressure.

He slapped towards Xingyun using only the air pressure created from a slap to the air. Xingyun was sent flying like a broken kite without a string. When he finally crashed into the ground, he could feel that all of his bones had been shattered. Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen were both scared to death.

“Yuyou, you managed to reach the king realm. Nicely done. Let’s go.” Fang Yun said, then he transformed into a massive roc, whose wings stretched for several miles. It brought the Fang Family onto its wings and flew into the mountains.

Xie Wuhen and Lu Yuxiang were so scared, they collapsed onto the ground. Shortly after that Xie Wuxin and Lu Fenger, true disciples from the Xie and Lu Families appeared next to them. They were all imperial fighters from the five families under the Sect.

“Brother Xingyun, come with us. We’ll teach Fung Lie a lesson. Otherwise, he’ll think he’s invincible under the heavens.” Xie Wuxin said coldly. They swiftly gathered their families and brought everyone back to the mountains.

On a mountain top far away, stood two grandmasters and ten peak king fighters. They were all in black silk attire which hid their identities. It seemed like they had followed someone to this place. They were clearly assassins here to kill.

One of the grandmasters spoke,

“What should we do? He has already entered the Sect.”

The other assassin replied,

“Wait until he’s out, then kill him.”

## Chapter 91 – The Mountain of Beasts

The Dragon Scale Horse's hooves were galloping on the wind towards the Sect, which was hidden among the mountains.

The mountain range where the Sect was located at was surrounded by a thick layer of clouds and fog. Xuanyuan was overlooking the magnificent view while riding through the sky on the horse. He had never felt so free before, it was as if he was always looking down to the ground.

Among the mountains were many white cranes flying casually around. There were also many beasts which Xuanyuan was not familiar with guarding the mountain tops. Throughout the whole area was an extremely dense amount of pure Qi. Xuanyuan could hear the howling of a tiger or ape from time to time.

Beneath them, there were many clear streams. The water was so clear that you could see all of the fish swimming through the water. Those were no ordinary fish though, they possessed the power of master realm fighters. In other words, an ordinary person with no cultivation would never be able to catch a fish from those streams. They might be killed by the powerful fish instead.

All of these observations filled Xuanyuan with inexplicable awe.

"Xuanyuan, look carefully. Inside each of these mountains dwells at least one Xian fighter. Only when you reach the Xian realm, can you have your own mountain. Every one of them is able to disguise themselves as an ordinary person, sometimes they secretly test disciples see if you are suitable to learn their techniques. They only choose from those among the inner disciples of the Sect. I was chosen by the Xian of Wind from the Mountain of Nine Heavenly Winds to be his disciple." Fung Lie explained to Xuanyuan carefully, there was no arrogance in his voice and he treated Xuanyuan like a brother. "For outsiders, getting through the Forest of a Million Beasts is cruel enough for one lifetime. But inside the Sect lies the most brutal competitions as well as real danger. Beasts will never be as cunning and devious as humans, after all. Xuanyuan, I have high regards for you, but I can't be there for you every time you are in danger. When we arrive in the Sect, you have to be very careful. I believe in you. With your ability you will become a true disciple very soon."

Xuanyuan frowned, “Isn’t there a rule to prevent the disciples from killing each other?”

“On paper, there is, but do you really believe that the world is fair? If you kill someone with a background as similar as yours, of course you’ll be punished accordingly. But no one would care if the disciple that is killed came from a humble background. There will only be some minor punishment which is all for show. Among the inner disciples, there’re dozens, even hundreds who are killed every day. They make it through the forest, but not the Sect itself. Not to mention the struggles among the outer disciples. Thousands of them are killed every day. I started out as an outer disciple and I’ve witnessed all of my friends killed around me. This is the real Fighting Dragons Sect. There are eight million outer disciples, eight hundred thousand inner disciples, and nine thousand true disciples. You can imagine the struggles inside the Sect.”

Fung Lie’s voice was calm, but the shock that these words brought to Xuanyuan was immeasurable. He thought that there would be less conflicts in the Sect than in the outside world, but the reality was the complete opposite.

“In the outside world, many people have said that I’m overbearing and cruel, killing everyone that crossed me, but killing enemies is inevitable. If I don’t kill those that cross me, do you think people would respect me? The only way to stop others from killing you is to kill them, so enemies won’t have a chance to harm you again in the future. If you show any sign of weakness, people will only take advantage of that weakness. Do you understand Xuanyuan?”

Xuanyuan sighed heavily, “I understand. I am prepared. I’m not afraid of any inner disciples, but I won’t be able to fight against true disciples.”

“Don’t you worry about that. In the Sect, there are still some strict rules. These rules prevent true disciples from killing inner disciples without a reasonable claim. Also, I brought you into the Sect and the other true disciples will need to give me face. Even someone like Xingyun will think twice before he lays a hand on you. I rank amongst the top twenty true disciples in the Sect, but that’s only on the surface. There’re many disciples of Xian’s that are inside their mountains. They won’t join any fights from inside the Sect. There are many powerful practitioners here and there’s not just one way to gain power.” Fung Lie smiled.

Xuanyuan pondered what Fung Lie said. He needed to consider more carefully how he was going to survive inside the Sect.

After a while, the Dragon Scale Horse descended on a huge mountain top. The mountain was covered with greenery.

“This is the Mountain of Beasts. It belongs to the Xian of Beasts. The Xian asked his disciple, Wan Chou to take care of the mountain. Wan Chou and I are good friends. We’ll get you a good beast for your mount.” Fung Lie smiled, then he announced loudly, “Brother Chou, I’m here to visit!” His voice echoed far and loud.

“I think your visit is a convoluted plan to steal my beasts.” A stuffy voice echoed back.

Fung Lie was visibly embarrassed, “You know me...”

They got off from the Dragon Scale Horse and saw a man wearing the ‘Gown of a Thousand Beasts’ come out. He looked so imposing, like he was the king of all beasts.

“You took away the Dragon Scale Horse last time. It was a breed between a Heavenly Dragon and a Heavenly Horse. Its power can even grow over time. Do you have any complaints?” Wan Chou looked discontented, like he was heartbroken that Fung Lie took away his prized horse, but he quickly sensed Fung Lie’s power and laughed, “Ha! You have broken through to the emperor realm? That’s something to celebrate. All right then, I’ll let you pick a beast today.”

Fung Lie patted on Xuanyuan shoulder, “I’m here to choose a mount for him.”

Wan Chou stared at Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan immediately felt the pressure from his force. Wan Chou, undoubtedly, was a peak imperial fighter.

However, Xuanyuan felt that he had nothing to be afraid of, so he returned the gaze without fear and bowed to him politely.

“Greetings to Elder Brother Wan.”

“The boy’s your new talent? You do remember that the other disciples you brought back all got killed, right? Well, you even gave him your Wind Spirit.

Seems like you're very confident in him."

"Of course! Stop your babbling, give me a White Tiger!" Fung Lie laughed.

Wanchou rolled his eyes, he wanted to strangle Fung Lie.

"You think it's that easy to find a White Tiger? If I have one, it would be my mount first."

"Then a Blue Dragon would do..."

"Quit it..."

"I'm just kidding. See if there's anything that suits him." Fung Lie chuckled.

"Him? He's too weak. A wild fighter cannot tame any of the beasts I have. You think everyone's like you? A reincarnation of the Wind Spirit? Ordinary people cannot tame spiritual beasts." Wan Chou was growing impatient.

"Reincarnation of the Wind Spirit?" Xuanyuan immediately asked Greed, "What is that?"

"I knew that Fung Lie was no ordinary boy. Otherwise, being eighteen years old, how can he progress so quickly? He should be hosting the reincarnation of the spirit of a powerful fighting wind." Greed explained. "There's a force being suppressed inside him. It should be fighting wind. He will only be able to control it when he matures."

"Fighting Wind!" In this world, there're different kinds of fighting forces, gold, earth, water, fire, wood, lightning, and wind. "I wonder what Brother Fung Lie's fighting wind ranks?"

"I wouldn't know, but probably among the top thirty-six, otherwise the force wouldn't have the power to become sentient and reincarnate inside a human."

Xuanyuan finally understood why the Sect would put so much effort into training Fung Lie.

"How about this? We'll go pick a beast egg and the boy can train it from infancy. Then the beast will take you as its owner. What do you think?" Wan Chou smiled and added when he saw that Fung Lie was frowning.

Xuanyuan nodded and returned the smile, "That sounds great. Thank you,

Brother Wan.”

Fung Lie didn't say anything since Xuanyuan had already agreed.

## Chapter 92 – The Gestation Room

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

2nd of Monday, sorry for these late chapters

“The longer it takes for the eggs to gestate, the more powerful the beasts would be, so you must be careful when choosing your egg. Some of the eggs will take a long time to hatch and you will be dead long before it hatches, unless you can provide the egg with enough essence and qi to shorten their gestation.” Wanchou explained while leading the way.

The mountains were rich with qi. With the pearl given by Yin Zhenluo, Xuanyuan could feel an abundance of qi surrounding him. It was a pure stream of Qi that slowly purified every corner of his body. His pores were opened and absorbing the qi into his body, through his veins and into his bone marrows.

Since he stepped into the wild realm, Greed gave him “The Way of Refining Marrows”. His bone marrows seem to have a life of their own and immediately started to refine the qi, but it was a slow process. According to Greed, Xuanyuan would need to work a hundred times harder than normal people. The Body of All Creation was powerful, but it was also more difficult to refine than ordinary bodies. For example, he wasn’t able to enter the realm of the wild fighters just by taking a wild elixir, unlike other practitioners at the same level.

Inside his mind, “The Heavenly Dragon Refining Marrows” had also appeared. Xuanyuan felt a warmth rise in his heart, knowing that this was Yin Zhenluo’s gift to him. However, he was unhappy with the devouring technique that hadn’t transformed at all.

“Greedy old bugger, didn’t you say when I entered the wild realm, the devouring technique would transform? Did you lie to me? My fighting Qi gets used very quickly during battle, if it doesn’t transform...”

“What a bunch of crap! Why would I lie to you? The amount of Qi you have now is ten times that of a normal wild fighter. Why are you still complaining? Have you ever seen a wild fighter that can activate three pieces of upper rank earth instruments simultaneously? You’re out of line, boy. I said, when you reach the peak of the wild realm and refine all your marrows, there will be a great transformation.” Greed was furious at Xuanyuan’s accusation. “When you reach that point, you’ll see what I mean. A kid like you would never understand.”

Xuanyuan couldn’t help but laugh in his mind when he sensed Greed’s anger.

“Stop laughing! Go take those five million king coins you’ve got there and use them to buy me some fighting stones, crystals and jades...”

Xuanyuan immediately stopped laughing and grew serious.

“What the... You greedy old bugger. That’s all the money I possess. How can you commit such daylight robbery?”

Now it was Greed’s turn to laugh, “Well, if you anger any grandmaster fighters in the future, I won’t have the power to intervene even if you’re dying. It clearly doesn’t matter if you die, right? Your beautiful master will just continue with her arranged marriage and forget about you.”

“Damn it...”

While they were bantering, Xuanyuan, Wanchou and Fung Lie had arrived in a place called the Gestation Room. Inside were many pure fighting crystals spread out in an orderly fashion. On top of each crystal were eggs of all different sizes and colours.

“Younger brother Xuanyuan, choose the one that you would like to have.” Wan Chou knew that Xuanyuan was about to become an inner disciple of the Sect, so he was already calling him brother. However, he was the only inner disciple that was ever allowed to pick his own egg. All the beasts inside the room, could not be bought with money alone. But Xuanyuan was recommended by Fung Lie, so it was a completely different story.

Xuanyuan walked up to an egg the size of a human head. He could feel the intense fiery life essence which pulsated inside the egg.

Wan Chou brightened up and smiled, “This is the egg of a fire crane. It contains the bloodlines of a Phoenix and a Spiritual Crane. It will be a very powerful beast when it hatches.”

Xuanyuan shook his head slightly. He then approached a very colourful, large egg.

“This is the Seven-coloured Python’s egg. It contained the bloodline of a Heavenly Python and a Seven-sky Dragon. It’ll take a lot of pure fighting jades and crystals in order to hatch it, but it would be almost as strong as Fung Lie’s Dragon Scale Horse.”

Xuanyuan was moved, but he decided to take a look at other eggs before making his decision.

There were at least eight hundred eggs inside the room. Every single one of them contained an extraordinary beast.

He moved closer to a black egg that was the size of a bucket. The crystal underneath was visibly losing its brightness over time. The egg had almost absorbed all of the power inside the crystal.

Wanchou got a bit nervous when he saw Xuanyuan approach the egg, “This kid has a set of good eyes, just like Fung Lie.”

Xuanyuan looked at Wan Chou innocently and asked, “Brother Wan, what’s in this one?”

“Ah, this. It’s a beast descended from a Basaltic Turtle and a Heavenly Dragon. It will be extremely powerful. However, it might even take another thousand years to hatch this egg. You might not even be able to hatch it, even if you spent every coin that you earn in this lifetime.”

Xuanyuan felt like he was even more drawn to this egg. He touched it lightly and thought that it would be great if he could have a beast as powerful as the Dragon Scale Horse.

“Brother Xuanyuan, don’t worry about the jades and crystals you need. I can give you everything you need...” Fung Lie said, teasing Wan Chou. He knew that Wan Chou wouldn’t want Xuanyuan to take away this egg.

“Then I’ll pick...” Xuanyuan suddenly felt a force pulling the Qi from inside his body. The force was echoing with the origin of memories. Greed howled from inside Xuanyuan’s mind, “Don’t pick that one! Follow that feeling! Quick! Listen

to me!”

Greed sounded anxious. He could also feel the strange sensation, so Xuanyuan pulled his hand back and walked away from the egg.

“I’ll take a look around.”

Fung Lie frowned at this decision, but he respected that this was Xuanyuan’s choice. Wan Chou, on the other hand, was very relieved.

Xuanyuan followed the force that was absorbing the Qi. Since he practiced the devouring technique, he could sense and absorb the Qi from the air with each breathe, but other people could only feel the presence of Qi when in an environment rich with Qi. However, the force seemed to sense Xuanyuan’s presence, it seemed like it was calling out from the darkness. It was strangely intriguing.

Finally, Xuanyuan moved closer to an egg the same size as a grown man curled into a ball. The entire shell was ink black and covered in what looked like rust, it looked like rusty black iron – just like his dagger. There was a giant crystal positioned beneath the egg which was filled with a dense energy.

Wan Chou smiled brightly when Xuanyuan walked closer to the egg. “Brother Xuanyuan, what good eyes you have. This egg has been here for over a thousand years, so even I don’t know what it is. It must be something extremely powerful once it hatches!”

Fung Lie rolled his eyes. He wanted to say something, but he didn’t want to interfere Xuanyuan’s choice. The egg was well-known, it had been here for over a

thousand years and it always absorbed the power from the crystals much slower than other eggs. No one in the Sect had any idea what beast was inside.

Xuanyuan found it odd that an egg had stayed here for over a thousand years. Greed screamed frantically, “Boy, this is it! This is it!”

“Can you quiet down? What’s with all the fuss. What is it?” Xuanyuan said with a calm demeanour, but in fact, he was also very excited.

“This is the one to choose. Cut the crap.” Greed cried.

There was no other choice, so Xuanyuan nodded at Wanchou, “Brother Wan, this is the egg that I will choose.”

Wan Chou laughed, “Great! It’s a great choice!”

Fung Lie opened his mouth to give his opinion, but when Xuanyuan touched the black egg, the egg started violently shaking. An enormous force echoed with the power of Xuanyuan’s devouring technique. In an instant, the giant crystal grew dim as the power was absorbed by the egg to the last drop. The next moment, the crystal shattered into a fine powder.

Wan Chou and Fung Lie were both left speechless. They couldn’t figure out what just happened.

## Chapter 93 – Mt. Fighting Dragon

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Tuesday's chapter

“What just happened?” Wan Chou mumbled to himself. Then he suddenly remembered something and screamed out, “This is a beast that chooses its master!”

“Hahaha, Brother Chou, you never thought about this before, did you? You can't take the egg back now. Only a Xian level beast or higher can choose its own master!” Fung Lie knew that the black egg must contain an incredible beast, so he smirked at Wan Chou.

In this world, there was a ranking for beasts. There were thirty-six known Shen Beasts and seventy-two known Xian Beasts, which were all extremely powerful. When a practitioner entered the imperial realm, he could even transform into a beast, like Fang Yun, who transformed into a roc which carried Fang Yuyou away.

“How is this possible? My master found this egg thousands of years ago in a remote land in the south. He couldn't figure out what kind of beast was dwelling inside, so he put it in the Gestation Room. During the past millennium, the egg only absorbed the power from one crystal every year, much slower than the other eggs. How could this be a Xian Beast...” Wan Chou was shocked, and finally realized he had said too much, “What I mean is since the egg considered young brother Xuanyuan as its master, then of course it's yours. Hahaha....”

Wan Chou sounded like his heart was breaking as he gave the egg away. Xuanyuan returned a smile, just to rub it in, “Thank you Brother Wan.”

“You must have karma related to the devouring emperor. I knew it wouldn’t be dead, even after all this time. It looks like it used a Reverse Reincarnation. This is still only the first of its nine lives. Hahaha, it’s even greedier than I am, you’ll have to wait and see, boy.” Greed was very excited, like he was meeting an old friend after a long time.

“It’s greedy but also very scared of death. Only it would think of surviving on one crystal a year. It would have no danger of being thrown away, while also not costing much to sustain, that way it would never be abandoned and instead kept as a mysterious treasure. It’s still as devious as usual.”

Xuanyuan couldn’t understand what Greed was saying, but he remembered what Greed once asked, “Is this the mount of the devouring emperor?”

“You’re not as stupid as you look. That’s right. It followed the emperor for a long time, much longer than myself. It was by the emperor’s side ever since birth and it grew up with the emperor as a child. But it has used a Reverse Reincarnation, which means it’s in a severely injured state. It will need a lot of life essence and Natural Fighting Qi to restore its power.”

“Natural Fighting Qi?” Xuanyuan couldn’t understand.

“Fighting stones, jades, crystals and concentrates are all formed by the most natural and purest of Qi. They all have different classes according to their levels of purity, but they are all much purer than a human’s fighting Qi. Do you understand?” Greed sounded very happy. However, after a while, it continued calmly, “It’s not going to be easy to hatch it. It will also have to devour life essence. So it looks like you’ll have to provide enough life essence for the two of us now, boy.”

Xuanyuan was irritated at the notion, “Damn it, all you ever do is take stuff from me.”

“Boy, you’re hard to please. All the sects around the world would surely fight over the emperors’ legacies, if they know our existence, but they will also try to control us. Since you have a Body of All Creations, we can restore our strength by using you instead, but we don’t like to be controlled. We enjoy freedom!

“Not to mention all the various techniques that we provide to you are unbuyable, even with all the money in the world. If you can find another Origin of Memories, then I can teach you the way of refining the five organs. Of course, it’d be better if you could find more techniques from other schools for us.”

Xuanyuan rolled his eyes in annoyance. ‘Greed was no better than a thief’ he thought.

“Who is a thief? It’s survival of the fittest! That’s the way of martial arts. Do you know why one sect can own so many different techniques? There used to be many sects which were scattered throughout the lands. But after all the wars and battles, there’re only a few sects left standing. The techniques they possess were all taken through the slaughter of another school or sect. You’ve killed many people on your way here and you even robbed their money. How dare you call me a thief. You are same as us!”

Xuanyuan had to agree that Greed was right on this point. He then put the egg inside his ring for the meantime. When he turned around and saw that Wan Chou was distraught, he bowed deeply and said, “Thank you, Brother Wan.”

His voice drew Wan Chou’s attention. Wan Chou smiled rigidly, “You’re very

welcome. You must have other things to tend to, so I won't send you off. Farewell!"

Fung Lie laughed, "Then we'll take our leave, brother Chou. Take care. We'll be sure to visit you from time to time."

Fung Lie and Xuanyuan quickly left the mountain, leaving Wan Chou to wallow in regret and self-pity. Wan Chou swore to thoroughly check every single strange egg in the Gestation Room from now on.

"Haha, brother Xuanyuan, you're very good at finding hidden gems. I wonder what is inside the egg, it might actually be a Xian Beast!" Fung Lie was delighted. He had already taken a liking to Xuanyuan, so he was extremely happy for him.

"I don't know. I just touched it lightly and afterwards it shook. It felt like it was calling out to me, so I chose it. I won't mind even if it's not a Xian Beast." Xuanyuan replied calmly. It was once the mount of an emperor, so there was no chance of it being weak when it matured. "Brother Fung Lie, are there any judgment stands around here? I want to exchange what I collected on the way here for some rewards."

"Of course, but you still need a Token of Fighting Dragons to exchange them for merit points. We'll go back to Mt. Fighting Dragon first. There's a stand on that mountain as well. Then, we will go our separate ways and you will need to make your own way."

"No problem!" Xuanyuan answered. Then he said to Greed, "If the egg absorbs the power from those nine stones from the emperor of acquisition, will it be able to restore its power? Then I won't have any need to worry for my own safety."

“If it can absorb the stones’ power, it would have done it the moment it entered your ring. It’s not strong enough to handle that much power. It might be killed just trying to absorb a fraction of the power inside the stones. Even I don’t dare to absorb their power. It has sustained even greater damage than I did over the years. When you grow more powerful, I only have one thing to ask of you, boy – kill everyone who was connected to the downfall of the devouring emperor. Massacre them all!” Greed said venomously.

“I will. When I become powerful, I will avenge the Emperor. I’m practicing the technique that he created, so he is in many ways, my benefactor.” Xuanyuan swore to himself and Greed.

The Dragon Scale Horse galloped through the air, heading towards a gigantic mountain. That mountain was the home of the Fighting Dragons Sect.

“This is Mt. Fighting Dragon. You’ll have to continue your cultivation here in the future. With your strength as it stands, you will easily become a top inner disciple. You should head over to the examiner inside the Inner Hall. If you pass his test, you will obtain the Token of Fighting Dragons. You can head over to the judgment stand afterwards.” While looking at the mountain, numerous memories of the past flashed through Fung Lie’s mind.

“You will be at the Inner Hall after you pass through the forest. This is the lowest level for all inner disciples. Beneath here is where the outer disciples live. Remember, you should slowly climb the ladder until you reach the top and receive your ranking in the List of Merits. Then you will truly be part of the Fighting Dragons Sect.”

Fung Lie dropped Xuanyuan at the halfway point of the mountain, before he flew back into the air on his horse.

“I understand, Brother Fung Lie!” He looked at Fung Lie and watched as he left. He turned around to see a green forest ahead of him. He took a deep breath and ran into the depths of the forest.

“Help me!” A woman’s cry for help suddenly filled the air. Xuanyuan frowned and turned to head towards the sound

## Chapter 94 – Liu Xiangxiang

Wednesday's chapter

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Liky: Time to get out these DtH chapters that were missing this week. Also, there isn't any PMG until next week as said in the update.

"You little bitch. How dare you fight with me. No one can save you here." A woman said threateningly. She was Biyue's sister, Bifu, who looked very similar to Biyue. Next to her stood many inner disciples who were all at the entry levels of the wild realm. They stared at the girl on the ground like hungry wolves, as she was much more beautiful than Bifu.

"Go ahead and play with that little bitch before you kill her." Bifu said venomously. Her personality was just like her sister's.

"Bifu, you would dare to kill one of your fellow disciples? There'll be consequences." She was wearing the clothes of inner disciples, but her complexion seemed like she'd been drugged. She glared angrily at the people surrounding her, but she didn't have the strength to fight back.

"Liu Xiangxiang, you thought Brother Chen Junchou would fall for someone like you? He's ranked fourth on the List of Merits. He can select as many women as he desires. Don't think too highly of yourself." Bifu looked at Liu Xiangxiang disdainfully. The girl finally understood why Bifu had animosity towards her. It's because of Junchou.

"Bifu, kill me if you like, but Junchou won't spare you. Even if I am out of the picture, he wouldn't have any interest in someone like you!" Liu Xiangxiang

smiled angrily.

Bifu flushed red with anger, this girl had touched her sore spot.

“All of you, make sure to have your fun before killing her, then throw her naked body down the mountain to let all the outer disciples see.”

Liu Xiangxiang grew pale after hearing those words. Ten wild fighters swarmed towards her and started to tear at her clothes.

Within seconds, she only had her undergarments left on her.

“Help!” She struggled and screamed out in fright.

“Haha, her skin is so delicate and soft!”

“Who’s going first?”

“Me, of course!”

“That’s right, big brother always goes first...”

“Look at that body...”

Their filthy hands were groping Liu Xiangxiang’s body. She would much rather be killed than suffer though the shame.

Suddenly, an overwhelming cold light arrived. Everyone on the scene felt like they were being suffocated. It was Xuanyuan who just arrived. With the Wind Spirit in his hand, he travelled like the fastest wind. He waved his hand, and a tremendous power sent the ten men crashing backwards. Their bones were shattered before they hit the floor.

Bifu screamed out. She was a peak wild fighter with sixty dragons of strength, but this force was much, much stronger than she could unleash.

“Who are you? How dare you!” Bifu was still not afraid. Her sister, Biye, was a king realm fighter with many connections. She wouldn’t be afraid of an ordinary disciple.

Xuanyuan looked at her and thought she looked very familiar, “How is Biye related to you?”

Bifu immediately assumed a proud posture, “Biye is my older sister. Who are you? Since you know who my sister is, why did you get involved in my business?”

“Oh? I was thinking about sparing you, but since you’re Biye’s sister, that won’t be happening.” Xuanyuan said as he started to approach her.

Bifu’s face went completely pale, she started to tremble as she uttered, “You would dare to kill me? I could have you ripped apart!”

“I am just returning a favour.” Xuanyuan smiled. He stored away his Wind Spirit and stripped off all Bifu’s clothes. She was stripped completely naked.

“Don’t kill me, I’ll do whatever you want!” Bifu rushed forward in a frenzy to wrap herself around Xuanyuan as she started to stroke his crotch.

“I’ll let you do whatever you want. Please don’t kill me!”

Xuanyuan laughed loudly, “I’m not going to kill you for no reason, but I won’t do nothing either.”

Xuanyuan took her fighting ring and the set of middle rank earth instruments from her. Then he struck Bifu’s neck, causing her to pass out, leaving her naked on the ground. Xuanyuan also took all of the men’s possessions. Once he was done, he handed Bifu’s clothes to Liu Xiangxiang,

“Put them on.”

“Thank you, you really saved me.” She still couldn’t understand what was happening for a while. When she realized that she was still half-naked, she hurriedly put on the clothes. When she straightened her composure, she stood up and bowed to Xuanyuan.

“Thank you for saving me, I wonder how should I address you?”

“Xuanyuan.” He replied.

He was afraid that this girl would immediately kill Bifu if he left her alone. Biyue would directly come for revenge if her sister was killed. He didn’t have the power to protect himself from Biyue yet.

So he looked towards Liu Xiangxiang and said, "Let's go."

A flash of murderous hatred filled Liu Xiangxiang's eyes, but she saw that Xuanyuan didn't intend to kill Bifu, so she restrained herself and followed after Xuanyuan.

"How come I have never seen you before?" She was checking out Xuanyuan carefully. The instruments he carried were all extraordinary. Chen Junchou didn't even have instruments that were so valuable.

"I have only just arrived on the mountain. I was heading over to the Inner Hall to collect my token." Xuanyuan said, "You should be more careful in the future. You won't be this lucky every time."

"You are right, senior." She looked at Xuanyuan, still feeling vulnerable.

"No need to call me senior, just Xuanyuan will do."

"Brother Xuanyuan, Biyue won't let you go easily once she knows that you saved me. Be very careful. I won't join you in leaving the forest. Biyue's Family has eyes everywhere. They'll know that it was you who saved me if they see us together. It won't be of any benefit to you. I'll go my own way from here."

She knew that Xuanyuan was looking to avoid trouble since he didn't kill Bifu. Her priority was to find Chen Junchou and tell him what happened.

"All right. Take care."

“We’ll see each other again. I’ll come and find you later.” She said as she rushed off in the opposite direction.

Xuanyuan didn’t give it a second thought and continued towards the Inner Hall. Within fifteen minutes, he had arrived at a magnificent hall – the Inner Hall.

Once he stepped out from the forest, two men noticed him immediately. They were peak wild fighters who were waiting at the forest edge.

“Didn’t the young lady just take Liu Xiangxiang into the forest in that direction? Who’s that? I’ve never seen him before!”

“Is he an outer disciple? Did he just get promoted?”

“That’s possible!”

“Go notify the lady. He seems like he’s in a hurry. If the incident with Liu Xiangxiang was seen by anyone...”

They rushed into the forest and seared Xuanyuan’s face into their minds.

## Chapter 95 – Examination

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Wednesday's 2nd chapter

Every inner disciple had to pass through the Inner Hall in order to enter the inner sect. The test to get promoted to an inner disciple from the eight million outer disciples was extremely brutal.

In the outside world, master realm fighters were highly regarded, but they would only qualify as servants to the outer disciples of the sect. The spiritual realm was the lowest requirement to become an outer disciple. Unless a person was particularly talented, most wild fighters would only be peak outer disciples.

Once they became inner disciples, they would be able to enjoy many of the extra benefits, like better quality medicine, elixirs, instruments and more powerful techniques. The sect provided them with a set of top rank spiritual instruments upon promotion, showing the incredible wealth of the sect.

Xuanyuan took his first step into the Inner Hall and he was astonished by the magnificence of it. The entire floor as far as he could see was made from a hard mahogany wood.

Suddenly a voice echoed through the hall, "Who are you? Only inner disciples can enter this hall."

Xuanyuan turned his head and saw an obese man with tiny eyes looking at him. He was wearing the clothes of an inner disciple. The images of six dragons were embroidered onto the clothes. This man had a very formidable aura surrounding

him. He was at the peak of the wild realm, with at least sixty dragons of strength.

“I came here to be tested. I’m going to register as an inner disciple.”

“Oh? so you’ve entered the wild realm. That’s not bad for your age, but that doesn’t mean you can be taken in as inner disciple just yet. I’m one of the examiners here, Zhao Manfeng. Follow me.” Zhao Manfeng glanced at Xuanyuan. He thought to himself, “This young boy is well-equipped. He must be an extraordinary talent.”

“This is the testing ground, where all outer disciples are tested. They have to defeat three people in order to move on to the next test. You are already powerful enough to pass this test, so let’s not waste time. We’ll go directly to the second test – the potential test!” Zhao explained.

“Potential test?” Xuanyuan thought about the testing stone in the Moonwaste City and was curious if it was similar.

“The purpose of the test is to get an estimate of your potential. If you’ve reached your limit, then even if you’re a wild fighter, you won’t be accepted as an inner disciple.”

“I see.”

Zhao Manfeng led Xuanyuan across the spacious room, it was at least thirty square miles. It was necessary to have a large space since there would sometimes be thousands of people coming to test their potential, since there were over eight million outer disciples.

They soon arrived in front of a mountain range. Xuanyuan was amazed, “I thought the Inner Hall was only a few large rooms, but it was so large that it even had mountains inside! The sect was indeed impressive!”

There were a large number of lights exploding within the mountains which lit the sky like colourful lightning. Zhao Man Feng pointed to one of the lights, “That’s a wild realm light. The disciple struck the ground with all his power and the light emitted is from the mountain itself. He can only reach the wild realm in this lifetime. That is not enough to be an inner disciple.”

“That’s king realm light. That disciple has the potential to become a king fighter. That’s the bottom line for all inner disciples.”

“That’s the light of the grandmaster realm. Those who can produce this light are all geniuses. They might eventually become true disciples or the leaders of the inner sect.”

“There’re also the imperial and the emperor lights, but they are extremely rare. Only very rare geniuses can make those lights appear. There is of course Xian light also. True disciple, Fung Lie unleashed a Xian light a few years back. Many higher-ups wanted to nurture him. In the end, he became the disciple of the Xian of Wind. He recently achieved the imperial fighter realm a few days ago.”

Xuanyuan nodded profusely when a man suddenly spoke from behind them.

“Hahaha, fatty Zhao, what’s the point in explaining all of this to an outer disciple? It’s such a waste of time!”

“That’s right, the boy won’t be able to increase his talent even if you keep on explaining. Stop fantasising about becoming an exam elder. That’s impossible for you.”

“Fatty, you’re useless. You’ve never managed to recruit a single talented disciple in all these years. You’ll soon be kicked from the Inner Hall. Why don’t you go back to the Outer Sect where you belong?”

“Xiaotian and Xiang Tian, whom I recruited, both received the imperial realm light. They will surely make something of themselves in the future. Who have you recruited in the past years? You’ll never be an elder at this rate.”

“That’s right. Even the majority of the outer disciples avoid you. They are unwilling to be associated with a fatty that cannot spot talents. You’re such a failure. All of the disciples you recruited failed the mine test. You are a sorry excuse of an examiner!”

Xuanyuan frowned at the other examiners. Like Zhao Manfeng, they were all peak wild fighters. The only difference between them was that they were slim, while Zhao was obese.

Zhao Manfeng gazed down at the floor in shame. He was ashamed because everything that they had said was true.

Xuanyuan understood the situation right away. As examiners, their merit points and contribution to the sect was counted by the potential of the disciples they recommended. Since the main job of an examiner was to have a keen eye for talent, this was the best way. When they accumulated a certain amount of merit points, they could be named as an elder.

Conflicts and competition were everywhere in the sect, even among the examiners.

Xuanyuan had a fairly good impression of Zhao Manfeng, so he didn't like that the others were bullying him.

"If I can at least reach the imperial realm light, why don't all of you help him become an elder?" Xuanyuan proposed.

The examiners laughed.

"Ridiculous! Whatever, if you can produce an imperial realm light, we'll help him become an elder. But if you can't, the fatty has to leave the Inner Hall."

Zhao was surprised that Xuanyuan was defending him. All these years, he was bullied by the other examiners because of his weight and was growing tired of it. He couldn't help but be touched by Xuanyuan's actions and decided to risk it all, he shouted out loud, "We'll bet. I have five million merit points; this is everything that I saved over the last twenty years. Who dares to bet with me? If he can't produce imperial realm light, I'll hand over all my merit points and leave. If he can, you'll each have to hand over a million points. How about that?"

The five examiners laughed even harder, "You're crazy. It's only a million points, I'll accept your bet."

"I would like to see how a fatty looks when he loses everything. Each of us have over ten million merit points between us; we can afford to gamble, but can you?"

"Why don't we make the bet even bigger then? Let's increase the bet to

include all of your merit points. If we lose, I'll cover the rest." Xuanyuan said.

"Do you even have any points?" One of them sneered at Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan hid the power of his instruments so the man assumed that he was a nobody.

Xuanyuan took out five crystals which were worth five million king coins as if it was nothing. "I have plenty of money instead."

Five million king coins, it was a lot of money. They would be very happy to get their hands on that sum of money with such an easy bet. They were veteran examiners, they knew how rarely the imperial realm lights were seen. Usually the talents that could unleash such lights were from powerful backgrounds or influential families. Ordinary people usually didn't have the resources to nurture their talent, causing their talents to weaken. They all felt like they had struck gold.

"We'll do it."

## Chapter 96 – Seven-Coloured Light

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Thursday's chapter

The richest of the five examiners had 28 million merit points. He was the one who recruited Xiaotian and Xiang Tianku into the inner disciples. Since then, numerous outer disciples came begging for him to recommend them. They thought that he had secret tricks to increase the chances of passing their tests. Many of them paid him with their merit points to receive his recommendation.

The other four had a combined 60 million points. It took the five of them more than a decade to save up a total of 88 million merit points. Not only could merit points be used to exchange for instruments, medicines, elixirs and crystals, but they could also be exchanged for a higher status within the sect. They would need 100 million points to be promoted to an exam elder.

As martial practitioners, they didn't have much of a chance to improve their own cultivation by leaps and bounds. So improving their status was the only way for them to continue climbing the ladder within the sect.

Zhao Manfeng, after hearing Xuanyuan's speech, looked at him with awe. No one had ever risked so much to help him before. In return, he put all of his faith on Xuanyuan.

"Go show them." He said.

Xuanyuan grinned. He summoned the devouring power inside himself. The devouring force started to absorb Qi into his body through his marrows, veins,

bones, muscles and in through his pores. His body was like a black hole, pulling all of the Qi towards him. Xuanyuan's fighting Qi was covered by the enormous amounts of Qi which were sucked from the surroundings. He punched the mountain using the move "Heavenly Dragon Breaking Ground" from the Book of Heavenly Dragon.

The moment his punch lashed out, the shadows of ninety-six dragons appeared behind Xuanyuan. The six examiners were all stunned by the sight.

A wild fighter with ninety-six dragons of strength? That's impossible.

But, an even more unprecedented thing occurred. Xuanyuan's punch struck against the ground and his will, spirit, and heart echoed with the mountain.

The entire mountain started to shake. Seven radiant columns of lights rose into the sky. One crimson, scarlet, golden, green, blue, cyan and violet all surged into the sky, overwhelming everything else.

"Seven-coloured Light! It's the Xian light!" Zhao Manfeng shook violently with excitement.

Each colour represented a realm. The combination of all those colours meant that Xuanyuan had the potential to become a Xian!

The five examiners faces went pale. "Not possible... I've only seen Fung Lie produce the seven-coloured light! He's the reincarnation of a Wind Spirit, but this boy isn't anything special..."

"No, no, no, no....."

Like any gamblers who had lost everything, they lost their sanity and were filled with despair.

-----

Among the mountains, there were many shouts that filled the air.

“Haha, looks like another talent has joined the sect.”

“Lightning, don’t you dare try to snatch this disciple from me. Fung Lie was snatched away by old Wind last time. This one is mine.”

“Bullshit, Fire. No one has lived longer than me, I should be the one who teaches the kid.”

“Age does not amount to power. This disciple will be mine.”

All the Xian’s who lacked disciples of their own found their way to the sect.

-----

Many true disciples also had plans on their minds.

“Another one? Isn’t Fung Lie enough? More competition for the position of sect leader!”

“I’ll have to make myself an ally with this disciple, or I’ll have to kill him before he grows.”

“Who knows if he will make it through the mine test alive?”

They were plotting all kinds of bribes and assassination attempts in their mind. It was better to kill Xuanyuan before his strength matured and he became a threat.

— — — —

“You lost the bet. Hand over all your merit points.” Xuanyuan said to the examiners. They were all still in shock. Only one in several million would have the potential of becoming Xian, and they were unlucky enough to have bet against this one.

Zhao Manfeng was the most excited person within the sect. He took out a token and said while trembling,

“Brother Xuanyuan, this is your token. Please drop your blood onto this and bring this to join the mine test in three days’ time. When you pass that test, you will become an official inner disciple of the sect.”

Xuanyuan took the token and immediately cut his finger to drop his blood onto it. He then turned to the examiners.

“Are you not going to pay up?” He said coldly.

Before they could reply, many different forces had already arrived. The people who arrived were all grandmaster realm fighters, with even a few imperial fighters.

The examiners kneeled down immediately, “Greetings to the head of inner sect and all the elders of the inner sect.”

“Haha, there’s no need for that. This is the child, right?” The head looked towards Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan was still a child, and his demeanour was similar to Fung Lie a few years ago.

“Great, great! Zhao Manfeng, you’ve done a great job recruiting him. You have earned a reward!”

The head immediately gave Zhao Manfeng 50 million merit points. “You will now be an exam elder of the sect.”

Zhao Manfeng felt the tears welling up in his eyes.

“Thank you!” He bowed profusely.

Xuanyuan grinned, “The other examiners made a bet with me and said if I could produce the imperial light, they would have to give me their merit points. I doubt they would dare deny it.”

They were all terrified as they took out their tokens to immediately transfer the points. 88 million merit points were now in Xuanyuan’s possession.

He gave Zhao Manfeng another 5 million points. Zhao Manfeng showed a face of horror.

“Elder Brother Xuan, I became an exam elder because of you, I can’t accept such a gift!” Zhao Manfeng said. In the sect, one’s power and potential determined their status, so Zhao Manfeng called Xuanyuan “elder brother”.

“You deserve this. We both made the bet, remember? I’m not the kind of person to take advantage of others.” Xuanyuan smiled.

Then he slowly turned to the higher-ups from the sect, “Greetings head and elders of Inner sect!”

“Good, good, Xuanyuan.” They were very content with Xuanyuan’s etiquette. Fung Lie had an arrogant temperament and didn’t put himself beneath others. Xuanyuan, on the other hand, understood the importance of maintaining a good relationship by giving face. Perhaps in the future, he would become even more powerful than Fung Lie within the sect.

“I want to head to the judgment stand if there is nothing else. Brother Zhao, please lead the way.” Xuanyuan smiled.

The head and the elders’ curiosity were satisfied and they quickly left, leaving the dumbstruck examiners behind.

Zhao Manfeng started to explain the affairs of the inner sect in great detail on their way to the judgment stand.

## Chapter 97 – More Merit Points

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Friday's Chapter

Liky: Just got back from bbq

“The head of the inner sect was named Bu Jingsha. He is a skilled leader and businessman, who brought in a vast amount of money to the sect. However, he aimed for a position higher than head of the inner sect. I’ve heard that when he first became an inner disciple, he produced an imperial light.” Zhao Manfeng explained with great detail, educating Xuanyuan on the workings of the sect.

“The mine test is a rare opportunity for the disciples to test themselves, but it is also very dangerous. The mine is located in the mountain range, but there are a lot of Mo inside which were captured and brought back by the higher-ups of the sect for disciples to test themselves.”

“The mine itself is a complicated maze. Ordinary people cannot get out once they get lost inside, unless a person is skilled with an earth or stone technique, they will remain lost. Disciples are required to kill a certain amount of Mo and bring back a number of fighting stones, jades or crystals in order to qualify as inner disciples. I believe in you.”

Xuanyuan also felt more relaxed after hearing this. The Book of Acquisition might help him with this type of task. If he could find and excavate new mines, he wouldn’t have to pay for the fighting jades and crystals.

“Stop dreaming, boy. The two of us need a great deal of resources to restore our power. Even if the mine is filled with them, you’ll still have to buy more

fighting stones, jades and crystals.” Greed immediately crushed his dreams after sensing Xuanyuan’s plot.

“Why does my life have to be so difficult? The two of you are so greedy.” Xuanyuan complained.

“When we restore our power, you’ll also get your share. You can’t buy what we have to offer, so stop complaining.” Greed said with a grin.

“Greedy old bugger...”

“I am not old...”

Zhao Manfeng led Xuanyuan through the winding roads to the judgment stand. It was very similar to the stand in the Moonsky city with four huge pillars that had heavenly dragons carved onto them, and the two faced statue in the centre supported by the chains. One side of the statue was smiling warmly while the other side had a terrifying face with sharp teeth.

There were many inner disciples waiting in line to exchange things for their merit points. All of them were chatting as they waited.

“Have you seen it? It was a Xian light! I wonder who it was. The sect will definitely treat them to a great deal of benefits. I wish I could be nurtured like that.”

“That’s right. I don’t even need the Xian light, just an imperial light would be great.”

“So what, he’s still just another disciple.”

Some were envious, some were jealous, some were angry. Xuanyuan ignored all of them. Zhao Manfeng and Xuanyuan went up to the stand.

“Well, if it isn’t fatty Zhao. Why did you come all the way to the judgment stand? Can you use fat to slaughter Mo these days?”

“Just be happy that you are an examiner. You might get killed if you have to fight with the Mo.”

“He doesn’t have an easy life. No girl would ever want him. He’s just a lonely and sad existence...hahaha...”

Zhao Manfeng was used to their harsh words, so he said nothing. Someone also spotted Xuanyuan, who stood behind him, and laughed.

“Fatty, is this a disciple you found. Was he even able to produce light of a grandmaster? That’s unusual. Are you counting on him to take care of you when he becomes a grandmaster fighter?”

“Well, lots of people have the potential to become a grandmaster. But it’s hard to stay alive in the sect. He should watch his back during the mine test.”

Xuanyuan glanced over at them. Most of them were wild realm fighters, some were king realm fighters. It seemed like it was difficult to survive here – there were many conflicts between disciple. So Xuanyuan just ignored them.

They moved over to the minister of judgment. He had an imposing figure, much stronger than Luogeng, the one they met in Moonsky City. He was called Baizhan, and he was from the Taibai Trading Centre.

Baizhan was expressionless. He looked at Zhao Manfeng and said, "What do you want to exchange?"

Xuanyuan approached, "Merit points. How many can I get with a piece of lower rank earth instrument?"

"Depends on the quality." Baizhan said.

Xuanyuan took out one of the lowest quality. Baizhan looked at it, "That's the lowest type of earth instrument. It is worth 200,000 merit points."

Many people laughed when they saw the instrument, "Haha what garbage! How dare you bring it out here. Looks like the kid is as foolish as you, Zhao Manfeng."

"I thought they would have something interesting to show."

Examiners had a lower status than inner disciples. It was normal for them to be mocked. But Zhao Manfeng was recently promoted to an elder, a status to be respected. Yet he said nothing to the hecklers.

"Stop barking, what a bunch of useless dogs." Xuanyuan sneered irritatingly. He was disgusted by such useless people.

“You want to die?” A few king fighters were provoked by his words, but they didn’t dare to start a fight in front of a minister.

“I’ll deal with you trash later.” Xuanyuan said. Then he took out a hundred and fifty pieces of lower rank earth instruments that he had collected onto the stand. He treated those instruments as if they were nothing.

“30 million merit points.”

Then he took out another thirty-four pieces of middle rank earth instruments.

“60 million merit points.”

Someone was able to recognize some of the instruments,

“Aren’t’ those Sister Bifu’s instruments? How come you have them?” He screamed.

Xuanyuan glared at them, “Interrupt me with another word and I’ll kill you.”

They were all intimidated by the sudden pressure Xuanyuan released. They were all stunned into silence. Xuanyuan then took out 98 red snake elixirs, 61 five-coloured snake elixirs, and 6 six-headed snake elixirs. The onlookers were all shocked beyond belief. Did that boy kill all those beasts? Only a king class six-headed snake could produce those elixirs. Was he strong enough to kill one?

Even Baizhan was surprised to see such a spectacle, but he still calmly

calculated their worth in an instant.

“98 red snake elixirs, they are 1.8 million merit points.”

“61 five-coloured snake elixirs, they are worth 12 million merit points.”

“6 six-headed snake elixirs, they are worth 66 million merit points.”

Then Xuanyuan started to take out pills, medicines, and other stuff from the fighting rings that he no longer needed, leaving only the ring from Xingyun. It was the one that had the most storage space.

Baizhan was caught off guard by the sudden influx of items. He finally announced, “180 million merit points in total. You can receive 10% extra for exchanging for more than 100 million points in one go. That’s 198 million merit points. Are you going to collect your points or do you want to exchange for something?” Baizhan said.

The onlookers were all dumbfounded. They couldn’t fathom the concept of 198 million merit points. They couldn’t even utter a word of insult.

Xuanyuan collected his wealth through luck and by robbing every single ounce of wealth from the dead. It was only appropriate to be stunned by such an odd display of wealth.

“I want to exchange everything into fighting crystals.” Xuanyuan said. Restoring Greed’s power was the first priority.

When they were exchanging the merit points, someone left the crowd to deliver a message.

## Chapter 98 – Evil Woman

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Saturday's Chapter

“A jin of lower class crystals is 10,000 merit points, a jin of middle class crystals is 50,000 merit points, a jin of upper class crystals is 200,000 merit points, a jin top class crystals is 500,000 merit points.”

Baizhan explained calmly. Xuanyuan was surprised by the price for top class crystals, but he would only have access to the best quality crystals through the sect. The crystals would be more expensive if bought outside.

Xuanyuan was still decided whether to exchange for crystals when Greed chimed in, “Why are you hesitating? Buy as much as possible. The top class crystals would sustain us for a while. I’ll also be able to increase your power with the help of the crystals.

“Do you want to learn more of the devouring technique? If my power is not restored, there’s no point in holding unlimited merit points. None of the xian techniques in the sect can compare to the techniques I provide.” Greed was trying very hard to convince Xuanyuan.

“How many merit points do I need to exchange for a Xian technique?” Xuanyuan asked Baizhan.

“3,000 million merit points.” Baizhan’s words were the last straw to Xuanyuan.

“I’ll exchange for top class crystals, for 562 jin.”

Baizhan hadn’t heard of anyone who would exchange for such large amount of crystals, but he would not judge other people’s motives.

“You do not have enough merit points for that amount of crystals.”

Xuanyuan took out the 83 million merit points he had just won. Then a few merit dragons appeared and emerged. Baizhan summoned 618 jin of top class crystals.

“Here is 618 jin of top class crystals, because you traded for more than 100 million, you are rewarded 10% extra. You are also rewarded 20% extra for more than 200 million exchanged. Work hard.” Baizhan finally smiled and handed Xuanyuan the crystals.

“Thank you.”

He stored them inside his ring and Greed cheered excitedly, “Wonderful! It isn’t much, but it’ll do for a while.”

Xuanyuan sighed and asked Greed, “How many top class crystals do you need to restore all of your power?”

“Depending on whether you can find all my Origins of Memories or not, then I’ll need about 3 quadrillion? I don’t know the exact number.” Greed wasn’t very certain. Xuanyuan was angry after his response.

Quadrillion? How much was that? He wanted to kill Greed.

“I’m going to give back all of those crystals. You worthless shit.” Xuanyuan felt like he was being scammed.

“Ungrateful kid. You can ask Baizhan. 300 million merit points would exchange for one-star Xian technique. There are a total of ten stars when ranking Xian techniques. The technique needs to be more powerful than a ten star in order to move into the next class. The devouring technique is a Tao class technique. You think I’d give you something weak and useless?”

Greed was impatient when dealing with Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan was an inexperienced former beggar, after all. He was very ignorant about such things and only focused on money.

Xuanyuan turned towards Baizhan, “How many merit points would I need to exchange for a five star Xian technique?”

“3 trillion.”

Xuanyuan finally saw the logic in what Greed was saying. The techniques Greed had wouldn’t be any lower than a five star Xian technique, even without the Origins of Memories. It would be more reasonable to feed Greed to restore his power than to collect the merit points and buy the technique from the sect.

“You finally know how good I am, right?” Greed sneered.

Xuanyuan rolled his eyes.

“Elder Zhao, is there a place arranged for me to live?” He asked Zhao Manfeng.

“Of course, it’s in the inner sect. You only need to inject Qi into your token and it’ll lead you to your place.” Zhao nodded.

Xuanyuan smiled,

“Good, then I’ll come find you after three days. I’ll have to prepare for the mine test.” He said.

Suddenly, a dozen king realm fighters appeared. In the middle of the group was a girl. She looked livid and was glaring at Xuanyuan coldly. Clearly, they were all with her in order to gain benefits through her family connections, but they were only being used by the girl.

“That’s him. Kill him.” The girl was Bifu, the one who was stripped naked by Xuanyuan inside the forest. She had never been humiliated to such an extent. Xuanyuan even robbed her of her possessions.

Xuanyuan robbed everything, wherever he went. He had 5 million king coins given by Fung Lie, 2.22 million that he robbed from others, and 2.6 million from Bifu. So even though he no longer had any merit points, he was still very wealthy.

“If it isn’t sister Bifu. I would recommend that you don’t act so unreasonable. Just forget what had happened before, otherwise, if I tell others about what happened, it’ll only be embarrassing for you.” Xuanyuan smiled strangely. All those king fighters were on the weaker side of the king realm.

They only had 78 dragons of strength on average, but he had 96 dragons of strength. So he had no reason to be afraid of them in the slightest bit.

Bifu was furious. She had never experienced such shame before. She was left naked on the floor and was found by one of her servants. She was the second lady of the Bi Family, she had never been humiliated before!

“Kill him! He robbed a fellow disciple, he deserves to die. Kill him as judgment on the judgment stand!” Bifu shouted. She would have support from Biyue, so she wasn’t afraid of a new inner disciple.

“And Zhao Manfeng. He also dared to help the robber. Since he’s an examiner, don’t kill him. Just break all his limbs and toss him into the outer sect.”

Xuanyuan was finally provoked. He wasn’t expecting such evil and despicable words from such a young girl. She was very good at confusing right from wrong.

The king fighters marched towards them.

“If you want to die then come. Baizhan, please remember that they are the ones who provoked me first!” Xuanyuan took out his Wind Spirit spear and jumped forward with his Dragon Boots. He activated two pieces of upper rank earth instruments at once. He moved as fast as the wind and disappeared like a shadow.

Baizhan was speechless. “Fung Lie’s Wind Spirit! He’s not an ordinary boy!” He thought.

It was the perfect opportunity to test his Wind Spirit. With the help of the

spear, he was like a dragon gliding on the wind. The explosive power he released scared the fighter approaching him.

Even Bifu was scared by such a display. She didn't know Xuanyuan's strength and wouldn't have imagined that a wild fighter could possess such frightening ability. Like lightning, Xuanyuan had already pierced the spear into the chests of two king realm fighters. The Wind Spirit shredded their organs into a pulp.

When he spotted two of them heading towards Zhao Manfeng. Xuanyuan's heart skipped a bit.

## Chapter 99 – Changing faces

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Sunday's Chapter

Facing the imminent danger, Zhao Manfeng shouted with a stern voice, “I am an exam elder! Attacking me is a direct violation of sect law!”

“If you are an elder, I am a true disciple. Don’t try to threaten me, fatty.” One of the king fighters mocked. He was holding a long knife and aiming for Zhao Manfeng’s right arm.

He suddenly felt a gush of wind hit the back of his head. In an instant, Xuanyuan pierced his Wind Spirit through the head of the disciple. The next moment, Xuanyuan turned the spear and killed the other threat to Zhao Manfeng’s life. In the blink of an eye, another person was already dead, leaving only a pool of blood behind.

With the help of the Wind Spirit and his Dragon Boots, Xuanyuan was as swift as a soaring dragon. The king fighters, who were equipped with mere middle rank earth instruments couldn’t withstand such a powerful onslaught.

He killed four of them in a matter of moments. The other eight men were panicking. They finally mustered up the courage and one of them shouted, “Kill him!”

They all released their Qi and attacked Xuanyuan, but before they could reach him, Xuanyuan disappeared from sight. Their Qi landed on the ground and was absorbed by a strange force.

They couldn't understand what had just happened, then Xuanyuan suddenly reappeared in front of them. He slammed the two-metre long Wind Spirit into them – using the “Heavenly Dragon Swinging Tail”.

The men only heard a frightening dragon roar, by the time they finally saw Xuanyuan reappear, it was already too late. Xuanyuan struck them with his long spear and crushed their organs with a single swipe.

Xuanyuan was swift and ruthless with every attack, not a single person was left alive.

Baizhan observed the fight carefully. He started to speculate, “Dustless Helmet, the Armour of Heavenly Gold, the Dragon Boots! He's only in the wild realm, where did he find the Qi to support those instruments? Is he the one who produced the seven-coloured Xian light? Another Xian reincarnation?”

“Zhao Manfeng, take all their fighting rings and instruments. Exchange them for merit points and keep the money. We'll split the points and the money.” Xuanyuan ordered before he disappeared again. Zhao Manfeng was trembling with amazement. He wondered how he was lucky enough to encounter such an astounding person, he was a real hero!

Xuanyuan had only arrived at the sect recently, and he already established his status. Not even Fung Lie created such a dramatic scene.

Zhao Manfeng was quick to rob all the instruments, tokens and money from the dead men.

Xuanyuan would not let the rest of the fighters escape. He swept through them like a ghost.

The other four king fighters couldn't catch their breath before they were also killed. Xuanyuan reappeared, as his Qi was finally exhausted. He took a strength-replenishing pill and turned to Bifu,

"It's your turn. Where would you like me to attack?"

Bifu knelt down immediately, then approached Xuanyuan on her knees. She bowed profusely and cried,

"Elder brother, please don't kill me. I'll let you do whatever you want. I promise. I swear!"

Xuanyuan sneered, "Is that so? You said the same thing in the forest and I let you go with only a lesson. You don't seem to learn from your mistakes. Should I do the same thing again?"

Remembering what happened in the forest, she couldn't cope with being stripped naked on the judgment stand. She burst into tears and grabbed Xuanyuan's legs, "I don't dare to act against you anymore. I'll do whatever you ask, please don't kill me. I've trained hard for too many years, I don't want to be killed yet!"

While Bifu was begging, Zhao Manfeng had collected all the valuables and gave them to Baizhan to calculate. The twelve king fighters were from wealthy families, they had saved up a lot.

“Elder brother Xuanyuan, there’re 260 million merit points and 3.6 million king coins!” Zhao Manfeng announced excitedly.

Xuanyuan was also excited by the amount. “I’ve earned a lot of money today. I’ll let you go today since it was you who decided to hand over so many gifts.” Xuanyuan told Bifu.

Bifu fled the scene like a crazy woman. All the onlooking disciples were silent. They couldn’t believe their eyes. Twelve king fighters didn’t even have the chance to fight back and were all slaughtered.

Xuanyuan wanted to split the points and money with Zhao Manfeng, but he refused, “If not for Brother Xuanyuan, I would have been badly injured. I can’t take the points and the money. I’d rather have a king elixir to help me to break through the realm.”

Xuanyuan didn’t try to convince Zhao either. Greed and the egg needed a lot of crystals to feed. The more money, the better. So he exchanged for another set of top class crystals.

No one was happier than Greed after this, “Nice, nice! You deserve the Body of All Creation. You’re the disciple of the devouring emperor and you take everything that is in front of you! Very, very nice!”

“I’ll give this elixir to brother Zhao, so brother Xuanyuan won’t need to use your points.” Baizhan smiled. Zhao Manfeng knew that Baizhan wanted to use this to gain favour with Xuanyuan. Zhao Manfeng looked at Xuanyuan questioningly.

“Take it. You might be able to enter the king realm with the elixir. You have to accept a gift from a minister.”

Zhao Manfeng took the elixir. He couldn't believe how much his life had transformed within the space of one day and it was all caused by Xuanyuan!

They were planning to leave at once. Xuanyuan didn't want to attract too much attention on his first day in the sect, but reputations needed to be firmly established, in order to avoid future troubles.

The onlookers were all dumbfounded. Baizhan, a grandmaster fighter and a minister of judgment, tried to ingratiate Xuanyuan with gifts. It surprised them and hinted to them that they should never offend Xuanyuan.

In just a few hours, Xuanyuan's name would spread like wildfire through the inner sect.

Suddenly, a powerful stream of force came their way, along with a high-pitched laughter.

“Brother Xuanyuan, what a show! How come you didn't tell your sister Biyue that you've already arrived in the sect? I should have come to greet you.”

A group of powerful king fighters appeared.

Biyue, had refined two organs and had a hundred and fifty dragons of strength.

Xiang Tianku, refined three organs and had a hundred and eighty-five dragons of strength.

Kuiya, who recently advanced to the king realm, had ninety dragons of strength.

An unnamed king fighter was boiling with fiery hot Qi. He already had all five organs refined, with at least two hundred and forty dragons of strength.

There were a few other king fighters who stood alongside them. They were stronger than the previous group and all had around a hundred dragons of strength.

Xuanyuan's heart jumped. Trouble seems to have found him.

Bifu stood next to her sister and looked at Xuanyuan venomously, "Sister, you have to kill this bastard. No! Don't kill him yet, I'll cut off his flesh piece by piece so he can die in fear."

Her two-faced personality was extremely quick to change.

## Chapter 100 – Framing the Innocent

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

1st Chapter for Monday, This came out earlier because I might not be able to post it on Monday. Also just realized it was the 100th chapter Yay 100thhhh

“Brother Huotao came to help Sister Biyue. He’s one of the top disciples on the List of Merits. Xuanyuan is going to be taught a lesson.”

“Serves him right. I don’t like this kid. He’ll be dead in no time.”

“He’s too smug. Killing twelve fellow disciples and robbing them of their money and merit points!”

“He’ll die today.”

The people who were silent a few moments before, resumed their mockery when Biyue’s gang arrived.

“Bifu, aren’t’ you ashamed? I have let you go so many times. It won’t happen again.” Xuanyuan showed no fear when facing them. He slowly glanced through their faces and said, “Tell me what you want.”

Xiang Tianku looked furious, “Brother Xuanyuan, you are being out of line. You killed twelve inner disciples! Brother Huotao is from the law enforcement team within the sect. I won’t be able to protect you!”

Xiang Tianku saw the Wind Spirit spear in Xuanyuan's hand and he instantly recognized it. Fung Lie gave his spear to this boy, then it wouldn't be easy to kill him. Huotao would be the only hope in defeating Xuanyuan.

Huotao didn't know Xiang Tianku's plot, but he was not stupid either.

Kuiya whispered into Huotao's ear. Xuanyuan knew that he was telling the man about what happened at the auction. Huotao frowned and said slowly, "You are Xuanyuan."

Xuanyuan rolled his eyes, "Spit it out already if you have something to say."

Huotao released his Qi and Xuanyuan felt the pressure, but continued standing upright.

"It's a great crime to kill your fellow disciples!" Huotao said sternly. He was slightly taken aback by the Wind Spirit spear in his hands. Fung Lie had taken this boy under his wing. If he were to kill the boy, he needed a good enough reason. Otherwise, even his brother Huolie, a true disciple, wouldn't be able to save him.

Xuanyuan also realized that they were afraid of the Wind Spirit spear. He turned to Baizhan and smiled, "Minister, can you testify regarding this matter? Who was it that attacked who?"

"Bifu led a team of twelve disciples to ambush Xuanyuan, and they were instead killed by Xuanyuan. According to the law of the sect, conflicts between disciples should be resolved on the Stand of Life and Death. It is also appropriate to resolve such matters on the Judgment Stand. Brother Xuanyuan is deemed not guilty. A wild fighter killed twelve king fighters. He's no doubt a great talent."

Baizhan explained calmly. Huotao couldn't think of a reason to object. Taibai Trading Centre had established a solid relationship with the Fighting Dragons Sect. No one dared to offend Baizhan by challenging his opinion.

"Thank you for your reminder, minister." Huotao bowed slightly to him. Then he continued, "I would like to know why brother Xuanyuan robbed sister Bifu of her possessions? You also violated the laws of the sect by doing so."

Xuanyuan smiled. Huotao wanted a legitimate reason to kill him so Fung Lie wouldn't be able to seek revenge, but he was trying to fabricate crimes.

"Then you should ask sister Bifu. She led a few inner disciples to kidnap sister Liu Xiangxiang into the forest outside of the Inner Hall. She ordered them to rape and kill her. I found it very disturbing so I saved Xiangxiang and taught a lesson to sister Bifu."

"I'll kill you, Xuanyuan!" Bifu pointed her finger at him and screamed, "Brother Huotao, he is lying! I wouldn't do such a thing! You can ask these two disciples, they saw everything. Xuanyuan robbed me!"

"That's right. We saw it happen." They were both guards from the Bi Family. Everyone knew that they were ordered to condemn Xuanyuan.

"Brother Xuanyuan, we have witnesses here. Is there anything you want to say?" Huotao smiled cruelly. He was holding a gourd with a powerful fire burning inside. It was an instrument much more destructive than Lu Yuxiang's fan.

"You are doing everything in your power to frame me. What else is there to

say? Cut your bullshit. Let's see if you have the power to kill me." Xuanyuan pointed his Wind Spirit spear at them, arrogantly looking down on them.

"Zhao Manfeng helped him. He needs to die as well." Bifu was satisfied. She was angry that Zhao Manfeng was on Xuanyuan's side.

Zhao Manfeng took out his token and held it towards Huotao. "I am an esteemed elder of the sect. If you want to prosecute me, you'll need approval from the head and other elders. Should I summon them all here?"

Everyone, including Huotao, was shocked. But he reacted very quickly, "Congratulations on your promotion, Elder Zhao. I would recommend you to step aside while I prosecute the guilty party."

Zhao Manfeng wanted to say something but Xuanyuan stopped him, "Let him come."

Zhao Manfeng had to move aside. He was too weak to interfere.

Bifu looked venomous. The people who stood beside her all released their Qi towards Xuanyuan. However, before anything hit him, Xuanyuan disappeared.

"Dustless Helmet! He can shield his aura, be careful." Huotao immediately recognized the instrument.

But it was already too late. Xuanyuan reappeared. One of the king fighter screamed, then his neck was pierced by the spear. The Wind Spirit spear rendered his neck into a pool of flesh and blood.

Huotao was furious. He unleashed a stream of fire from his gourd towards Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan wouldn't be able to avoid such a powerful attack even if he activated the Dustless Helmet, but he didn't need to evade. He stood his ground and activated his armour of Heavenly Gold. The armour saved him but also cost him more than half of his fighting Qi.

"Even though Huotao is a member of the Law Enforcement team, he still openly frames me. This is a truly dangerous place." Xuanyuan thought. He felt the enormous pressure that was now upon him. His fighting Qi would be exhausted very soon and he couldn't risk Greed being discovered so he couldn't use Greed's power constantly.

Just when Xuanyuan was facing the dilemma, an even more imposing force of a king fighter arrived.

"Damn it, a king fighter! Even more powerful than Huotao!"

"Stop!" The man was tall and muscular. He was holding a huge mallet and slammed it down to the ground, crushing six of the king realm fighters. Biyue was able to withstand the attack, but only barely. Huotao was the only one unmoved. He looked up to the sky,

"Brother Chen, are you trying to stop me from enforcing the law?"

## Chapter 101 – Chen Junchou

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

This is Tuesday's chapter, Monday only had one chapter sorry about that and Notsane meant that the break was until Monday.

Chen Junchou was wearing a sky blue armour while holding a pair of huge mallets. He was like the god of war descending from the heavens. A stern-looking girl flew slowly behind him. She was Liu Xiangxiang.

“Brother Huotao, you should resign from your post within the law enforcement team. You have accused and attempted to punish the innocent without fully investigating. You don't deserve to hold your position.” She said.

Huotao looked furious. He was pondering if Xuanyuan was actually telling the truth. Bifu's face turned pale white. Her sister also started to frown, when she realized that this wouldn't be resolved easily. Liu Xiangxiang came to defend Xuanyuan, with the help of Chen Junchou.

“Brother Junchou, Huotao disregard the laws of the sect. He accused and attempted to punish an innocent disciple. What should his punishment be?” Liu Xiangxiang asked Chen Junchou.

“As the leader of the law enforcement team, I officially remove Huotao from his position.” Chen Junchou declared. He turned to Bifu, and continued slowly, “I have learnt the details of the event. Bifu drugged Liu Xiangxiang and ordered ten of her servants to rape and kill her. Xuanyuan stopped the crime, so Bifu attempted to take revenge. We have gathered all the necessary evidence. According to sect law, those who intend to harm one's fellow disciple, the

punishment is death.”

Bifu screamed, pointing at Liu Xiangxiang, “You bitch. None of what you said happened. Brother Chen, are you going to kill me just because of what Liu Xiangxiang said?”

Chen Junchou was expressionless, “Of course not. Ministers of Judgment are able to extract a person’s memory. We can check Bifu’s mind and see exactly what happened.”

Baizhan grinned, “Yes, I can do that. Would Huotao agree to let me check?”

Huotao couldn’t say anything, he only nodded but Biyue acted faster. She pierced her sword into Bifu’s chest.

“I trusted you. I can’t believe you did such horrid deed! I’ll kill you and restore honour to our family!” Biyue shouted.

Bifu’s face was full of disbelief. She slowly collapsed to the ground, blood pouring from her wound.

Biyue guessed the truth of what happened, but she wanted to use this as an excuse to kill Xuanyuan. If Bifu’s memories were exposed, her family would be shunned. Nothing would have been able to regain their face after that. So she needed to kill her sister before the memories were seen.

“And the two of you, useless lying trash. Why didn’t you stop the young lady when she was committing a sin. You lied with her.” Then she killed the servants who knew the truth to cover all tracks.

After everything was done, she turned to Chen Junchou and bowed deeply,

“Brother Chen, I did not discipline my sister well. She made a huge mistake. I will accept any punishment.”

Xuanyuan was amazed at Biyue’s cruelty. She would even kill her own sister in order to protect herself!

Biyue was too fast, Chen Junchou couldn’t stop her from killing Bifu. There was nothing left for him to investigate. “I’ll let this go since the culprit has been killed. What do you say, sister Liu?”

She sighed, “She’s already dead, it’s meaningless to push any further.”

“Then this concludes the case. Huotao, you are a member of the law enforcement team. You framed an innocent person of a crime he did not commit without sufficient evidence. Do you understand your crimes?”

Huotao was shocked by the harsh words. He defended himself at once, “I did not frame an innocent person, I only trusted the wrong person. Bifu lied to me. That’s my mistake and I’ll leave my position so my mistake won’t taint the team’s reputation.”

If he was accused of framing Xuanyuan, he would be in irreversible trouble. He was willing to sacrifice his position to avoid such a circumstance.

Chen Junchou nodded, “Brother Xuanyuan, are you satisfied with this

outcome?”

Xuanyuan glanced at Bi Yue, whose face was dark and moody. He grinned, “Of course! We should consider this over.”

Bi Yue was extremely angry. She was thinking to herself, “You forced my hand into killing my own sister. You’ll pay for this, Xuanyuan!”

But she composed herself. She smiled weakly to Xuanyuan, “Brother Xuanyuan is very kind. I will go to your place to apologize on behalf of Bifu in the future. She made a terrible mistake, but she’s still my little sister. I need to arrange for her funeral.”

“Sister Bi Yue, give her a nice funeral. You should have done a better job guiding your sister down the right path before she made a wrong move. You’re also partly responsible. How about I take your wages for a year. Then you will have time to really think about your mistakes.”

Bi Yue was furious at Xuanyuan’s persistence, but she didn’t think that Chen Junchou would accept, “Brother Xuanyuan is the victim here. He has the right to obtain some compensation after all.”

She could only accept, “Then it’s settled. I’ll take my leave now. Take away their bodies.”

Bi Yue ordered and left.

Xiang Tianku hadn’t expected such an outcome and came over to Xuanyuan to apologize. “Brother Xuanyuan, please forgive me. Bifu was a nice kid. She never lied to me before and she was not as strong as you, therefore I believed the

wrong person.”

Xuanyuan smiled, “Don’t worry about it. Some people are just not very intelligent and don’t notice things. I am not one to point blame.”

Xuanyuan insulted him to his face in front of everyone, but he couldn’t say anything. He smiled wryly,

“I’ll follow sister Biyue to see if she’s all right.”

Then Huotao also approached Xuanyuan, “Brother Xuanyuan, you accomplished so many things at such tender age. I’ve done you wrong. I humbly apologize and offer a year of my wages to compensate you.”

Xuanyuan clapped his hands to accept, “Thank you Brother Huotao!”

Huotao and Kuiya stepped out of the Judgment Stand together and that concluded the event. But Xuanyuan knew this wasn’t the end.

Chen Junchou and Liu Xiangxiang landed on the stand. Chen bowed to Xuanyuan, “Thank you brother Xuanyuan. You saved Xiangxiang!”

Xuanyuan smiled, “It was nothing. Brother Chen, sister Liu. I really have to go. Three days later, I am taking the mine test. I must prepare beforehand. Goodbye!”

“Great, brother Xuanyuan. I expect to see your name on the List of Merits!” Chen Junchou laughed happily. Then he took Liu Xiangxiang’s hand and flew away.

All the onlookers were in a sour mood. They wanted to see Xuanyuan taught a lesson, but they were disappointed. Xuanyuan took no heed to such petty people. He said farewell to Baizhan, and headed to the inner sect with Zhao Manfeng.

Chapter 102 – Surveillance

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

## Wednesday Chapter

“Hahaha, I like this boy. He takes what he wants. Don’t you fight with me on this one, I’ll take him as my disciple.”

“No way. He’s the best fit for my techniques. All of you will have to wait, but it won’t be a long wait! The sect is getting quite a few extraordinary talents these days.”

“The boy hasn’t even refined his marrows yet, but he killed twelve king fighters. He’s probably more talented than Fung Lie, right?”

“He got a full set of upper rank earth instruments after all, including Fung Lie’s Wind Spirit. Fung Lie didn’t have any of that when he entered the sect! It’s still quite impressive to activate all those instruments at the same time though.”

“Maybe he’s the reincarnation of one of the fighting earth. Earth is the most Qi condensed element which would allow more Qi to be stored in his body or perhaps the kid has a special physique.”

“Indeed. He’s most likely the reincarnation of a powerful spirit. His physique is unusually strong. His skin, muscles, bones are all extremely dense and powerful while his veins are tightly woven through his body. His bone marrow will be extremely strong once they’re refined and his organs will be extremely resilient. Looking at his body, it might even be the legendary Fighter Body!”

“I’m puzzled by one thing. Did any of you notice the strength-replenishing pills he took? They were made by a special fighting fire owned exclusively by the Yin clan of the Eastern Dynasty. Where did he acquire those pills?”

“It’s unusual, but if he was sent as a spy from Yin clan, he wouldn’t bring their pills with him. That would be asking for trouble. We should ask Fung Lie about it.”

“He doesn’t seem like a spy anyway. I like him a lot. I’ll take him as my disciple.”

“Don’t even think about it. We’ll play by the normal rules; he will have to choose his master by requesting a place as their disciple. He cannot know our true identities beforehand. The normal punishment is in place for whoever breaks the rule.”

“Sure.”

“No problem.”

Xuanyuan and Zhao Manfeng headed to the inner sect, unaware of the secret gazes that were watching them from the shadows. Even true disciples would be jealous if they could hear the discussion between the Xians when talking about Xuanyuan.

\*\*\*\*\*

They soon arrived at the inner sect.

The rooms were delicately decorated. There were heavenly dragons engraved on every pillar within the sect and at the top of each pillar was a Xian from the Fighting Dragons Sect stepping on the heavenly dragon’s face.

When they reached Xuanyuan’s room, Zhao Manfeng finally bid him farewell and left. The room was conveniently situated in front of a small garden in which the flowers were already in bloom. Inner disciples were enjoyed extreme luxuries inside the sect.

Before Zhao Manfeng left, he gave Xuanyuan a book that would help with his training as a wild fighter. It was an earth class technique, it wasn’t very powerful, but Xuanyuan still gratefully accepted the gift.

Along with the book, he also received the monthly wages of Biyue and Huotao. Biyue was given sixty perseverance pills, and Huotao was given three times that of Biyue. Perseverance pills were similar to strength-replenishing pills, but they were more suitable for king realm fighters and above, as they contained much more Qi to quickly replenish a higher realm fighter’s strength.

These pills could be used to improve a person’s cultivation or for healing and replenishing one’s strength when fighting. Each of the pills were sold for a hundred king coins outside of the sect. The sect’s wages for all of the inner disciples must be astronomical.

\*\*\*\*\*

The room was simple and empty apart from a bed, a table and four stools made of sandalwood.

Greed spoke as he stepped into the room, “You have to be careful. There are currently a great number of Xian’s that are watching you at this very moment. I know you want to study the Book of Acquisition in order to benefit during the mine test, but you mustn’t. They would give you a great deal of benefits if they discovered the book, but the book will no longer be your possession once they notice it. The book is worth so much more than everything those Xian’s could give you combined. You have to keep it a secret from them.”

Xuanyuan couldn't believe it, "They are observing me! They must have been attracted by the seven-coloured light and want to take me as their disciple. It's a double-edged sword. I can't make any wrong moves since I'm under surveillance."

"Don't you worry about that. I can teach you the basics of the Book of Acquisition. At the same time, I'll find a few suitable Xian's. You won't be under such heavy surveillance once you accept one of them as a master."

Greed and Xuanyuan communicated inside their consciousness. The conversation seemed like it would take a while, but it happened in a fraction of a second. No one watching would notice anything unusual by watching Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan took a perseverance pill and sat cross-legged on his bed. An enormous amount of Qi started to rush through his body to continuously refine the impurities within. His skins, muscles and bones, devoured the Qi until there wasn't even a trace left. Through his veins, the Qi began to enter his marrows and began refining the impurities.

The devouring technique was something that occurred passively once it was practiced, it would be active at all times, no matter the situation. Xuanyuan didn't need to pay much attention to it. He was instead focused on the basic introduction to the Book of Acquisition instead.

\*\*\*\*\*

"He is absorbing such a large amount of Qi into his body! Does he have a heavenly pearl? Those pearls have the potential to advance into heaven rank instruments! No wonder!"

"Those pearls are very rare. Those kids on the List of Fighting Dragons don't

even have their own. Did Fung Lie gave that to him?”

“Not possible. Fung Lie wouldn’t give it away if he had one as it would greatly benefit his training.”

“Who cares about such nonsense. I like this boy more and more.”

“Don’t you dare try to steal my future disciple.”

\*\*\*\*\*

While the Xian were bantering about Xuanyuan, he was studying the first part of the Book of Acquisition.

The first chapter was titled “The Understanding of Landscapes”. It carefully recorded the Feng Shui of different landscapes, it also contained the methods of determining how to find precious land, lands of great wealth, lands suitable for Xian, and badlands; lands that were filled with evil and despair.

Xuanyuan also learnt how to find various kinds of fighting jades and crystals. Fighting stones were filled with natural Qi from the universe. Depending on how long the stones had been immersed and the quality of the Qi used, would greatly affect the quality. When natural Qi filled an area for a long period of time, fighting stones were formed from the materials that were only able to absorb a small amount of Qi, while jades and crystals formed when a material absorbed vast amounts of Qi.

Xuanyuan began to study all of the different details from the book. He seemed to have a deeper realization when studying these new techniques and understanding the connections between Qi and the land. His body seemed like it was starting to change.

The three days passed in the blink of an eye and the mine test was imminent.

Chapter 103 – The Mine Test

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

## Thursday chapter

From the time that he first entered the wild realm, Xuanyuan had finally felt the difficulties that normal people faced when cultivating. The gap between the wild realm and the king realm was enormous. Many geniuses were unable to improve after they reached certain realms, despite their talent. It was extremely hard for people to sense how the parts of their body were connected.

With the help of the pearl and the devouring technique, Xuanyuan had already refined and strengthened the marrow in his hands and feet over the three-day period. The marrow contained in the hands and feet were the smallest within a person's body. Still, Xuanyuan's strength had improved from ninety-six dragons to a hundred and eight dragons. The speed of his improvement even shocked the Xian's that were watching in the shadows.

"It only took him three days to gain twelve dragons of strength. That is four dragons of strength a day."

"What a wonderful talent!"

They had no idea that Xuanyuan's mind was completely focused on studying the first chapter of the Book of Acquisition and he wasn't actually concentrating on enhancing his strength. If he practiced using the one of the Heavenly Dragon Techniques, he would have improved even faster.

Xuanyuan lifted his body into a stretch. He was able to notice the feng shui of the landscape around him after studying the first chapter. He quickly stepped out of his room. The landscape of the sect was designed so that it could attract the purest Qi to aid the disciples' practice. With a land filled with dense Qi, the beasts could gain intelligence and evolve, even normal people would see the

benefits.

Almost every inch of land inside the sect was cultivated into quality land. Ordinary people who didn't have the ability to cultivate could still benefit from the feng shui of the sect. Even normal people would see their life span double if they lived here. On the other hand, normal people who lived in bad lands would have a much shorter life span.

Xuanyuan let out a long sigh and his mind relaxed. He wanted more time in the future for him to continue studying the Book of Acquisition.

—

Zhao Manfeng arrived on time. Seeing Xuanyuan's energetic face, he knew that Xuanyuan must have had a small breakthrough.

"Brother Xuanyuan, looks like you've recovered and are in your best condition." Zhao Manfeng's voice was deep and strong.

Xuanyuan grinned, "Elder Zhao, it looks like you've reached the realm of king fighters. A man's potential is limited at birth, but a strong will can defy the heavens. You had no confidence and believed in your limited potential, this is what held you back from breaking your limit."

Xuanyuan knew that Zhao Manfeng was awakened from his despair thanks to him, this allowed him to break the mental barrier that stopped him from progressing. Xuanyuan gave him his confidence back.

"I have you to thank for everything. I would have continued to believe that my

potential was limited to the wild realm if I didn't meet you. Anyway, the mine test is about to begin, so please follow me." Zhao Manfeng's face had a big smile.

"Extreme excess fat or lack of, are signs of a damaged spleen. When you've fully refined your spleen, you'll naturally slim down. I hope that Elder Zhao will continue to stay motivated and reach the grandmaster realm soon." Xuanyuan said kindly. He knew that Zhao Manfeng was a man worthy of friendship.

Zhao Manfeng was touched. No one had ever been so kind to him, so he would make sure to remember the kindness shown to him.

—

"The kid was right about Zhao Manfeng. The potential test is not the most reliable test. Many people only reach the realm of their test potential and do not attempt to progress further and break their limit."

"Don't fuss about such things. There's a reason why we have such a test. It allows people to find their talents; some people are born to cultivate and will naturally break their limit, some people find their strength is forging instruments or concocting pills... We also need people to manage the finances and the law. Even though we are powerful practitioners, we'd probably run the sect into the ground if we needed to handle these affairs ourselves."

"That's right. The practitioners enjoy their freedom to roam. Let other people fuss about the annoying problems. Let's go. I am liking this kid more and more."

—

They soon arrived at the portal square.

The Fighting Dragons Sect covered a total of eight million square miles of lands. It was not realistic for everyone to walk to the mine, so there were portals established for people to move to certain locations. The square was densely packed with people. Large groups of wild fighters and newly promoted inner disciples were sent to the mine for their final test.

“Brother Xuanyuan, I can only guide you to this point. You can only rely on yourself within the next ten days. You have to complete your task before you are declared as an official inner disciple.”

Xuanyuan’s name attracted many whispers within the square.

“That’s Xuanyuan. I heard he’s the one who produced the Xian light. That’s crazy. Is something like that real?”

“Of course. No one wanted to be recruited by Zhao Manfeng before, but now he’s an Elder. The story must be true.”

“The sect will put in a lot of effort into training him. How nice.”

“Have you heard? A few days ago, he killed twelve king fighters on the Judgment Stand!”

“How come I’ve never heard of him when we were in the outer sect?”

“There’re many powerful people in the outer sect that don’t like attention.”

Xuanyuan enjoyed the attention. He used to be an insignificant nobody, but now was famous within the Fighting Dragons Sect. Such a drastic change was a great achievement.

“Elder Zhao, I’ll go ahead.” Xuanyuan leapt forward into the crowd. He was swift like a dragon. Before anyone could see his shadow, he had already passed them. He was stopped by four elders before the entering.

“Present your token!”

He took out the token for verification and was quickly granted access. One of the elders said, “The mine test is extremely dangerous. Half of the disciples who take the test, do not return with their life. Another thirty percent of them are unable to complete their task. You must finish within ten days. Your task is to secure a hundred jin of jade and fifty jin of crystals, regardless of quality. You must also bring ten elixirs from Mo creatures that you killed. Do you understand?”

On average, there would only be one elixir in every one hundred Mo creatures. If a person was unlucky, they might not be able to get one even after killing three hundred Mo creatures. In every ten jin of fighting stones, you might find a jin of jade. There might be a jin of crystal in every five hundred jin of stones.

“I understand.” Xuanyuan nodded,.

“Please make sure you have everything you need before entering, such as pills and talismans. You can buy what you need from us, but it is double the price.”

One of the elders said.

There were many people who forgot some of the basic necessities because they were nervous. If they went back to collect their forgotten items, they'd miss the test. This was one of the way the elders made money.

"I'm fully prepared." Xuanyuan put away his token and entered the portal. The elder then turned to another disciple.

After half an hour, the portal was filled with one thousand disciples. With a bright light, Xuanyuan saw the room bending and he suddenly found himself inside a dark cave. The other disciples who stood beside him a moment ago were sent to other locations within the mine.

The mine was dark, lit only by the glowing grass. Suddenly, a dozen blood red eyes glared at Xuanyuan. He wasn't expecting to fight immediately and quickly brought out his Wind Spirit to fight.

Chapter 104 – Firebug Jade

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

## Friday Chapter

Also there is a new schedule for DtH on the first post.

There were a group of people stood on a small hill outside of the portal square. They were Huotao, Biyue, Xiang Tianku and Kuiya.

“He was the one who produced the seven-coloured light? How’s that possible? So we can’t do anything to him?” Kuiya cried out with a huge frown on his face.

Xiang Tianku was burning with jealousy, but he kept his thoughts to himself, “I won’t stop until I kill him. I can surely improve myself if I kill a potential Xian.”

Biyue smirked, “We’re not the only ones who want him dead. Most true disciples also want to snuff out a future threat. Even if he is promoted to a true disciple, his fate is death.”

Huotao squinted his eyes, remembering the day he first met Xuanyuan.

“He’s not an ordinary disciple, but one that was chosen directly by Fung Lie. All of the many great talents that attracted Fung Lie’s attention were killed within the sect. He won’t be any different. Just like what Biyue said, we’re not the only one who want him dead. Nu Long and Lie Sha are on the List of Merits. They are in the mine already. Xuanyuan killed the young masters of their families. They should want revenge.” He said.

Biyue and Kuiya both grinned. Nu Long and Lie Sha were ranked thirtieth and twenty-ninth on the List of Merits. They’ve already refined all of their five organs, they were almost as strong as Xiang Tianku.

“If they help, Xuanyuan won’t be able to escape.” Kuiya laughed venomously. His teeth had regrown after Xuanyuan’s assault. As a man who refined his marrows, he had a perfect set of teeth and any if any of them were knocked out, the teeth would grow again. Unlike normal people who only had a single set of teeth.

“It’s not that simple. Fung Lie was chosen by the Xian of Wind as a closed disciple. Xuanyuan will also have Xians observing him as a potential disciple.” Xiang Tianku had a much more cautious mind.

“Then what should we do?” Biyue asked.

“Don’t worry. The Xian’s cannot follow him inside the mine. He will have to endure the test alone. If he cannot pass the test, he isn’t worthy of becoming their disciple.” Huotao smiled inexplicably.

“Nu Long and Lie Sha are not stupid. They know what they must do.”

Biyue smiled at Huotao’s comment. Between her and Xuanyuan, only one could live, “If he comes out alive, I still have one last backup plan.”

Everyone turned to Biyue with shocked faces.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Do you think this kid can pass the test?”

“He should be able to. He has the potential to become a Xian, it’s only reasonable for him to have a more difficult task than others.”

“That’s right. He can only grow through hardship.”

“Ordinary disciples only need one elixir, five jin of jade and a jin of crystals to pass the test. But he’s not an ordinary disciple.”

“I hope he’ll be able to survive. I’d like to go inside and watch his test.”

“Don’t be ridiculous. When a more powerful person enters the mine, the more dangerous areas in the mine will become active. It wouldn’t be any danger to you, but you would cause all the other disciples to die.”

“I was only joking.”

Xuanyuan had no idea that he was given a much more challenging task by the Xian’s.

\*\*\*\*\*

Inside the mine.

Next to Xuanyuan, there were eighteen demon corpses. The demons had at least sixty dragons of strength. The only reason that the disciples could survive against the demons was because the lower level Mo did not study any techniques to enhance their power.

Xuanyuan didn’t find any elixir from the eighteen demons he killed, but he expected as much. He killed the demons with no difficulties, now that he had a hundred and eight dragons of strength. He could quickly deal with the demons in his way using his Wind Spirit spear.

“Ahahaha, the egg is slowly waking from its slumber. I gave him half the crystals you gave me and it has already finished them all!” Greed said. His voice had a hint of sarcastic tone. Xuanyuan peered into his ring, the crystals next to the egg were all shattered and had formed a dull grey powder, but the egg had only increased a fraction in size.

“Boy, you will need to get more crystals for us. We’re almost finished with the last ones!”

Xuanyuan could not describe his heartache. The great wealth he had in his ring was gone and it only took a few days. The crystals for Greed and the egg were all top class. If Xuanyuan would absorb all of that power without resting, it would take him three months to go through all those crystals. However, he was very curious as to what beast was inside the giant egg.

Xuanyuan was speechless. He held his Wind Spirit spear and started to clear a path by striking the two demons in front of him.

“Take out the dagger. No one is watching us. They wouldn’t interfere during the test.”

Without the Wind Spirit spear, his speed would naturally slow down, but using the dagger would give him an endless source of Qi to support his instruments.

Once he began to wield the dagger, the demons in his way fell like rice being reaped.

“Nice! Nice! I need more life essence! These guys are too weak!”

Xuanyuan finally found an elixir after killing the three hundredth demon. It was not his lucky day.

“Looks like I will have to go deeper into the mine if I want to have better luck.”

“Be careful. There will be Yaksha and other powerful Mo creatures deeper in the mine.” Greed reminded.

As Xuanyuan continued forward, he noticed a stone the size of a human head. The stone was filled with small holes which made Xuanyuan recall a passage from the first chapter.

“Bugstone. Many people would ignore such an item because the holes made it seem like damaged goods. Stones with a large number of holes or cracks cannot store Qi.”

He sliced the stone open with his dagger. The stone instantly exploded, revealing multiple tiny red jades which were hidden inside. Each piece of jade contained a little red bug in its core. The jade was extremely bright and glistening.

“A firebug jade! It’s one of the best quality jades available for practitioners. It is very suitable for those who study fire based techniques. You could exchange them for ninety-six jin of top class fighting jades. You are quite lucky after all, brat.”

These little pieces of firebug jade were not even a jin in weight, yet they could be exchanged into more than ninety jin of jade, because they were extremely rare and condensed jades. He learned this information from the Book of

Acquisition.

When he moved to put the jades inside his ring, he noticed a dozen hostile figures rushing towards him.

“If you don’t want to die, hand over those jades.” Demanded a commanding voice.

## Chapter 105 – The Disposition of Delusion

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Saturday' Chapter

Note: I'm going to sleep going to do the rest when I wake up. Zzzzzz.....

The leader of the group that had just rushed over was a king fighter. All of the members in the group wore a mocking grin, they were staring at the firebug jades in Xuanyuan's hand with looks of greed.

There were eight million outer disciples in the sect. Many of them were stronger than newly recruited inner disciples. They waited in the outer sect so they could pass the mine test with flying colours and attract some attention from the elders of the sect. The leader of this group was one of those people.

However, he had chosen the wrong target. Xuanyuan had effortlessly killed twelve king fighters. There was no reason for him to be afraid of this ragtag group.

Xuanyuan shrugged, "Aren't we fellow disciples? Why do you have to steal from me?"

"Cut the bullshit and hand over the jades. I will let you join our team if you do. We'll provide you with the five jin of jades and a jin of crystals, plus the elixirs needed for you to pass the mine test. If you don't hand over the jades, you'll die here." The leader released his Qi and threatened Xuanyuan.

"When you see elder brother Yuan you should kneel! Kneel!" One of the gang

member shouted.

Xuanyuan was dumbstruck. Then another person started shouting the same thing.

“Kneel!”

Unlike ordinary disciples, who would be shaking in fear, Xuanyuan was unmoved. He knew that they must have entered the mine before he arrived, so they had no idea who he was. If they knew his identity, they wouldn't be acting so foolish.

Xuanyuan grinned, revealing his pearly white teeth.

“You only need such a small amount to pass? I have to get a hundred jin of jades, fifty jin of crystals and ten elixirs to pass. I had no idea where to find so much, but luckily you guys have come to help out.”

The group were shocked to hear the numbers. Some of them had finally guessed Xuanyuan's identity – the boy who produced the seven-coloured light!

Xuanyuan leapt up and thrust his dagger into the leader. His life essence was completely drained.

“Brother Yuan is dead. Brother Yuan is dead! Run...” But they couldn't escape Xuanyuan, all of them were killed.

Xuanyuan had gained 23 million merit points from the savings of the group.

They must have been saving their points for a long time, which was a great help to Xuanyuan. He also found a hundred jin of jades, twenty jin of crystals, and five pieces of lower rank earth instruments.

Xuanyuan would mercilessly kill anyone who threatened his life.

“Hahaha, the Emperor would have been proud! Devour everything in your power, you can’t trust anyone but yourself in this world. You should only devour other people!” Greed said excitedly. It was indeed very proud of Xuanyuan’s progress.

“Greed, you said that many people grouped up and attacked the Emperor, didn’t he have friends who would help him?” Xuanyuan asked.

“The Emperor was an aloof person. He trusted no one. He would never harm an innocent person, but he would never let an evil person live. He devoured his way through a long list of enemies. It was extremely hard for him to find a friend with such a reputation, he also didn’t need anyone else.” Greed said sternly.

Xuanyuan was silent. It was very difficult to trust anyone in this world, everyone was trying to reach the pinnacle at all costs. The Emperor lived in a much more dangerous and ruthless era, so Xuanyuan couldn’t judge him for his actions. He only had respect for such a powerful man, a man who never bullied the weak and innocent, but feasted on those with evil hearts.

Xuanyuan was a beggar in his past life. All of the people who treated him well were saints in his eyes, they were people who deserved to be treated accordingly.

“Why do you ask such a thing, boy? I’ll tell you. Be careful of the Bai from the Taibai Trading Centre. She’s only being nice to you because she thinks she can use you. If you didn’t have any special powers, she wouldn’t even spare a glance in your direction.

“That girl, Yin Zhenluo was a good one. She helped you when you were weak and in need of help, even though there was nothing in it for her, but at the same time, it didn’t cost her much to offer you a helping hand. It was like a rich person giving a few coins to a hungry beggar on the street. There’s no absolute good in this world.” Greed continued with his intensity growing, which startled Xuanyuan.

“Greed, were you ever deceived by someone? Or was the Emperor deceived by someone close to him?”

“Bullshit. That was nothing but a reminder for you. Take it however you want, just don’t get yourself killed because you trusted someone.”

“You care so much about me staying alive.” Xuanyuan grinned.

—

On their way, Xuanyuan killed another hundred demons, allowing Greed to happily take all the life essence. His luck was good and he found another elixir on the way.

Xuanyuan was moving towards a tunnel in the distance. There was not a lot of glowing grass in this area which caused it to be much darker. The corpses of demons were scattered on the ground. Clearly someone had come through this

way.

Xuanyuan suddenly felt a dangerous aura coming from the tunnel and his heart fell. This type of land had a disposition to negative energy. It was filled with high quality fighting stones, but it was much more dangerous.

Xuanyuan pondered for a while. It would take a great deal of resources to hatch the egg, so he needed more crystals. Xuanyuan knew that with no risk, there was no reward. He made up his mind and without a second thought, he leapt forward.

This was a landscape with negative feng shui. It was formed naturally and was particularly suitable for Mo creatures. The negative energy would attract a great number of evil creatures.

Xuanyuan found himself by a low hillside inside a large underground valley. He had spotted Fang Yuyou and twenty-two guards when he scouted the area. The group was surrounded by thousands of demons that all had at least thirty dragons of strength. If Fang Yuyou's group was slightly weaker, they wouldn't have survived.

Xuanyuan's heart clenched. He wanted to rush forward to rescue them, but Greed stopped him, "Don't be so impatient and foolish. Calm down. This land is very strange, clear your head and take another look."

He started to recall the information from the Book of Acquisition and realized he had made a huge mistake. The place was actually a valley, surrounded by hills on four sides. It was filled with negative energy. The Fang family continued to run in different directions to escape, yet they always returned to the same position. This land had certain areas which would confuse a person's sense of

direction and trap them inside. Xuanyuan was able to notice this because he was outside of the affected area. Usually, in order to support such a large area of delusion, there would be a large area filled with fighting stones, jades and crystals. They were in luck.

On the ground, the corpses of demons were dissolving into the ground to form a muddy red slush beneath their feet. No matter how many demons were killed, there were always more heading their way because they were attracted to this area. Fang Yuyou was filled with regret for leading her guards into such a vile land. She felt helpless.

On the verge of her despair, she heard a familiar voice, “Lady Fang, don’t give up and wait for my signal. Stay alert, and break out through when I’m done.”

Instantly hope was restored to the group.

“It’s Xuanyuan, stay in formation. We’ll soon get out of here.” She commanded.

Smiles appeared on all of the guards’ faces. They thought they were going to die here, but Xuanyuan, the boy who produced the seven-coloured light, had come to their rescue!

Chapter 106 – Mine Tunnel

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

## Sunday chapter

This was the first attempt Xuanyuan made to change a landscapes disposition. He needed to find the tunnel supporting the negative disposition and form a positive disposition by using fighting stones to counteract the effect. Another method would be to destroy the disposition completely by using brute force.

But Xuanyuan didn't know how to do that. He only had information from the first chapter of the Book of Acquisition and had only studied it for three days.

"Greed, what should I do? I have no idea how to stop it. You must know something. Spit it out!" Xuanyuan said urgently.

"You finally realize how great it is to have me by your side, right? It's very simple. You need to find the mine tunnel supporting the negative disposition. Then I can break it. The girl's fate is in your hands. You better be quick!" Greed laughed. He knew where the mine tunnel was, but he decided against helping Xuanyuan too much. Xuanyuan needed to grow and learn things for himself. Xuanyuan would grow much faster when there was an element of risk and loss involved. Greed couldn't care less about saving Fang Yuyou's life.

In the Book of Acquisition, there was a technique called "The Eyes of Acquisition". With this technique, he could find the different kinds of lands with different dispositions, but Xuanyuan was completely ignorant of that. He could only depend on the miniscule amount of information he had studied over the past three days.

He took a deep breath to calm his mind. The more dangerous the situation, the calmer he should be. Panicking has never helped anyone.

The valley was filled with a negative air and demons rushed to the bottom of the valley from every direction.

“What if the tunnel is underground? It’d take too much time and effort to break it.” Xuanyuan mumbled, “Everything has a beginning and an end. Everything gathers at the centre.....”

Xuanyuan turned around. There was an opening of a tunnel which was slightly above the valley. Xuanyuan yelled, “There it is!”

“Pretty smart, kid. I thought you’d start to dig under the valley before you noticed.” Greed teased.

“Greed, there will be tons of crystals and jades when I find the mine tunnel. Please don’t tell me you plan to devour everything?” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes.

“You overestimate me, hahaha... I can’t do that, but the egg could.” Greed chuckled. “It’s only an egg. When nine red suns appear on the shell, it’ll be ready to breakthrough. That means it would have restored a full ninth of its total power and memories.”

Xuanyuan was encouraged by the potential of the beast inside the egg. Xuanyuan wasted no time and directly entered the mine tunnel. Looking in from the outside, the tunnel was pitch black, with numerous pairs of blood-red eyes glaring out from the darkness.

The creatures howled as they lunged towards Xuanyuan as soon as he entered the tunnel. With the dagger in his hand, Xuanyuan easily carved a path through the demons inside the tunnel. He didn’t dare to fight the demons one by one.

Instead, he started to use the “Heavenly Dragon’s Dash”. His Qi formed into the image of a dragon which charged deep inside the tunnel, killing everything it passed.

Xuanyuan’s Armour of Heavenly Gold was also active to light the tunnel and provide additional defence. The tunnel was four metres high, and seemed like a never-ending path which stretched deep into the ground. After a period of time, he could finally sense the end of the tunnel, there was dense Qi ahead. It had to be the source of the disposition.

Like the Mo nest, the air here was poison to practitioners. However, this poison no longer had any effect on Xuanyuan, he didn’t need to take any antidotes beforehand.

His Qi was being consumed very quickly. Every time a demon attacked, the armour would activate automatically which drained a small portion of his strength. The only way he could replenish his strength was by thrusting his dagger into the demons in order to drain them.

The golden light lit the way through the tunnel as the blood continued to flow. The tunnel was soon filled with a small stream of blood on the ground. Xuanyuan couldn’t be stopped.

He had travelled three miles into the tunnel and killed an uncountable number of demons. Xuanyuan knew that Greed had already collected ten elixirs and stored them inside his ring.

Just when he was enjoying how easily he was progressing, six overwhelming attacks rushed towards him. Each of them was at least a hundred dragons of strength. Xuanyuan was caught off guard and he immediately used the

“Heavenly Dragon’s Steps” to evade. His quick reflexes allowed him to dodge three attacks, but he was still hit by the other three. In order to defend against the attacks, the armour consumed sixty percent of his Qi. With the bright golden light which shone to defend him, Xuanyuan could clearly see the enemies that attacked him. They were covered with scales with extremely sharp claws and a large pair of scaled wings protruding from their back. They were Yaksha!

He used the “Heavenly Dragon’s Dash” once again and thrust his dagger into one of the Yakshas. Its life essence was extremely powerful which was very helpful in replenishing his energy.

Xuanyuan quickly had to duck, barely avoiding the incoming claws which were aiming for his head. With a turn of his waist, he thrust his dagger into the attacking Yaksha’s torso. With that he had taken care of the second Yaksha.

Another Yaksha spread its wings and flew towards Xuanyuan. He grabbed the decaying body of the Yaksha he had just drained to use as a shield, but the decayed corpse was instantly pierced by the claws. Xuanyuan quickly grabbed the Yaksha’s arm which brought the claws to a stop and with another fluid movement he stabbed the Yaksha between the eyes with his dagger.

There were now only three left, but they were preparing to attack together. Xuanyuan knew that his armour could resist a total of six hundred dragons of strength. Anything over that would drain his fighting Qi completely and render his armour useless.

He couldn’t afford to let them prepare. With a sudden burst of speed, Xuanyuan leapt towards the remaining Yaksha and slaughtered them before they could organise. An elixir slowly fell towards the ground as he finished them off.

“Not bad, this is only the fifth level of the mine. Usually, Yaksha’s will only start to appear on the sixth level.” Greed said happily. Xuanyuan knew that Greed’s appetite was endless. Even with the life essence from over a thousand creatures, Greed was still hungry for more. “I’m now sharing the essence with the egg, so you have to work harder from now on, boy.”

Xuanyuan was furious. He was forced into endless hard labour! “Are you kidding me? Am I the master or are you the master?” He shouted in his mind.

“You are the master, of course....” Greed laughed drily.

After remembering that Fang Yuyou was waiting for him, Xuanyuan stopped arguing and continued deeper into the tunnel. He didn’t encounter a single creature over the next mile. It seemed like he had attracted all the creatures that were inside the tunnel when he was fighting.

Suddenly, the tunnel started to widen and eventually opened into a fifty metres wide mine. It was filled with jades and a condensed Qi. The mine was dimly glowing as Qi filled the air. There were a large number of corpses that were spread across the ground. Some of them were wearing the clothes of inner disciples.

The first thought that came to his mind was that was going to be rich. Apparently, Greed had the same thought.

“Wonderful, wonderful! Boy, throw the egg into the middle of the mine. The two of us are going to feast on every ounce of Qi from this mine. Do it now! Quickly or Fang Yuyou will die!”

Chapter 107 – Disposition Destroyed

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

## Monday chapter

“It’s a natural jade mine. The quality of the jades here will be varied, but the large quantity of jades will help. Be quick boy. If you practice here, you will also advance with a shocking speed.” Greed squealed with excitement, he was like a beggar who had just stumbled onto a gold mine.

Xuanyuan was no better, he still had the mentality of a beggar from his previous life. He immediately seized the chance and jumped into the mine while taking out the egg. It was still in an ugly ink black colour, but when he took it out, the egg started to shake. Xuanyuan was finding it difficult to keep hold of the egg. He immediately put the egg in the middle of the mine, as this was where the Qi was most condensed. As long as it could touch the ground, the egg would start to devour the Qi from the jades surrounding it. The bright and magnificent jades started to fade and turn dull with visible speed, which shocked Xuanyuan.

“Boy, don’t give everything to that beast. Give me some too. QUICK!!! It’ll absorb everything if you’re too slow!” Greed screamed in panic.

Xuanyuan casually stabbed the dagger into the ground. He then sat where the Qi was most concentrated and started to recite the devouring technique. His skin, muscles, bones, veins and marrow all seemed to turn into hungry beasts. His body started to devour large quantities of the Qi stored inside the jades that were beneath him. Xuanyuan immediately felt that his body had relaxed and his strength was being enhanced.

Outside of the jade mine, he needed to extract the impure Qi from the air which then had to be purified before he could use it to refine his body. However, inside the jade mine, he could absorb an endless stream of pure Qi without much effort. He started to recite the Heavenly Dragon Technique – the Way of Refining Marrows. He had already become accustomed to the form of the heavenly dragon. Now he needed to engrave the heavenly dragon’s form into bones and

marrows.

He could sense that his marrows were being transformed into tiny dragons. He activated the pearl and started to absorb Qi with increased speed. His strength was increasing in an equally astonishing rate.

Xuanyuan finally knew the benefit of practicing with a large amount of fighting jades and crystals. No wonder they were considered luxurious items that every practitioner was interested in.

\*\*\*\*\*

“My lady. We can’t hold on for much longer. Master Xuanyuan might not make it in time. What should we do?”

“I have almost used up all of my pills. I can only last for another hour.”

“I feel like the demons are attracted by the blood from the ones we kill!”

The Fang family guards were desperate after half a day of fighting. Fang Yuyou’s eyes grew cold. She opened her mouth and after a pause she said, “Hold on for a while longer.”

They were surrounded by a thick, black fog. They were unable to see into the distance. The only thing they could see was the endless sea of red eyes glaring at them. However, the demons were unable to get any closer. Fang Yuyou’s Plain Water Formation was defending them. When the demons approached, they would be minced into small chunks of flesh.

The ground was a sea of blood and demon elixirs, but there was no time to collect the elixirs. They had to focus on keeping the formation active.

“My lady, I’m exhausted. I only have three strength-replenishing pills remaining. Are we really going to die here?” One of the guards was losing his confidence. Xuanyuan had left over two hours ago.

“Might it be possible that Master Xuanyuan has encountered a similar piece of land? He might not be able to escape.”

“Master Xuanyuan has great talent, but he’s still a wild fighter. Only a powerful master who is knowledgeable of landscapes can destroy the disposition of the land.”

“We shouldn’t wait any longer, or we’ll die here!”

Every passing minute was torture for them. They were given hope but each second seemed like an eternity. Fang Yuyou was exhausted as well.

However, before their morale had broken completely, the black fog started to fade. The demons surrounding them had started to grow restless.

“He succeeded!” Fang Yuyou smiled brightly. She felt a sense of victory, because she continued to trust in Xuanyuan. She commanded her guards, “Keep your position. We’ll wait until the fog disappears completely and then we can fight our way out!”

She concentrated her mind – a great waterfall was formed from multiple sword waves which sliced dozens of demons into tiny pieces.

Those demons were beginning to form intelligence, but it was not very powerful. When the disposition was destroyed, the negative energy also dispersed. The demons could sense the energy that attracted them in the first place was starting to disappear. Since the energy was dispersing, the demons also started to leave – towards the tunnel where Xuanyuan was. If it was not for the power of the disposition, most demons would rather stay inside mine tunnels that contained Qi to quickly enhance their strength, it was much more beneficial to them.

However, there were many conflicts over territory between the different Mo creatures. So many Mo creatures would avoid angering the Mo creatures inside the tunnels.

Half an hour quickly passed and many of the demons started to group around the outside of the tunnel. Some of the braver demons had already entered the tunnel. Suddenly, the demons inside the tunnel started to shriek and howl, which attracted the attention of the rest of the demons. They ceased their attacks on the Fang family and entered a berserk state. Ignoring Fang Yuyou and her guards, they all started to rush inside the tunnel.

Fang Yuyou could finally relax. There were dozens of demon elixirs remaining which was the remnants of the intense battle. They slowly collected all of the elixirs, before Fang Yuyou cried out, “Quick! Go help Master Xuanyuan. He must have gone inside the tunnel in order to destroy the disposition, this must be what angered the demons!”

She immediately started to lead the rest of the guards towards the tunnel, there were eighteen guards left. But they were unable to get close because of the swarm of demons charging inside.

“My lady, we can’t get through. There’s too many of them. I’m afraid Master

Xuanyuan is doomed. We should go before we share the same fate.”

“We have tried our best, my lady. He’s alone and won’t stand a chance against so many demons.”

“It’s my fault. This was all caused by my decision.” Fang Yuyou crushed a demon’s head to release her guilt. Her eyes were filled with tears. Xuanyuan had saved their lives, but was trapped inside the tunnel with the demon swarm.

“Dead or alive, I’ll know after I see his body. Kill all demons outside and clear a path with the lightning talismans.” She ordered coldly. Despite their exhaustion, the guards wouldn’t dare to retreat. They were still alive because of Xuanyuan, after all. Many of them suspected that their young lady was starting to fall in love with the boy.

They were all holding a lightning talisman in their hands as they activated them all at the same time. The demons in front were immediately destroyed. Following Fang Yuyou’s lead, they charged deep into the tunnel.

”Master Xuanyuan, wait for me.”

## Chapter 108 – Wild Realm, Completed!

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Wednesday's Chapter got it out early just incase I forget.

Fang Yuyou was guilt-ridden. While inside the tunnel, Xuanyuan had never been happier.

His practice had accelerated by ten-fold when inside the dense Qi of the jade mine. He kept practicing by using the heavenly dragon technique. He continued to punch out with his full strength, the more he punched, the more he seemed to resemble a powerful dragon.

The marrows in the arms and legs were being refined with each punch. Like liquid metal, they were then molded into tiny dragons, which roared from inside Xuanyuan's bones. He had almost reached the full completion of the wild realm. He would reach the peak of the wild realm after he refined the marrow contained in his spine.

His strength had jumped from a hundred and eight dragons to a hundred and eighty dragons – a shocking improvement. His strength was comparable to some of the most powerful king realm fighters!

The amount of Qi he was able to store inside his body had greatly expanded. Before he practiced inside the jade mine, he was able to withstand six hundred dragons of attack power before his Qi was depleted. He could now withstand a thousand dragons of attack power before his Qi was depleted.

The mine was originally glowing dimly with a warm and refreshing light, but

that light had now faded. Surrounding the egg was a large ring of dull grey powder.

Xuanyuan stared at the egg. A circular red mark the size of a fist had formed on the shell. Xuanyuan cried out, “Is that the red sun mark?”

“That’s right. The six hundred jin of crystals you bought a few days ago helped to speed up its recovery. That’s why it is able to absorb Qi so rapidly. That six hundred jin of crystals was equal to six million jin of top class jades. This mine probably had one hundred million jin of top class jades and that Qi formed the first red sun mark.” Greed’s explanation only further irritated Xuanyuan. Only one mark appeared! He still had to make more appear, but that wasn’t the end of it. Greed continued, “Each mark will need more Qi to appear. You have to work even harder, boy. Don’t let us starve.”

“Greed, how was your progress then? Didn’t you say you can recover to the peak of the grandmaster realm with just the Origin of Memories? With all those jades, you probably reached the imperial realm, right?” Xuanyuan was tired just listening to Greed.

“You wish. The Origin of Memories more or less limits the speed of my recovery. Unless I have access to an abundance of Qi to break through the barrier. I can only step into the completion of the grandmaster realm.” Greed sneered.

“That’s it? That was a lot of Qi...” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes.

He didn’t even have time to finish his sentence before demons jumped down from the tunnel into the mine, while screaming frantically. It seemed like they were just running to their deaths, Xuanyuan thought. He took out his Wind Spirit

spear and began slaughtering the demons. With a seventy-two dragon increase in strength, the demons were no match for Xuanyuan. He didn't need the dagger to continuously absorb their Qi. He now felt like his body was a whirlpool, constantly pulling the Qi towards it. Now that he had reached the completion of the wild realm, his speed and strength were improved exponentially.

Xuanyuan continued slaughtering the demons with the Wind Spirit spear. He moved like a whirlwind, spinning and defending himself against the demons which attacked him from every angle. When he released his fighting Qi with his attacks, it was like a ripple on the surface of a lake, hundreds of demons were blown into the air and chopped into pieces.

The blood was streaming down to the centre of the tunnel, created a puddle where the egg was placed. The blood contained the life essence of the demons which was quickly absorbed by the egg.

"Boy, faster! Kill! Devouring Qi and life essence together is the best! Faster!" Greed was pushing Xuanyuan to kill faster. He fought for six whole hours without feeling any fatigue. When he finally killed the last demon, his strength had stopped increasing at a hundred and ninety dragons of strength. A quarter of his spinal marrow had been refined. There was no longer any rust visible on the dagger. It was now shining with a dim black light.

The Qi in the mine become extremely thin and the glow had disappeared. Xuanyuan noticed that they had sucked every drop of Qi from the jade mine. He looked at the red sun mark on the egg and sighed, "Two blood sucking bastards."

He approximately killed eight thousand demons and collected a hundred demon elixirs. He put the egg back into his ring, picked up the dagger, and turned around.

Suddenly he heard rapid footsteps approaching and a shadow appeared at the entrance of the tunnel above. Fang Yuyou was covered with demon blood and had a face filled with terror, but her face brightened the moment she saw Xuanyuan.

“Master Xuanyuan! How wonderful! You’re alive!”

It was then that Fang Yuyou and her guards realized the mine was filled with corpses that formed a small mountain. They were speechless. Only six of the guards had stayed alive. The ones remaining had all stepped into the king realm through constant fighting.

“What... Master Xuanyuan. You killed all these demons alone? Unbelievable....” One of them gasped.

“That’s impressive. There are at least five thousand demons. No... more than that. How did you achieve it, Master Xuanyuan?”

“Master Xuanyuan produced the seven-coloured light. Of course he can do it.”

Xuanyuan knew that Fang Yuyou must have been worried sick about him. He smiled at her and leaped towards the tunnel. She immediately embraced him when he arrived.

“I’m so glad you’re alive. I thought you must have been killed!” She sounded like she was weeping.

Xuanyuan suddenly felt his heart warming. He smoothed out her bloodstained hair with his fingers as he teased her, “I am the legendary Xuanyuan, I can’t be killed by demons. It’s all right, don’t cry. People will start to think you are falling in love with me.”

She suddenly pushed him away. Her eyes were red, but so was her face. “Don’t be stupid. I’m not in love with you. I didn’t cry for you. You saved us, that’s why we came here to rescue you. If you’re okay, we’ll be on our way.”

“Hahaha, the little girl’s embarrassed. Boy, I think you have a girlfriend now...” Greed teased Xuanyuan.

“Cut the bullshit.” Xuanyuan replied to Greed as he followed Fang Yuyou out of the tunnel.

Everywhere they looked, there were the corpses of demons. They gathered the remains of the guards that had died in battle. It was impossible to bring them out of the mine, so they had to leave them here. They quickly buried the guards’ remains, after all of that, they were truly exhausted. They all sprawled across the floor, exhausted.

“We still need about twenty jin of crystal before we have completed our mission. How about you?” Fang Yuyou asked.

“I’ve got the hundred jin of jades, but I still need to find fifty jin of crystals. Does anyone know where the crystal mines are?” Xuanyuan shrugged. Then he passed them the twenty jin of crystals he took from the group who attacked him. “I found these crystals earlier. Take them and leave the mine. I want to go look for a crystal mine.”

Fang Yuyou was surprised to hear that Xuanyuan needed fifty jin of crystal for his mission. She said, “Where are you going to look? We have only used one of the ten days of our mission. We should go together.”

“No, go back. There are many powerful people who are aiming for my life. You’d only make things more difficult for me.” He gave one final smile and then departed.

Fang Yuyou gritted her teeth angrily, “I’m much stronger than you can imagine. One day, you’ll need my help.”

Chapter 109 –Imminent Danger

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

## Saturday chapter

“Why are you leaving? Didn’t you notice that the girl, Fang Yuyou, is smitten? What a lucky boy! I’d say, her interest in you is the most innocent kind. Unlike Bai, she doesn’t calculate profit and loss.” Greed’s laugh echoed in Xuanyuan’s mind.

“Shut up. It’s none of your business.” Xuanyuan was annoyed. He wanted to avoid Fang Yuyou. If they were together, there would be things that he could never tell her. He wanted to go to the Eastern Dynasty as fast as possible to save his beautiful Master Zhenluo. He wouldn’t consider any other relationships in the meantime. On the other hand, his enemies would surely use this test as an opportunity to kill him. If Fang Yuyou followed him, they would definitely kill her as well. This mine test was the perfect opportunity to murder someone without reproach.

“Boy, I’m just concerned about you. You don’t understand much about people’s hearts. I can easily tell which woman is sincere and who is using you. Bai is of course much better in many ways than Fang Yuyou, but she values profit more than anything. She might not be willing to help you when you’re in danger, but Fang Yuyou would....” Greed started another of its never-ending speeches.

“I say, have you ever considered becoming a professional matchmaker?” Xuanyuan asked vehemently.

“I’m just saying, you must be careful of the women you grow close to. Don’t let yourself be used by them. You will regret it in the end.” Greed chuckled dryly and warned Xuanyuan in a serious tone.

“Were you used by a woman in the past? Or was the Emperor?” Xuanyuan teased impatiently. Greed immediately grew silent, which stimulated Xuanyuan’s

desire to gossip. So he said, “So I was right! You’re not even human, so how could a woman break your heart? Maybe it’s the Emperor? But he was so powerful; it must have been difficult for someone to trick him. I don’t know, which of you were tricked by a woman?”

Xuanyuan was trying to provoke Greed, but it gave absolutely no reaction. Xuanyuan’s plan had failed miserably, “Old fox....”

He started to look around and noticed there were many sharp stones on the ground. Because of the nature of the land and the air, the stones here were poisonous. They were able to pierce through spiritual instruments like they were paper.

The field was covered with glowing grass which allowed him to faintly see into the distance. There were numerous mine tunnels which extended into different areas. Each of the tunnels was filled with a negative air and they each had their own unique landscape.

Xuanyuan approached the closest mine tunnel. He was surprised by his own observations, “The power of these landscapes are even stronger than the disposition of delusion. That’s crazy! Gemmologists were so powerful! If I study the Book of Acquisition, I can use the power of the landscapes to destroy an entire army, without having to fight a single battle.”

“Of course, the landscapes were created by a large accumulation of Qi and the power of the earth is much stronger than that of men. So you must study the Book of Acquisition. You are blessed with good luck, boy, good things keeps coming your way.” Greed explained quietly.

“Tell me, was it you, or was it the Emperor who got dumped?” Xuanyuan

laughed, which silenced Greed again.

On his way, he noticed numerous demon corpses, someone must have been through here before. He slowly approached one of the largest mine tunnels. He felt the violent negative energy the closer he got to the tunnel.

He looked inside. Not very far from the entrance was a large valley which extended down. It was surrounded by a violent air, which attracted a large number of demons. Inside the valley, there were numerous fighting stones on display. Even the smallest stone was the size of a human head. Xuanyuan knew instinctively that if he ventured deeper, the quality of the stones would be incredible.

However, the demons were almost double the size of ordinary demons. Their bodies were covered with large, intimidating muscles and finished off with a set of frighteningly sharp claws. Their eyes had lost all sanity, only the thirst for blood remained. They all had at least eighty dragons of strength and there were at least three thousand of them.

Xuanyuan observed the land's fung shui and was shocked,

“The Disposition of Insanity! It'd be impossible to defeat those crazed demons and extract the stones.”

Then he spotted Yakshas at the very centre of the valley. They were twice as strong as the ones he fought previously. Their wings were spread outwards and their scales stood upright like little sharp knives. They seemed to have around a hundred and eighty dragons of strength. There were over fifty Yakshas in the valley.

Just when Xuanyuan was thinking of possible ways of extracting the stones without fighting the crazed Mo creatures, two overwhelming forces rushed towards his direction.

“We couldn’t find the boy. Maybe elder brother Huotao gave us bad information?” One of the men frowned. He was a muscular brute, he was Nu Long, ranked thirty on the List of Merit.

“It can’t be, he continued moving for a majority of the time, but I can feel that he has stopped. We must be getting closer.” The other man was radiating a dangerous aura. He was smiling like a predator who was chasing its prey. He was extremely confident in catching his prey.

“All right then. The boy actually killed my family’s young master. He thought that we wouldn’t dare to get revenge? He only has Fung Lie supporting him. The Nu family has support from multiple true disciples and elders. Not a single disciple recommended by Fung Lie has ever survived. He won’t either.” Nu Long smirked.

“He’s just a bastard who doesn’t know the first thing about the fights between true disciples. He thought that he could just do whatever he wanted because he gained a little bit of power? Even if we don’t kill him, the true disciples would do it for us.”

“He is equipped with countless upper class earth instruments. We’ll share the rewards after we kill him. He produced the seven-coloured light. If we can kill him, it will prove that we have better potential and will benefit our practice! We’re closing in on him now. We need to kill him with one strike!”

Lie Sha and Nu Long were both peak king fighters, their eyes were emitting a

dangerous light as they moved closer. Slowly, they approached Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan was completely ignorant of the imminent danger.

Chapter 110 – Runaway

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

## saturday chapter

Xuanyuan looked straight ahead, thinking of ways to extract some fighting stones amongst all the violent, crazed Mo creatures.

“What should I do? The Dustless Helmet won’t be as effective in the middle of a disposition. I could be spotted by the Yakshas which would put me in grave danger. But the rewards are the highest quality stones....”

Then, all the hairs on his body stood on edge, he sensed danger coming from behind him. He leaped forward and activated his helmet in an instant. With a deafening explosion, rubble was blown everywhere. The place where Xuanyuan was standing a few seconds ago had become a seven metre deep hole. He quickly calmed down and noticed two men, both were peak king fighters, carrying upper rank earth instruments. They each had a strength of over two hundred dragons.

“He’s pretty fast.” Nu Long commented. He was carrying a Dragon Head Hammer which weighed a thousand jin, ordinary people wouldn’t even be able to lift it. But he swung it like it was a toy. Next to Nu Long, Lie Sha was holding a sword which was engulfed in flames. It was named the Sword of Heavenly Fire, the heat from the sword had the power to turn rock into lava.

“Don’t try and run. We know you have the Dustless Helmet!” Lie Sha took out a mirror – the Mirror of Revealment – and injected his Qi into it. A light shone from the mirror and lit a ten metre wide area.

“You still cannot hide your aura.”

Both men surged into the air. Xuanyuan’s whereabouts was exposed under the

light of the mirror. He wasn't able to hide from this duo.

"Greed, don't absorb the Qi to stop their tricks. I have a plan to deal with it." Xuanyuan made up his mind and activated his boots. He charged into the disposition that was swarming with powerful demons.

"The kid wants to run. Follow him!"

"That disposition is dangerous, but demons don't have the power to fly like we do. Hahaha..." Lie Sha laughed. Then he and Nu Long quickly followed Xuanyuan into the tunnel.

Xuanyuan had almost reached full completion of the wild realm, left with only the spinal marrow yet to be refined, so he was just as fast as peak king realm fighters. But Nu Long and Lie Sha also had quality boots that aided their speed. So it wouldn't be easy to escape from them.

"Be careful, boy. Don't let them get within ten metres of you. Otherwise those demons will be able to see you and you'll be torn apart by them. Even I can't even save you." Greed sounded like it was looking forward to watching a great show.

"Didn't you reach the peak of the grandmaster realm? Just go and kill the two of them!" Xuanyuan was impatient.

"This is the perfect chance for training. I can't help you with everything." Greed chuckled.

"To hell with your training!" The moment Xuanyuan stepped into the

disposition, he was struck by a violent evil Qi. When Nu Long and Lie Sha followed him, the power of the evil Qi surged towards them. Xuanyuan's Body of All Creations could easily withstand the suffocating environment, but ordinary practitioners would have been killed already.

Nu Long and Lie Sha weren't equipped with the special physique to tackle the evil Qi. They immediately felt discomfort. "The power of the evil Qi had increased to counteract our strength. Quickly, take the suppression pill at once!"

The pills quickly proved effective. They were no longer bound by the suffocating Qi and were able to easily fly inside the disposition, almost catching up with Xuanyuan, who was struggling within the swarm of demons.

"Hahaha, you don't need to run. You can't get away!" Nu Long laughed while slamming his hammer towards Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan leapt forward when he felt the pressure of the attack. The dozen demons surrounding him before were all crushed into paste. He was unluckily struck by the force created by the attack, activating his armour. Though the instrument didn't cost him a great deal of his Qi reserves after he broke through to a hundred and ninety dragons of strength.

An uncountable number of demons were provoked by the attack and glared towards Nu Long and Lie Sha, who were hovering in midair. They could see numerous pairs of red eyes below them, just like ghosts, giving an eerie vibe.

Lie Sha also prepared to attack, "Land of Fire!"

Lie Sha's Qi was fire based. A stream of white-hot fire was released from his

sword, incarcerating the enemies under his feet.

“Boy, fire can melt gold. His sword might be even more powerful than your armour.” Greed warned. Xuanyuan immediately used the “Heavenly Dragon Breaking” and broke through the wall of fire unscathed.

Xuanyuan ran towards the deepest part of the valley in the middle of the disposition. The demons around took no notice of him, they were too busy glaring at Nu Long and Lie Sha. The increased evil Qi also started to enhance the demons’ power. Their strength now reached ninety dragons and they were growing furious at Nu Long and Lie Sha. Countless claws were sent flying straight at the two men above. The claws pierced through the air like arrows, shooting towards the two men. Each of the claws contained at least eighty dragons of strength.

Nu Long and Lie Sha were caught off guard by such an unconventional attack, though their armours both activated and defended them automatically. Nu Long’s Qi was of gold by nature, while Lie Sha’s was fire by nature. Lie Sha burnt all of the claws into ashes. Now clawless, the demons were weakened, like a bee without its stinger.

The men grabbed their strength-replenishing pills and ran after Xuanyuan again. Xuanyuan cut a path through the demons using his dagger, this allowed him to replenish his Qi when necessary. In his other hand, he was holding a Crossbow of Dark Currents, which he used to shoot a few bolts towards Nu Long and Lie Sha from time to time. The arrows were filled with evil Qi and poison; they were marginally more deadly than the Crossbow of Explosion. His constant attacks were a nuisance to the men above.

“You damn kid. I’ll kill you!”

“Don’t you run, wait there for me boy!”

Xuanyuan was amused, “But I will get away if you can’t keep chasing me!”

Xuanyuan didn’t pick up the fighting stones on the way. He knew the most precious stones were located among the fifty Yakshas at the centre.

Nu Long and Lie Sha were burning through their Qi to divert all the attacks from Xuanyuan. And of course, Xuanyuan didn’t mind that at all.

The power of the evil Qi surged once again – just as he was approaching the Yakshas. The Mo creatures that were covered with dark burgundy scales and had wings that were covered in sharp spikes. Their claws were clearly more dangerous than those of the demons. Their strength had reached a hundred and ninety dragons.

The Qi was extremely dense near the Yakshas, the Qi from the stones was allowing them to grow stronger. The Yakshas were provoked by the angry roars coming from a large number of demons. They suddenly spread their wings and flew towards Lie Sha and Nu Long who were midair.

Xuanyuan laughed at the shocked faces of the two men. He quietly snuck towards the fighting stones hidden inside the crater. “Have fun fighting the Yakshas! Hahaha...”

Chapter 111 – Grandmaster Class Talisman

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

Last chapter for saturday

Xuanyuan quickly had Greed completely devour all the auras on his body and conceal his location.

“How can this be. I can’t detect him anymore, he must have known about the aura that Huotao placed on him and tricked us into fighting these demons and Yaksha. He must’ve already known about our plan. Damn it.” Lie Sha had been tricked by Xuanyuan, but was unable to kill him which made him furious. He vented his anger in each of his attacks, he was using the Lie Family’s Heaven class technique.

“Burning Sword of Heaven!”

Flames emerged from the tip of his sword and formed small swords. With a numerous of flame swords shooting out from the tip of his sword, the attack seemed like a waterfall of fire. Eight Yakshas were burnt to ashes, only the echo of their shrieks remained.

Nu Long was also furious that he had been tricked. He started to pour his Qi into his hammer. The decorative dragon on the side of the hammer opened its mouth, a golden light shone from the dragon’s mouth and a loud roar filled the air.

“Voice of the Golden Dragon!”

The golden light hit a Yaksha, crushing its bones and flesh like they were tofu.

Xuanyuan was surprised to see how powerful the two of them were when fighting, but he still decided to concentrate his attention on collecting the valuable fighting stones. There were around fifty fighting stones laying on the ground which were at least a hundred jin each, some of them were a thousand jin. But Xuanyuan paid no attention to the weight of the stones as he swiftly shoved them all inside his ring.

The Yakshas fell from the air one by one. Even though they weren't able to injure Lie Sha and Nu Long, they were forced to consume all of their strength-replenishing pills when fighting against the Yaksha. Even though the creatures didn't know any techniques, the sheer amount of them was enough to drain the two men of their strength. Below them, there were still many hostile demons which continued to attack towards them.

The worst part was that not a single elixir dropped from the slaughtered Yakshas. Yakshas with higher strength often had elixirs inside their bodies. However, those Yakshas had their strengths enhanced because of the disposition.

Even more disappointing was ahead – Xuanyuan was gone. He was so far away, they couldn't find a single trace of him. Their mirror was useless once they lost track of him.

They left the disposition and both exchanged a glance.

“He tricked us. I won't let him live any longer!” Nu Long was furious.

No matter what, he still has to return to complete his mission. We'll station ourselves near the portal. No one must know of our actions. Otherwise, Fung Lie will come for revenge.” Lie Sha's face was dark.

Nu Long trembled at Lie Sha's words. What they had done was extremely shady. If Fung Lie didn't know about it, he couldn't do anything. But if it became public knowledge, they'd be punished by the Enforcement team and Fung Lie would definitely sentence them to death. As a true disciple, he had the right to sentence those who were deemed guilty.

"What if we can't catch him?" Nu Long asked.

"Then we'll use Yan Ziyun from the School of Yuehua to threaten him. We'll kill her if he says a word about today." Lie Sha had already learnt of Xuanyuan's background, this was information he could use to his advantage when things went wrong.

In fact, Xuanyuan was hiding very close to them under the cloak of the Dustless Helmet. He heard every word they said.

"How dare they threaten Yan Ziyun, she has absolutely nothing to do with this. I won't show them any mercy. It's time to check what is inside Xingyun's ring. There might be some interesting stuff that I can use against them." Xuanyuan pulled out a talisman, a powerful force was emanating from it. Greed chuckled at the sight of the talisman.

"Not bad. It's the Gold Spear Talisman. It's a grandmaster class talisman."

Xuanyuan smiled coldly and poured his Qi into the talisman. The talisman activated and he immediately threw it towards Lie Sha. The surrounding space was soon filled with countless golden spears which hurtled towards Lie Sha! Even though his armour was activated automatically, it couldn't withstand the power of a grandmaster talisman. In an instant, Lie Sha was minced into chunks of

flesh. He died before he was able to let out a scream. Only his set of upper rank earth instruments remained intact.

“Grandmaster class talisman!” Nu Long screamed in terror. This talisman could only be created after a month of effort from a powerful grandmaster. The cheapest price on the market was 300,000 king coins per talisman.

Xuanyuan swooped in and collected Lie Sha’s instruments and his ring. After noticing Xuanyuan, Nu Long regained his senses. He was shocked that Xuanyuan would have such a powerful talisman. If he had another one, Nu Long would be next.

“I’ll kill everyone from the School of Yuehua. They all died miserably because of you!” Nu Long threatened as he ran away at full speed.

Xuanyuan grabbed his Wind Spirit and jumped forward while activating his Dragon Boots. He was like a Xian of wind as he rushed forward with incredible speed. He was aiming to strike Nu Long’s back, but Nu Long seemed to have anticipated the attack and with a twist of his body he swung his hammer towards Xuanyuan. The hammer and Wind Spirit collided with a tremendous impact.

Xuanyuan felt a sharp pain in his arm which extended all the way to his chest. The pain was so much that he almost lost grip of the Wind Spirit. Nu Long had around two hundred and ten dragons of strength. Xuanyuan could not compete using only power alone.

But he was not the only one that was shocked by the result. Nu Long was surprised to feel that Xuanyuan’s strength had grown to a hundred and ninety dragons! It was much more powerful than the information given by Huotao. He

thought Xuanyuan would only have around a hundred dragons of strength!

Nu Long took out three Golden Arrow talismans. They formed into a single powerful arrow with six hundred dragons of power which pierced towards Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan didn't have any time to evade from such a short range. His armour was activated automatically and a shield formed which blocked the incoming arrow. However, he was propelled a hundred metres backwards and sixty percent of his Qi was drained.

"Hahaha... Go to hell!" Nu Long was delighted to see his attack succeed and quickly followed up with another attack. He released his Qi into his hammer and a golden light shot towards Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan was shocked but he was quick to evade the incoming attack. He immediately jumped into the air and barely dodged the golden light.

Nu Long was surprised to see Xuanyuan's quick reactions, he was clearly experienced at fighting. He activated his hammer to attack again.

But Xuanyuan didn't plan on giving him another chance. He gripped his Wind Spirit tightly and aimed towards Nu Long while still in the air. A giant dragon image appeared behind him as he unleashed his attack. He was so fast, Nu Long didn't have a chance to dodge, only his armour could protect him. Xuanyuan's first strike didn't have the power to kill Nu Long through the armour, so he quickly retreated. While he retreated, Xuanyuan took out three Burning Sky talismans and threw them towards Nu Long. Nu Long recognized the talismans and his face drained of colour.

"NOOOOOO!"

## Chapter 112 – Earning Money

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

1/3 Sunday Chapter

Next one in an hour

Three Burning Sky Talismans exploded in an instant unleashing an intense heat and a wave of fire. The attack was equal to three Xuanyuan's attacking at the same time.

Since gold was weak to fire, Nu Long's gold based armour would be weakened and unable to withstand the full power of the attack. Since the majority of his Qi was already consumed during his fight with the Yakshas and from attacking Xuanyuan, the attack would be lethal. Nu Long had used all of his strength-replenishing pills beforehand, leaving him no way out. His armour continued to drain his Qi until the last of his Qi was used, then the protective spell on the armour faded, allowing the wave of fire to engulf Nu Long.

Nu Long only screamed for a few seconds before his body was reduced to ashes. Only his instruments and ring escaped the intense heat unharmed, which Xuanyuan happily added to his wealth.

From their rings, Xuanyuan had extracted their inner tokens and transferred all their merit points over to himself. Eight merit dragons flew from the tokens and disappeared inside Xuanyuan's token. That meant they had a combined total of eight hundred million merit points. Xuanyuan was thankful that Nu Long and Lie Sha had worked so hard to save so many merit points, it was a great gift to him. Afterwards Xuanyuan casually threw their tokens away.

"I need to find a safe place where I can cut open these stones. Haha, how great! I received so much with such little effort!" Xuanyuan grinned. He really felt good after robbing his enemies.

"Work harder, boy! I'll take those instruments you've just collected. They

should do. I am able to devour the power of upper rank earth instruments and above, so get me some of those!” Greed added.

“How come you’re always so greedy? You have already devoured so many of my jades and my crystals, you want to take away my instruments now too?” Inside his ring, the instruments of Lie Sha and Nu Long were already gone. Xuanyuan felt like his heart had been ripped from his chest.

“When I regain my powers, you will be dealing with Xian instruments. You understand nothing!” Greed said impatiently, “The spells I devour from those instruments can still be used to protect you so stop your whining.”

Xuanyuan smiled. It wasn’t a bad deal after all. Xuanyuan started to daydream, when would he be able to obtain a Xian instrument?

Xuanyuan avoided some demons and headed to a direction with less creatures. Finally, he arrived at an abandoned cave which was overflowing with glowing grass. There wasn’t a single trace of demon aura inside.

He immediately took out a human-head sized stone from his ring and cut through it with his dagger. He learned from the Book of Acquisition, stones needed to be cut like you’re peeling an apple. Slowly, he was surrounded by thin layers of stone. The stone in his hands was becoming smaller as he continued to peel layer after layer. The stone was already half the size it was previously.

“There can’t be nothing of value inside such a large fighting stone! I refuse to believe it.”

But the next second, a bright light shone from his hand and a powerful Qi

burst through the final few layers of stone, shedding them like a snake skin.

There was a crystal inside which was slightly blemished. Xuanyuan could tell immediately that it was an upper class crystal. Slightly disappointed, Xuanyuan moaned, “Only fifty jin worth of upper class crystal?”

“You’ve forgotten the value of crystals! You think crystals grow like grass? You think it’s easy to stumble onto them? Do you remember how many merit points you spent to get those top class crystals? It’s pretty good already to have this much. The amount of crystal you’ve got there could be exchanged for fifty thousand jin of top class jades. You can easily finish your mission with this.” Greed scolded.

Xuanyuan nodded and put away the crystal. He then started to peel away at the other stones. As he became more experienced with peeling the stones, his speed gradually increased. The second stone he cut released a much brighter light than the other crystal. This crystal had no blemishes and a much stronger Qi, it was forty jin of pure top class crystal.

“Wonderful! I wonder if there are any unusual crystals inside these stones!” Xuanyuan laughed. He started cutting through a large stone that was at least two hundred jin. He was extremely hopeful for what he might find, “According to the Book of Acquisition, larger stones have a higher chance of unusual crystals growing inside.”

However, when the entire stone was reduced to thin sheets of stone, there was absolutely nothing inside.

“How’s this possible?” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes, annoyed that he had to slowly peel such a large stone, only to receive no reward.

“Stop complaining. Not every stone will contain jade or crystal. Otherwise, every large stone would be priceless and the merchants wouldn’t need to gamble when buying large stone. You don’t have a set of heavenly eyes, it’s normal for you to get unlucky with your choices. Sometimes, the most experienced gemmologist might still choose wrong and buy a worthless stone.” Greed explained.

Xuanyuan spent the next few days peeling his collection of large stones. He had collected fifty large fighting stones and ten of them were empty. Apart from the first fifty jin of crystals, he acquired two thousand and nine hundred jin of upper class crystals, and one thousand, eight hundred jin of top class crystals.

“Hahaha, even though I didn’t get any unusual crystals, this is still a really good harvest.” Xuanyuan was pleased. These stones were collected by the Yakshas, they handpicked the highest quality stones from the surrounding mines. Otherwise, the harvest would have been much less. Normally, you would only find a jin of crystals among five hundred jin of stones. Countless people would go crazy if they knew that Xuanyuan acquired so many crystals with such ease. Greed was also in a merry mood. Most of those crystals would be absorbed by Greed, after all.

“Good stuff! We should head back now, once we get back, we can use these top class crystals to create a disposition which will help me break through to the king realm. I’ll be a king fighter in no time. Then we’ll see who will dare to challenge me within the List of Merit!” Xuanyuan said as he stood up and left.

\*\*\*\*\*

At this moment, next to the portal for returning to the inner sect was two grandmaster fighters. They were not true disciples, but they were Elders of the Inner Sect. They had been sent by the Lie Family and the Nu Family.

Three days ago, Lie Sha and Nu Long's life tokens shattered, which meant they had been killed. The main houses of both families were shocked to receive such news. They weren't sure who killed them, but they were inner disciples which were on the List of Merits. They had a bright future and would have brought endless esteem to their families. The families wouldn't let this go, so they sent two grandmaster fighters to investigate. These Elders would not be suspected if they killed a disciple inside the mine, more specifically Xuanyuan.

"Didn't that Xuanyuan boy only have a hundred and eight dragons of strength? It's impossible for Lie Sha and Nu Long to die by his hands. If I catch him, I'll maim him and throw him into the mine to die!" A muscular man said furiously. He was not as powerful as Xingyun, but Xuanyuan was still much weaker in comparison.

"I'm also curious as to what happened. He produced the seven-coloured light during his test. He'll eventually have to come through the portal, we can just deal with him then. He'll wish he's dead!" Lie Zan had a bloodthirsty look on his face. His family had two requests – the death of Lie Sha's killer and the death of Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan ran towards the portal, completely ignorant of the trap waiting for him.

## Chapter 113 – Ambushed

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

2/3 Sunday Chapter

Next one in an hour

Xuanyuan looked inside his ring, two thousand and nine hundred jin of crystal was spread surrounding the beast egg. The egg was emitting a dim black light and absorbing the power from the crystals at a visible rate. The crystals instantly darkened and exploded into grey powder, leaving only the egg behind.

Watching such a gluttonous display, Xuanyuan sighed heavily. He had peeled through several thousand jin of stone over the past few days to get these crystals, but they only lasted a few moments. The egg and Greed were the enemy of all wealth! However Xuanyuan could feel that the egg's power had been enhanced from before. The red sun mark on the shell was now shiny and golden. He was still curious as to what was inside the egg? It was the emperor's mount, it must've been a terrifying and imposing beast. Maybe it was a powerful dragon? Or a winged tiger? Could it be the legendary phoenix?

'He will be so shocked when he sees what comes from the egg after it hatches.' Greed grinned viciously.

Xuanyuan opened Lie Sha and Nu Long's rings and found 2.3 million king coins. He now had more than 10 million king coins in total. He was probably one of the richest inner disciples. It wouldn't be a problem for him to buy a full set of top rank earth instruments. There were also many medicines and pills inside their rings, including restriction elixirs and enhancement elixirs. Restriction elixirs worked as protection which restricted poisons like the air in the Mo nest from entering one's body; the enhancement elixir would aid in the absorption of Qi into the body. They were precious to ordinary people, but Xuanyuan had no use for them. His speed of absorbing Qi was already fast enough, he didn't need to increase it. But since the elixirs were still worth quite a lot of money, he kept them and planned to exchange them for merit points.

Then he continued to search through Xingyun's ring.

"There were two thousand jin of top class crystals! He was such a rich true disciple!" Xuanyuan didn't see the crystals when he searched the ring for weapons before. Perhaps Greed already sensed them, but said nothing.

"Talisman of Sand! Another grandmaster class talisman, he was really something. Arrow talisman! Also a grandmaster class talisman. He was so rich that he had three grandmaster class talismans in his ring!"

Apart from the one he used to kill Lie Sha, Xuanyuan now had five grandmaster talismans. He wanted to save the three grandmaster talismans he received from Bai. The talismans he received from Bai were from peak grandmaster fighters, they were much more powerful than Xingyun's talismans. He would much prefer to use the talismans that he robbed from other people than spend his own wealth.

"The Elixir of Fury." Greed said when Xuanyuan grabbed an elixir from the ring. "This is a very powerful elixir; it can enhance your power by three folds, but when the power wears off, there will be countless unknown side effects. It will cause large amounts of damage to your body."

Even so, Xuanyuan knew that he should hold onto this, in case of emergency.

"Elixir of Kings. That's worth a lot. I think he wanted to save it and use it to assist him when breaking through realms. Now it's all yours." Greed chuckled.

Other pills and elixirs weren't very suitable for Xuanyuan, but he still kept them to exchange for merit points.

“Xingyun will definitely want your head for stealing such a large fortune, hahaha. You have to be careful, boy. You stole so many of his treasures and you have already made lots of enemies. Actually, the Emperor also advanced because he was under constant siege from his enemies.” Greed teased.

“I’m not the Devouring Emperor. I’ll be Emperor Xuanyuan. I don’t want to be attacked constantly...” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes.

—

Slowly, Xuanyuan approached the portal.

“Look, it’s the boy. He’s here.”

“Looks like he hasn’t noticed our presence. We should kill him now.”

Two voices were quietly speaking while they lurked in the shadow, then two forces rushed towards Xuanyuan.

”DIE!”

Xuanyuan was shocked and his armour activated automatically. The attacks instantly consumed eighty percent of his Qi. He now understood that his enemies this time were grandmaster fighters. They were hovering in the sky and releasing an overwhelming strength.

He immediately activated the Dustless Helmet and disappeared from sight,

while swallowing a strength-replenishing pill and making a dash towards the portal.

“Want to run? It’s not so easy. Eyes of Flame!” Lie Zan’s eyes turned red like flames. This was the two-star heaven class technique from the Lie Family. It could see through any illusions and nothing could be hidden from those eyes, including the Dustless Helmet.

Xuanyuan realized the Dustless Helmet couldn’t help him, but he didn’t remove his invisibility. He was focused on rushing into the portal, he knew that they chose to ambush him, because they were afraid of being seen by others. He needed to run to the portal in order to save himself. However, the landscape wasn’t making his escape easy. Glowing grass was extremely dense in this area since it was close to the portal. Also the road he had chosen was less than twenty metres wide.

“It looks like they are members from the Lie and Nu Family!” Xuanyuan recognized the technique which used flames, similar to Lie Sha. He was shocked to see that the families had actually sent grandmaster fighters to kill him. Judging from their clothes, they were Elders in from the sect!

“Golden Spear Sea!” Nu Fei summoned an overwhelming Qi and a sea of gold submerged Xuanyuan’s body.

Xuanyuan had no time to hesitate. He took out the Talisman of Sand. Activating it with his Qi, he threw the talisman in the direction of his two opponents. Suddenly, a hurricane of sand absorbed the gold Qi. It was like a spinning wrecking ball which hurtled towards Lie Zan and Nu Fei. The two of them were unprepared to encounter such an attack.

“Isn’t this Brother Xingyun’s talisman of sand? It’s made from star sand and star stones. Quickly defend!” They both shouted as they released their Qi. Their middle rank earth instruments activated to defend them against the powerful talisman.

Even though they were the elders from the inner sect, they still only had one piece of upper rank earth instrument each. They both chose an armour. They could only buy better instruments after they saved the required funds. Their family deemed them to be less talented than Lie Sha and Nu Long, so they didn’t receive as much attention and were given less funding.

However, they were still grandmaster fighters. Combining their strength, they were able to stop the attack from the talisman of sand. The hills and stones around them exploded and shattered when encountering the hurricane.

Xuanyuan seized the chance and was rushing towards the portal, but suddenly a shield of light appeared which blocked his escape. There was a spell formation around the entire area which created a shield, trapping him inside.

“Looks like they are determined to kill me here.”

A red and gold Qi shield was blocking Xuanyuan. He was surrounded by small hills on both sides, there was nowhere for him to run. He gripped his Wind Spirit spear tightly and pierced towards the shield of light.

“Don’t you dare destroy the shield!” Lie Zan was surprised to see Xuanyuan unleashing a hundred and ninety dragons of strength in his strike. The spell they initially set up would be unbreakable if it was a normal wild fighter, but it was Xuanyuan.

Lie Zan summoned a sea of fire and attacked towards Xuanyuan from above. Xuanyuan immediately activated another grandmaster class talisman.

“Arrow talisman!”

The talisman a golden stream of light which formed into ten thousand golden arrows. They shone brightly in the dark mine, like stars in the night sky. The frightening sound of so many arrows piercing through the air was enough to cause a person’s scalp to grow numb.

Nu Fei sensed the imminent danger and screamed, “Run. The arrows were made from Xingyun’s Qi! We cannot stop them, we need to run!

## Chapter 114 – Shock

Translated by: Pan

Edited by: Notsaneinthebrain & LikyLiky

3/3 Sunday Chapter

All better no one will notice that anything was ever wrong.

The night was dark, only the light from the stars covered the sky.

Nu Fei and Lie Zan were very quick. Within seconds, they rushed behind the shield of light, but the wall started to crack after only a few golden arrows.

“There’s nowhere else to go! Reinforce the shield!”

They were panicking while unleashing their Qi to strengthen the shield defending them. The middle rank earth instruments on them were at full power, ready to protect them. But as the next wave of golden arrows arrived, the shield and their protection was slowly chipping away. They were quickly burning through their Qi reserves and their faces had grown pale.

“We need to use our blood!” Lie Zan shouted, they both started to merge their blood with their Qi which turned into a fresh stream of power. Grandmaster fighters refined their blood so they were able to use their blood as fuel to continue fighting.

Xuanyuan laughed cruelly, “Haha, I’ll be leaving now. I’ll make sure to report everything to Brother Fung Lie and see what happens. The Lie Family and the Nu Family are really in trouble now!”

The men were caught off guard by his comment, but there was nothing they could do other than defend against the stream of golden arrows. Lie Zan had used too much of his Qi and was unable to use his technique anymore. Xuanyuan quickly disappeared and was nowhere to be seen.

When all the arrows finally disappeared, Lie Zan and Nu Fei were completely exhausted. They had to defend against two powerful grandmaster class talismans. They had only just stepped into the grandmaster realm, it was almost impossible for them to survive.

“Damn it. The boy escaped. We didn’t think he would have gotten two grandmaster class talismans. They both belonged to Xingyun! It looks like the rumours were true about Xingyun’s arm being cut off by Fung Lie and the boy stealing his ring! Didn’t he know that Xingyun has three true disciples supporting him? He’ll be killed no matter what he does.”

“Let’s worry about us first. Fung Lie won’t let us go. Should we head back and tell our families?”

When the two of them were talking, a silent spear pierced through the air. Neither of them had time to react before a spear pierced from Lie Zan’s back and out from his chest, it pierced through his body and destroyed his heart. The Wind Spirit spear was extremely powerful and it unleashed its explosive power inside Lie Zan’s body, so even though grandmaster fighters were powerful, Lie Zan still died a pitiful death.

Xuanyuan then aimed for Nu Fei’s head. Nu Fei was the older of the two and only had a slight amount of Qi remaining. He only had a fraction of power left, enough to barely float from the floor. He wouldn’t have expected Xuanyuan to kill Lie Zan so easily. He panicked as he shouted, “How dare you!”

“Ha, why wouldn’t I dare? Go to hell!” Xuanyuan smiled coldly, Nu Fei’s brain exploded as the spear pierced through his skull. Xuanyuan grabbed both of their corpses and headed towards the portal. “Aren’t you both too naïve? You really believed me when I said I was leaving?”

They both let their guard down since they thought they would be able to kill Xuanyuan with ease, they had let their guard down and in the end they fell to Xuanyuan trickery. Xuanyuan immediately took their rings and tokens, then transferred all the merit points to himself – four merit dragons, 400 million merit points. Xuanyuan wondered if these people were trying to make him rich rather than kill him. They were many wealthy individuals from the powerful families. Xuanyuan’s wallet was almost bursting after he added another million king coins. He also gave Greed the upper rank earth instrument from each of them. He knew it was an emergency, Greed would help him with all the techniques and protection spells it devoured.

“Greed, I can’t give you their bodies or their life essence. The Nu and the Lie families wanted to kill me, they have to receive punishment. I will let everyone know the consequences of making me your enemy!”

“Hahaha, good, very good, boy. You’re ruthless. I’ll just wait for more crystals then.”

\*\*\*\*\*

At the portal, there were many disciples who had already finished their mission, they were waiting for enough people to arrive so they could activate the portal. Then they would officially become inner disciples. Fang Yuyou and her guards were among them. They refused to go with the last batch of disciples and were waiting at the portal.

Four elders were busy gossiping as they waited for disciples to arrive.

“It’s been several days already, do you think Xuanyuan, the boy who produced the seven-coloured light, will finish his mission? I wonder if he offended someone powerful.”

“I heard that he was ordered to collect much more than the other disciples to finish the mission. It’ll be very difficult.”

“I heard he’s not very powerful. Are you sure it was really him who produced the seven-coloured light? He probably won’t last long. All the people chosen by Brother Fung Lie have such miserable fates. He won’t be any different.”

“He’s got a lot of potential. He won’t die that easily. He should have the Xians protecting him.”

“That’s impossible. Even though he has potential to become a Xian, he’s still not a reincarnation. The Xians won’t go out of their way for him.”

“What’s impossible? Does someone like you have expert knowledge about Xuanyuan’s potential?” Fang Yuyou overheard the elders’ conversation and felt a great sense of anger. So she jumped up to intervene.

“Get lost, girl. He’s only a stupid little boy. What can he do?” One of the elders mocked.

Suddenly a violent wind rushed towards them. Everyone turned around and looked closely, someone was rushing towards them while carrying two corpses.

Fang Yuyou was the first one to react, “Young master Xuanyuan!”

Everyone in the room had their eyes fixated on Xuanyuan. His armour was shining with a bright golden light, his helmet gave him a sense of carefree Xian, his steps were like a powerful dragon. He looked majestic and imposing. It was a scene that many people would remember for the rest of their lives.

In each of Xuanyuan’s hands was a dead body, both were dressed in the clothes of elders. Many disciples recognized the dead bodies, they were wondering why these elders were inside the mine.

“These two men laid an ambush in the hopes of taking my life, so I killed them. They were here on orders from the Lie Family and the Nu Family. I will make sure they are punished!”

Xuanyuan’s statement shocked the four elders. They looked at each other in confusion.

“He killed two grandmaster fighters? He’s only a wild fighter, how is that possible?”

“Look at their wounds. Those wounds were clearly made by the wind spirit spear. He must have killed them, I’m certain. He’s crazy! Not even Brother Fung Lie could achieve such an incredible feat when he was young.”

While holding the dead bodies of two grandmaster fighters, Xuanyuan looked like a god of death. Many inner disciples felt like they were looking at an invincible giant.

“Elders, activate the portal. I’m going back to the inner sect.” Xuanyuan said coldly.

They would normally need to wait for more people to activate the portal. However, Xuanyuan, with his majestic and imposing aura, was giving them an order. The four of them nodded profusely and started to activate the portal.

Xuanyuan spotted Fang Yuyou inside the portal. They exchanged glances and nodded to the other. Suddenly a bright light filled the air and everyone was sent back to the inner sect.

When Xuanyuan finally disappeared from sight, the four elders finally relaxed,

“That was so insane!”

“He really killed two elders!”

“He was so scary!”

## Chapter 115 – Fight for the Bodies!

Xuanyuan carried the bodies all the way to the Judgment Stand. All the inner disciples-to-be needed to go there to collect merit points for the mission and to become an official inner disciple. Some people might attempt to cheat and purchase their jades, crystals and elixirs from dealers before the mine test, but they couldn't hide the truth once they were on the Judgement Stand.

Xuanyuan followed behind Fang Yuyou and her guards, but didn't approach and join their group. Since they had finished the test early, the line to the Judgment Stand was still short.

Minister Baizhan frowned when he noticed the dead bodies of two elders, but someone quickly whispered in his ear to inform him of the situation.

"You've obtained quite the achievements, brother Xuanyuan. It seems like you administered justice by killing these two rogues."

"Thank you, Minister." Xuanyuan replied. Then he casually threw the dead bodies to the side while taking out a hundred demon elixirs, a Yaksha elixir, many bottles of pills and medicines he collected from Lie Sha, Lie Zan, Nu Long and Nu Fei. He also took out the hundred jin of jades and fifty jin of crystals he needed to pass the test. Baizhan was slightly shocked when he saw everything that Xuanyuan had acquired.

"Dear lord, he needed a hundred jin of jades and fifty jin of crystals to pass the test! And he finished the mission in only four days! That's insane!"

"That's right. I thought the disciple who produced the seven-coloured light

would be given a more difficult test, but I can't believe he finished it in such a short time."

Numerous inner disciples were in awe.

"He has unlimited potential." Baizhan thought to himself when he calculated the merit points Xuanyuan would receive. "That will be 170 million merit points in total, brother Xuanyuan."

Xuanyuan now had 1.45 billion merit points. Most of the inner disciples on the List of Merits would need several years to acquire so much.

—

"Hahaha, the kid finished the mission in four days which exceeded everyone's expectations!"

"We only asked for ten elixirs, so he wouldn't put himself in too much danger, but he finished with over a hundred!"

"Take a close look, his strength has enhanced from a hundred and eight to a hundred and ninety dragons. It's settled, he will be my disciple!"

"This precious talent will be my disciple, you can go to hell."

The Xians started to argue amongst themselves, but who could blame them? Xuanyuan's talent was too shocking. Luckily, many of the Xians already had disciples, otherwise, the competition would have been even more fierce.

“He’s exchanging all of his merit points for top class crystals again. Why does he need so many crystals? Did he absorb all of the previous crystals already?”

“That’s the most possible solution. His strength must have improved so quickly because of the crystals. Maybe he has the legendary “Body of All Earth”, that would explain why he needs so many stones, jades and crystals, it’s to increase his strength!”

“The kid is probably the reincarnation of a type of fighting earth. That’s right, only an earth element body can contain such an abundance of Qi...”

—

When Xuanyuan finished exchanging his crystals and before he could say anything to Fang Yuyou, two overwhelming forces came crashing towards the Judgement Stand. Xuanyuan looked up and saw another two grandmaster fighters that had come from Lie Family and the Nu Family. However, these two were much stronger than the others, they were on the same level as Xingyun in terms of power. Their auras were much different from Lie Zan and Nu Fei, it was likely that they were both true disciples!”

“Brother Xuanyuan, hand over those bodies, we will handle the rest.” One of the men said as he glared at Xuanyuan. He would have probably tried to kill Xuanyuan if they weren’t on the Judgment Stand.

Xuanyuan narrowed his eyes and smiled half-heartedly, “Who are you? And why should I give you the bodies?”

“I’m Lie Gu, a true disciple, and Lie Zan was a member of my family. I have the right to claim his body on behalf of my family.” Lie Gu clearly radiated the aura of a peak grandmaster fighter. The pressure he imposed on Xuanyuan suffocated him. Even though Lie Zan and Nu Fei were both grandmaster fighters, they had only barely advanced into the grandmaster realm. Their strength couldn’t be compared with a peak grandmaster fighter.

“That’s right. Hand over Nu Fei’s body, then there will be no problem. If you disobey us, we’ll charge you for disrespecting your elders. Kneel before us and hand over the bodies.” Another man, named Nu Duan, interrupted. He was also unleashing his pressure towards Xuanyuan’s body.

“Boy, they want to destroy all the evidence. If you don’t have the bodies, they can accuse you of murdering the elders without cause. Don’t let them take the bodies.” Greed said urgently, “Damn it, the Xians of the sect are watching, so I can’t help you deal with them, they might be able to detect me.”

“Don’t even think about taking the bodies from me. You want to steal away the evidence? Your family members attempted to ambush me and were killed instead. Yet you want to punish me for thi.....” Xuanyuan couldn’t continue and instead started to cough up blood. He could feel a sharp pain from all of his organs and he could hear the sound of his bones being crushed under the pressure. However, he clenched his teeth and grabbed hold of the bodies as he straightened his back, standing straight without fear.

He could probably take the pressure released from one peak grandmaster fighter, but the pressure from two of them was enough to injure him. When Minister Baizhan saw what was happening, he started to aid Xuanyuan. He was also a peak grandmaster so he was able to negate half of the pressure being applied to Xuanyuan. Lie Gu frowned and asked Baizhan coldly, “Baizhan, you’re only a mere Minister of Judgment from the inner sect. It isn’t your place to interfere with the business of true disciples. Do you want to die?”

Baizhan was not afraid, he burst into laughter and mocked Lie Gu, “You would dare to kill me? I’m from the Taibai Trade Centre! Do you think that you can go to war with us with just your two families? If you dare to kill me, go ahead. Look, I have deactivated my protection.”

Lie Gu and Nu Duan hadn’t accounted for Baizhan interfering with their plan.

“Why would we want to kill you, brother Bai? You must have misunderstood us. Xuanyuan is a traitor to the sect who killed a member of my family. We just want their bodies as evidence, we are here to punish a traitor. But how dare he ignore us true disciples?” Nu Duan smiled. He applied even more pressure when he uttered the last few words. Xuanyuan immediately felt that his head was ringing. He started coughing up more blood, three of his ribs had been broken under the increased pressure. He didn’t have the power to resist for any longer and released his hand, dropping the bodies.

“That’s a good boy. Even if you hand over the bodies, we won’t let you go for killing elders of the sect.”

“That’s right! How dare you use my family’s belongings to exchange for merit points? You’re too bold. Kneel down and beg for forgiveness!” Lie Gu shouted. His voice was filled with a powerful Qi which crashed into Xuanyuan.

Every one of Xuanyuan’s bones started to crack. He was doing his best to endure the pain and hadn’t cried out, but he continued to cough up more and more blood. They were going to kill Xuanyuan.

“You’re killing him! How dare you!” Fang Yuyou screamed. She took out a piece of jade and immediately crushed it, releasing a terrifying force.

## Chapter 116 – Earning Big

“That’s a space jade created by a Xian! Oh no, I know that aura! She’s related to Fang Yun.”

“Interesting! Looks like the kid also has a talent for flirting with women. He has captured the heart of the young lady Fang.”

”Hahaha... he’ll make a great disciple for sure!”

The Xians continued with their discussion like they were bored children.

—

The jade created a tear in space, from which a man stepped out. His arrival caused everyone in the area to feel a tremendous sense of danger coming from him. He was Fang Yun.

“My beloved niece, what troubles you?” Fang Yun was a very clean and handsome looking man, his voice was gentle and soothing.

Fang Yuyou quickly summarized the entire event, except she added parts where Lie Gu and Nu Duan humiliated her and insulted her uncle, Fang Yun. There were tears forming in her eyes as she spoke about how they humiliated her and cursed her uncle. Everyone was left speechless when they saw her incredible acting.

—

“She is clearly twisting the story to make them seem in the wrong. Her methods are harsh, but it gives them a taste of their own medicine.”

“An eye for an eye. That girl is extremely clever.”

—

“You little bitch, what nonsense are you spouting?” Lie Gu and Nu Duan pointed at Fang Yuyou as they shouted angrily.

Fang Yun frowned deeply as he glared at Lie Gu and Nu Duan. His gaze was filled with murderous intent. The pressure created from his glare caused a few of their bones to break. They fell from the sky and heavily crashed into the ground. Fang Yun was demonstrating the power of an imperial realm fighter.

“You two have used the techniques which were graciously given to you by the sect to bully its inner disciples. You think you can insult me? You think that you can call my niece a bitch? You think that I wouldn’t dare to kill you? KNEEL!!!” Fang Yun knew Fang Yuyou was embellishing the story, but it was a perfect chance for him to establish his reputation and status within the sect.

Both men were reduced to pitiful, trembling children. They knelt down and started to kowtow to Fang Yun.

“Brother Fang Yun, we didn’t say those things about you. Please have mercy! We wouldn’t dare to insult you.”

“That’s right, brother Fang Yun. We are only joking with your niece; we wouldn’t call her that otherwise.”

“Bullshit!” Fang Yun directly slapped both of their faces sending over a dozen teeth flying from each of their mouths.

“Then you are accusing my niece of lying?” Fang Yun glanced at Xuanyuan. All his organs had suffered injuries, most of his bones were broken or fractured, and yet he was still standing straight without fear. Fang Yun admired his bravery and it seemed like his niece was interested in him. He made a few movements with his hands and pushed a gentle Qi into Xuanyuan’s body which healed him with incredible speed.

Xuanyuan smiled bitterly. He ended up needing Fang Yuyou’s help, after all.

“No, no. We were wrong, we were wrong. Please don’t kill us. We’ll do whatever you say!” There was nothing else they could do except begging for mercy. Fang Yun appearing was not part of their plan. He was one of the most powerful true disciples, even more powerful than Fung Lie. Fung Lie had only just stepped into the imperial realm. Because Fung Lie was the reincarnation of a wind spirit, he had the strength to fight against peak imperial fighters, but he stood no chance against Fang Yun.

Fang Yun nodded and turned to Xuanyuan, “I would normally spare their lives considering they are my fellow disciples, but since it was the two of you who suffered at their hands, I will let you two decide their fate.”

Xuanyuan was completely healed thanks to the power of Fang Yun. Seeing that Lie Gu and Nu Duan were now being crushed under Fang Yun’s pressure, a large smile covered Xuanyuan’s face, “My two brother disciples only made a few

minor mistakes. It wouldn't be right for them to die because of it."

"Brother Xuanyuan is right. Thank you for understanding, brother Xuanyuan." Lie Gu and Nu Duan were surprised and delighted that Xuanyuan spared their lives.

"But there should always be compensation. I believe as true disciples, my two brothers would be able to earn a great deal of money. Since I am all alone and have to support myself, I barely have enough to live a simple life. It's truly a shame that I am unable to afford new techniques and instruments, don't you agree? So it would be great if you could give me the instruments and rings that you have with you." Xuanyuan's voice didn't sound like he was angry, quite the opposite, he sounded quite pitiful. Lie Gu and Nu Duan both looked very uneasy while Xuanyuan looked amused.

"This kid is interesting..." Fang Yun was also amused as he watched the display.

"What's the matter? Do you value a few possessions more than your own lives?" Fang Yun said, causing Lie Gu and Nu Duan to tremble. They quickly handed Xuanyuan their instruments and rings.

"Xuanyuan you bastard, I'll shred you to pieces. You are foolish for letting me go today. Luckily, he didn't take my most important possession, my true token." Lie Gu was furious that he had suffered such a defeat, so he directed his anger towards Xuanyuan.

"Good the kid is stupid and didn't ask for my true token. I've got all of my merit points saved inside. I can still recover from these losses and after that I will take his life." Nu Duan thought.

Xuanyuan moved over to examine the instruments when he suddenly looked confused, “Oh right, how could I be so forgetful, you can help me with merit points too. Hand over your true tokens.”

Both Nu Duan and Lie Gu felt their hearts drop, but they didn’t have a choice in the matter. Xuanyuan took a deep breath when he saw the amount of merit points they had gathered over the year – 22.8 billion. He was still so poor when compared to them.

“Lady Fang, we should split these merit points.” Xuanyuan said as he turned to Fang Yuyou.

Fang Yuyou blushed and nodded shyly. One merit dragon after another flew into their inner tokens. Xuanyuan’s token, once empty, was now worth 11.4 billion merit points. He also checked all of the pills, talismans, coins and crystals, he then gave Fang Yuyou half of everything. He then gave the upper rank earth instrument set to Greed, which caused it to grow excited.

“Wonderful! Wonderful! I really like this girl. Boy, you should keep her around. She’s a fine woman...”

Xuanyuan ignored Greed’s nonsense and continued to count his treasures. He had four grandmaster class talismans, four million king coins and three thousand four hundred jin of top class crystals.

Lie Gu and Nu Duan’s hearts were bleeding as they glared at Xuanyuan. They felt like their flesh was being cut off piece by piece.

Fang Yun was glad to see that Xuanyuan shared everything equally with his

niece.

“Brothers, your families both sent people to assassinate me. It’s only right that someone must be punished, but if each family gives me fifty thousand jin of top class crystals, then I will pardon all your families’ crimes against me.” Xuanyuan added after he counted all of the possessions inside the rings. Even Fang Yun was a bit shocked when he heard this. Xuanyuan was a money sucking vampire!

—

The Xians who were watching were all laughing.

“I really like this kid. I want him as my disciple. No one is better suited!”

“How rare it is to find such financially conscious disciple. If he is my inheritor, my mountain will be prosperous forever!”

“So that’s why he wouldn’t hand over the bodies! He wanted to use them to extort money. He’s a genius!”

## Chapter 117 – Five Old Men

Lie Gu and Nu Duan both widened their eyes when they heard Xuanyuan's demands -fifty thousand jin of top class crystals-that was an unreasonable demand. Did he think that crystals were something that could be grown like vegetables?"

"What's wrong? You don't think your lives are worth more than fifty thousand jin of crystals?" Xuanyuan smiled at them creepily.

They both jumped like a cat who had its tail stepped on and urgently replied, "Of course it's worth. We'll report this to the master of our houses, but we can't guarantee that they'll agree."

Xuanyuan took out his spear 'Wind Spirit', which unleashed a powerful storm of Qi. Through the pressure and the healing of his body, Xuanyuan's strength had enhanced to two hundred dragons of strength. It wouldn't be a problem for him to kill Lie Gu and Nu Duan in their injured state.

"They have no choice! Do you think I will allow your family to bully me over and over again? Lie Yun and Nu Qian attempted to kill me in the forest when I was coming to the sect, Lie Sha and Nu Long hunted me down inside the mine test, after that Lie Zan and Nu Fei tried to assassinate me. So I killed every last one of them. Your families must believe themselves to be really powerful, don't you agree? Considering everything that I was put through, you dare to say that they will refuse to compensate me?" Xuanyuan said as he slowly walked towards them.

He was releasing a bloodthirsty killing intent, when suddenly, another imposing force was felt rushing towards them. Xuanyuan looked up and noticed Fung Lie

was racing towards him on his Dragon Scale Horse. Xuanyuan bowed politely, “Brother Fung Lie.”

“I already heard about what happened. Those elders deserved something much worse than death. Lie Gu, Nu Duan, you are both true disciples, it’s against the rules for you to attack inner disciples. So the law enforcement team has given me permission to expel you both from the sect. You both are expelled from the sect and banished from its territory. This will act as a warning to the rest of the Lie and Nu family members. They should think carefully before they act in the future.” Fung Lie’s words made Lie Gu and Nu Duan panic.

“Please forgive us, brother Fung Lie. This will never happen again. Please don’t do this to us!” They continued to beg. It would be a large blow to their families if they lost their positions as true disciples.

Fung Lie pondered for a while before he turned to Xuanyuan, “Brother Xuanyuan is the victim here. If he’s willing to pardon you of your crimes, then I will agree.”

Xuanyuan knew that Fung Lie was aiding him, “All right, as I was just saying. Each family must give me a hundred thousand crystals as compensation. If you can’t do that, then I can only agree to let Brother Fung Lie expel you both from the sect! What do you think?”

“Yes, yes, yes. Of course!” They didn’t continue to argue. True disciples were given many benefits and special authority which benefitted their families tremendously, much more than a hundred thousand crystals. However, if they agreed to give Xuanyuan the original fifty thousand crystals, they could have had their crimes pardoned for much less.

“I won’t take your word for it, after all, you people are scum. Who knows if you will actually keep your word?” Xuanyuan continued.

“We can go to the Fire Mountain of my family’s Xian, there we can collect the crystals.” The Lie Family was one of the most influential families within the Fighting Dragons Sect. They had a Xian who lived in one of the mountains, who would help their family’s disciples when necessary.

“That’s right, you can go to Fury Mountain to collect the crystals from my family.” Nu Duan said hurriedly, forgetting about the wounds on his body.

Fung Lie looked at Xuanyuan and sighed. Suddenly Fung Lie’s voice appeared in Xuanyuan’s head, “You’re not daring enough. You should have asked for at least two hundred thousand jin from each of them.”

Fung Lie’s words filled Xuanyuan with regret, but he couldn’t take back his words. “But perhaps this is a good amount. If you asked for too much, I’m afraid the Xian of Fury and the Xian of Fire would intervene. They won’t care if it is only a small amount to settle the feud.”

Then Fung Lie ordered, “You must deliver two hundred thousand jin of crystals to brother Xuanyuan within a day. Brother Fang Yun will be the witness. If they are unable to fulfil these requirements, they shall be expelled. Agreed, brother Fang Yun?”

“Naturally.” Fang Yun said gracefully.

Then Xuanyuan handed over the remains of Lie Zan and Nu Fei. He had already extorted two hundred thousand jin of crystals, there was no point in keeping the

dead bodies any longer.

Lie Gu and Nu Duan endured the pain from their broken bodies and carried the bodies back with them, they were grandmaster fighters after all. Because their blood contained Qi, their bodies would heal at a rapid speed. In their hearts, they were still cursing Xuanyuan viciously.

Fung Lie added oil to the fire to scare the other true disciples, so they wouldn't dare to attack Xuanyuan without reason.

"Then this incident is concluded. Brother Xuanyuan, you did not disappoint me. Keep up the hard work and I will wait for you in the true sect. Brother Fang Yun, we should go back to the sect together. Since you saved Xuanyuan, I still need to thank you. We should go get some drinks together!" Fung Lie laughed happily and jumped on his horse to leave.

"Hahaha, wonderful." Fang Yun's clean and handsome face had a happy smile. Then the space around him shook slightly, before they both disappeared.

Xuanyuan and Fang Yuyou both exchanged a glance.

"Lady Fang, thank you for the assistance." Xuanyuan said.

"It was nothing. I've already received a great deal of rewards from helping. If you didn't save me in the mine, I wouldn't have made it out alive. Now we're even." Fang Yuyou shook her head. Xuanyuan mumbled something in reply and then left without a word, leaving Fang Yuyou feeling slightly lost, "It wouldn't hurt you to speak more."

She remembered how Xuanyuan repeatedly complimented her in the forest because he thought he had offended her and she felt slightly nostalgic. How nice would it be if they could be like that again? She felt like Xuanyuan was trying to avoid her.

—

On a mountain overlooking the Judgment Stand, was a pale faced Huotao who was mumbling to himself, “What did you say Xuanyuan did? He killed Nu Long and Lie Sha, and two elders? Does he have some secret powerful technique?”

“We not only failed to kill him, we made him rich at the same time. Two hundred thousand jin of crystals and more than ten billion merit points. That’s more than everything we have combined.” Xiang Tianku he said sourly with a look of jealousy.

“If we kill him, then all of his wealth will be ours. I never thought that this country bumpkin would be so lucky.” Kuiya said bitterly.

“It won’t be that simple. Sister Biyue, didn’t you say if this plan failed, you still had one more option? He’s all yours.” Huotao said.

“Of course, but I’ll have to ask Kuiya’s father, Kuixue to help.” A hint of insanity flashed through Biyue’s eyes.

“Of course. We can all share in his wealth after we kill Xuanyuan.” Kuiya replied immediately.

“Naturally.” Biyue have a sultry smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

Xuanyuan went back to his room, and noticed that Zhao Manfeng was waiting to greet him. There were also many disciples waiting to introduce themselves to him, but Xuanyuan sent them home. When everyone had left, he took out ten crystals the size of a fist and started to place them in different locations.

He recalled the contents from the Book of Acquisition and started to create the disposition, he created markings representing ten different landscapes on the crystals using his Qi. When all ten crystals were marked, a powerful Qi started to flow inside the crystal. This was a disposition suitable for a wild fighter to refine his marrows. He stepped into the disposition and started to recite the heavenly dragon technique. The speed of his training inside the disposition was enhanced by tenfold.

“This kid even knows how to make a disposition. Even though it’s only a tiny one, it’s still quite an accomplishment among the younger generation. Perhaps he really is the reincarnation of an earth spirit. Reincarnated earth spirits know how to create dispositions from the moment they are born.”

“That’s very possible. He’s got unlimited potential. By the way, I went ahead and did a thorough investigation into him, the kid is definitely not a spy from the Yin Clan.”

“I went to the School of Yuehua and looked into their future head, Yan Ziyun’s memories. The Yin Clan’s young lady, Yin Zhenluo was the one who taught him, so he is actually being hunted by the Yin clan. That’s the reason for him joining the Fighting Dragons Sect.”

“Poor boy. He didn’t even get taught a secret method from the Yin Clan, but they still want him dead. I’ll take him as my disciple and let him get his revenge

on them in the future.”

“The boy seems to have fallen for Yin Zhenluo, but that might be Yan Ziyun’s imagination...”

“That’s all right, isn’t Yin Zhenluo getting married? How about this, I have a suggestion, we should not fight over him, instead we take turns teaching the boy. Let’s see which of our techniques are more compatible with him, then that person will be his master. How about it? We’ve always wanted to know which of us is the best, I reckon this is the best way to determine it. When the kid’s completed his training, we will send him to trash the Eastern Dynasty.”

“I’m in, but won’t Lightning be furious if we do it without him?”

“He won’t be able to argue with all five of us. Wind took Fung Lie, us five will teach the boy, he is just fated to be without...”

“Earth, you’re a scoundrel. If everyone agrees to this, then it’s settled.”

## Chapter 118 – Visit in the Night

Inside the disposition, Xuanyuan was reciting the Heavenly Dragon technique. As he punched out, his fists created white Qi waves which transformed into the shape of heavenly dragons. Surrounding his body were numerous dragons, which were slowly merging into his body. With the aid provided by the disposition and the pearl, a day of normal practice was the same as ten days of hard work. Inside his body, his bone marrows seemed to be transforming into small dragons which were roaring and unleashing their power. His strength continued to surge upwards.

Two hundred and ten dragons!

Two hundred and twenty dragons!

Two hundred and thirty dragons!

Two hundred and forty dragons!

Two hundred and fifty-six dragons!

His strength had been enhanced from two hundred to two hundred and fifty-six dragons in just a single day. At this moment, he could feel that all of his marrows had been fully refined. The spinal marrow was like a slumbering dragon which connected every inch of his body.

The moment he finished practicing, the hundred jin of crystals that surrounded him exploded into powder, which was blown away with the wind. The disposition

had run out of power and broke.

“Great, I’ve finally reached the peak of the wild realm.” Xuanyuan beamed. Then he sat on his bed cross-legged. He was studying the information he had obtained from the Book of Acquisition in his mind. He found out just how useful the technique was once he entered the mine test. When he had free time, he would dedicate it to studying the context contained within the book.

—

“Good, good. The boy was able to increase his strength by fifty-six dragons in a single day. He’ll be quite something when he breaks through to the king realm. He’s just like Fung Lie in that aspect, both of them improve with astonishing speed.” The Xian of Fire, whose whole body was surrounded by red flames clapped his hands and said excitedly.

“Which one of us will be the first to teach him? I think I should be first, since he might be the reincarnation of an earth spirit.” A muscular old man said. His body was like a giant unmovable wall of muscle. He was the Xian of Earth.

“What a bunch of crap, Earth. You’re the one who suggested for us teach him together, but that doesn’t mean you will get the priority. I have an idea, we’ll all show up together and teach him our king realm techniques. We’ll decide after that.” The Xian of Gold said, his aura gave people the feeling that he was surrounded by sharp spikes that could cut through space itself.

“That’s good. We study different techniques, the boy might not be compatible with some of them. We’ll see whose technique suits him best.” The Xian of Water who was wearing a blue robe said while smiling kindly. His voice was smooth like fresh water running through a stream.

“Then it’s decided. We’ve been observing him for a few days now, we should reveal ourselves.” Another man said, he was bursting with life and vitality, wherever he went flowers would bloom and life would sprout out again. He was the Xian of Wood.

Xuanyuan had his eyes closed and was studying the Book of Acquisition. Suddenly, five mysterious forces descended towards him. Greed’s voice warned, “Boy, a few Xians are coming for you. Be careful. I won’t talk while they are here, in case they are able to discover me.”

Without saying a word, Xuanyuan opened his eyes. Standing in front of him were five old men. The one with fire surrounding his body slowly started to speak,

“I will give you a technique from my Book of Royal Fire. It is a set of seven-star heaven class techniques for refining your organs. Perhaps it will help you break through to the realm of Xian, and allow us to improve the technique from heaven class to Xian class....”

With a flash of red light, the technique was imprinted into Xuanyuan’s brain. He now knew exactly how he could use fire to refine his organs.

“My Book of Golden Xian will not lose out. Boy, these techniques are yours!” The Xian of Gold said. His voice was slightly weak, since fire was able to melt gold, he would be at a disadvantage against fire in a fight, but he still continued, “With this, you will have the power to pierce any defence...”

“My Book of Black Water is so wonderful that....” The Xian of Water mumbled calmly while a blue light emerged and entered Xuanyuan’s brain.

“Boy, I think my Book of Earth suits you the most. I feel as if we’re connected...” The Xian of Earth was confident that Xuanyuan was the reincarnation of an earth spirit.

“And there is my Book of Green Wood....” The Xian of Wood was the slowest to act.

Xuanyuan was not responding to their words at all. He could only nod before he engrossed himself into the techniques appearing in his mind. The Xians all felt dispirited by his complete silence and could only disappear without a word. Xuanyuan finally spoke when all of them had left, “What a bunch of freaks...”

The Xians almost rushed back in anger as they were able to hear Xuanyuan’s remark. However, they realized their sudden appearance inside the room would be a shock to anyone. It was good that Xuanyuan was able to remain calm.

“Hahaha, boy, you’re in luck. You can use the techniques they gave you to refine each of your organs separately!” Greed was surprised at Xuanyuan’s good fortune.

“I understand, I can use fire to refine my heart and gold for my lungs, and so on.” Xuanyuan replied.

“That’s right. You will be able to create the cycle of five elements. Your Body of All Creation has the power to devour everything, it will be easy for you. I was wondering where we would encounter a technique to refine your five organs, but I didn’t even have to search very far. Even though the girl, Yin Zhenluo left you her techniques, the effect will not be as good as the cycle of five elements. This is where you should take advantage of your Body of All Creation! It’s not

every day that you get a chance like this!” Greed was excited and immediately transferred ‘The Way of Refining Organs’ from the devouring technique to Xuanyuan. When Xuanyuan entered the king realm, he would be able to unleash its potential.

“Well, it’s not that easy to cross the barrier between realms. I need to create more opportunities for myself to advance. Now that I’m in the inner sect, I want to take on some missions to temper myself in life and death situations.” Xuanyuan felt a slight regret. A moment later, he swallowed an elixir of kings and studied the Book of Acquisition.

Suddenly, a sultry, sexy voice could be heard from outside of Xuanyuan’s room, “Brother Xuanyuan, are you in there?”

Xuanyuan frowned and moved off his bed to open the door. The voice belonged to Biyue.

“What brings you here, Sister Biyue?” Xuanyuan asked as he glared at her.

“No need to be so hostile. Are you not going to invite me in?” Biyue’s demeanour was very seductive. He could smell a mysterious fragrance on her body and her clothes were extremely revealing, showing her pale skin and subtle breasts. Xuanyuan could feel a heat rising to his head.

“It’s already after midnight. It’s not appropriate for the two of us to be behind closed doors together. You can say what you need from there.” Xuanyuan had never been romantic with a woman before, so he was too immature to understand her intent. Also, he felt very uneasy when around Biyue, he felt that she must be plotting against him.

“Brother Xuanyuan, I know you think very low of me, but I’ve been thinking about the vile deeds I did to you. I came here to beg for your forgiveness. Also I’m bringing the two hundred thousand jin of crystals, Minister Baizhan asked me to give them to you.” Biyue smiled shyly. She took off a ring from her long, delicate finger and gave it to Xuanyuan.

“Thank you, Sister Biyue. Is there anything else I can do for you?” Xuanyuan put the ring on his finger at once and laughed happily.

Biyue rolled her eyes, but, she leaned in to Xuanyuan in a seductive manner and asked, “So you don’t want to see me?”

Xuanyuan really enjoyed the admiring gaze coming from Biyue’s eyes. If this beautiful girl really wanted to be with him, should he take a chance with her?

## Chapter 119 – Seduction

“What are you talking about, Sister Biyue. Why wouldn’t I want to see you? But you’re too abrupt, I’m not really sure how I should react.” Xuanyuan grinned.

“Brother Xuanyuan, you’re such an attractive young man, so many women would fall for you. You defeated two inner disciples who were on the List of Merits, and two grandmaster fighters! Not even Brother Fung Lie had these achievements when he was your age. I come here tonight to apologize to you for the unpleasant past between us. I hope you will forgive me.” Biyue leaned her body against Xuanyuan, her soft breasts pressed against Xuanyuan’s body. He was clearly able to see inside her dress from this angle. Biyue looked at him with soft eyes. “I really want to apologize. You still won’t let me inside?”

“Sister Biyue, I guess you are trying to seduce me?” Xuanyuan smiled and wrapped his arms around Biyue’s waist. His other hand reached and groped her chest which made his heart start to pound. He peeked on naked women before, when he was young, but he never touched a body this beautiful.

Xuanyuan had an intense urge to devour the woman in front of him. Biyue could sense his lustful urges and she felt satisfaction in her heart. With one movement, Xuanyuan tore off her dress and exposed her white skin to the pale moonlight, it was extremely erotic. Biyue gave a small moan when her clothes were ripped off. Xuanyuan’s bones felt like putty when he heard this noise.

“Yes, I am seducing you. If I didn’t move quickly, someone would steal you away. Don’t you like me?”

A fire was already burning in his belly. His hand traced down from her breast

into her undergarments, his hand was suddenly warm and wet. Xuanyuan smiled longingly, “Of course. You are so beautiful, who would mind being seduced by you?”

Biyue was starting to grow nervous. She wasn’t expecting Xuanyuan to be so direct. When she felt his hands caressing her body, it made her start to feel hot.

—

Inside a hidden dimension, the five Xians were cheering on excitedly without an ounce of shame, but Xuanyuan wasn’t able to hear it.

“Hurry and get it on!”

“That’s my disciple! He is just like I used to be, so many beauties accompanied me to bed...”

“Stop bullshitting...”

—

“Would you marry me, brother Xuanyuan?” Biyue asked sweetly. Xuanyuan paused and his hands came to a halt, his mind had grown less clouded by lust. Biyue felt angry when she noticed his change. “Does he think I am just a toy?”

But after a while, Xuanyuan’s hands started to move again, greatly stimulating her body. He chuckled, “Sister Biyue, it’s not impossible, but you need to be sincere with me.”

“Well, I know what you want me to say. I’ll be honest with you. Bifu was the

one who encouraged me to attack you and Huotao was antagonized by Kuiya. Kuiya was also responsible for bringing his father Kuixue to kill you in the forest. Brother Xuanyuan, even though you are very good at dealing with their schemes, you should be careful, Kuiya is ruthless.

~

Then there's Xiang Tianku. He's polite on the outside, but he secretly plots to kill. He hides his hatred deeply and only shows kindness. He knew that Nu Long and Lie She were coming at you, and felt very happy about that.

~

Xiaotian is the most secretive of them all. When you were in the forest, you should have encountered some assassins. Two of them were sent by Xiang Tianku, the others were sent by Xiaotian. There's rumour that he killed one of the disciples brought in by Brother Fung Lie. His brother, Xiaoxuan, is a true disciple, who is equal to Fung Lie!"

Xuanyuan already knew these people. So he kept pushing, "And? Who else?"

"There's also Huotao. He really harbours a deep hatred for you after losing his position, but he's very careful and will look to send someone else to kill you. So have I proved my sincerity?"

"Of course, of course, but I'm a bit tired today, so I won't invite you in. I just reached the peak of the wild realm, so I need to stabilize myself before entering the king realm."

"It's late, please head home, Sister Biyue. Otherwise, people might spread rumours if they see us like this. They don't know that you came to me tonight. Please go back and see if there's more information you can gather. If they are planning something, tell me and I'll deal with them." Xuanyuan was slightly hesitant to let go of the soft woman in his arms.

Biyue also didn't pursue it any further. She only took out a robe from her ring and covered herself.

"Of course, I am yours and will act as you wish. If I don't help you, who would I help? I'll leave first. Should you need anything, just let me know." She smiled. There was a very seductive tone when she said the last few words.

—

"Has the boy gone crazy? She wanted to stay. What was he thinking? Is he afraid that she'll frame him for raping her? The Judgment Stand can see lies!" Seeing Biyue leaving, the Xians were all in turmoil.

"He's still a child. Not like me, I used to have so many women in my bed. I never turned any of them down..."

"Stop your bullshitting...."

"I'm not bullshitting! One of them was an elder from the Linglong Sect. Also there was a princess from the Eastern Dynasty....."

"Right, right, whatever.... Let's go. We've given him our techniques. We'll just wait and see."

"That's right. Let's go. We should attend to our own business for now. The boy will be fine and there shouldn't be any danger."

Biyue let out a deep breath when she finally left Xuanyuan's place. She felt extremely happy with herself. "He's still a kid. He can't resist my charms after all. When the time comes, I'll make sure to rip off his little snake."

Over the next three days, Xuanyuan was focused on studying the Book of Acquisition. Biyue would come every night to engage with Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan was no longer overcome with lust and their relationship never advanced to the final step. Biyue didn't really want to sleep with him, but Xuanyuan also had similar thoughts. "I should give my first time to my beautiful master, not someone like Biyue."

On the fourth day, Xuanyuan took another elixir of kings and stayed inside all day. The Book of Acquisition taught him a great deal about the world. He could feel that his body was slowly transforming, but it was hard to pinpoint how.

"Brother Xuanyuan, are you there?" Biyue said from outside his door. He immediately gathered himself and opened the door. He pulled Biyue towards him and began running his hands all over her body. He took it a step further and tore off Biyue's clothes completely, revealing her naked body.

Biyue was shocked at such a sudden turn of events. It seemed like Xuanyuan couldn't control himself any longer. Biyue was slightly afraid, she was now much weaker than the current Xuanyuan. She could only let him do whatever he wanted.

"Brother Xuanyuan, my husband. Close the door first..."

“What are you afraid of? Who’s going to see us? Is there any news these few days?” He suddenly asked.

Biyue rolled her eyes, “I came here to tell you. They’re planning to attack you tomorrow. It seems like they have sent someone at the peak of the grandmaster realm. We should go into the city tomorrow, to avoid the assassin. Since you have so much wealth, it wouldn’t be too much for me to ask for a set of upper rank earth instruments to protect myself, right?”

Xuanyuan thought coldly. So you finally show your true colours. You probably want to lure me outside the sect and kill me. I’ll have to see how you plan to deal with me.

“We’ll go to the City of Fighting Dragons tomorrow.” Xuanyuan said while fondling her breasts. He was not afraid of falling into their trap. He had many grandmaster class talismans and Greed would be able to help him. They couldn’t possibly hire an imperial fighter to deal with him.

“Of course I will buy anything you want. Go back and prepare for tomorrow, get some rest. Wait for me on the cliff outside the inner sect tomorrow morning.”

“Wonderful! I love you so much, brother Xuanyuan!” When she left his room, she sighed deeply, and thought to herself. Xuanyuan isn’t such a bad person. If he wasn’t my enemy, he’d be a great husband.

“Strange, I thought you would lose control yourself again, boy.” Greed teased him.

“Get lost. I’ll shut you out when it’s with Master Zhenluo.”

## Chapter 120 – Falling into the Trap

Biyue quickly went to another residence within the inner sect and quietly knocked on the door. Kuiya opened the door and was pleasantly surprised to see who was knocking, “Sister Biyue, you came so late. Is it done?”

“Yes. You should leave now and contact your father. Tell him to meet us outside of the forest on the way to the city. You will be able to sense my location with this and I’ll stay by his side the entire journey. The rest depends on you.” Biyue summoned an orb of Qi from her palm and pushed it inside Kuiya’s body.

Kuiya had waited too long for his revenge. Now he would be able to accumulate enormous wealth and kill Xuanyuan in one fell swoop. The only downside was that he had to split half of it with Biyue.

“Great, you deserve most of the credit. When we’re outside of the sect, we will be able to kill him in secret. Not even Fung Lie can avenge him then. I’ll go right away.” Kuiya gritted his teeth and he quickly rushed into the distance. Biyue was staring at his back for a while, before she disappeared into the night.

—

Inside Xuanyuan’s room...

“Greed, will there be any problems? We’re jumping head first into danger. Who will they send to kill me?”

“How would I know? The worst case scenario would be death. So it’s not that

bad.” Greed chuckled. Greed’s answer caused Xuanyuan to roll his eyes. It was useless to ask.

He didn’t want to waste any time and closed his eyes again to study the Book of Acquisition. Time was too precious to waste bickering with Greed.

Slowly, the sky began to brighten as the sun rose into the sky. There was a knock at the door as a feminine fragrance filled the air, it was Biyue. Xuanyuan opened the door, to find Biyue wearing a light green satin robe that accentuated her shapely body. Her hair swept casually over her shoulder. Xuanyuan felt himself being tempted once again.

“Sister Biyue, you look so beautiful today! I’d be willing to die having you by my side.”

The speaker was innocent, but the listener was guilty. Biyue’s heart skipped a beat. “Did he figure out our plan?” She mustered up a smile and said, “What silly words are you saying. I’d rather I die before I let anyone hurt you.”

“You’re too good to me. Let’s head off.” He jumped forward and ran towards the inner hall with Biyue by his side. “Sister Biyue, isn’t there a portal inside the inner hall? Should we use that to go to the city? It would save us some time.”

“Huotao has control over all the major portals. We’ll run straight into a trap if we do that. If they know we’re outside and heading to the city, they’ll surely send people to kill you on the way. We should sneak out in secret, then no one will know that we left. You have to work hard brother Xuanyuan, you need to become stronger and take revenge.” Biyue said softly.

“You’re very considerate. I’ll have to thank you for caring about me. I’ll get you whatever instruments you like.” He grinned.

“You promised!” Biyue said brightly. But in her heart, she was thinking, “You’re going to die and I’ll take everything from you. Of course I can choose whatever I want.”

After they passed the inner hall and went through the forest, they soon arrived at the cliff. Xuanyuan was strong enough to fly, even though it took a lot of Qi to do so. He leapt from the cliff and he flew into the distance, like a feather on the wind.

The sky was half lit by the rising sun and the natural Qi filled the air. The sect was surrounded by mountains and forests where animals were starting to awake from their slumber.

The peaceful scene made Xuanyuan cheerful. He laughed, “Sister Biyue, don’t you feel like your heart has been set free after watching such beautiful scenery?”

“I do, It’s very refreshing. Brother Xuanyuan, have you ever met any woman that was able to capture your heart?”

Xuanyuan was suddenly filled with shyness. He said slowly, “Naturally, she taught me everything I know. She’s my beautiful master.”

Biyue was surprised that he was talking about his past with her. Looking at his love-struck face, a slight tinge of jealousy clouded her heart, “Your beautiful master, who’s that? Is she more beautiful than me?”

“Of course. She’s much prettier than you. She’s the most beautiful woman in the Eastern Dynasty, Yin Zhenluo. She taught me her family’s techniques before she left, leaving me to deal with a bunch of assassins from her clan. They wanted to kill me for knowing their techniques. I came to the sect in order to escape from the Yin Clan. I’ll go and take my revenge when I’m stronger.” Xuanyuan didn’t hide anything, he looked proud and imposing.

Biyue was shocked to hear Yin Zhenluo’s name, she was famous for her beauty. Biyue’s jealousy started growing stronger. She thought, I was wondering why he was so strong. It’s the Yin clans seven-star, heaven class technique. I’ve heard that when the practitioner reaches the imperial realm, the technique would advance to the Xian class. It would only grow stronger and stronger. Yin Zhenluo, one day I’ll be much stronger than you. I wonder how you’d feel to know that I am going to kill your disciple.

While they were chatting, they had already left the main territory of the sect. They soon reached the exit of the sect and an endless forest could be seen in the distance. Biyue suddenly asked,

“Brother Xuanyuan, you probably don’t know much about the other beautiful places inside the sect. On the west side, there’s a sea called the Blue Sea. It’s serene and beautiful, but it’s very dangerous. No one under the wild realm can withstand the power of the sea water. Inside, there are numerous beasts, but under the water, there are many treasures hidden. If you’re not an imperial fighter, it’d be suicide for you to enter the depths of the sea.”

“To the east of the Blue Sea, there’s the Red Mountain. The land is red and stretches across thousands of miles and it is scorching hot! There are many fire spirits which dwell within the land to absorb its power. There’re also numerous treasures hidden deep in the mountain. There’s no water, which makes it easier to move, so grandmaster fighters will go there to try their luck.”

Xuanyuan nodded, “You want to go and try your luck after you purchase a set of upper rank earth instruments? I’ll go with you then.”

Biyue smiled, “Let’s go then!”

They headed towards the entrance to the forest when suddenly a terrifying force descended towards them.

Xuanyuan was startled and screamed, “Sister Biyue, be careful, don’t fall into the trap!”

“Hahaha, you’re going to die!” Kuiya circled them from the air. Behind him, there was a peak grandmaster fighter. His gaze was scary, draining all the warmth from your body. He was an elder of the Hu Family, Kuiya’s father, Kuixue!

## Chapter 121 – Assassins Everywhere

“Kuiya, how did you find me?” Xuanyuan glared at Kuiya, while stepping a safe distance away from Biyue.

“You stupid brat, you should ask the woman next to you. If you had hidden inside the inner sect and lived under Fung Lie’s protection, I wouldn’t be able to do anything to you. But since you’re here, you’ll have to die for me.” Kuiya firmly remembered how Xuanyuan knocked out his teeth. Xuanyuan became much more powerful than him after only a few days. It wasn’t acceptable.

Xuanyuan turned to Biyue and asked in confusion, “Was it you?”

She stepped to the side, looking defensive. She didn’t want to fight against Xuanyuan. “Who else? You shouldn’t have forced me into killing my own sister. Since that day, we were destined to be enemies.”

Xuanyuan chuckled bitterly.

“What are you laughing at? You hurt and humiliated my son. Do you think I will let you live today? Go ahead and speak your last words.” Kuixue’s grandmaster aura was already suppressing him. It was lucky that he already entered the peak of the wild realm, otherwise he’d be dead already.

“Nothing. I just didn’t think that you’d sacrifice your body like you did, Biyue. I’ve seen and caressed everything, I was starting to get bored. You think I didn’t know what you were plotting? I’ll tell you, I knew everything from the beginning. I just thought it would be fun to see what you were planning.” Xuanyuan’s angry words darkened Biyue’s face, she was trembling with anger. Kuiya didn’t know

exactly how she seduced Xuanyuan, but multiple thoughts immediately entered his mind.

Xuanyuan gazed around at everyone and smiled, “Do you think you can kill me? Too naïve. I wouldn’t dare to leave the sect if I wasn’t confident.” Then he disappeared from everyone’s sight.

“Father, he’s wearing the Dustless Helmet. Don’t let him escape!” Kuiya urged. Kuixue was fast, he took out a talisman called the Talisman of Revealment. It could reveal everything that was hidden within five miles. A bright light shone from the talisman and Xuanyuan’s position was immediately exposed.

They thought Xuanyuan would run away, but instead he was holding a powerful talisman that, supposedly, only peak grandmaster could activate. He smiled cruelly and threw the talisman towards Kuiya, which scared his father immensely. Kuiya had produced an imperial light during his test at the inner hall, so Kuixue put everything into raising his son.

“The Talisman of Asteroid Fire!” He found this talisman from Lie Gu’s ring. A powerful flame burst out from inside the talisman and burnt all of the surroundings. Miles and miles of trees that were surrounding them were engulfed in flames.

Kuixue released an ice Qi which created numerous snowflakes in the air. Xuanyuan felt like all his Qi was being frozen inside his body, but luckily, his armour activated in time and protected him from the deadly snowflakes.

Kuixue concentrated his strength into his fist and punched towards Xuanyuan. The fist contained six hundred dragons of strength, extinguishing the fire created by the talisman. However, Kuiya didn’t escape unharmed. His organs were

gravely damaged by the talisman. There was a stream of blood constantly flowing from his mouth.

“YOU ARE DEAD!” A cold air erupted from Kuixue’s folding fan. Xuanyuan recognized that it was an upper rank earth instrument, the cold wind it created would be extremely deadly.

Xuanyuan quickly took out another talisman.

“If Lie Gu is useless, I’ll try Lie Duan’s Sword of Chaos talisman.” The talisman transformed into multiple swords, the sword formed a wheel which tore through Kuixue’s ice Qi. The wheel of swords would move according to Xuanyuan’s will, it exploded into hundreds of sharp swords. The target – Kuiya.

Kuiya was so terrified, he was no longer able to stand. Each of the swords was as strong as a grandmaster fighter, a single sword would be enough to tear him into pieces. His father, in panic, rushed to shield him and formed an ice blue shield around them. Biyue was forced to the side during the fight. She didn’t think that Xuanyuan would be so well-prepared for their trap. She was enjoying the fight and even wondered who would come out victorious.

The swords attacked the icy blue shield as the shield started to violently shake. The light from the shield was fading fast.

Xuanyuan took out yet another talisman which was burning with a powerful fire. Xuanyuan smiled coldly, “Water can put out fire, but fire can turn water into steam, it really depends on which side is stronger. Kuixue, let’s see how long can you can resist. If you came here alone, I might not be able to kill you, but you are so concerned about your son’s life. The two of you can die together!”

He released his Qi into the talisman, Fire of the Sky. He threw it towards the sky and red hot flames spread across the sky. Miles and miles of the forest was on fire. “Kuiya, you were foolish to send your father to kill me, you are courting death. The fire will certainly attract attention from the sect. Then both of you will be killed!”

Kuixue’s Qi was being drained at a rapid pace. He was forced to consume pills to refill his Qi while he fought.

Xuanyuan wanted to remove this threat by its roots, he refused to give them another chance. He took out the last talisman he got from Nu Duan, which was called Breaking the Sky.

Once it was activated, a golden light shone from the talisman. The light was so blinding that it seemed to break through everything. The light transformed into a hammer that was over ten metres in size, it then smashed directly into Kuixue’s ice shield. After suffering through three powerful talismans, Kuixue’s Qi was almost drained. He was strong enough to withstand the power from three grandmaster class talismans, showing that he had an incredible strength. However, he wouldn’t be able to take a fourth.

The blue shield shattered immediately. Kuixue’s chest was struck by the hammer and caved inward. In an instant, Kuiya was crushed into an unrecognizable mess. Kuixue’s only thought was to escape. He thought that it would be easy for him to kill a random wild fighter, but they miscalculated.

“Don’t even think of running!” Xuanyuan was about to deal the final blow when a horrendous aura descended on the scene. He felt like even his blood refused to move inside his body. Kuixue was immediately cut in half. Biyue was pale with shock, before she could even scream, she was also killed.

Xuanyuan knew that he had encountered some real trouble this time.

## Chapter 122 – The Blue Sea

“Run, boy. There’re two grandmaster fighters and ten king fighters waiting to kill you. I can still kill them, but I’ll have to spend a lot of my strength and risk being weakened again. Divert them to the sect and let them handle it.” Greed warned. Xuanyuan immediately activated his Dragon Boots and headed towards the sect. However, not long after, Greed warned him again.

“Damn it, they’re well prepared. They set a detection spell in front of the sect. A trap is waiting for you if you run back to the sect. Run to the west. The grandmasters have top rank earth instruments, one of them is from the Yin clan. They have probably been waiting outside the sect for a long time.”

Xuanyuan was furious. It looked like Yin Zhenluo’s brother really wanted him dead. He cried, “They better kill me today or when I rise to become the strongest in this world, I’ll slaughter the Yin clan.” Xuanyuan growled and took out the talisman of wind – the one given by Bai – and instantly he felt his body turn lighter and moving like the wind.

“It’s the wind talisman. I didn’t think he would have something like this. Everyone pick up your speed.” One of the grandmaster fighters ordered. They were still able to see Xuanyuan, but were unable to catch up, Xuanyuan was moving too fast.

“Don’t save your talismans or we will lose him. Even though the talisman of floating cloud will not let us to catch him, we can will only be a short distance behind him.” The grandmasters immediately took out their talismans and surged to the front. They were slowly catching up to Xuanyuan. The other ten king fighters followed suit, so they wouldn’t get left behind.

Xuanyuan continued activating the wind spirit spear, the dragon boots and the talisman which increased his speed several times. He was absorbing the Qi from his crystals in order to sustain the drastic Qi usage.

An hour passed and the grandmasters were slowly getting closer and closer. Xuanyuan was slightly shaken – was he fated to die today?

“I’ll see how long you think you can run. The master was right, we can’t leave you alive.” A shout came from behind him, it was a cold and ruthless voice.

He had already crossed thirty thousand miles, when he finally came to a cliff. In front of him, was a deep blue sea. It must be the sea Biyue had mentioned. People who were weaker than imperial fighters wouldn’t dare to enter the water. Otherwise, only death awaited them.

“This is not the time to hesitate, boy. You have a Clearing Water Jade, but they don’t. Hurry up and jump!” Greed urged. He never had the chance to use the jade and now was the perfect time to use it, he almost forgot he had it.

Looking behind him, he could see the approaching assassins, so without any hesitation, he jumped into the water. With the help of the jade, the water didn’t feel much different from being on the ground. He was able to move and breathe normally. He didn’t dive into the depths immediately, but stayed in shallow water and hoped the assassins would leave.

The grandmasters arrived at the cliff, seeing that Xuanyuan had jumped into the water, they frowned, “What should we do? The sea is too dangerous; we might not survive if we enter the water.”

“Don’t forget our mission. You accepted the money from my Yin clan, so you have to successfully finish the job.” The other grandmaster reminded him coldly, causing the man’s face to stiffen.

Not long afterwards, the king fighters arrived at the cliff. The grandmaster from the Yin clan ordered, “Jump, dead or alive, I want to see the boy’s body.”

“Wait. I’ll use my Eyes of Insight, to see if we can find the boy. Even though we are hired hands, we don’t need to sacrifice ourselves for nothing.” The man from Yin clan wanted to say something, but ultimately agreed to this.

Then the hired grandmaster shot out two rays of light from his eyes which penetrated into the ocean surface. Xuanyuan glared at them from twenty metres under the water. He was able to stand still in the water, so there was no movement from the water around him.

“That boy is cunning. He’s got something which clears the water around him. It looks like he is possibly using a talisman of clearing water. He’s about twenty metres below the water’s surface. He is probably waiting for us to leave. We should activate our talismans of clearing water and surround him!” The hired grandmaster concluded.

In a flash, all the assassins jumped into the water.

“Damn, they must have seen me. I shouldn’t have underestimated them.” Xuanyuan was panicking. He immediately dived into the depths with all his speed.

“The power from the talisman of wind is almost gone. Don’t let them catch up

with you or you are doomed. They used talismans to clear the water away, which won't hold up for long. But yours is an upper rank earth instrument, so you can go much deeper." Greed reminded him.

Xuanyuan rushed towards the bottom of the sea. As he dived, he noticed that there were fish swimming in the sea around him. They had the power of spiritual fighters, but they didn't attack him because of the clearing water jade.

Five hundred metres.

A thousand metres.

Two thousand metres.

Four thousand metres.

"How can he keep going?" The assassins sensed that their talismans were starting to lose their power.

"It looks like he's carrying a jade, instead of a talisman." Even though our power to clear water is diminishing, a jade will still have plenty of power remaining. It is most certainly not the power of a talisman.

"Normal people wouldn't think of carrying a clearing water jade. Did he know that we were going to kill him, so he led us into the sea?"

"Impossible! If he knew, he would've asked the people in the sect to kill us. You all have extra talismans of clearing water on you, right? Keep chasing. I don't

believe he has enough Qi to continue activating the jade. Even if he dives deeper to escape us, he won't escape from the beasts in the depths!" They all took out another talisman and continued to pursue.

"They have more talismans? But the deeper they go, the quicker the talisman will be used up. I don't believe they have enough talismans on them!" Greed sounded disgruntled. Xuanyuan listened to his advice. After all, Greed had much more experience than him.

Five thousand metres.

Six thousand metres.

Seven thousand metres.

The pressure was slowly becoming stronger and it was more difficult for them to dive. Xuanyuan was unable to see the surroundings clearly, as it had grown incredibly dark.

Eight thousand metres.

Nine thousand metres.

His jade was only able to sustain a metre-wide bubble around him. As he looked around, there was only total darkness. He could sense the countless dangers looming around him.

Behind him, water was starting to break through the assassins' bubbles.

“Go back. Not even imperial fighters can survive this deep and the boy is only a wild fighter. I don’t think he’ll be able to survive down here. We can go wait for him on the shore.” They quickly floated back to the surface. If they continued going deeper, they would have died before catching Xuanyuan.

“They’re gone, but they’ll definitely be waiting for you on the shore.” Greed knew what the assassins were thinking. Xuanyuan stopped diving deeper and started to think. Since the enemies were gone, there was no need for him to continue diving.

But suddenly, a gigantic shadow rushed towards him.

“It’s a sea beast. Quick, boy, activate the Talisman of Protection!” Greet shouted in his head.

## Chapter 123 – Tiger Whale

Xuanyuan immediately activated the Talisman of Protection and a yellow light covered his body. The next moment, he felt his entire body shaking as some of the shock bypassed the protection. If not for the talisman, he would be long dead, but the earthquake-like sensation didn't go away.

If you looked from afar, you would see Xuanyuan inside a little yellow bubble which had countless sea beasts attacking it, sending the bubble flying with each attack.

“In the sea, you cannot fight with all of your power and the beasts outside are as strong as grandmasters. You need to quickly create a disposition to sustain the talisman of protection or you'll die in the belly of these beasts.” Greed advised. Then another shadow collided with the yellow bubble. Inside the bubble, Xuanyuan's body was being battered by the shockwaves.

He took out three fifty-jin crystals and started to carve markings onto them. Each of the markings drained a large chunk of his remaining Qi. He wouldn't be able to finish it if he didn't have the huge supply of crystals to restore his Qi. When he finished drawing the markings, his body was soaked with sweat. He couldn't keep track on how many times he'd been attacked by the beasts and sent tumbling through the ocean depths. He wondered if the clearing water jade would still be working if he didn't use the talisman of protection.

“Disposition of stability!” Xuanyuan declared loudly. The power of crystals started to pour into the yellow bubble. The surface changed from a dim yellow to a bright golden colour.

With the golden light, Xuanyuan could see the faces of all the beasts and more

importantly, all the precious items that were on the sea bed. He would be unbelievably rich if he could collect them. The beasts however, didn't stop attacking the golden bubble, but he was no longer affected by their attacks. The disposition stabilized the protection surrounding him and stopped him being knocked away, but he had no idea where he was anymore, since the beasts had continuously knocked his bubble away with each attack.

Then, slowly, a gigantic beast approached the bubble. Other smaller beasts gave way and stopped attacking at once. The gigantic sea beast opened its mouth, revealing a terrifying set of large teeth and a huge dark tunnel which was its throat, then it swallowed Xuanyuan whole, along with his bubble of protection.

"I DON'T TASTE GOOD!" Xuanyuan screamed at the top of his lungs, but it was in vain, he was already swallowed into the darkness.

The pressure from the water was lifted when he was inside the beast's stomach. When he looked around, he found that he was already inside the blood-red stomach of the beast.

"Hahahaa, how lucky we are! It's a tiger whale! It's one of the sea beasts with an extremely dense life essence. It's as powerful as an imperial fighter! I wouldn't be able to defeat it if we had to fight against it, but it's different now that it graciously swallowed us. I'll devour the beast from the inside!" Greed laughed. The dagger shook and a great fountain of life essence started to pour towards it from every direction. "But don't be relaxed, boy. Set up a few more dispositions to protect yourself. The pressure will go up if the whale dives to the depths. Your disposition will be crushed under the pressure. You should increase the protection quickly. Also, bring the egg out. I won't be able to absorb the life essence quick enough if I am alone. The quicker the tiger whale dies, the quicker we will escape. Take the egg out, boy. It wouldn't die even if it was directly swallowed into the beast's stomach!"

He took the egg out of his ring immediately. He could feel the excitement coming from the egg. Little branches of black threads shot out of the egg and started devouring everything around it. Watching the power of devouring was actually quite terrifying. When the egg touched the soft red flesh, a black light was shot into the flesh like a straw, as the egg started sucking out the life essence with rapid speed. Suddenly, there was a violent shake, as the tiger whale cried out in pain.

“Hahaha, the whale has discovered us. There’s nothing it can do now. We will only stop devouring it when the last drop of its life essence is sucked out, Hahaha.” Greed couldn’t control its laughter.

Xuanyuan couldn’t care less. He only knew that if the whale died, he would lose the protection of the whale’s body and the pressure from the sea would try to crush him. So he took out another six fifty-jin crystals and started to carve even more complicated markings – Spiritual Six Corners.

For every tiny marking, Xuanyuan would have to use one percent of his Qi. To finish the whole disposition, it would require more than a thousand markings. On the other hand, his Qi was becoming more condensed with each marking. He was slowly understanding the nature of Qi which greatly benefitted him.

When he finally finished the disposition, he was exhausted, yet satisfied. He could almost feel that there was a mutual understanding between himself and the universe. The markings he made were the wisdom left by the Emperor of Acquisition. He could make all kinds of dispositions provided that he had the stones, jades, crystals or even source energy.

He condensed the power generated from the disposition into the golden

protection shield which caused it to glow even brighter. The Qi, along with a large amount of life essence, was being absorbed into the shield, strengthening it several times over. He was finally able to rest. The only thing left for him to do now, was to wait.

He sat cross-legged, he could sense that his strength had enhanced again. As he absorbed the Qi from the crystals to regain his strength, he didn't realise that his strength had reached two hundred and seventy dragons. It was an astonishing amount of strength given that he was only a wild fighter.

Xuanyuan didn't know how long he waited, but suddenly the red stomach started shaking violently. Opening his eyes, Xuanyuan saw that the blood red flesh had now turned pale.

"Be careful, boy. The tiger whale is in a frenzy. It could sense that it wouldn't survive this, and wanted to kill us as well. Make another disposition to help clear the water away or we won't be able to survive in the depths." Greed shouted.

## Chapter 124 – The Disposition of Nine Deaths

Xuanyuan was extremely nervous. He didn't want to die here. It was so good to be alive. Xuanyuan swore as he took out another bunch of crystals to carve more markings, "Fuck! Why didn't you say something earlier? You were absorbing the whale's life essence, not me. I don't deserve to die for your sins."

"What does it matter now? The beast swallowed you, so we were just avenging you!" Greed seemed amused at the situation.

Xuanyuan looked at the egg, there was a second golden sun marking which appeared on the shell, as well as a faint mark of a third sun. "Wonderful! It'll hatch when nine sun markings appear, right? The mount of the Devouring Emperor must be a majestic beast!"

"The tiger whale's essence would be the same as ten peak imperial fighters. It's got a lot of mass and thus a lot of life essence. Wait until I extracted its elixir for you." Greed said as the dagger trembled and slashed out by itself. After a while, a terrifying roar echoed from the outside and an elixir the size of human head arrived in front of Xuanyuan.

"This elixir is extraordinary, since the tiger whale is among the most powerful sea creatures. Many people study the skill of transformations once they step into the imperial realm. They could use this elixir to transform into a tiger whale and swim freely through the sea." Xuanyuan was taken back by Greed's explanation. He had earned a small fortune by obtaining this elixir. Many imperial fighters would fight each other for this.

Xuanyuan knew that the tiger whale was able to last until this moment because of its enormous amount of life essence, but it might not be long before

the stomach collapsed. So he concentrated on carving the markings. He couldn't afford to make any mistakes since it might potentially disrupt the disposition, which might cost him his life. The Book of Acquisition explained that the worst mistake could cause the disposition to kill the creator.

When he finished with the fifth crystal, his body was covered in sweat again, but he didn't slow down and took out the Clearing Water Jade to connect it with the crystals. A blue coloured-light screen slowly expanded and merged with the golden shield. The egg flew back through the air and returned to Xuanyuan's side, but seemed to be unsatisfied with such a small meal.

As the egg returned, the tiger whale's body suddenly exploded under the pressure from the sea and a surge of water crashed into them from every direction. Numerous sea creatures saw this and rushed towards them to consume the flesh of the tiger whale.

Xuanyuan sighed with relief. No water managed to break through with the protection of the disposition. However, the power of the crystals were being consumed at considerable speed.

All the creatures seemed to be going crazy when they saw the golden globe that surrounded Xuanyuan. They were all fighting amongst themselves to consume the golden globe.

"Hahaha, they think that you're the tiger whale's elixir." Greed laughed. A gigantic creature rushed towards them with astonishing strength. Three of the crystals cracked under the collision from the creature and the globe shot into the distance and started to sink deeper. The disposition was slowly losing its power which caused Xuanyuan to grow alarmed.

“Looks like we’re going to die here.”

“But at least the sea creatures have stopped pestering you.” Greed said, which was true, yet not reassuring in the least. The creatures seemed to be scared of something in that direction and they stopped their pursuit. Xuanyuan turned around and noticed he was moving towards a blue light.

“What’s that? Another sea creature? What difference does it make if we are just going straight into another beast’s stomach?” Xuanyuan sighed.

“No. This is something else. It’s filled with Qi that’s so dense it’s almost unreal.” Greed cried.

“So what? Powerful beasts can have concentrated Qi.” Xuanyuan sneered.

“What does someone like you know? Look closely, it’s a naturally made disposition. Qi condensed around this place willingly, which is a sign of having a precious item hidden there. You didn’t even learn anything from the Book of Acquisition!”

“You’re the one who knows nothing. Look at it! It’s the Disposition of Nine Deaths, a pathway to the underworld. Ten people go in and nine die. Well, who cares, if I’m going to die here, I would much rather die in a disposition than being torn to pieces by sea creatures.” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes, wondering why he was always so unlucky. “The Book of Acquisition mentioned it. It’s almost impossible to encounter this disposition, but if you enter it, you have a ninety percent chance of being reduced to a pool of blood. Not even your body will remain.”

“NO! Go back to the beasts at once! I don’t want to spend eternity in the depths of the sea. I won’t be able to find another body and will die there.” Greed screamed, after hearing Xuanyuan’s explanation.

“I would rather die here than to those beasts. Well, only nine out of ten will die, there’s still a chance that I can survive. There must be a valuable treasure inside. If I am dead either way, I’ll try my luck!” Insanity flashed through Xuanyuan’s eyes.

“Xuanyuan, don’t do something reckless... Just die by yourself, ok? There is no need to kill us too!” Greed screamed. Even the egg trembled at the thought.

“If I die, we die together. What are you afraid of? You think you’ll be able to get another Body of All Creation so easily? The moment you found me, you were destined to follow me until death!” Xuanyuan activated his Qi and pushed the golden globe towards the blue light.

The water from the disposition turned all the sea creatures that went close to it into a mist of blood. Many of them had the power of grandmasters and some were even as strong as imperial fighters. The terrifying sight shook Xuanyuan internally.

“It really is the Disposition of Nine Deaths, boy. Run... Please don’t go in...” Greed screamed even louder.

“Shut up.” Xuanyuan shouted as he shot straight towards the disposition. There was no going back now. He’ll surely be killed if he turned around, but there was still a small chance if he went forward. Of all the dispositions in the world, many of them were deadly, but none could ever guarantee death. Xuanyuan was going to gamble with his fate. Many people would lack such courage in the same

situation and would try to escape through the sea creatures. However, Xuanyuan wasn't a fool, he wouldn't choose to go in if he felt like there was another viable choice.

“Man up. It's just dying. Like you always say, its only death.” Xuanyuan sneered and looked towards the water crashing towards him, he laughed out and tried to calm himself down. But when the water struck him, he was unable to remain calm.

“We're going to die!” Greed was screaming.

“Damn it, this is the end.”

## Chapter 125 – The Water of Heaven

The water flooding out from the disposition was only ordinary sea water, but the extraordinary power it contained was from the disposition itself, however it was weak compared to the water inside the disposition. Once they were inside the Disposition of Nine Deaths, it was like the underworld. The water was yellow spring water, it was also called the Soup of Oblivion, which had the power to erase one's memories.

Xuanyuan's disposition to clear away the water was proving to be extremely useful, but the power of the crystals was being used up at an incredible speed.

"This power is only from ordinary sea water!" Greed realized it was only ordinary water and its nervousness subsided. "Let's go, boy! We should leave already!"

"Shut up. Haven't you heard of the concept 'Path to Heaven' and 'Path to Hell'? In this world, they often come hand in hand. The Disposition of Nine Deaths symbolizes nine paths to the underworld, and the light we saw must be the path to heaven. There'll be many precious items hidden inside. I must push forward, no matter how dangerous it is." Xuanyuan rolled his eyes and said.

"When did you become so pompous? Well, I'm willing to go with you." Greed was also tempted by the treasures inside. It had only heard of this disposition, but it had never seen it, it was a very rare disposition. This disposition required an extremely rare and specific environment to form.

"That's more like it." Xuanyuan immediately poured his Qi into the protection and started to move deeper. The light in the distance grew larger as they approached. The water continued to pass by them as they moved closer, but it

was unable to harm them because of the protection from the Clearing Water Disposition. However, it was still terrifying!

As they approached the light in the disposition, Xuanyuan's body was suddenly surrounded by a yellow liquid, which contained dense Qi from the Universe. Never in his life, had he been to a place where the Qi would be so dense.

"A natural disposition, this deserves its reputation. The Qi in this place is the purest!" Greed laughed. "Take the egg out, boy, so it can absorb the Qi. This place is best for people who study water Qi. They would be able to make a huge progress with only a little time here."

The egg needed a lot more Qi in order to form the nine golden suns it needed to hatch. It was good luck to encounter such Qi, instead of having to pay for expensive crystals. So Xuanyuan took out the egg and allowed it to absorb as much Qi from the surroundings as it liked. The egg was greedy. It emitted a dimmed black light at once and devoured the Qi at an insanely rapid speed. The Qi here was so dense that it formed into a liquid.

"The yellow spring water has absorbed the life essence of countless sea creatures that tried to approach it. The quality of the Qi here is bursting with life essence." The dagger also glowed dimly and started to absorb the Qi. Xuanyuan sat in cross-legged position and also started to absorb the Qi that surrounded him. He knew that he would not likely get another chance like this.

Closing his eyes, the golden globe surrounding him became stronger as his mind grew more focused. Xuanyuan was sensing the incredible connections between his skin, muscles, bones, veins and bone marrows. Every drop of liquid Qi was being used to refine his marrows. Inside his body, he felt like all his marrows were being awakened. The temperature of his body was starting to rise, it was like his blood had become a blazing inferno. The heat was burning through

every inch of his body. At that instant, Xuanyuan was suddenly enlightened as he watched the intense heat travel from his marrows, into his blood, then through his body to warm his organs. With the understanding, Xuanyuan was able to see the connection between his blood and organs. His five organs started to absorb the liquid Qi. With every breath, he was strengthening his five organs. His strength was being enhanced with every breath he took.

Two hundred and ninety dragons!

Three hundred and eleven dragons!

Three hundred and thirty dragons!

Three hundred and fifty dragons!

Three hundred and sixty dragons!

Xuanyuan had finally stepped into the king realm and his strength was enhanced by ninety dragons!

His organs no longer felt fragile like they did before. Since they had absorbed a large amount of Qi, his organs were now dozens of times stronger than in the past. His enemies would find it extremely difficult to injure his internal organs with their attacks. At the moment when he became a king fighter, his skin, muscles, bones, veins, marrows and organs were fully connected which created the aura of a Heavenly Dragon, but it was being devoured in an instant. Other people would not sense the aura on his body, but that did not affect his strength in the slightest.

The devouring technique in his mind had transformed from the Yellow Class to Black Class. The Qi was constantly flowing into his body. His body was now able to contain the same amount of Qi as twenty peak king realm fighters, which meant he could fight against twenty peak king fighters without growing tired, and even win.

“You have stepped into the next realm. Very nice. Activate the Way of Refining Organs first, then begin refining your kidneys using the Book of Black Water. In the theory of cultivation, kidneys are under the power of water, so this book will greatly benefit you.” Greed said delightfully.

Xuanyuan followed suit and started to refine his kidneys. When he began, he suddenly felt that his kidneys were like a black hole which sucked in everything. It was a strange feeling.

“The Body of All Creations makes it very difficult to refine your organs. You will need a lot more Qi than others to fully refine your organs. Use this opportunity to absorb as much as possible!” Greed laughed. It looked like Xuanyuan would have another leap in strength. “I wonder how strong you’ll become when you finish refining your kidneys.”

Xuanyuan closed his eyes and activated his pearl. He followed the steps in the Book of Black Water to refine his kidneys. While his hands were used to form mudras which helped increase the speed of the process. The black hole was spinning with incredible speed. His skin, muscles, bones, veins and marrows were all activated, absorbing the Qi which was flowing from the disposition. The speed in which his kidneys devoured Qi was incredibly fast, such speed could compare to peak grandmaster realm practitioners.

He concentrated fully on cultivating and started to slowly move towards the light inside the disposition until the light covered the entirety of his

surroundings. Xuanyuan checked his kidneys and realized that the black hole in his kidneys was pulling him closer to the light inside the disposition. Even though the amount of Qi was enormous, and the speed in which he absorbed was fast, he only managed to refine a very tiny portion of his kidneys. It seemed like Greed was right. It would be an extremely difficult task for him to refine his kidneys.

“Boy, I know what treasure is inside here. It’s a fighting water! The Water of Heaven, it ranks eighteen on the ranks of fighting water! That palace over there matches the exact description of the Water of Heaven. As you said Heaven and Hell go hand in hand. The water can’t be far!” Greed screamed excitedly.

Xuanyuan opened his eyes in surprise at Greed’s words. He only now noticed the water palace in front of him.

“The Water of Heaven?” He asked.

## Chapter 126 – The Water Palace

“This must be it, the Water of Heaven!” Greed was excited, “If you can devour it and refine it with your kidneys, you’ll become much more powerful. It’d be great if you can collect a treasure for each element: water, fire, gold, earth and wood. You can use them to enhance the full circle of five elements. How powerful would that be!”

The prospect of collecting treasures for all five elements made Xuanyuan speechless. The power he could conjure would be unthinkable. He was just as excited as Greed, if not more. The first time he heard about fighting water was when he asked about the young master of the Hai Clan from the Eastern Dynasty. He controlled one of the fighting waters, and could use it to defeat Fung Lie, if he didn’t have his Wind Spirit. Now he encountered a fighting water that was ranked number eighteen on the list. His excitement was indescribable.

“Well, let’s stop the dreaming and focus on what’s ahead. You don’t get to find these types of treasures so easily. Tell me what can this Water of Heaven can do?”

“The Water of Heave can catalyse all kinds of spiritual medicine, causing them to grow at a much faster pace. It takes over a hundred years for some medicines to grow, but only takes a number of days with help from the Water of Heaven.” Greed explained. Everything ranked on the list was rare and powerful. It was considered a stroke of luck to encounter anything on the list.

“That’s incredible!” Xuanyuan couldn’t believe it.

“Of course. Otherwise how can it be called a treasure? Its power must require the Disposition of Nine Deaths to protect it. It requires many years for this type

of water to form. Despite its power, the Water of Heaven is extremely poisonous when it touches other water sources. It'll be very difficult to extract it." Greed emerged from inside Xuanyuan's mind and formed a black shadow in front of Xuanyuan. He still couldn't see its face, but it certainly grew much more powerful. Sensing its greediness, Xuanyuan realized someone like Greed, who had lived for many millennia, also found the Water of Heaven desirable.

"You see, the Water of Heaven can use the disposition to kill the sea creatures that come close so it can absorb their life essence. If we wait for a few thousand years, it'll probably become a sentient water spirit and be able to reincarnate into a person, just like what happened with Fung Lie."

Xuanyuan was shaken by Greed's words, "Was Brother Fung Lie reincarnated from a fighting wind that ranks higher than eighteen?"

"Not necessarily. Those ranked higher don't necessarily get reincarnated sooner. Quite the opposite, actually. The Water of Heaven was recorded in an ancient scripture. I've only heard of its name, but have never seen it. You must find it and devour it!" Excitement was leaking from Greed's shadow.

"If you can get the Water of Heaven, you're going to make many alchemists go crazy. They'll spend fortunes to hunt you down and request for you to nurture their plants. Hahaha, we're going to be rich! Even if I can't find my origin of memories, I'll still be able to regain my power!"

Thinking of how much crystals Greed would have to absorb, Xuanyuan rolled his eyes, "Even if I receive that many crystals, I won't let you have them. We'll go find your origin of memories. Let's first find the Water of Heaven. We still need it to get out of the disposition."

They had arrived at an underwater palace formed completely of aqua jade. The jade contained endless pure Qi. “This must have been made by the previous owner of the Water of Heaven before their death, in order to hide it from the world.”

“That’s right. So many powerful people were killed because of the treasures they possessed. People would lust after their treasures. Many people would do anything to hide the Water of Heaven, they would hide it with many protections before they go to reincarnate. So they can come and retrieve it in their next life.” Greed looked at the palace and said, “The palace itself can be considered a treasure.”

“Does that mean they are able to live forever through reincarnation?” Xuanyuan was curious about reincarnation, since it also happened to him.

“That’s not possible! No matter how powerful you are, you can only reincarnate for three lives. No exceptions. It’s the law of the universe. Unless...” Greed replied.

“Unless?”

“Unless you become a deity and step into immortality, but the deity realm is too distant. Many Xians meet their downfall because they’re too obsessed about becoming deities.”

“What do you mean?”

“You’ll understand one day.” Greed merged itself into the dagger and said heavily, “Xuanyuan, I’ll help you with everything I can. The Water of Heaven is no

ordinary treasure, you must find a way to obtain it. You won't get another chance."

Xuanyuan nodded with determination. He looked over at the egg, it was glowing with a dim black light that resembled plant roots which had dug into the aqua jade. It was devouring as much Qi as possible. The third golden sun mark had already fully formed. The edge of the fourth sun was starting to appear on the shell.

"Am I supposed to leave it here alone to devour the Qi?"

"Why, of course! Drop some blood on the egg, then when you are in danger, it'll immediately return to you." Greed said.

So Xuanyuan moved towards the egg and bit a small wound on his finger, allowing a few drops of blood to fall onto the egg shell. As the blood was absorbed, a marking of red blood veins appeared across the egg shell. He could feel that a spiritual bond had formed between the egg and himself, so he was no longer worried. Perhaps the egg could sense his worries, it shook slightly, like it was reassuring Xuanyuan and urging him to go without it.

Xuanyuan was happy that it was able absorb as much Qi as it could, every second it spent absorbing Qi was saving him a fortune in crystals.

"Let's go. You need to look for the origin of the light, the Water of Heaven will be there." Greed was growing more impatient.

Xuanyuan was still protected by the protection talisman, which was supported by the disposition he created. He slowly walked across the aqua jade floor and

into the palace.

The palace was completely silent. There were only some strange dots of light which floated in the water around the palace. Every step that he took, he looked around, bracing himself for any possible dangers. He knew that there could be danger at any moment.

As Xuanyuan moved into the palace, he noticed a door which led to a hall. The hall was made from another kind of crystal, the Crystal of Heaven, which was incredibly rare. There was a powerful blue light glistening through the crystal.

“Haha, we found it...” Greed yelled.

Suddenly, a shadow of a woman appeared at the door to the hall and Xuanyuan’s heart clenched. He knew that it couldn’t be this easy.

## Chapter 127 – Devouring the Water of Heaven

In front of the hall, stood a woman in white robe which was covered in blood and she was clearly wounded. She was beautiful, but her eyes looked sad. Her face was pale, her black hair was untied, there was a small dot was on her forehead, making a sharp contrast to her lips, which lacked any colour. Her eyes seemed empty and sad.

Xuanyuan felt like the air was ripped from his lungs when he saw the woman. He asked slowly, “Who are you?”

“Who am I?” She looked at Xuanyuan with her eyes of emptiness and smiled, “I don’t know who I am. I was not expecting visitors after so many years. It seems the Water of Heaven has found its home.”

“Is she the owner of the Water of Heaven?” Xuanyuan thought.

“I was chased after by assassins. To escape from them, I dove into the sea and passed through the Disposition of Nine Deaths thanks to the light which came from here. How did you get here, miss? That’s blood, you must be hurt. We should tend to your wounds first.” Xuanyuan said. He was upset to see such a beautiful woman was wounded.

“Thank you, young master.” She smiled miserably, “It seemed we are of the same fate. I too was chased by assassins and came here.”

“But we’re still different. I was chased by my enemies. You were chased by someone close to you, correct?” Xuanyuan said when he thought about the sad expression in her eyes.

“You are observant, young master. You came to take the Water of Heaven, right? Please be patient and listen to my story. If you still want the water, I won’t stop you.” She looked at him, filled with sadness.

Xuanyuan’s heart pounded. Who was this woman? But since she asked, it wouldn’t hurt to listen. “Please enlighten me, miss.”

She began slowly. Her voice full of regret, sorrow and hatred.

“He was my only disciple. A talented boy who was very smart. I adored him. He grew into a very strong man. One day, he said to me that he wanted to be with me forever, and asked if I would marry him, I said yes. It was a happy time. The happiest time of my life.”

“I knew he longed for the Water of Heaven that was inside me, but I thought, he would never hurt me. I raised him, I taught him everything he knew. I loved him more than my own life. However, he couldn’t resist the temptation, and tried to take away the water. All these wounds were from him.

“The man who was supposed to love and protect me, was the one who attacked me. The man who truly loved me, died trying to protect me. The man I loved wanted me dead and I lost the man who truly cared for me. I’d never imagined, all those years of happiness were worth nothing to him when he was overcome by greed. Do you still want it? Aren’t you afraid that the people who are closest to you, would try to kill you for this treasure?”

Xuanyuan’s heart was burning with anger, who could call themselves a man after betraying the trust and love of his master, and his wife.

“Of course I want it. I’m not as lucky as you. While you had people who loved you, I’m all alone in this world, I have no one. It’s fate that brought me here to the Water of Heaven. I don’t want to give up on it. Miss, I’ll bring you outside and heal you. Miss, can I have the Water of Heaven?”

“Lucky. Yes, I was truly lucky. This palace was created by the man who loved and protected me. I have lived here for all these years. I am content. Well, you’re the only person who has ever made it this far. It must be destiny, but whether you can tame the Water of Heaven depends on your own ability.” She smiled and stepped back, opening the door to the hall.

There was a jade stand in the middle of the hall. The stand was surrounded by a stunning blue light. Xuanyuan realized that this was the Water of Heaven, but he instead turned to the woman, “Miss, we should tend to your wounds first. It doesn’t look good, we shouldn’t delay treatment.”

“You can’t save me. Go and see if you can tame the Water. If you succeed, I’ll finally be able to rest. It has followed me for too long, it must be lonely. It deserves to see the world again.” She said.

Xuanyuan still wanted to say something, but Greed stopped him, “Go get the water. Her body has already perished. What you see is only her projection. The Water of Heaven sustained a part of her soul. I understand her feelings. You should allow her soul to rest in peace.”

Xuanyuan stepped into the hall. A strong wave of water rushed towards him, trying to block his entry into the hall. The Water of Heaven was rejecting him, but he refused to slow down. He was determined.

“Water of Heaven! Your master had promised you to me. Do you think you can stop me?” The light on the stand started to shake, it was provoked. All treasures had a form of sentience, it was only unable to speak. The water clearly understood Xuanyuan and its master’s will, but it was still resisting Xuanyuan.

“Don’t be so stubborn, Heaven. You want to protect me, I understand. But please, I don’t want to be like this anymore. Go with him instead of staying here forever. You’ll be lonely otherwise.” The woman said softly. Her voice was soothing and seemed to calm the Water of Heaven immediately. Xuanyuan felt the resistance against him had been lowered.

Xuanyuan moved to the stand and took out his dagger. On the blade of the dagger, there were black markings which started to move. The markings expanded and surrounded the blue light on the jade stand.

The Water of Heaven exploded with power causing the black markings to crack under the pressure. Greed screamed, “That woman can only help us so much. We can only depend on ourselves if we want to tame it. Only strength can be used to tame the treasure!”

Inside Xuanyuan’s ring, two hundred thousand jin of crystals started to burn and merged with the black light of the dagger.

“Seal of Devouring!” The crystals were burning and enhancing the power of Greed’s seal. The struggle between the blue and black light was growing more intense.

“Heaven, I know you care for your master, but she’s suffering from endless pain. She wants to be relieved of her suffering. She wants to rest. You need to let her rest. You are only trapping her inside her painful memories of betrayal. Is

that what you want?" Xuanyuan shouted sternly. His statement caused the Water of Heaven to falter.

"Quick, use the Book of Black Water and start to refine your kidneys!" Greed ordered. It caught the moment the water faltered and sealed the Water of Heaven into Xuanyuan's kidneys.

Suddenly, a terrifying force attempted to rip itself from inside Xuanyuan kidneys. His kidneys exploded with blue light. The blue light was rampaging inside his body, crushing his bones and tearing his flesh.

"Boy, use the devouring technique. The devouring power can heal your wounds. If you're tough enough, you can devour the Water of Heaven. If you are weaker, then you'll be devoured by it. Your body will be taken over and your soul erased. If it rejects your body, you'll be completely destroyed." Greed screamed.

With the help of the devouring technique, every part of his body was activated. His pearl was at full power and was absorbing everything it could into Xuanyuan's body. Many black threads emerged from his body and formed strong roots which planted themselves into the ground of the palace, using the palace's Qi to help tame the Water of Heaven.

The woman's empty eyes regained a bit of life at last, "This boy has the Body of All Creations and is using the devouring technique. He must be the heir of the Devouring Emperor. It's fate. The Emperor saved me, allowing me to live on and obtain the Water of Heaven. It's karma that Heaven should belong to him. I hope he can make it through and become the master of Heaven..."

## Chapter 128 – Burial

The power of the Water of Heaven exceeded everything that he had imagined. His body was being torn apart and healed at a rapid pace. An ordinary imperial fighter wouldn't be able to withstand the strain put on the body, but the Body of All Creations was particularly strong. It could absorb everything in creation. With the help from Greed, most of the force from the water was being suppressed.

However, it was still difficult for Xuanyuan to hold himself together while enduring the searing pain. Xuanyuan was covered in a mixture of sweat and blood. In his delirium, he arrived at an imaginary land. It was a land of emptiness with only a girl in a blue dress standing there. She had very bright eyes, but her face was angry. She interrogated, "Why do you have to devour me?"

"I need you to become more powerful. So I can save the person I care for." Xuanyuan was stunned. This girl must be the Water of Heaven.

"Did you know that my master will die if you devour me?" She was furious.

"I know that you care for your master very much, but she was being tortured for all these years. She's all alone and sad. Do you understand that?" Xuanyuan asked.

"It's still better than her disappearing."

"You're not human, Heaven, you don't understand our emotions. The person she loved betrayed her and killed her. It's too painful for her to continue living." Xuanyuan shook his head.

“How dare you say I don’t understand? I do. If I didn’t exist, master wouldn’t have gone through that. She’d be happy and have everything she wanted. I destroyed everything she had. Her life is the only thing she has left.” Heaven’s eyes filled with tears.

“You shouldn’t blame yourself. It’s really not your fault. Some humans are greedy and devious. It’s these evil thoughts that destroy all good things.” Xuanyuan approached slowly. He didn’t seem to care about the harm he might be exposing himself to. “I know you want to be with your master forever. You think she’d be better off as long as you’re with her. But she is being tortured everyday by the thought of the man she loved had betrayed her. Do you know how painful it is?”

“I don’t know. I don’t want to listen. Let me go!” She covered her ears and screamed, as Xuanyuan opened his arms and embraced her.

“Heaven, don’t be like this. You’ve made a mistake. You should’ve let your master go reincarnate. Then perhaps she can forget all these bad memories. She has been here for countless years. All those years were filled with grief and solitude. Even though you try to hold everything together, but you know that her soul will eventually disperse, right?”

She looked up at Xuanyuan, “Was I wrong? It’s all my fault! It’s all my fault...”

“Do you remember the man who betrayed your master?” Xuanyuan asked softly.

“I’ll never forget his face!” She replied sharply.

“Become one with me and leave here. We will find the man and avenge your master. That’s the least I can do. I’ll slaughter the man who did this to your master.”

“Will you?”

“Of course! I never forget my promises!” Xuanyuan nodded.

“All right. I will leave with you. You must kill the man should you ever meet him....” Her body suddenly became a blue light and merged with Xuanyuan.

—

In reality, Xuanyuan had already passed out and was laying on the ground. No one knew how much time has passed. Greed was waiting in shadow form outside the dagger dagger. It looked at the woman in a white robe and asked, “You look familiar. Do I know you?”

“You are the Devouring Emperor’s companion, Greed. Right?” She smiled slightly.

“That’s right. You...” Greed’s face was a blur. “I couldn’t retain my power. A lot of my memories are gone. I don’t remember you.”

“Don’t worry. I remember you. The emperor saved my life when I was little. All my family was killed and I was left alone. The Emperor came and devoured all my enemies and passed their power onto me. That’s why I was able to find the Water of Heaven. I wanted to find the Emperor and thank him, but I never could.”

“He was always alone and never stayed in one place. The sect he created only

had one member and that was himself. It wasn't easy for someone to find him." Greed said calmly. "He saved many innocent people throughout his years. I don't remember all of them. Please don't be sad that I don't remember you, miss."

"Of course not. He only had good wishes for me, that's why he taught me the techniques to protect myself. The egg over there must be Devour, right? Looks like the Emperor met his downfall as well. I can only leave the Water of Heaven to his heir as a token of my gratitude." She looked outside to the egg and her smile deepened. She had no more regrets in this life.

Suddenly, the Water Palace shook violently. The crystals that the palace was formed from had lost their colours and power. The Qi surrounding the place became thinner. That was because Xuanyuan had obtained the Water of Heaven, the source of power that was sustaining the palace, and the egg had absorbed all the Qi from inside the jades.

"That thing has devoured nearly everything from the palace. Without the support from the Qi, the palace will collapse. Let me help you escape from here." Greed cried.

"There's no need. The palace was made from the body of the man who protected me when I was killed. Now that I'm going to disappear. I want to be buried with the one who loved me the most. Farewell, Greed and Devour. I will use the last of my power to escort you out of the disposition. The young master has tamed Heaven, she'll help you escape from the sea..." She smiled and shook her head. Her body transformed into tiny dots of light, the same lights Xuanyuan saw when entering the palace. In an instant, the woman was completely gone and all that remained were the dots of light. Greed shouted towards the egg, which now had six golden sun markings. "Did you have to suck everything from the palace? Haven't you had enough? Come back!"

The egg shook urgently and shot back into Xuanyuan's ring. Greed also returned to the dagger.

The dots of light embraced Xuanyuan, creating a mysterious force. With a flash of light, Xuanyuan's body disappeared from the water palace and appeared outside. The moment he was gone, the palace started to crumble and was buried in the sea bed.

The person she loved the most was the one who killed her.

The person that loved her the most died to protect her.

And she was buried in the deep blue sea along with the person who truly loved her.

"What's happening to the sea?" On the cliff, the assassins that were waiting for Xuanyuan screamed. The Blue Sea was normally overcome with violent waves, but now it was completely calm.

"We should leave. Now that there are changes to the Blue Sea, it'll surely attract the attention of the sect. We can't wait here any longer."

"Let's go! The boy couldn't possibly be alive after all this time." The man from the Yin clan ordered and all of the assassins left.

After a long period of calm, a giant whirlpool appeared in the middle of the Blue Sea.

## Chapter 129 – Mochou

Not long after the assassins left, a few powerful conscious descended upon the Blue Sea.

“What happened? The sea became clear and the water is not as dangerous anymore!”

“Does anyone know what happened?”

“No, but at the edge of the Forest of a Million Beasts, there were a few bodies. Two of our disciples and a grandmaster realm fighter. There was a fight that led to their deaths. There might be a connection between the two events.”

“Investigate all inner disciples. I want to know what exactly happened.” The leadership of the sect had already been informed about the events and arrived at the sea. The giant whirlpool had killed numerous sea creatures and swallowed them into the depths of the sea. After that the water turned from a dark blue into a crystal clear blue. It was too strange. They couldn't ignore something like this.

--

In the mountains there was a small stream which came directly from the sea. The water that used to be dark blue had now turned crystal clear.

Not far from the stream, there was a simple wooden house. A woman with thick makeup was sitting outside, sighing deeply. Suddenly, she spotted a body floating down the stream, causing her face to go pale. The body was soaked with blood and had stopped outside the house because the water was too shallow.

The woman had never seen anything as terrifying as this, but she slowly calmed herself down. She approached the body and moved her finger under the nose, feeling a warm, damp air which hit her finger.

“He’s alive!” The woman moved the body over to the house. The water had washed off a large portion of her makeup, but she paid no attention to it. She said softly at the door, “Mochou, open the door for me.”

“Coming!” The voice of a little girl replied. A girl with long, black hair opened the door. She seemed sweet and innocent, around five or six years old. However, when looking at her eyes, you would notice that she was blind. “Aunt Mei, what happened? Who did you bring home?”

“I saw him lying next to the stream. He was drowning in the water and must have been dragged this way by the stream’s current. Mochou, go make a pot of ginger soup. I’ll carry him to the bed and see if we can save him. It’ll be quite a hassle if he dies outside our place.” Aunt Mei replied. Mochou went to the kitchen immediately started to make the soup.

Aunt Mei was named Su Mei and she was a prostitute. One day, she found an abandoned baby that was left in a small crib. Inside the crib, there’s a note that said “Mochou” on it. Mochou meant “No sorrow” and maybe that was the only thing the parents wished onto their abandoned child. Su Mei shook her head and smiled bitterly at the memory. The baby wouldn’t have a life without sorrow by following a prostitute. But Su Mei did her best to make sure Mochou had a good life. The little girl grew up slowly. Perhaps it was because she was blind, but she never made much of a fuss. She quickly learnt to take care of herself and even took care of Su Mei when she became sick. The two of them lived a simple life together.

The body Su Mei saved was none other than Xuanyuan. She carried him to her

bed, and put a hand on his forehead to check his temperature.

“He’s too cold!” She covered Xuanyuan with thick blankets. Out of the room, Mochou was holding a hot bowl of ginger soup.

“Aunt Mei, the soup is done!”

“Thank you, Mochou!” She immediately took the bowl, and then quickly grabbed the tiny hands that were holding them. They were slightly burnt from holding the hot bowl for so long, “You’re burnt!”

“Don’t worry, Aunt Mei, I’m not that hurt. Save the boy!”

“How do you know it’s a boy? And not a man?” Su Mei asked.

“If he’s old, he would be big, then you wouldn’t be able to carry him. So he must be a boy!” Mochou giggled.

“You are very smart. Now go soak your hands in cool water!” Su Mei said in a worried tone.

Su Mei held the soup and sat at the edge of the bed, feeding the soup to Xuanyuan with a spoon. However, there were a few men shouting loudly at the door. “You fox woman. Come out! Your customers are here. I need a good fuck. Open the door!”

“She also needs a good fuck. Haha...”

Su Mei was used to these obscene comments from her customers. Mochou came into her room and said, “The customers are coming, Aunt Mei.”

“I know. Stay here, Mochou. Don’t come out.” She then wiped off all her make up before opening the door. She looked less sultry, but was still quite alluring.

“Hello, gentlemen. I’m very sorry. I can’t take customers today. Please come around another time.”

“What the fuck is this?” A big man shouted angrily, “You don’t get to refuse customers. Let’s go already!”

“Please be reasonable. I really can’t do this today.”

All the constant shouts from outside eventually woke Xuanyuan. He realized there was a little girl sitting next to him. “Where am I?”

“You’re awake! You’re at my home.” Mochou was a bit scared from all the commotion outside, but she still calmly answered Xuanyuan.

“How come I’m at your home?” He asked. Xuanyuan felt quite comfortable and was lying on a bed.

“Aunt Mei carried you over from the stream. She said you had drowned.” Mochou answered.

Xuanyuan realized he was saved, but then he heard the arguments outside.

“You bloody slut. I’ve fucked you plenty of times. You think I don’t know why? You must have another man inside, isn’t that right? My day had been shit, I’ll beat him for making it worse and then we can fuck!” The man shouted and rushed inside the house with two other men.

“What are you doing? You’re scaring Mochou!” Su Mei couldn’t stop them from barging in. The men knocked over the furniture as they charged through the house and went into her room. They almost fell over when they saw Xuanyuan laying in the bed.

“Alright! So we’re not better than a little boy? If you’re not available for business, then we’ll fuck Mochou instead!” The man looked at Mochou hungrily.

Su Mei was burning with fury. She rushed to the man and dug her long nails into the man’s face. She screamed, “Don’t you dare touch Mochou. I’ll kill you!”

“Fuck!” The vulgar man’s eyes were scratched by Su Mei and started to bleed.

He angrily slapped her across the face, throwing her to the ground. He pointed a finger at her, “You slut. How dare you attack me. I’ll fuck your girl in front of you. What can you do?”

Mochou trembled and grabbed Xuanyuan’s sleeve, “Save Aunt Mei!”

Xuanyuan quickly rose from the bed and angrily slapped the man who attacked Su Mei. The man was thrown several metres from the slap and was twitching involuntarily on the ground. He was in so much pain that he couldn’t even scream.

“Get lost, scum.” Xuanyuan growled. Looking at Xuanyuan’s blood stained clothes and seeing his strength, the other two men were speechless. They were only in the fighter realm. Compared to Xuanyuan, they were insects. They also knew how weak they were in comparison.

“Do you know who we are? We’re servants from General Li’s clan. How dare you attack us? You stupid woman, we’ll come back for you!” They screamed while trembling. Eventually, they carried the large man’s twitching body from the house.

Su Mei was petrified, unaware that her face was covered in blood from the powerful slap. She turned to Xuanyuan and urged, “Young man, you need to leave. They are from General Li’s house. If they come back with help, you’ll be in big trouble. Go, now!”

“What about the two of you?” Xuanyuan asked.

“Well, we’re only a woman and child, they wouldn’t kill us for no reason, but they will kill you.”

Mochou started crying, “Aunt Mei, are you hurt?”

“Don’t worry. I won’t let anything happen to the two of you.” Xuanyuan stroked Mochou’s hair gently. He looked at Su Mei confidently, “Thank you for saving me. I’ll protect the two of you. You don’t have to worry.”

## Chapter 130 – The Body of a Thousand Spirits

Xuanyuan healed Su Mei's wound with some medicine from his ring, which caused Mochou's stream of tears to come to an end.

"Thank you for healing Aunt Mei!"

Xuanyuan was caught slightly off guard, but he soon resumed his smile, "Mochou, you can't see with your eyes, how do you know Aunt Mei's wound was healed?"

"I can feel it!" A bright smile appeared on Mochou's little face, "Can you stay with us forever? Then those men won't bully Aunt Mei anymore."

Su Mei blushed at the little girl's question, but Xuanyuan was not embarrassed, "I can't. I have many important matters which I cannot ignore. Mochou, be a good girl and get some sleep, it's already late."

Mochou pouted with disappointment, but she still said, "Alright. I'll go to sleep." while going back to her room.

"She was abandoned as a child, but she's a very smart girl. She can't see, but can distinguish if a person is good or bad. She's the best thing that ever happened to me." Su Mei smiled warmly.

"Why do you choose to sell your body?" Xuanyuan asked, while frowning.

"The world is cruel and filled with trouble. Ordinary people like us can't survive

by ourselves. I could've gone to a big family as a servant, but they'd also treat Mochou as one. I don't want her to suffer from a hard life. She's too young, someone needs to be there for her. So this is the only way for us to stay together and survive." Her smile turned bitter.

Xuanyuan was touched. Didn't he used to be a beggar as well? If he had never met Yin Zhenluo, if he had never found out the secret of the dagger, he might have become a servant to some filthy family. You could never know where fate would take you.

"Young master, you are someone of high status, you must despise me..."

"I don't despise you. You've done your best with what you had, and you raised a child without help. That's impressive." Xuanyuan cut her off and took out a hundred king coins from his ring, "Take these. I have more, but the scoundrels of the world might threaten your life if you have too much money."

Su Mei exhaled deeply. A hundred king coins! Every time she slept with a customer, she would only receive a single warrior coin. How easy it was for people with money!

"Young master, that's not appropriate. I can't take this much money."

"Damn it. You saved my life, is my life not worth a hundred king coins? Even if you don't want it, take it for Mochou. Use the coins to start a business. Mochou deserves to grow up in a better environment." Xuanyuan growled lowly.

Tears filled her eyes. Her voice was shaky when she said, "Thank you, young master. There's not much I can do to thank you. Let me serve you for the night."

“There’s no need to thank me. Your kindness earned you this reward. Take good care of Mochou. That’s the most important thing.” Xuanyuan shook his head, spoke calmly. He knew what Su Mei was implying, but accepting her offer would just be taking advantage.

“Madame Su, I want to ask a few questions, where are we?”

“We are in the Eastern Dynasty and the border of the Fighting Dragons Sect territory, Lishou City. You will need to cross Lishou city to go back to the Fighting Dragons sect.” Su Mei answered while gazing at Xuanyuan’s disciple clothing.

Xuanyuan was surprised. Remembering his adventure in the Blue Sea, he was attacked by numerous sea creatures and swallowed by a tiger whale. It wasn’t impossible that he was already outside the sect territory.

“How far is the capital of the Eastern Dynasty?”

“About ten million miles away. It’s not a place I could ever go to. You need to have a lot of money to ride the portal.” Su Mei said.

“Thanks for telling me, Madame Su. I’ll set a disposition around your house. Whenever you are in danger, just hide inside and you’ll be safe. I’ll take care of the people from the Li clan, but after that I’ll leave.” Xuanyuan said.

Su Mei observed the young boy, his face was still fresh and young, but he was incredibly decisive. No wonder Mochou took a liking to him.

Xuanyuan opened one of his rings and noticed that two hundred thousand jin of crystals had been reduced to a pile of powder. There was nothing left. He smiled sourly, even though gaining the Water of Heaven was surely a great bargain, he didn't like spending his fortune. In his other ring, he still had four thousand jin of crystals. He took out ten blocks, each weighing fifty jin.

The Water of Heaven had now merged into his body and his kidneys were completely refined. Since the kidneys were directly related to a person's bones, he could feel that his kidneys and bones were both strengthened and he was extremely energetic. He also grew to a height of 180 centimetres as well. He was now very tall amongst the fourteen-year-olds in this world.

Xuanyuan took a piece of crystal and concentrated his Qi as he began carving his markings onto the crystal. The disposition he was planning to create was called the Disposition of Forced Gentleness. It would take him a lot of Qi since it was an imperial class disposition which would force any enemies out of the disposition.

Suddenly, Greed spoke out,

"Xuanyuan, bring that little girl with you. She's the key to finding more treasures."

Xuanyuan's hand trembled, "What do you mean?"

"The girl has the Body of a Thousand Spirits. She can sense the treasures and can see the nature of people and objects. She's not blind, it's just that her eyes haven't open yet. When the Eyes of a Thousand Spirits open, you can definitely find other fighting elements! I'm sure of it!" Greed said excitedly.

Xuanyuan finally understood why he was so kindly disposed to the little girl.

“No, I can’t use a child. Su Mei has raised her all these years, I can’t just take her away from her foster mother. She’d be devastated.” Xuanyuan argued.

“Just say that you’re going to take care of the girl for her. She’s a prostitute, she can’t provide the girl with a good life.” Greed scolded.

“At least she won’t face any dangers by staying here. There’s a chance that she will be killed if she follows me. I won’t do that, unless it is the last resort. Don’t try to argue with me.”

“Other people will kill the prostitute and take the girl if they find out her secret. You idiot.” Greed grumbled. But Xuanyuan ignored him. He slowly carved the markings for the disposition.

Mochou laid on her bed quietly, when she suddenly spoke.

“Big brother, you’re here? You are late by a whole month. I missed you.”

“I’m busy. How come there’s another man in the house?” Another voice suddenly emerged from her mouth.

“Yes, aunt Mei saved him...” She repeated today’s events.

“I see. Do you like him?” The other voice asked.

“Yes, he’s just like you. He also likes me. I can feel the warmth from him.”

“I heard what they said. He asked aunt Mei to take care of you and gave her money. Mochou, remember to thank him.” The other voice said, “He’s coming. I’ll leave. Don’t let aunt Mei know our secret.”

“I know. You’ve told me many times.” Mochou giggled.

At this point, Xuanyuan knocked on her door, “Mochou, are you asleep?”

“Not yet. Come in!” She quickly sat up on her bed.

Xuanyuan came in and sat down on the edge of her bed, a block of crystal full of markings was in his hands.

“Mochou, I’ll give you the power to protect aunt Mei. If bad guys come troubling you, concentrate and think about kicking them away. Then the bad guys will go away.” Xuanyuan said mysteriously.

She was excited about the notion and nodded frantically, “Is that true? I won’t let anyone hurt aunt Mei!”

“Of course it is.” He pushed the crystal into Mochou’s chest. The crystal sunk into her body, without a sound. The Disposition of Forced Gentleness was created.

“Alright. If someone tries to bully aunt Mei, you have the power to protect her.” Xuanyuan smiled, “Now, go to sleep.”

“Thank you!” Mochou sensed a funny feeling in her body, but nodded obligingly.

When Xuanyuan left her room. He was covered in sweat. The disposition had consumed a lot of his Qi. He sat down on a chair in the living room and quietly restored his Qi.

Time passed and the morning sun rose into the sky.

“Come out, you asshole. You’re going to die. How dare you attack us and steal that woman!” One of the men from yesterday shouted from outside of the house.

## Chapter 131 – Youyun Stone market

Li Wu was the son of General Li Gang of the Lishou City and beautiful women was his special interest. Last night, two of his servants told him about the latest news in the city.

“We’ve heard there’s a woman who lives in a wooden house next to the stream. People say she’s extremely alluring and sultry. We were going to bring her here when suddenly an arrogant young boy attacked and almost killed Li Yan, then stole the woman.”

Li Wu was intrigued. He waited until morning and then went to the wooden house by the stream. He was a tall and muscular man who had already refined his organs. He was a peak king realm fighter. He also brought along the servants who had told him the news along with ten other wild fighters.

Su Mei was unable to sleep the entire night. When she heard the noise outside, she sprang up and stopped Xuanyuan, who was about to open the door. “Young master Xuanyuan, leave through the back door. There’re too many of them.”

“That’s not a problem.” Xuanyuan replied.

He had already removed his clothes from the Sect of Fighting Dragon and shattered them into powder using his Qi. He was in the Eastern Dynasty now. He didn’t want to be killed because of the grudges between the two territories. As he opened the door, Su Mei grit her teeth, but mustered up her courage and went outside as well.

“You have indeed came back to make trouble.” Xuanyuan said. He was wearing all his upper class earth instruments, he looked like a majestic, elegant young man.

As the son of a general, Li Wu could recognize Xuanyuan must be someone of importance. At the very least, he came out to face them alone which meant that he was not afraid of them. At once, Li Wu changed his tone and said kindly but commandingly, “Young master, someone has accused you of hurting one of our clan servants. Could you tell us what happened yesterday? If what they said was true, then I’ll have to seek justice on their behalf.”

Su Mei stood out from the house and Li Wu’s eyes brightened. She was just as alluring and sultry as his men had said. She explained the whole incident timidly, “My name is Su Mei. Yesterday, I saved this young master from the stream. He was still unconscious when the master’s servants came to do business with me. However, there weren’t any beds left in the house, so I asked them to come back later, but they barged in. The young master woke up at that time and hurt one of them after they attacked me. Please forgive him, master Li.”

Li Wu was furious. His servants had already slept with the alluring woman who was actually a prostitute and then lied to him about it. His face darkened. The once cocky servants were now kneeling and kowtowing frantically.

“Master, master. We shouldn’t have lied to you, but the boy is.....”

But Li Wu was in no mood to hear excuses. He ordered, “Take them away and execute them.”

Immediately, two of the wild fighters dragged the men into the forest. A few moments later, screams echoed out in the distance.

Li Wu turned to Xuanyuan and apologized, “Young master, we must have offended you. Please forgive us. I am Li Wu, the son of the General Li of Lishou City. You are a refined young man. I love to befriend people of high calibre. Please be my guest at Lishou City. Consider it as my apology.”

Xuanyuan thought, “I’m on the border of the Eastern Dynasty any way. Let’s see if I can learn more about the Yin Clan.”

So he agreed. He turned to Su Mei, “Madame Su, thank you for saving me. Master Li is a reasonable man, I’m sure there won’t be any trouble coming your way in the future. Take care.”

Su Mei sighed. She knew Xuanyuan would have to leave, but this was still too sudden. Mochou wasn’t even awake to say goodbye, she thought. But then a tiny shadow came out from behind Su Mei.

“I’ll kick out all the bad people with the thing you gave me! Thank you!” Mochou said quietly.

“I will!” Xuanyuan smiled.

“Be careful” Mochou added.

Su Mei watched Xuanyuan and Li Wu leaving until they completely disappeared from sight.

“Master Xuanyuan, what do you think about Lishou City?” Li Wu was polite. On their way, he patiently explained everything regarding the city.

“Even though this is a border city, it’s bursting with people and wealth. This is a great place.” Xuanyuan replied. At the same time, Greed was talking in his mind, “Boy, be careful. The girl warned you to be careful when you left. She must have felt that Li Wu isn’t a good person.”

“If you don’t mind me asking, who’s your master?” Li Wu asked.

“I’m a wandering practitioner.” Xuanyuan said.

“Well, that’s wonderful. I’m only a few years older than master Xuanyuan. How about we swear to be brothers. We will be able to achieve great things if we work together in the future.”

“Thank you, master Li. But I’m used to being free of all attachments.” Xuanyuan immediately diverted the conversation, “I wonder if there’s a stone market in the city? I want to try my luck.”

“Of course! You’ve asked the right person! The biggest stone market in the city is called the Youyun Stone market. I like to go there and try my luck as well, but I’m not very good at it, I lose out most of the time. Today, I’m lucky enough to meet you, maybe I will continue having good luck and make a profit! Let’s go.”

“It’s just a little hobby.” Xuanyuan smiled, but in his mind, he grew even more weary of Li Wu.

Xuanyuan wanted to see if the knowledge he gained from the Book of Acquisition could be used. He didn't expect anything. The Emperor of Acquisition experimented numerous times and for many years to gain his understanding of stones. Xuanyuan needed to experiment as well, otherwise, he'd be wasting the Book of Acquisition.

With Li Wu leading the way, they quickly arrived at the Youyun Stone market. In front of the mill, there were many guards on patrol. The stones inside were no small sum, so they controlled a heavily armed force to protect them.

"Haha, let us brothers try our luck!" Li Wu laughed, leading Xuanyuan into the mill.

—

In a mountain range not far from the border of the Fighting Dragons Sect, the assassins from the Yin Clan had gathered. The grandmaster was holding a black mirror. One that much more powerful than the one which Wu Ming had.

The mirror floated in midair. After absorbing the Qi from the grandmaster, a shadow appeared in the mirror. The grandmaster kneeled down beneath the mirror.

"Master, Xuanyuan should be dead. I am unable to sense the presence of the pearl any longer." He said obediently.

"You useless bunch. He isn't dead. He's in Lishou City of the Eastern Dynasty. Go kill him immediately!" The shadow sounded furious. His voice was like thunder which struck the ten king fighters, causing them to cough blood.

“That’s not possible, Master. We forced him to dive into the depths of the sea. There was a huge disaster inside the Blue Sea where a whirlpool killed everything, afterwards the water turned clear. He should not be alive.”

“Is that so. He still has the pearl, so I know he’s alive, unless he gave the pearl to someone else. No matter what, you have to retrieve the pearl. Wait for my command when you arrive in Lishou City. General Li Gang will help you deal with Xuanyuan. If possible, bring him to me alive. We can use him to lure my younger sister home.” The young master of Yin Clan said.

“I understand, master.”

The shadow disappeared and the assassins could finally breathe.

“Let’s go to Lishou City.” The grandmaster was irritated. He couldn’t imagine how Xuanyuan survived. Even he wouldn’t be able to survive the disaster that happened in the ocean.

“How come he’s still alive?” The other grandmaster was shocked.

“I don’t know. Perhaps he was saved by the protection Yin Zhenluo put on him. But he won’t be so lucky this time. I’ll break his arms and legs. Then we will see if he can still run away again!”

## Chapter 132 – Shiguan

Inside the Youyun Stone market.

“Master Li Wu. You’re here! We’ve got some nice stones from the mines nearby. Some people have won quite a lot from this batch!” A middle aged man smiled obligingly.

“If it isn’t master Duyu. I followed your advice a few times and lost every time.” Li Wu said coldly. He didn’t seem to like Duyu.

“I guarantee, you won’t lose this time.”

“If he was able to pick the winners, then he would buy the stones and open them himself. He doesn’t have to be a skilled gemmologist to give advice and receive commission when people win.” Xuanyuan cut straight to the point and headed inside.

Duyu glared at Xuanyuan’s back, then turned back to Li Wu with a smile and asked, “Would that be your friend?”

“A friend I just met. He wants to try his luck in the stone market.” Li Wu took Xuanyuan’s words to heart, and grew to despise Duyu even more.

Looking at their backs, Duyu thought maliciously, “I would’ve let you win a little, but now I’ll just suck you dry of all your money.” He then followed them inside.

In the garden, there were many stones of different shapes lying around with countless people swarming around them. Everyone was able to select their stones with their own hands. Some of them even cut small pieces off with their weapons in hopes to gather clues. Xuanyuan glanced around the place, realizing immediately that there weren't many jades or crystals inside these stones and lost his interest at once.

In the second garden, Duyu began his long chatty introduction, "These are stones from the Youyun mine. I guarantee there will be some unusual jades inside them..."

But Xuanyuan was annoyed, "Get lost. You're annoying. You can fool stupid people, but you can't fool me."

Duyu was struck by Xuanyuan's rudeness, "Are you saying that I'm a fraud? I'm a gemmologist hired by the Youyun Stone market. How dare you?"

Li Wu felt insulted as well. Was he the stupid person who got scammed? He asked Duyu to choose the stones many times before and he usually lost. But after some thought, Xuanyuan wasn't insulting him intentionally.

"So what? We didn't hire you. Do you want to gamble with me?" Xuanyuan glanced through the stones. They were not much better than those in the first garden.

"Great! We'll gamble on the stones!" Duyu smirked, pondering how much he could scam from the boy. He was experienced in gemmology, while Xuanyuan wasn't. The boy was young, and he was the friend of the idiot, Li Wu. Duyu thought that it was a guaranteed win.

“Alright. If we are doing this, we’ll get better quality stones. Take us to the best stones the market has.” Xuanyuan was not intimidated. He observed the man closely, he was a peak king fighter who probably invested a few years into studying gemmology. If he was able to scam someone like Li Wu, he wouldn’t be an easy character.

“The scammer from this type of place will receive more commission with the more the customer spends. We’ll be able to earn a great deal this time.” Greed laughed inside Xuanyuan’s mind.

“Look! Someone’s gambling against master Duyu. This’ll be good. Master Duyu is very famous. He brought me to a very pure fighting source last time!” Someone said. Li Wu was increasingly grumpy. Every time he asked Duyu to choose stones for him, he got nothing from them.

“He’s just a kid. There’s no way for him to win. He is brave to gamble against master Duyu.” Another man said and people started to gather.

Li Wu smiled bitterly. He also thought that Xuanyuan was going to lose. But they weren’t very good friends, anyway. “He wanted to gamble with master Duyu. There’s nothing I can do. Maybe he can win.”

“Don’t be stupid, Li Wu. That’s not going to happen.”

“It’s still a good chance to see how master Duyu chooses his stones. We can learn a lot.

They passed through one garden after another, and arrived at the seventh garden. Inside the seventh garden, there was a disposition created by from class crystals, the Disposition of Spirituality. This was to provide Qi to the stones, so the quality of any crystals inside would be enhanced. In this garden, a jin of stone was a thousand king coins, much more than a jin of upper class crystals.

Xuanyuan's arrival attracted the attention of a large number of people. Only exceptional people with status and wealth were able to enter the seventh garden. The people gathered here were mainly imperial fighters, Xuanyuan scanned around. Suddenly, he saw a woman and his heart stopped.

"It's her!"

The woman had an exquisite face, delicate like a china doll. She was wearing a black long dress, embroidered with golden threads and numerous rare flora which complimented her figure perfectly. She was walking casually around the stones. Every man in the room was enamoured by the exquisite woman and their eyes followed her every movement.

"It's her! It's the Princess of Mo, Shiguan! Even Brother Fung Lie was scared when she appeared in the nest. She possessed a powerful fighting fire." Xuanyuan thought. If she wanted to kill him, he wouldn't be able to survive even now that he had merged with the Water of Heaven.

Suddenly, their eyes met. Xuanyuan felt like his body was electrocuted. His body shook and he turned his head immediately.

"Shall we begin?" Xuanyuan said.

“Not so quick. We should establish the rules first. If the quality of the jade, crystals, and source energy we receive from the stones are not as valuable as the one selected by opponent, then it’s counted as a loss. Anything we take from the stones of that round should be handed to the winning party and the loser will also have to pay the value of the winner’s selection to the winner. How does that sound?” Duyu was confident, since Xuanyuan suddenly became quite distracted. He figured the boy was starting to get scared.

“Sure. No problem. Make it quick.” Xuanyuan was in fact irritated by the presence of the Mo Princess. However, suddenly, Princess Shiguan strolled over to Xuanyuan and patted him on his shoulder like he was an old friend.

“We meet again!”

Xuanyuan was shocked. Looking at Shiguan’s stunningly beautiful face, he could only produce a dry laughter, “You must be thinking of someone else. I’ve never met you, lady.”

“You have a short memory. Well, you’re about to gamble. I won’t disturb you, but when this is over, I have something I would like to speak with you regarding something.” Shiguan said mildly. Nothing about her was intimidating, unlike when they met in the Mo nest.

Xuanyuan knew that he wouldn’t be able to escape from Shiguan once he was her target, so he concentrated on the gamble. He’d find a way to escape later.

Li Wu was dumbfounded by the beauty of Shiguan. He would like to have her, but the mysterious air exuberating from her was quite intimidating. He was jealous of Xuanyuan, for simply knowing such beautiful woman. He was thinking how he could get her attention. Only he was worthy of someone as pretty as

Shiguan.

Duyu was also shocked that the boy knew someone as strong as the Shiguan. She was one of the most powerful imperial fighters in the seventh garden.

“Alright then, who is going first?” Duyu asked nonchalantly.

“You go first.” Xuanyuan said as he glanced at Shiguan again. She was not as scary as he remembered which allowed him to calm down.

“You even know how to identify precious stones? Not bad. You’ve improved a lot in such a short period of time. You’re quite a genius.” Shiguan said to Xuanyuan. The whole room was boiling with jealousy.

Xuanyuan could only laugh sheepishly as Duyu began choosing the first stone.

## Chapter 133 – Huge Gamble

Duyu looked around at all kinds of stones. From his hand, he summoned several lights and pushed them into the stones one by one to sense if there were any valuable stones inside. In the end, he picked a stone weighing five hundred jin.

“That will be five hundred thousand kingly coins.” An old man said who managed the seventh garden. Even though Duyu was hired by the stone market, he still had to pay. Stone gambling was an expensive hobby.

Duyu glanced at Xuanyuan coldly and cut into the stone with a knife. His skill was superb. The stone was as big as an adult man. When half of the stone still left, a light shone out from inside the stone which startled many people.

“Top class crystals! They are very pure! The kid is doomed to lose.”

“Master Duyu is so great...”

Three hundred jin of top class crystals was put in front of Xuanyuan. Duyu smirked, “This worth seven hundred and fifty thousand king coins. Do you even have that much money?”

“We still don’t know who’s going to win.” Xuanyuan smiled. He started to walk around the place, but didn’t use any special method to check the stones. He merely observed the stones, their shape, colour, markings would show the origin of these stones, and what was hidden inside.

He stopped in front of a light green coloured stone and touched it. The stone was three hundred jin in weight.

“Three hundred thousand king coins.” The old man declared, an indescribable light flashed through his eyes. Xuanyuan noticed it, but didn’t think too much about it. He paid without hesitation, which surprised many people. He was both young and rich, but the audience found the stone he chose laughable.

“He doesn’t know anything. This is a watermelon stone. It’s not likely that it has anything inside. He’s going to lose!”

Xuanyuan paid no attention to them and began cutting the stone with his dagger. He was much more skillful than Duyu in his cutting method. Many onlookers also recognized his skill.

“He knows how to work with stones!” Duyu was shocked.

However, no matter how good at cutting he was, there was not even a tiny piece of jade in sight. This was the nature of stone gambling. You might get rich one day, you might lose everything the next day.

“Haha, that’s what I said. He wanted to gamble against master Duyu. What a joke? We’ve already told him there isn’t anything inside the watermelon stone. What an idiot.”

“How’s that possible?” Xuanyuan frowned and grabbed a bunch of stone powder. He chose the stone according to the Book of Acquisition. It’s very likely to have an unusual crystal in that kind of stone. Even if there wasn’t, he’d still find top class crystals. He didn’t understand. He just stood there silently,

listening to the mockery from the audience. Duyu was acting even more cocky.

Xuanyuan suddenly understood. The stones did have unusual crystals in them, but the Youyun Stone market would use advanced methods to cut them open and remove the crystals, so they would always make a profit. It was one of their disgusting tricks.

He wanted to expose them, but thought better to act when he's angry. He glared at the old man, causing him to jump with surprise.

"Does he know?" The old man thought.

"Loser, pay up. If you don't have enough money to pay, you can repay the debt by being my servant. How about that?" Duyu smiled brightly.

"Of course, we'll continue." Xuanyuan pulled out three hundred jin of top class crystals from his ring, silencing the onlookers.

"Good, I'll have to see how much you've got to spend." Duyu laughed. In his eyes, Xuanyuan was begging to give him money.

Duyu picked another stone. It weighed the same as the previous stone. He didn't seem to be as lucky this time. He kept cutting until the stone until it was only the size of a human head, but there still wasn't any crystal. But the next cut revealed a shiny blue light. Everyone suddenly felt a coolness in the air.

"Hahaha, it's an unusual crystal! An Ice Crystal! Haha. Boy, I'm lucky today." Duyu couldn't help but to laugh loudly. The crowd were very impressed with his show of skills.

“Master Duyu is very skillful. I’ll have to hire you to give me direction.”

Li Wu was feeling sour. How nice it’d be if he was as lucky when Duyu advised him.

“There’s eight jin of ice crystal. They’re worth a thousand and sixty jin of top class crystal. Four million kingly coins! Do you have that much money to give me?”

“We still don’t know who’s going to win this round.” Xuanyuan smiled coldly.

“Boy, just admit that it’s your loss. Don’t lose everything gambling. You won’t be able to identify anything good.”

“That’s right. You’re nothing compared to master Duyu.”

Xuanyuan smiled mockingly, “A bunch of useless scum. You only know how to bark like dogs. If you’re so cocky, why don’t you join the gamble? I’ll cover everything you bet if I lose.”

“Don’t be silly. How can you possibly pay?” One of the young men said. Other people mumbled agreement.

Xuanyuan didn’t reply, but he suddenly put three thousand jin of top class crystals on the floor. Everyone was shocked speechless at once.

“Stop your stupid barks. Just say if you’re going to gamble. If you won’t put

your money where your mouth is, just fuck off. This Youyun Stone market must be a low class place. Is just anyone allowed to enter the seventh garden and irritate someone as important as me? Can I kick all these unrelated people out of here?" Xuanyuan said, looking at the old man.

"Of course." The old man nodded.

"Be careful with your words, asshole. Here's two million king coins. I'll gamble!" They were all provoked. The people gathered here were all from rich families in Lishou City.

"That's right. I'll see how much you can afford to lose. Three million!" Another man also threw out three crystal tokens from the Taibai Trading Centre.

Many people put their money into the gamble. Even Li Wu bet for Duyu to win. The stake was sixty-six million king coins, causing Xuanyuan's heartbeat to increase. He only had twenty million king coins. This was the first huge gamble he had taken. Everyone was looking at Xuanyuan. They all want to see if he had any real talent, or was just another spoilt rich kid.

"Alright, I'll choose a stone." Xuanyuan tried his best to calm down. He couldn't win. The Mo princess, Shiguan watched the events quietly and smiled sweetly at Xuanyuan.

"Don't worry. If you lose and are unable to repay them, I'll help you."

Xuanyuan was surprised, but his confidence was boosted. A princess could surely afford this.

The people around was astonished and jealous at the same time. If they could kill Xuanyuan with their glares, Xuanyuan would've died a million times.

## Chapter 134 – Strange Stone

“I don’t believe the kid will choose a winning stone. You don’t get eight jins of Ice Crystal every day. That’s the favourite of people who study water class techniques.”

“Who’s this kid? Someone from new money?”

“I’ve never seen him. Where do you know him from, Li Wu?”

“Well, I don’t know him very well...”

These young masters of Lishou City gossiped. They all thought Xuanyuan was going to lose.

But Xuanyuan was not affected by them. He looked at each stone with a peaceful mind. He’d touch them gently, sensing them with his heart of hearts. He was right. Some of the stones seemed to have potential, but when he sensed them carefully, he felt something was missing with them. Those were being cut using an advanced technique. The crystals inside were already extracted, and filled with useless materials. The stone market intended to trick its customers. Since stone gambling was supposed to be about the gemmologist’s ability and luck, the stone market would be hurt gravely if people found out they were cheating.

Every time Xuanyuan touched a deformed stone, he smiled coldly towards the old man, which frightened the old man.

“What a terrifying boy. He’s much more talented in the gemmology than Duyu. He can even sense if the stones have been changed. Those stones were cut open and put back together by the master of the market himself. I’ll have to inform the master about this. If the rumours get out, the market’s reputation will suffer.” The old man thought. A jade pendant appeared in his palm, he concentrated his mind and shattered the jade. No one noticed the actions of this old man.

Xuanyuan was patient in finding the right stone, but the onlookers grew more obnoxious.

“Stop pretending. Hurry up. Are you trying to take your time so you can think of a way to get out of the situation?”

“Stop wasting our time. You’re going to lose anyway.”

Xuanyuan had already picked a stone. According to the Book of Acquisition, it was called the Hiding Stone. It didn’t look spectacular, but what was hiding inside was surely rare and valuable. It was more than a thousand jin. However, he grinned at the people who spoke, “Be good doggies and stop barking will you. If you’re not happy, then put in more money towards the bet. What’s the matter? Don’t have enough money?”

The onlookers were provoked and started to bet their crystals, there were two thousand jin in total.

“I’ll see what you say next, when you lose!”

“That’s right, if you can’t repay us, you can become my servant. I will make you

bark like a dog for all my guests.”

“If your pretty friend can spend a night with me, I’ll spare you debt.” One of them were very brave indeed, trying to get Shiguan into his bed. Xuanyuan laughed at the idea.

“Then your whole house will have to die. Do you even know who she is? Her older sister is the Elder Princess of Mo. She’ll kill every single one of you. She is the Younger Princess, Shiguan. The Body of All Medicines. She controls a powerful fighting fire. If she’s upset, the entire city will be engulfed in flames. Don’t say I didn’t warn you.”

None could believe what they had heard. They knew the woman was no ordinary person, but why would the Mo Princess come to a place like this? Those who teased Shiguan grew pale. They almost couldn’t stand.

Xuanyuan revealed Shiguan’s identity so she’d attract everyone’s attention. When this was over, he’d use the chance to escape. He also thought she would deny her identity, but he was wrong.

“That’s right. I am the Younger Princess of Mo, Shiguan.” She also summoned a burgundy-coloured fire in her palm. The fire turned into the twisted face of a demon and a scorching heat radiated in the room.

“Demonic Fire! It is the Princess!” People were petrified. The one who spoke disrespectfully about her passed out from the shock.

“I’ve heard the Youyun Stone market acquired a strange stone. I want to see it. I won’t bite. By the way, aren’t you a disciple from the Fighting Dragon Sect? You

survived the shadow of my sister's fire, I like you a lot. Looks like Fung Lie had the same thought." Shiguan retracted the fire, smiling sweetly and drew the attention back to Xuanyuan.

"Fung Lie? Is that the reincarnation of the Wind Spirit? He is the great genius of the sect. He once crossed the border into the Eastern Dynasty and no one could stop him."

Xuanyuan laughed loudly, "Your highness. You like to joke around. I'm from the Yin Clan." He immediately punched out the Fist of Heavenly Dragon. The shadow of a Heavenly Dragon appeared behind him, shocking the onlookers.

"It's the Heavenly Dragon of the Yin Clan!" An imperial fighter screamed out. All those young men who mocked Xuanyuan were now regretting their own stupidity. It was foolish to offend the Yin Clan of the Eastern Dynasty. Li Wu was pleasantly surprised. His family was a sub branch of the Yin clan.

Shiguan frowned. She didn't know that Xuanyuan knew the Yin Clan's technique. Who was he exactly?

Duyu's face was dark. He offended someone from the Yin Clan. However, he wouldn't declare defeat just because of the other person was from a high status. Though he changed his tone and spoke politely. "Young master, even though you are from the Yin Clan, you still need to follow the rules. Pick your stone quickly."

"Of course." Xuanyuan nodded, it was funny that these people changed their attitude so quickly. He pointed at the stone he set his mind on and took out a million king coins. He smiled at the old man threateningly.

They couldn't cover up the scam by killing Xuanyuan, as he was from the Yin clan. So after he received the coins from Xuanyuan, the old man concentrated and shattered another jade pendant.

Picking up his dagger, Xuanyuan began delicately cutting the stone. Everyone was weary of Shiguan, but they were more curious about Xuanyuan's stone.

Xuanyuan cut piece after piece from the stone. The stone grew smaller and smaller. And yet, there was still no sign of any crystals or jade. Those who placed a bet slowly relaxed, but they didn't dare mock Xuanyuan anymore. Since he knew the Heavenly Dragon technique, he must be an important descendant of the Yin clan.

He was patient in cutting the stone. He was confident that the Book of Acquisition wouldn't be mistaken. But his confidence subsided when the stone became fist sized. Perhaps this time he was going to lose.

"Haha, you lose. Pay your debt!" Duyu couldn't control his excitement. The others also smiled victoriously. The boy would be able to pay all their bets, since he was from the Yin clan.

Xuanyuan felt defeated. He looked at the stone and looked at Shiguan. He then threw the stone on the ground.

The stone opened, shattering off the grey surface, revealing a source energy of multiple colours.

"Source energy! It's a source energy! As big as a fist!"

Xuanyuan picked it up and pondered for a while. It was two jin of source energy. He turned to Duyu, who grew very pale, and said, “How about this? A jin of pure source energy is worth more than a thousand top class crystals. This source energy is two jin. It is worth more than your ice crystal!”

Duyu collapsed on the ground, while Xuanyuan laughed. He collected the sixty-six million king coins and two thousand top class crystal, which he safely stored in his ring.

“You lost, give me the ice crystal and two thousand jin of top class crystals or five million king coins. Whatever suits you.”

There was nothing else that could be done. Duyu gave him the crystal and five million king coins. He felt as if his heart was bleeding, but Xuanyuan didn’t show any sympathy.

When this was over, a powerful force descended onto the seventh garden, along with a string of laughter.

“It’s my honour to welcome the Princess of Mo and the young master from Yin Clan to the Youyun Stone market. The market has just collected a strange stone. I’d like to welcome you both to take a look at it.”

## Chapter 135 – Great Actor

A man wearing a black silk robe arrived at the scene. He was tall, elegant, and also a powerful imperial realm fighter.

This must be the master of the Youyun Stone market, Xuanyuan thought, as he saw the old man along with many people in the garden bowing politely to him.

The master of the stone market, Youyun Lung smiled, “I believe the young masters must be tired from betting. We’ll send people to guide the rest of you home. We’ll also send a hundred blocks of top class crystals to everyone who lost the bet, to show our gratitude for your support.”

Those young rich boys who just lost most of their savings were comforted. They grew even fonder towards the stone market.

The master of the market was good at handling the crisis. By giving them a few rewards, he sent them out of the market, while allowing them to retain their dignity and reducing the risk that their fraud would be exposed by Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan was impressed. The master of the market was no ordinary man.

After this, there was only Xuanyuan, Shiguan, ten other imperial fighters and Youyun Lung.

“I am the master of Youyun Stone market, Youyun Lung. Young master Yin, you’re so young and yet so talented. I believe among the people here today, you are the best in gemmology. Princess Shiguan, you’ve seen uncountable

treasures, please help check this piece of stone and tell me if this is a treasure.” Youyun Lung smiled. He took out a box made of jade and turned to the imperial fighters, “My friends, didn’t you all come here today to see this?”

When the box was revealed, Greed screamed in Xuanyuan’s head, “It’s my Origin of Memories! You must get it, boy! I’ve saved up a lot of Qi. With the help of the Origin of Memories, I’ll be able to enter the imperial realm and help you capture Shiguan and devour her fighting fire!”

Xuanyuan thought, this was the opportunity he was waiting for. He thought he wouldn’t be able to escape from Shiguan, but the Origin of Memories could help.

Xuanyuan narrowed his eyes and smiled, “Please open the box and let us see.”

The stone inside was ugly and shaped strangely. However, Xuanyuan’s devouring technique resonated with the stone. He knew that great power was hiding inside the stone.

“We were unable to cut it open, nor could we destroy it by fire or water. But it’s too ordinary for making instruments. I have no idea what it is.” Youyun Lung said.

“Perhaps I can try to burn it with my fighting fire?” Shiguan didn’t seem to recognize the stone either, but she still wanted to try.

“Please go ahead, your highness. Fighting fire is a rare natural treasure. It’s fortunate to be able to witness it.” Youyun Lung hesitated for a while, but agreed in the end.

“You think you can destroy my Origin of Memories using fighting fire?” Greed said disdainfully.

Shiguan grabbed the stone in her palm and summoned the Demonic Fire. A dangerous heat spread through the room, forcing the other people to take a step back, except Xuanyuan. Who remained unmoved. She continued to burn the stone for almost fifteen minutes before she gave up, but the stone was unharmed. It was still ink-black, without a hint of being affected by the fire.

“I haven’t seen anything like this.” Shiguan shook her head and returned the stone to Youyun Lung.

Apart from Xuanyuan and Shiguan, everyone was sweating. Xuanyuan felt as if he was blown by a cool breeze. He was completely unaffected by the Demonic Fire, which surprised Youyun Lung and the imperial fighters. Xuanyuan grinned at them and said, “I feel a strange connection with the stone. If I can sense anything from it, would you consider giving it to me?”

“Please try and see if you can sense it. But I can’t promise I’ll give you the stone. It is, after all, an unusual stone.” Youyun Lung was curious.

“I’ll give it a try.” Xuanyuan replied, while gesturing his hand to summon a spell. In his mind, he was screaming at Greed.

“Greedy old bugger, summon your Origin of Memories and devour it. My life depends on you!” At once, a black light shone from his body. The stone trembled and swiftly, it flew into Xuanyuan’s body and was absorbed.

Youyun Lung was shocked. It was too late to retrieve the stone. Everyone,

including Shiguan was surprised.

“Young master Yin, what happened?” Youyun Lung cried.

“Boy, buy me some time. I need a bit of time to merge with the origin.” Greed said. A plan formed in Xuanyuan’s mind – he hurt his organ deliberately and coughed a great deal of blood, putting on an astonished expression.

“I have no idea what happened. I felt a mysterious connection to the stone before I was hit by something. I have no idea what happened.”

Youyun Lung suspected that Xuanyuan stole his stone, but Xuanyuan’s shocked face made him believe the story. He had never heard of a stone that could fly into anyone’s body.

“Young master Yin, how do you feel? Let me check your body!”

Xuanyuan looked both scared and angry, he screamed, “Master Lung, do you think I’d take away your stone? My clan is not small, we wouldn’t care about some little stone. I have learnt many secret techniques from the clan. Did you set up the stone to forcefully steal the Yin clan’s techniques? You’ve arranged the stone specifically for me. Didn’t you?”

Youyun Lung was angry. He didn’t expect that Xuanyuan would accuse him, but he was from the Yin clan, and they were surrounded by a dozen other witnesses, including Princess Shiguan, so he couldn’t kill him. He said slowly, “Young master Yin, you’ve misunderstood. I’m just worried that the stone has hurt you. Please let me check!”

“Master Lung, I didn’t take you for someone like this. You must have used a technique on the stone to steal the techniques from my Yin Clan!” Xuanyuan said as he coughed even more blood.

He took a few steps backwards and moved next to the old man. He grabbed a bunch of the shattered jade powder on the ground, “I was right. Youyun Lung, you devious man. This is the jade of communication. This old man informed you of my arrival and you set me up!”

Youyun Lung was surprised. Xuanyuan even noticed something as minor as this. But in fact, he didn’t have any thoughts to harm him. “Master Yin, you’ve misunderstood. Whenever an important guest arrived at the market, I’d come and greet them myself. This is our rule. Even if you’re not here, I would still come out to greet Princess Shiguan.”

“Don’t lie to me! I’ve guessed your little tricks, that’s why you want to kill me!” Xuanyuan screamed. He turned to the imperial fighters, “Let me tell you the evilness of the stone market. Youyun Lung used a technique to extract the crystals from some of the stones to scam you. However, with my gemmology knowledge, I caught onto their scam!” Xuanyuan used a small amount of his Qi to shatter eight stones like they were made of glass. Youyun Lung wanted to stop him, but Shiguan and the other people wanted to see what Xuanyuan was revealing, so Youyun Lung couldn’t do anything.

“You’ve all been studying gemmology for many years. Please take a look. The crystals were replaced with junk. Even though they tried to conceal the damage, but you can still see the difference, if you know where to look. Do you see now?”

One of the imperial fighters, an old man, observed and nodded. He was clearly angry and accused, “Master Yin is right. Youyun Lung, you must explain this in detail.”

“I can’t tell the difference, but it’s almost impossible to find no crystals after shattering eight stones in the seventh garden. It proves that Master Yin is onto something.” Another man also gritted his teeth angrily.

“I can’t believe you did this to us, ‘old friend’? What will be your explanation?”

Xuanyuan sighed. He bought himself some time. In order to fan the flames even more, he said, “You knew that I’d already learnt your trick which is why you sent the other people away, meaning there were less witnesses. You think I didn’t know? The stone was not a strange, unusual stone. It’s an assassination weapon! Wait until I return to the clan, I’ll be able to see exactly what method you used. Then we’ll have solid evidence!”

Youyun Lung knew he wouldn’t be able to silence these people, but luckily there weren’t many people here. He was calculating on how to murder all these witnesses. He glared at Xuanyuan.

“What? You want to kill me? After being exposed by me? You think that’s possible?”

Before Youyun Lung was able to answer, an announcement suddenly came from outside, “Everyone in Lishou City, attention! I am from the Yin Clan’s Heavenly Dragon Guard. We have come with an Order of Heavenly Dragon, instructing all fighters to aid the capture of a disciple from the Fighting Dragon’s sect who killed two of our Yin clan’s warriors. He is named Xuanyuan. Catch him alive, if possible.”

Xuanyuan thought this was the most inopportune timing.

Youyun Lung's thought to kill him disappeared at once. He couldn't do any of that when the Heavenly Dragon Guards were in the city. He smiled obligingly, "Master Yin, this is really a misunderstanding. I did make a few mistakes, but I want to come clean to all of you so I gathered you here. I've never thought of killing you. I don't even know what happened to the stone!"

"How dare you attempt to kill someone from the Yin clan. You have to give me a better explanation! My clan is hunting down a disciple from the Fighting Dragon sect, I'll deal with that first." After his proclamation, Xuanyuan flew away.

"Don't go! I have many things to ask you!" Shiguan followed.

After a while, Li Wu led the grandmaster from the Yin clan, the assassins and his father, General Li Gang, into the seventh garden.

"Where is he? I've sensed the aura of the pearl, but it's getting further away." The grandmaster asked.

"Master Lung, where's the man who knows the secret technique of the Yin Clan? He's the one we are chasing after. He stole the technique!" Li Wu asked Youyun Lung.

Youyun Lung almost fainted at Li Wu's question. That boy tricked him!

"Follow me. He just ran away. I want to kill him personally!" He said.

All the assassins, Li Gang and Youyun Lung leapt forward and chased after Xuanyuan.

Li Wu knew very well he had no business joining the fight. But he remembered that Xuanyuan was very rich. Perhaps he left something of value in the wooden house by the stream. He led twenty peak king realm fighters to the little wooden house where Su Mei and Mochou lived.

## Chapter 136 – Light of Heavenly Dragon

“Don’t try to run!” Youyun Lung growled while unleashing his imperial realm power, he crushed all the houses within a mile radius, killing countless civilians. But he ignored the damage he caused due to his fury. He was tricked by a devious and cunning boy!

He was still ten miles away from Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan heard his scream, which made his heart jump, “They are quick!”

“So you’re called Xuanyuan. They’re all after you. Why don’t you follow me? They can’t touch you if you are with me.” Shiguan smiled innocently.

“You knew they’re after me, why are you following me?” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes. His kidneys were refined after devouring the Water of Heaven, he now had four hundred and fifty dragons of strength, he was almost as powerful as a grandmaster. This was a number which ordinary people couldn’t fathom. A king realm fighter who studied a Xian class technique would only have two hundred dragons of strength after they refined their first organ.

“I can’t let you die. I have many questions for you. Also I’m curious, why aren’t you afraid of my fighting fire?” Shiguan grinned.

“Well, then. If you want to know, help me stop them. You have several types of fighting fire, it’s easy for you to kill them, right?” Xuanyuan tried to encourage Shiguan. He was carrying the Wind Spirit Spear and accelerating his pace every second, but his enemies were much stronger and they’d catch up sooner or later.

Shiguan shook her head, “I don’t kill innocent people. They’re not my enemies. I won’t kill them.”

“They’re not innocent, they want to kill me!” Xuanyuan growled angrily.

Xuanyuan didn’t get another chance to convince Shiguan. From the sky, a terrifying force descended, and a woman in black clothes appeared in midair. Xuanyuan felt like he was looking up at an insurmountable mountain. Youyun Lung, Li Gang and the Guards bowed towards the woman immediately.

“Greetings to Princess Pingyao.”

“I had heard that the Princess of Mo, Shiguan, has arrived in the Eastern Dynasty. I came here to meet her, and see her majestic fighting fire. Go, do what you must. I’ll take care of Princess Shiguan.” Princess Pingyao commanded. She looked tougher than any male soldier.

Shiguan realized that she could no longer help Xuanyuan escape from the trouble, since Princess Pingyao had arrived. She was the royal princess of the Eastern Dynasty. She possessed the Sky Covering Earth, the fighting earth that ranked number twenty-two on the List. Just like the name, her fighting earth could cover the entire sky. She was extremely powerful.

Shiguan became a mere shadow and disappeared in an instant, she soon reappeared next to Princess Pingyao.

“Princess Pingyao, shall we go to a remote location, so we won’t hurt any unfortunate souls and living creatures.” She asked.

“My thoughts exactly.” Pingyao nodded. Her voice was deep and calming. The princesses disappeared from the sky and Youyun Lung laughed when he saw Xuanyuan was alone.

“If Shiguan were with you, I wouldn’t dare to kill you. But I would like to see who can protect you now. Give me back my stone and I might give you a quick death.” Youyun Lung said as he picked up his speed. Li Gang’s eyes brightened when he heard about the stone. Even the guards showed greed in their eyes. A stone that was worth Youyun Lung’s attention must be an incredible treasure. No wonder he was so angry at the boy – his stone was stolen.

The Heavenly Dragon Guards ordered, “Li Gang, catch Xuanyuan alive. If you can obtain the stone, you shall be rewarded. I’ll report this to our master.”

Li Gang released his Qi at once. His Qi was aggressive and Xuanyuan could sense the pressure from afar was growing closer.

“Boy, they are coming. I need some more time. Combine the Water of Heaven and the talisman of ice. You can enhance the power of the talisman with its power.” Greed said. Xuanyuan quickly summoned the Water of Heaven into his palm. A clear, blue light appeared in his palm and he started to merge a talisman of ice with the Qi from the Water of Heaven. The talisman exploded with a bright blue colour. Xuanyuan immediately threw the talisman behind him as he continued to escape.

A huge dark blue coloured ice pillar pierced towards Youyun Lung and Li Gang like a huge ice sword.

“This is a talisman of ice made by the imperial elder of ice from the Taibai Trading Centre! Only the true disciples from Taibai have them. How did one land

in the hands of this boy?” Youyun Lung recognized the talisman. He ran the Youyun Stone Market for a number of years, so of course he had encountered the products of Taibai.

Youyun Lung and Li Gang attacked the blue ice pillar with their Qi which caused it to shatter on impact. They were completely uninjured.

“They are too powerful!” Xuanyuan panicked as he continued running.

Youyun Lung was getting closer and closer. Xuanyuan didn’t seem to be able to escape. Numerous strands of purple Qi shot into the sky from Youyun Lung’s body and dark clouds started to gather in the skies. Each cloud contained a suffocating pressure of an imperial fighter. Xuanyuan was finding it difficult to breathe under the pressure, which allowed Youyun Lung to move even closer.

Xuanyuan didn’t stand a chance against an imperial fighter.

“Lightning of Youyun! Die!” The clouds collided with each other and bolts of purple lightning struck towards Xuanyuan. Both Li Gang and Youyun Lung continued rushing towards Xuanyuan. They knew that they may have to fight the other for possession of the stone.

Countless lightning bolts rained down at Xuanyuan from the clouds, each of them contained a thousand dragons of power. Xuanyuan, was starting to think that this was the end for him.

However, when he was truly in despair, a golden light burst out from the point between his eyes. A heavenly dragon rose into the air, it was completely unaffected by the purple lighting striking its body. The dragon unleashed a roar

which shook the heaven and earth. A golden light exploded across the sky.

“The Light of Heavenly Dragon! That must be the protection placed on the boy by the young lady! Evade!” The guards were only in the grandmaster realm, they were a lot slower than Youyun Lung and Li Gang, who were imperial fighters. They recognized the dragon and immediately retreated.

The holy light from the dragon gathered in the sky and transformed into a gigantic golden sword. With a deafening roar from the dragon, the sword slashed down towards Xuanyuan’s pursuers.

Youyun Lung and Li Gang weren’t able to escape the stroke from the sword and were directly slashed by the sword. Blood filled the air as flesh was sliced from their bodies. Both their bodies were mangled beyond belief and their consciousness had been seriously injured.

Finally, Xuanyuan composed himself. With the Wind Spirit Spear in one hand and dagger in the other, he used the steps of Heavenly Dragon to charge back towards his enemies. The two men were both knocked unconscious from the attack and were unable to defend themselves from the incoming danger that was Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan’s dagger pierced directly into Youyun Lung’s head, sucking out an enormous amount of life essence. Xuanyuan couldn’t help his habit and also pried the ring from his cold dead hands. He pulled the dagger out from Youyun Lung’s head and then thrust it into Li Gang’s head, devouring his life essence and robbing him of his ring as well. With the help of the Light of Heavenly Dragon, Xuanyuan was able to kill two imperial realm fighters.

His dagger shook violently as Greed screamed excitedly. “I only need one more hour before I can step into the imperial realm. I’ll also regain parts of my memories. Hahahaha....”

An hour was far too long. They needed to keep on running. However, suddenly, Xuanyuan's heart started to race. He felt a sudden sense of danger well up in his chest.

“Damn it, Su Mei and Mochou are in danger!”

He immediately turned around and ran towards the stream. Youyun Lung and Li Gang's bodies started to rot and only their decomposed bodies remained. All the instruments they were wearing were completely destroyed by the golden sword.

When the guards and assassins arrived and saw the bodies, they were disgusted.

“Young lady's Light of Heavenly Dragon is truly terrifying, but it can only be used once. There's nothing else to protect the boy. Kill him!” The guard ordered. The team quickly followed behind Xuanyuan.

## Chapter 137 – Life and Death

In the wooden house next to the stream, Mochou was sitting on a wooden chair that was slightly too tall for her, causing her feet to dangle in the air. Her face looked a little sad. Su Mei sat next to her, pondering what she should do for a living. The hundred king coins given by Xuanyuan was a lot of money, but she couldn't depend on it forever. She took Xuanyuan's advice and rejected the men who visited her since he left. She was determined to let Mochou have a better life than her.

"Aunt Mei!" Mochou suddenly called when Su Mei was in deep thought.

"What's wrong, my dear?" Su Mei asked.

"I keep having a bad feeling."

"Did something happen to the young master?"

"I don't know. I hope he's fine. Aunt Mei, you can't leave me. You have to stay with me." Mochou said seriously.

"Silly child. I wouldn't leave you." Su Mei smiled warmly.

Someone knocked the door, "Madame Su, I'm Li Wu."

"It's master Li. Mochou, stay in your room, I'll ask master Li if something has happened to the young master." Su Mei was happy to hear from Li Wu. The young master Li had left a good impression on her with the way he dealt with the

previous situation.

She opened the door and went outside, bowing to Li Wu, “Greetings to Master Li.”

Li Wu was tempted by Su Mei’s allure, but thought better since she was tainted by several of his own servants.

“Madame Su, did young master Xuanyuan leave anything in your house?”

“Xuanyuan? Is that the name of the young master?” Su Mei was surprised at the question. But she shook her head, “I don’t know. Did he forget something in the house? He only gave a hundred king coins to me for the future.”

“Well, if you know nothing, you can just die.” Li Wu’s smile was cruel. He wrapped his hands around Su Mei’s neck which was followed by a loud snap, “Your young master Xuanyuan is probably dead by now. You should go join him, so he won’t be lonely on the road to hell!”

The moment Su Mei died, Mochou’s devastated scream came from inside the room. “Aunt Mei! You can’t leave me!! What should I do? Aunt Mei!”

“The little blind girl is quite good, she will be a beauty when she grows. Go in and search the house. Let’s see if Xuanyuan left anything behind.” Li Wu ordered. Twenty king fighters rushed into the small house while Mochou mumbled quietly to herself, clearly in shock.

“Aunt Mei.... You told me you’d stay with me... They are all bad people. They killed Aunt Mei. He told me I need to concentrate and think of kicking the bad guys out.” Mochou activated the disposition created by Xuanyuan. A bright light

emerged from her chest, controlling the 'forced' part of the disposition.

A force crashed out like thunder and suddenly reduced thirteen of the king realm fighters into dust. The rest of them were scared witless and ran from the house as fast as they could.

"Master, something's wrong. Someone created a disposition here!"

Li Wu was excited, "I knew it! Xuanyuan must have left something precious in this dirty place. Destroy the house!"

He took out his battle knife and joined by the king fighters, they attacked the wooden house. It was a fragile wooden house, unable to withstand such a powerful attack. It completely shattered into pieces. Ten top class crystals were revealed, they were surrounding Mochou, protecting her with violent thunder.

Staring at the disposition, Li Wu was frantically excited. "What a waste! Making such disposition for these lowly people. Destroy the disposition. It'll break when the power of the crystals runs out. The blind girl must have some treasure on her."

"Why did you kill Aunt Mei? She never hurt anyone. She would even heal wounded animals. She was a good person... She treated me like her own daughter even though I'm blind... She was my mother... Why did you kill my mother?" Tears streamed down from the little girl's face, with each word she spoke, she started to sniffle and found it hard to speak the more she continued. When she was done, Mochou crouched on the ground, hugging her knees while crying to herself.

“Those types of lowly people live and die. It’s normal. I promise not to kill you if you give me what Xuanyuan left behind. You are quite adorable. Why don’t you come with me and be my servant girl? You won’t lack food or pretty things. What do you think?” Li Wu laughed. At the same time, the king fighters continued attacking the disposition with their Qi. The Qi inside the crystals was being consumed very quickly.

“Aunt Mei was not a lowly person... She was nice and you’re bad. I won’t listen to you.” Mochou was devastated by the death of Su Mei and was scared of the attacks which were being unleashed towards her.

She used to have a family, and a comfortable life, but now she was just a little blind girl who was left all alone in the world. The attacks lasted for an hour until cracks started appearing on the crystals. They wouldn’t be able to power the disposition for much longer. Mochou didn’t notice, she hadn’t stopped crying the entire time.

“Stupid little girl. Give me the thing that Xuanyuan gave you. Otherwise when the disposition is gone, you’ll be dead!” Li Wu said threateningly. The fighters had almost used up all of their Qi, so they were all consuming strength-replenishing pills to continue their attacks.

“Save me big brother. I’m scared. They’re bad guys who killed aunt Mei!”

“He’s probably dead already. He won’t be able to save you.” Li Wu mocked.

“Li Wu, do you know what you’ve done?” Xuanyuan appeared from above. His eyes were red with fury. Four hundred and fifty dragons of strength exploded from his body. His sudden release of overwhelming force crushed the king realm fighters’ bones who were beneath him. They were unprepared and fell to the

ground screaming.

Li Wu couldn't even stand from the terror. Xuanyuan could crush him like he was an ant. "How's this possible? How could you escape. My father... my father's Li Gang. He's the general of Lishou City. There will be consequences if you kill me!"

Xuanyuan summoned a surge of blue water from his palm which surrounded Li Wu's head like a bubble. The great pressure from the water slowly and painfully crushed inwards. Panic spread to every corner of Li Wu's body.

"Let me go, please let me go.... Don't kill me. I'll do whatever you ask me to."

There wasn't much time to stay here with the assassins following closely behind. He unleashed a powerful punch and his fist crushed Li Wu's skull. Blood and brain matter burst out from his broken skull, covering the surroundings. Xuanyuan gathered the blue light again and destroyed what remained of Li Wu's body.

"Mochou, I'm here. I'm so sorry. This happened to you because of me." Xuanyuan's voice was coarse. He could hear everything Mochou was saying through his own connection with the disposition. She was just like him when he was a young beggar. The old beggar raised him and was Xuanyuan's whole world. The old beggar's death caused Xuanyuan to grow lost and feel like there was nowhere left for him in the world.

"Save me! I'm scared. We didn't do anything wrong. They killed aunt Mei!" Mochou ran towards Xuanyuan and hugged him tightly, like he was the only person left that she could rely on. Xuanyuan embraced her and comforted the little girl.

“It’s ok, I’ll take care of you from now on. I’m sorry you can’t see your aunt Mei anymore, but there’re people chasing after me. We can’t stay here. Otherwise we’ll be in danger.”

“I...I want to look at aunt Mei one more time... I want to remember what aunt Mei looks like.....I’ll remember her.”

She couldn’t stop tears as she tried to speak. She used all of the willpower she had to force her eyes to open. Slowly, a soft light shone out from her eyes.

Greed suddenly said, “Her eyes are opening. The Eyes of a Thousand Spirits that can see all.”

Mochou looked at Su Mei from the lights in her eyes. “Aunt Mei, I’m sorry.... I’m so sorry...”

Xuanyuan’s heart ached as he watched this scene. He swore in his heart that he would protect this little girl with his life.

But behind him, the guards and assassins from the Yin Clan had arrived. “There’s nowhere to escape now, Xuanyuan. Today is the day you die.”

## Chapter 138 – Mojue

Xuanyuan carried Mochou and leapt away. If Mochou wasn't there, Xuanyuan would have fought against them, but he couldn't risk letting Mochou get hurt.

Mochou's eyes were still beaming with light, as she continuously gazed at Xuanyuan with her tear-soaked eyes. She liked Xuanyuan, he was warm.

"Brother Xuanyuan." Mochou mumbled, "I'm tired. I need to sleep."

"It's extremely taxing on the body when the eyes open for the first time. It's all decided by fate. Keep the girl by your side. You'll need her to look for treasures in the future." Greed said quietly.

Xuanyuan was carrying Mochou in one hand and the Wind Spirit Spear in the other whilst escaping frantically.

"Damn it. He's just a king realm fighter. How can he be so fast? His strength is terrifying as well, he unleashed Four hundred and fifty dragons. No wonder why the master wants him alive. We can train him within the clan, he'll surely be a future talent."

"He is only strong because the young lady was the one who taught him. Instead of being thankful, he betrayed the clan." The Yin's guard discussed grudgingly.

"He's carrying a little girl. He might use her as a shield, what should we do?" An assassin asked.

“What do you care? You are hired assassins. It’s just a child, kill her and then him.” The guard commanded.

“Yes!” All the assassins replied.

The gap between them and Xuanyuan was slowly closing. Suddenly, a man suddenly appeared in midair directly in front of the guards and assassins.

The man’s appearance caused the sky to dim. He was like an ancient sword standing in the air for all to see. So sharp! Seeing the man, the hired assassins were shaken and bowed with respect.

“Greetings to brother Mojue!”

Mojue was extremely cold. The cold aura he exuded caused the other people to feel like their blood had frozen in their veins.

“Is this the new talent from Lunhui known as ‘Crazed Mojue’? Wonderful, come help us capture this boy. If you capture or kill the boy with us as witnesses, the Yin Clan will reward you.” The Yin Clan guard proposed.

Lunhui was a terrifying assassin organization. It was so powerful, it was respected by all of the sects and the Eastern Dynasty. The word Lunhui meant “the cycle after death.” The organization was extremely powerful and struck terror in the hearts of everyone. Mojue looked very young, not much older than Xuanyuan, but he was extremely powerful.

Mojue closed his eyes, and mumbled to himself, “When I was young, I had a little sister. I couldn’t even take care of her myself so I left her, hoping that someone would care for her. I left her on the outskirts of Lishou City.”

When he finished, a cold light flashed through his eyes and a head was sent flying into the air. The person who was killed was one of the king realm fighters perusing Xuanyuan.

Everyone was shocked, the grandmaster assassins asked, “What happened, Brother Mojue?”

Mojue ignored him and continued. “A prostitute picked up my baby sister. She did everything that she could to raise my sister to have a good life. Even though I’ve grown stronger now, my life is still not my own. Yet my only desire in this life is for my sister to be safe and to live happily.”

Another cold light appeared and another head flew into the air.

“The woman who raised my sister was called Su Mei. She had chosen to sell her body, but she still did her best to provide my sister with a good life. The debt of gratitude I owe her would take my entire life to repay, but I can no longer repay her. Today, she was killed without reason and it’s all because of you!”

This time, eight heads flew into the air. All ten king realm fighters were beheaded.

The assassin grandmaster was shaking, “Brother Mojue, what happened? Why are you killing your brothers? That woman was not important, who cares if she lives or dies.”

“Su Mei saved Xuanyuan and my sister grew close to Xuanyuan. I have been tracking his movements since he grabbed my sister to make sure she was in no danger, but don’t think that I forgot to keep an eye on your movements too. You all just accepted an order to attack Xuanyuan and kill my sister in his arms, that is why this is happening. You want to kill my sister? None of you are permitted to live!” Mojue didn’t even move, but the grandmaster assassin’s body was split in half.

“Mojue, don’t kill me. I was only following orders. Even if you kill me, the master will only send more people to kill Xuanyuan. If you let me go, I will inform the master and we will only kill Xuanyuan and make sure to care for your sister!” The guard from Yin clan grew pale. He knew very well, that even though he was already a peak grandmaster, he was nothing when confronted with an imperial realm practitioner. Not to mention the fact that Mojue had survived through a great deal of life and death battles. He was much more powerful than an ordinary imperial fighter.

“Xuanyuan is a good person. He doesn’t use his power to bully the weak, he uses his power to protect them. He doesn’t deserve to die. He also needs to care for my sister, so he can’t afford to die. I won’t let my sister be hurt again. Your death is sealed.” Mojue’s voice was cold. Numerous cold lights flashed and the guard along with the bodies of the dead were minced into small chunks of flesh.

Mojue stared at the direction Xuanyuan had left and firmly gripped his black and white dagger. The dagger was tainted with the blood of Xuanyuan’s pursuers.

“Thousand Illusions, looks like you’re the only companion in my life.” Mojue’s solitary figure stood in the sky. His dagger, which was called Thousand Illusions suddenly disappeared along with all traces of Mojue.

Xuanyuan was holding Mochou and continued to escape at full speed. Suddenly he arrived at the tranquil Blue Sea, and realized there was no longer anybody chasing after him. The Blue Sea was now transparent and quiet compared to when he previously encountered it.

“Someone stopped your assassins while you were escaping.” Greed said energetically, “Alright, alright. I’ve just reached the imperial realm.”

It took Greed much longer to regain his power than Xuanyuan thought. He felt like he had exhausted all of his Qi trying to escape so he decided to rest on a small island he saw in the sea. Mochou was still quietly sleeping like a log, nothing could wake her.

“Who stopped the assassins?” Xuanyuan frowned.

“I don’t know. But the reason they were able to chase after you was because of the pearl you are wearing on your neck. Someone powerful left a trace of their aura on it. I’ll devour the aura so they won’t be able to chase after you so easily.” A black light moved into the pearl, followed by silence. Xuanyuan only felt the pearl tremble slightly before calming down.

“Those stupid assassins. How dare they mess we me.” Greed was very proud.

“We are very lucky. It was probably a fateful encounter to have met the Body of a Thousand Spirits. This was a lucky find. When she wakes up, I’ll teach her how to use the protection of the thousand spirits.”

Xuanyuan asked, “What’s that?”

“It’s a Xian class technique. It provides protection to the user, but you can’t study it unless you have the body of a thousand spirits!” Greed chuckled, without explaining thoroughly. Xuanyuan wouldn’t refuse anything that could help protect Mochou.

“Then it’s settled. We’ll go back to the sect first. The Blue Sea contained the Water of Heaven. Maybe there’ll be a fighting fire in the Red Mountain.” Xuanyuan said.

“But the events in the Blue Sea must have attracted the attention of many powerful figures. Be careful to hide all our sensitive items using the devouring technique to conceal their auras. If it’s not an emergency, don’t use the Water of Heaven.” Greed suggested.

“I know. It was very lucky that Princess Pingyao appeared. Otherwise, I would have been taken away by Shiguan.” Xuanyuan recalled everything that happened. The events he encountered were much more dangerous than he ever anticipated.

And he also thought of Yin Zhenluo.

“This time, I was saved by the Light of Heavenly Dragon given to me by my beautiful master. I would have died if it wasn’t for her protection. I need to work hard and close the gap between our strengths!”

Suddenly a floral fragrance tainted by blood filled the air. A beautiful shadow appeared next to Xuanyuan.

“Master Xuanyuan, you ran so far without saying goodbye.” Shiguan’s black robe was covered with fresh blood. However, her face was unchanged. “Come with me. I have a lot of questions to ask you.”

## Chapter 139 – Laughter and Tears

“Princess Shiguan? Didn’t you go with Princess Pingyao? Why didn’t you stay and chat with her for a while more?” Xuanyuan laughed drily. Her black dress was tainted by blood, though she didn’t seem to mind at all. However, her face was also rather pale.

“I have lots of questions for you, so I have to take you with me. Even though I’m injured now, but it still won’t be a problem to take you with me.” She giggled.

Xuanyuan looked at her innocent face and heard her innocent voice. She’s a natural born ambassador, she seemed friendly and was very convincing. But Greed spoke, “Boy, don’t trust the words of a woman. Don’t worry, this will be easy. Since she’s badly injured, I’m confident I can seal her power and allow you to devour all of her fighting fire. This will drastically increase your strength and no one under the imperial realm will be your match.”

Xuanyuan had no idea why Shiguan was so fixated on him, but he didn’t feel any malicious intent from her, so he told Greed, “Make sure that you don’t hurt her, just seal her power.”

“All right, Romeo.” Greed said in a mocking voice. A great power suddenly surrounded Xuanyuan’s body.

“If you want me to go with you, you would need the power to make me.” Xuanyuan smiled, but he didn’t feel like Xuanyuan at all. Shiguan thought he reminded of her many ancient ancestors. This was because Xuanyuan’s spirit and body were being possessed by Greed.

Numerous black threads flew from Xuanyuan's body and formed a ring which tightly wrapped around Shiguan. The ring was absorbed into Shiguan's body without giving her any chance to fight back. Shiguan immediately noticed that all of her Qi was tightly sealed within her body. Even the power of her body was being sealed. The seal was mysterious, every time she attempted to use her power, it was devoured by the seal.

"What do you want to do?" Shiguan asked instinctively.

"I don't want to do anything." After her power was sealed, Xuanyuan seemed like his normal calm self again. Shiguan was no different from an ordinary powerless girl, but he wouldn't take advantage of her. "I just won't be forced to go anywhere with you. I don't like to be controlled, I am the only one in control of my life."

"I wasn't planning on harming you." Shiguan sighed.

"I know, I never felt any malicious intent from you. So I won't hurt you either." Said Xuanyuan while holding little Mochou. She was still sleeping like a log in his arms. "What do you want to ask? I'll heal your wounds while you ask your questions."

The Water of Heaven could enhance the potency of plants and medicines, it was also very beneficial when used for healing. Xuanyuan had merged with the water of heaven, so he had only begun to learn how he could use it.

"Why do you have to hurt Mo?" Shiguan's face regained a little of its colour.

“I had no personal reason. The Fighting Dragons Sect sent out the order for us to attack. As I was part of a school under the sect, I couldn’t say no. Also the Mo creatures endangered the ordinary citizens within the territory. It was only right for us to stop any more innocent civilians from being slaughtered.” Xuanyuan was honest.

“There’s no right or wrong in a war between Mo and humans. The fighting has been going for many years without pause. I want to put an end to the hostilities, it has been going for too long.” Shiguan sighed again. “If another war broke out, then both sides will lose countless lives. If even more people are killed, the hatred becomes even deeper rooted within the people.”

“Princess Shiguan, you have a very noble goal, I’m impressed. I’m not anyone important in the sect and the only goal I wish to achieve is my own survival. I am not as noble as you, I only have time to worry about my own problems.” Xuanyuan smiled, “Is that all you wanted to ask me?”

“Why aren’t you afraid of my fighting fire?” Shiguan shook her head and continued.

Xuanyuan was carrying Mochou, while pushing a soft blue light into Shiguan’s body where she was wounded. Her wounds were healing slowly with the help of the Water of Heaven.

“Boy, are you crazy? You are healing her wounds! It’ll be easy for her to break my seal if she regains her full power. I don’t have enough power to fight against her. She can control several kinds of fighting fire which means she will have no problem breaking the seal once she is healed.” Greed screamed in his head.

“Don’t worry. I know what I’m doing.” Xuanyuan thought.

“This is...fighting water!” Shiguan was knowledgeable. She immediately recognized the fighting water.

Xuanyuan was silent. Every time he healed Shiguan’s wounds, he would seal the wound as well, in order to further suppress her power.

“Boy, you’ll regret this. The Water of Heaven cannot defend you against multiple types of fighting fire. This girl is not an ordinary opponent. Listen to me! Devour her fighting fire and gain the benefits while you can!” Greed said heavily. “If you really don’t want to take away her fighting fire, then ask for a few Xian class techniques. Like the ‘Demonic Way of Refining Blood’, which would suit you. She’s the princess of the Mo Dynasty, surely she has the techniques you need.”

Xuanyuan was moved by Greed’s persuasion, he turned to Shiguan. “Your highness, can you give me a few of your Mo’s Xian class techniques, such as the ‘Demonic Way of Refining Blood’.

Shiguan glared at Xuanyuan, “No. That is our highest class technique. We are not able to teach this to outsiders. Besides, you haven’t studied the previous techniques required to use it. You’ll only kill yourself if I gave you the technique. It would be the same as when you learnt the Yin’s secret technique, you would face the assassination attempts from the Mo Dynasty for the rest of your life.”

“You don’t have to worry about whether I can handle it.” Xuanyuan smiled, scanning her body from top to bottom. Shiguan felt goosebumps cover her entire body, “If you don’t give me the technique, then I’ll have to do something to you.”

“I won’t give you the technique, no matter what. It won’t bring you joy, just endless trouble. Believe it or not, that isn’t what I want. You can ask for anything but not that.”

Xuanyuan laughed then laid Mochou softly onto the ground and pushed Shiguan onto the ground.

“What do you want?” Shiguan was scared and started to struggle.

Xuanyuan took off her black boots and white socks, revealing her feet. Her face blushed with a deep shade of red. No one was permitted to touch her feet, this was the first time someone had disgraced her like this.

Xuanyuan used two fingers to gently tickle the bottom of her feet. She couldn’t help but to laugh, “Stop!”

“Doesn’t that feel great? Look how much you’re laughing. Let’s continue.” Xuanyuan smiled indecently. It seemed like he was really enjoying this. If the Mo Dynasty knew about this, they would go insane with anger.

Shiguan’s eyes were filled with tears from laughing so much. She accused, “How can do you this to me? I was so nice to you. I can give you whatever you want, except the technique you requested. It’ll bring you disaster. I wouldn’t want that.”

Xuanyuan was also a bit ashamed. He could feel that Shiguan was a kind hearted person when he met her in the nest. But he studied the devouring technique, he had the urge to devour everything for himself. He would devour everything that could help to enhance his power.

“I don’t care about that. Give me the technique or we’ll do this all day.”  
Xuanyuan grabbed hold of her feet and continued.

Shiguan’s tears were streaming down her face, but she couldn’t stop laughing.  
This continued for over six hours.

“Please, let me go, young master Xuanyuan. I can’t give you the technique.”  
Shiguan said, with both tears and laughter.

“We have all the time in the world” Xuanyuan smiled.

Both of them were persistent and neither side would back down.

While they were continuing their ongoing battle, a drowsy voice spoke,  
“Brother Xuanyuan, what are you doing to that lady?”

Xuanyuan turned his head and looked at Mochou who was sitting on the ground, looking at Xuanyuan and Shiguan with wide eyes. Xuanyuan wasn’t embarrassed at all and replied, “Mochou, we’re doing happy things.”

Shiguan, on the other hand, was not as shameless. Her whole face went bright red. In Xuanyuan’s eyes, she looked exceptionally seductive with a shade of red in her cheeks.

“Mochou. Ask your brother Xuanyuan to let me go. He’s bullying me.” Shiguan was asking for reinforcements.

Mochou nodded, and told Xuanyuan, “Let the lady go, please. I’m hungry and I really want to eat.”

Xuanyuan was speechless, he could only stop and shrug. He couldn’t have a hungry child. “Alright. Wait here, Mochou. I’ll go catch some fish.”

## Chapter 140 – Carrot and the Stick

Smoke rose into the sky from the tiny island on the sea along with an alluring scent of smoked fish which had been cooked to a golden colour. Mochou's eyes had grown several sizes larger as she carefully watched the delicious looking fish cook like a hungry wolf.

“Be patient little piggy, we'll be able to eat very soon.” Xuanyuan was delighted. Cooking animals and fish was a special talent he gained from living in the forest for so many years. Of course Mochou wouldn't be able to resist the smell of his cooking.

Shiguan looked at the two of them and felt a warmth in her heart. She liked this young boy and at the same time, she harboured a deep hatred for him. He was lovely during these moments, but she wouldn't forget how extremely hateful he was when people refused his requests.

“I'm not a piggy! It smells so good, aunt Mei would've liked it...” Mochou remembered the tragedy and the excitement in her eyes dimmed. Xuanyuan's heart also sunk – no one understood that empty feeling better than he did.

“Mochou, aunt Mei didn't truly die. She merely went to another place far, far away. You and she will meet again one day if fate allows it.” Xuanyuan smiled encouragingly.

“Is that true?” Mochou looked up sharply.

“Of course. I wouldn't lie to you.” Xuanyuan said, but inside he was sighing. Everyone had to die at some point. Even people as strong as the Xian or the

Emperors, they all faltered under the power of time. Though he wasn't lying about seeing aunt Mei again, perhaps they would meet again after Su Mei's reincarnation.

"I look forward to the day that I get to meet aunt Mei again!" A bright smile replaced the sadness on her face. A child's sorrow could pass by very quickly, unlike the sorrow of adults. "Brother Xuanyuan, I'm very hungry!"

"Well, this fish is too heavy for you. You won't be able to carry it. Let me feed you." The fish from the Blue Sea were extremely large. They all weighed at least a few dozen jin. Mochou was still a little girl and had never strengthened her body, she wouldn't be able to carry the giant fish with one hand like Xuanyuan. He lowered the stick with the fish on and held it next to Mochou's mouth.

Mochou quickly opened her mouth when she noticed Shiguan. She told Xuanyuan, "Xuanyuan, Lady Shiguan wants to have some fish as well. We'll share it."

Shiguan blushed and said in a quiet voice, "I don't."

"You're lying!" Mochou screamed. Shiguan and Mochou had chatted for quite some time when Xuanyuan was in the sea. Mochou could guess what she was thinking and easily revealed her lies.

"Don't worry. Mochou and Shiguan will share this fish. Alright?" Xuanyuan smiled innocently.

Mochou nodded and immediately took a big bite from the fish. Judging from her satisfied smile, it was obviously very tasty.

“Your highness, come, eat some.” Xuanyuan moved the stick and placed it next to Shiguan’s mouth. Mochou nodded towards Shiguan and gave a thumbs up as if to say that it was extremely tasty.

She finally nodded reluctantly and glared at Xuanyuan. He had been giving her a hard time the entire day, but she still opened her red lips and took a tiny bite. Xuanyuan looked at her with a dumbfounded expression.

“What are you looking at.” Shiguan demanded.

“Xuanyuan likes you!” Mochou giggled.

“Stop speaking nonsense!” Xuanyuan pretended to be angry. “Eat the fish.”

Mochou pouted, “I didn’t speak nonsense, you’re the liar! You won’t admit that you like Shiguan.”

Shiguan’s face turned crimson and her heart was pounding. She had never been in this type of situation before.

The fish was shared between the three of them until the sun set and the moon could be seen high in the sky. The island was very quiet and peaceful at night. Mochou had already fallen asleep on the soft grass. Xuanyuan and Shiguan sat under a giant tree and gazed at the gentle silver moon, thinking about their past and future.

“So, are you sure you don’t want to give me the technique?”

“Stop pushing me. I am not lying to you. Studying it will only be harmful.” Shiguan was displeased.

“I was able to seal your power, what do you think a mere technique can do to me?”

“Even if you can study the technique, there will be assassins sent from the Mo royal guards. It’s the most highly guarded secret of the Mo royal family.” Shiguan sighed. After a while, she blushed again, “Unless...”

“Unless?” Xuanyuan was excited. The devouring technique’s potential could only be revealed by combining different powerful techniques. So he wanted Shiguan’s technique desperately.

“Unless, you became consort of the court....” Her voice was low, it was almost a whisper.

“Well, would you marry me?” Xuanyuan was serious.

Shiguan couldn’t find the words to say at the moment. She was flustered and only replied after a long period of shock, “Who would marry you? I’m not going to marry you.”

“Well, if that’s the case, give me the technique instead. Or maybe I will make it so the royal family is forced to recognize me as your husband.” Xuanyuan said as he moved closer to Shiguan.

“Please don’t...” Shiguan was shocked.

“Then give it to me. I promise you that I won’t study it if it’s dangerous to me. I’m not stupid, I don’t do things to get myself killed. I just want to see if it can be beneficial to me. BUT if you don’t give it to me, I’ll make myself the consort. You will be able to return to the land of the Mo with my child. Your family would be happy to have someone with my talents joining the family.” Xuanyuan was using the carrot and the stick approach.

There was no more room for Shiguan to argue and she handed over the technique at once.

“Greed examined the technique he just received and told Xuanyuan, “That’s the one. This girl has tons of other interesting things on her. Don’t you want to take some more?”

“No. I have my own principles. There are things you can take and things you can’t. Shiguan is a good person. I won’t take advantage of her.” Xuanyuan told Greed.

“Alright, if you say so.” Greed felt a bit tasteless.

At this time, Shiguan looked at Xuanyuan very seriously, “Promise me. If you feel that the technique is incompatible, you won’t study it any further and you mustn’t let other people know about it.”

“Naturally.” Xuanyuan nodded. “Alright, we’re all very tired. Get some rest. I will be taking Mochou back to the sect tomorrow. You should go back to the Land of Mo. You’re powerful, but you are in the lands belonging to humans. You

will be at a great disadvantage in human territory.”

“Shiguan looked at him from head to toe, “Don’t you know how much you can get if you give me to the sect? You can earn a lot of merit points and rewards, also you will instantly receive an elevated status. However, if they know that you let me go, you’ll be punished.”

“Do you want me to take you back in exchange for rewards?” Xuanyuan asked, he didn’t know what to do.

“If you’d be punished for letting me go, I wouldn’t mind following you back to the sect.” She grinned. Xuanyuan rolled his eyes, he refused to discuss anymore with this lunatic.

—

The next day when the sun was up, Xuanyuan, Shiguan and Mochou went to the beach to wash their faces.

A giant eagle gave out a long cry as it flew through the sky. On the Eagle was a man, Lu Yuxiang. He had noticed Xuanyuan and laughed hysterically, “Xuanyuan, I finally found you. You killed sister Biyue and brother Kuiya then ran away from your crimes. No one can save you here. My anger will only be soothed once I kill you!”

## Chapter 141 – Bite

“Are you that eager to die?” Xuanyuan snorted. His boots activated in an instant and he flew into the sky like a dragon. The force of his leap contained four hundred and fifty dragons of strength. The explosiveness of Xuanyuan leap caused the Skysea Bird to freeze with fear. Xuanyuan was extremely swift, clutching the eagle’s neck with a single hand and grabbing Lu Yuxiang’s neck in the other, it looked like he grabbed two chickens by the neck.

Lu Yuxiang couldn’t control his fear. Xuanyuan was much weaker than them not too long ago and yet he was so powerful now! Since he arrived in the Fighting Dragons Sect, Lu Yuxiang was taught by one of the true disciples from his family and had refined his third organ. His strength was now more than two hundred dragons, and yet he felt as if he was a child in front of Xuanyuan. He opened his mouth in an attempt to speak, but no sound came out. Xuanyuan simply ignored his attempts to struggle and break free.

“Boy, I’m much stronger now. I can devour other people’s memories. Let’s take a look at what has happened in the sect since we left, it’s always good to be prepared.” Greed said. From Xuanyuan’s body, a black light emerged and surrounded Lu Yuxiang. In the blink of an eye, only a decaying corpse remained.

Xuanyuan, as usual, took all of Lu Yuxiang’s instruments, rings and his fifty million merit points, before he threw the corpse into the sea.

“Greed, tame this Skysea Bird. Before the egg hatches, I will use it as a mount.” Xuanyuan said in his mind.

“No problem...” A black light shot into the mind of the bird, and it immediately became docile.

“Xuanyuan....” Mochou glanced at Xuanyuan with fear. She could sense the cold, murderous force which emerged from inside him.

“Mochou, he was a bad person. If I didn’t kill him, he would try and kill us. There is no need to be afraid.” Xuanyuan was reluctant to let her witness this scene, but sooner or later, she’d have to face the cruelty of the world. She would have to accept that this was the world that she lived in.

“I understand.” Mochou nodded and turned to the giant Skysea Bird, “Big bird!”

“Do you want to ride the bird?” Xuanyuan asked. Delighted, Mochou nodded heavily. The bird lowered one of its wings to the floor, allowing the little girl to climb up the giant bird. Xuanyuan looked over to Shiguan.

“We are going back to the sect now. The seal will slowly weaken over time. In no more than half a day, you’ll be able to remove the seal with your own power. You’ll have to stay here by yourself for a while.”

“You don’t trust me?” Shiguan seemed upset.

“I never allow my life and death to be in someone else’s hands. You will probably hate me for doing this to you, but it can’t be helped.” Xuanyuan grinned and jumped onto the bird, “Farewell, your highness.”

Before he could take off, a force rushed out from inside of Shiguan’s body and burnt the seal restraining her power. The black seal was immediately consumed by her fighting fire!

“We’re doomed, boy! I warned you, she broke the seal!” Greed screamed. “I told you not to trust her, you never listen! You should’ve devoured the fighting fire from her. I am not confident in resealing her again, so you lost your chance to devour her fighting fire.”

The bird was unable to move due to Shiguan’s power. Xuanyuan was a bit sheepish. He laughed drily, “You’re very powerful, your highness.”

Shiguan grinned and stepped into the air. “You were right. I hate to be treated like this. No one has ever done anything like this to me. I’ll have to take revenge.”

“We’re going to die!” Xuanyuan couldn’t breathe.

She came to Xuanyuan’s side and grabbed his arm. Without explaining, she lifted up his sleeve and took a solid bite. A surge of intense pain spread from Xuanyuan’s arm.

“What are you, a dog? Why did you bite me?” Xuanyuan screamed.

Shiguan didn’t release his arm for more than ten seconds. On his arm, there were clear and deep bite wounds.

“You’re a dog. This was a lesson for daring to treat me in the way you did.”

Then she ignored him and moved her attention to the little girl by his side.

“Mochou, I can’t go to the sect with you, but whenever you want to leave the

sect territory, I will come and play with you. This jade is for you, keep it safe.”

Shiguan took out an emerald green coloured jade and tied it onto a chain before putting it around Mochou’s neck, who quickly tucked the jade under her clothing.

“Thank you, sister Shiguan! I’ll miss you!” Mochou smiled sweetly, this was the first time she received such a gift from anyone. Shiguan waved goodbye to her and asked her to be a good little girl before she took off into the air.

“Goodbye!” Mochou shouted as loudly as she could, “I’ll be a good girl!”

Xuanyuan sighed. If his body was not particularly tough, that bite may have taken off half of his arm. It was an extremely painful bite, but there was an indescribable feeling that had taken root in his heart.

The bird was extremely quick as they immediately headed back towards the sect. He wanted to activate his Qi to protect Mochou from the wind pressure, but he felt no wind coming anywhere close to them. It was as if they had become part of the wind itself.

Mochou was very excited. She kept oohing and aahing about the view from the sky.

“You see, Greedy old bugger. Not all women are bad.” Xuanyuan communicated with Greed in his mind.

“That’s just your dumb luck.” Greed wouldn’t admit defeat. “One day, you’ll see that not all women can be trusted. The prettier a woman is, the scarier her

heart can be.”

“Never mind that. Tell me what happened in the sect.” Xuanyuan asked.

“Since Biyue died, all the true disciples from the Bi family are furious. They bent the truth, of course. Painting you as a murderer who escaped after murdering your fellow disciples. Fang Yuyou tried to help you, but because you never showed up, it made difficult for her.

More and more people started to think that you were guilty. So Chen Junchou has been under a large deal of pressure, but had not declared your guilt. The Bi, Lie and Nu families are all plotting against you. Fung Lie’s also in a lot of trouble.

Anyway, many people want to kill you. However, they consider you too weak for anyone to relate the incident in Blue Sea to you. That’s the only good news. Many inner disciples were given tasks to patrol across the territory. Lu Yuxiang was responsible for patrolling above the Blue Sea. Well, now the Lu Family probably hates you too. You’ve angered four out of five of the main families of the sect.”

“I would like to see what they think they can do!” Xuanyuan smirked.

“That’s right. Have you decided how you are going to explain everything when you’re back? Even though I’m much stronger now, I still can’t reveal myself in the sect.” Greed said.

“Of course. It’s not that easy to frame me.” Xuanyuan was fearless. With a thought, Xuanyuan controlled the Skysea Bird to fly even faster. Soon, the great mountain range of the sect appeared in front of them.

On his way, Xuanyuan encountered many inner disciples on patrol, but they only thought it was Lu Yuxiang flying back with extreme speed to make a report.

They flew for twelve hours before they arrived above the Inner Hall of the sect. Xuanyuan held Mochou, "Hey, this is where we're going to live from now on."

"Woah! These mountains are so high! The houses are so big. It's so pretty here!" Mochou's eyes were sparkling, but the next moment, they dimmed. "There are many bad people here!"

"Don't be scared. I'm here so they can't do anything to us." Xuanyuan smiled.

"Right! I'm not afraid when I'm with you!" Mochou encouraged herself.

## Chapter 142 – Fury

“Xuanyuan slaughtered his fellow disciples and fled from his crimes. I’ll be sure to kill him if I catch him.” Xie Wuhen declared while gritting his teeth in the Inner Hall of the sect. The boy is protected by Fung Lie, but even he is under an enormous amount of stress because of Xuanyuan’s reckless actions. So Xie Wuhen was no longer afraid of showing his hatred. Along with Huotao, Xiang Tianku, Lu Yuxiang and Xiaotian, they encouraged the rumours against Xuanyuan and spread them throughout the sect.

There were many people who didn’t know who Xuanyuan was, but they now thought that he was guilty of countless cruel crimes. His reputation of killing on the Judgment Stand when he arrived at the sect also spread like wildfire.

“That’s right. He’s a sinner. When his verdict is concluded, we’ll organize a team to eliminate him. No matter where he is, we will find him.” Xiang Tianku said gloomily.

“Brother Xuanyuan is not a sinner! We don’t know the whole truth yet, how can you decide to punish him without a verdict?” Zhao Manfeng suddenly appeared. Because of Xuanyuan, he was a lot more confident than his former self, which allowed him to advance through to the next realm. He had already refined an organ and established himself as a king realm fighter. His status as an Elder also helped his confidence.

“Zhao Manfeng, you really think that I wouldn’t dare to touch you after you became an Elder? Xuanyuan even killed Sister Biyue. She wanted to make peace with him and was instead murdered!” Xiang Tianku looked like he was filled with sorrow. With a turn of his body, he rushed up to Zhao Manfeng and slapped him across the face.

Zhao Manfeng had only just stepped into the king realm, so he couldn't defend himself against Xiang Tianku. He fell on the ground and a few of his teeth fell from his mouth. Xiang Tianku held Zhao Manfeng down with his foot and said, "Zhao Manfeng, you are an elder. How dare you cover up for a sinner. Take this as a lesson."

"Brother Xiang, how loyal you are. He defended a traitor, he deserves to be killed!" Xie Wuhen approached them and kicked Zhao Manfeng several metres across the floor.

"Brother Xuanyuan will come back! And then we'll know the truth!" Zhao Manfeng ignored the pain and shouted.

"Go to hell!" Xie Wuhen kicked Zhao Manfeng again. The damage made Zhao Manfeng cough up even more blood.

At this point, an eagle screeched and a terrifying force descended from the sky. The force struck with incredible power against Xie Wuhen, his protective armour immediately exploded with light to protect its master, it only lasted for a flash before it broke under the incoming attack. Xie Wuhen was crushed into a pile of flesh and blood in front of thousands of witnesses.

A person descended from the sky. His long hair was flying casually in the wind, his armour gave off a noble golden light. To everyone's shock, it was Xuanyuan. After he touched the ground, he immediately gave Zhao Manfeng a healing pill, then took Xie Wuhen's instruments into his ring for Greed to devour.

His Wind Spirit Spear was in his hand, expanding his killing intent across several miles. This time, he gave Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen's ring to Zhao Manfeng,

“Elder Zhao, take these and rest. I’ll handle the rest.”

“Brother Xuanyuan, you...you’re back. This must be a misunderstanding.” Xiang Tianku was trembling. The power Xuanyuan unleashed was that of a grandmaster. He would be much stronger than anyone of the List of Merits. Xiang Tianku would only be slaughtered if Xuanyuan saw him as an enemy.

“Brother Xiang, farewell.” Xuanyuan smirked as his Wind Spirit Spear pierced out. Before Xiang Tianku could react, his heart was pierced by the spear and a large hole was blasted in his chest. Everyone was terrified when they saw the sight.

“Die!” Two grandmaster realm fighters arrived on the scene and rushed to kill Xuanyuan, it was a man and a woman from the Bi family. They didn’t bring out their weapons, so Xuanyuan thought they must be suicidal.

He didn’t evade and attacked with four hundred and fifty dragons of strength. The grandmasters immediately realised their mistake, but it was too late for regret. The man’s throat was pierced, completely separating his head from his body. The woman tried to run, but the spear continued on its path through the throat of her companion and nailed her to the stone wall. She was hanging from the stone wall while screaming in pain. Xuanyuan didn’t destroy her heart, so she could only struggle in pain. Her life essence and blood slowly poured out from the wound as she struggled.

“Since you said I’m a murderer who kills my fellow disciples, I’m going to kill them in front of you!” Xuanyuan glared at all the terrified disciples surrounding him. The deaths of Xie Wuhen, Xiang Tianku and two members from the Bi Family scared everyone speechless.

“So you’re Xuanyuan? How powerful?” A woman appeared in the sky. She was wearing a beautiful dress, but her aura was cold. “Your family’s young master is dead, Xie Tian.”

There was a man holding an iron-grey claw. He was a true disciple, Xie Tian. His pressure made Xuanyuan felt suffocated.

“The woman is a peak grandmaster, the man is an imperial fighter! The instrument he has is a lower rank heaven class instrument!” Greed said to Xuanyuan in his mind.

“Biji, he seemed to kill Biyue from your family, and Lu Yuxiang from the Lu Family. I haven’t seen anyone as audacious as this for a long time, angering two out of five of the major families in such a short time.” Xie Tian’s voice was threatening. “It looks like he also tamed the Skysea Bird. Impressive. The bird is one of the wildest and most violent among all the species of eagles. We raised the bird since it hatched from its egg. You’re really talented for taming the bird, brother Xuanyuan.”

Xuanyuan controlled the Skysea Bird with his mind and the bird landed next to him. He stood in front of the Mochou protecting her. But at this moment, another terrifying force descended towards them.

“Another imperial fighter! The Devouring Emperor had a long list of enemies, don’t be scared over this much, boy.” Greed said. Xuanyuan was even more protective towards Mochou. The man who just arrived was dressed in a plain white robe. He looked gentle and handsome. He was Lu Tianxiang, a true disciple from the Lu Family.

“I took care of the Skysea Bird for a while. I’m impressed that you tamed it

using such a period of short time. We haven't seen a talent like this in the sect for a long while." Lu Tianxiang said. There was no way of telling whether he was angry or not. But his every movement suppressed the atmosphere.

"Tell me, who will slaughter this sinner?" Biji said quietly.

"Sister Biji, please calm down. We cannot be sure that brother Xuanyuan is guilty." Another man arrived. He was fully armoured and carrying two hammers. He was Chen Junchou, who cleared Xuanyuan of the crime against Liu Xiangxiang. Chen Junchou was relieved that Xuanyuan was back. He honestly believed that Xuanyuan wouldn't kill innocent people.

"If it isn't Chen Junchou from the law enforcement team of the Inner Hall. Do you want to interrupt the punishment imposed by true disciples?" Biji glanced at Chen Junchou coldly.

"Greetings to all True Brothers and Sisters." Chen Junchou said respectfully, "According to the Law of Fighting Dragons, order four hundred and thirty-seven, the crimes of inner disciples will be resolved by the law enforcement in the Inner Hall. If it is impossible to resolve, it'll then be handled by the law enforcement team among the true disciples. Sister Biji, you are not part of the law enforcement team within the true disciples, are you trying to interfere with sect law?"

"Haha, Chen Junchou, you are indeed right." Fung Lie arrived on his Dragon Scale Horse. Because of Xuanyuan, he was under a lot of pressure, so he was immediately informed once Xuanyuan was back in the sect. He glanced at the dead body of the grandmaster from Bi Family which was pinned by the Wind Spirit spear and laughed with satisfaction, "Brother Xuanyuan, tell us what happened on that day. I'm here for you, there is no need to fret."

## Chapter 143 – Punishment!

“That day? Sister Biyue came to my doorstep to seduce me into leaving the sect. She had a plan with Kuiya and his father to kill me once I was outside of the sect. However, a bunch of mysterious men interrupted their plans, so I used the opportunity to escape. They were probably killed by them, and stalled those mysterious men for me to escape. That’s why I’m alive today.” Xuanyuan smiled.

“How dare you! Why would Biyue seduce you?” Biji was furious.

“Brother Xuanyuan didn’t lie. We found a woman’s undergarment in his room. They have already been confirmed to have belonged to Sister Biyue.” Chen Junchou added.

“Hahaha, what can you say to that, Biji?” Fung Lie laughed. He was under a lot of pressure when Xuanyuan was gone. This could all be relieved now that Xuanyuan was back.

“You can’t prove that Biyue seduced him. He might have raped her!” Biji yelled.

“There are five other witnesses to this.” Xuanyuan chuckled, and said loudly, “The five of you perverts. That night, you gave me the Book of Royal Fire, the Book of Golden Xian, the Book of Black Water, the Book of Earth and the Book of Green Wood! You saw everything didn’t you?”

Biji, Xie Tian and Lu Tianxiang were both grinding their teeth when they heard this. Fung Lie on the other hand, couldn’t control his wide smile.

“Damn it, how dare you call us perverts?” An old man with dark red skin appeared out of nowhere. He was obviously furious.

“Well, Fire. We did appear in front of the boy without saying a word. He was probably shocked that we were watching him.”

“Water is right...”

“Where have you been, my boy? We are too old to follow all of your movements.”

“That’s right. I even went to the Eastern Dynasty to look for you.”

The five old men came out. Every disciple was shocked and bowed immediately,

“Greetings to the Xians!”

“Since you witnessed it. Xians, please tell us whether brother Xuanyuan was telling the truth? Did Biyue seduce him or did he rape her?” Chen Junchou was feeling very uneasy as he questioned the Xians. Xuanyuan must have broken some sort of record to have the five Xians giving him their techniques. Any other disciple would die for the opportunity.

“Bullshit! Xuanyuan is our disciple and he’s a very handsome boy! Why would he need to rape anyone? Biji, did you accuse him of rape?” The Xian of Fire shouted.

“I was just speculating.” Biji jumped at the Xian’s fury.

“Stop your speculation! Biyue came specifically to seduce him.” The Xian of Fire said.

“Well, to prove our disciple’s innocence, we’ll re-enact the scene...” Water came towards the Xian of Gold with a sultry expression, giving everyone goosebumps. “So you don’t want to see me?... Brother Xuanyuan, you’re such an attractive young man, so many women would fall for you....”

Xuanyuan was stunned by the crazy development. These five Xians must have mental problems. Why was he so unlucky?

Fung Lie was on the verge of laughing. Chen Junchou was no better. Biji, on the other hand, was incredibly pale.

“So that’s what happened. I will happily sacrifice my own image to prove my disciple’s innocence. We couldn’t stay to watch the end, but if anyone wants to see, we can use the Mirror of Rewinding and show everyone what happened.” The Xian of Water said. “Is there anyone who doubts our statement?”

“No! We believe you!” Biji, Xie Tian and Lu Tianxiang still wanted to keep their lives. They wouldn’t dare to challenge the five Xians.

“Since Xiang Tianku and Lu Yuxiang are dead, there’s no way to arrest them. We’ll arrest Huotao, who spread the untrue rumours to cause problems with the solidarity within the inner disciples. He’ll receive eight hundred strikes and shall not take receive anything from the sect for three years as punishment!” Chen Junchou declared. A few inner disciples on the List of Merits glanced at

Xuanyuan before they followed Chen Junchou to arrest Huotao.

“Well, if that’s all, we’ll take our leave.” The Xian of Fire said.

But Xie Tian gritted his teeth and said, “Xian of Fire, even though we proved that Biyue and Kuiya deserved their deaths, but Xie Wuhen didn’t deserve to die! He only spread a few rumours! Lu Yuxiang was also killed by Xuanyuan. We can’t let this go!”

“Xuanyuan, tell us why did you kill Lu Yuxiang and Xie Wuhen.” Fung Lie inquired.

“I was followed by the mysterious men when they were done and arrived at the Blue Sea. I didn’t know how far I had travelled, but today, Lu Yuxiang found me on his Skysea Bird. He didn’t say anything and only attacked me without warning. I could only defend myself from an enemy that wanted to kill me. If you don’t believe me, you can ask the Xians to use the mirror from earlier and see for yourself.” Xuanyuan looked towards the old men.

“Let’s do that then!” The Xian of Fire blew his long beard and looked over to Lu Tianxiang.

“There’s no need. Yuxiang was young and reckless. He was at odds with brother Xuanyuan because of sister Fang Yuyou. I can imagine him trying to kill brother Xuanyuan without a word. It’s just that Xuanyuan shouldn’t have killed him.” Lu Tianxiang said immediately. His tone was mild, without accusation.

“I agree. Brother Xuanyuan, you are too reckless. The Lu Family is a respectable family and Lu Yuxiang was their future heir. He was talented in the

martial path and business. You shouldn't have killed him, you should have just cut off all his limbs and dragged him back to the sect for a whipping." Fung Lie said sarcastically while nodding his head.

Lu Tianxiang looked slightly dismayed, but didn't say a word. Fung Lie continued, "Then, what about Xie Wuhen?"

"Him? He deserved even worse. He accused me of slaughtering my fellow disciples and fleeing from the sect. When Elder Zhao Manfeng defended me, he attacked an elder of the sect. This was unacceptable. How could he be allowed to attack someone of a higher status. An elder is a symbol of respect and they stand high above mere inner disciples. I believe all the fellow disciples here must have witnessed that?" Xuanyuan turned his head to the terrified disciples at the side, speaking furiously.

"Of course! Of course..." Many inner disciples nodded their heads frantically.

Behind them stood the injured Zhao Manfeng. The Xian of Wood heard what happened and approached him, injecting a stream of Qi into his body. The wounds began healing at a rapid pace.

Zhao Manfeng couldn't believe his good luck and knelt down before the Xian. "Thank you, Xian of Wood!"

"There's no need to thank me." The old man took Zhao's arm to help him stand. "You defended my disciple despite the danger to yourself. I appreciate that."

Xie Tian was upset. With that, it was impossible to kill Xuanyuan for his family.

“Brother Xuanyuan. This is still unacceptable.” Fung Lie proclaimed confidently, “Even though brother Xie Wuhen was in the wrong, but still didn’t deserve to be killed. If something like this happens again, just cut off all the limbs from the one responsible. You need to be punished. You shall go to the Red Mountain and suffer the burning fire for three months. The Xian of Fire shall go there to monitor your ‘punishment’.”

Xie Tian eyes went wide in surprise, but the Xian of Fire’s laughter stopped him from objecting, “I have no objection. Does anyone have any objections?”

“No!”

“No!”

Xie Tian and Lu Tianxiang replied.

Two shadows appeared in the distance far off in the distance. Xuanyuan turned and looked when his heart suddenly jumped. A sudden intense fury and killing intent oozed out from his body.

## Chapter 144 – Three Years

“Oh look, if it isn’t brother Xuanyuan? You’re back!” The person who spoke was Xingyun. His arm had been fully restored. His contained a smirk and he seemed to very pleased with himself. There was a man standing behind him, he was handsome but without any imposing aura. He seemed to be an ordinary person, and yet mysterious. On his shoulder, there was a silver wolf skin.

For many frozen winters, Xuanyuan had curled up with Guxing and Guyue, but now Guxing’s fur had appeared on the shoulders of this stranger.

Xuanyuan felt his heart sink. He wanted to rip the man to shreds with all of his being. Fung Lie quickly grabbed his arm and stopped Xuanyuan from rushing forward. He asked lowly, “Brother Xuanyuan, regain your composure. He is the First Brother of all True disciples, Jiang Yitian.”

The man descended to the ground, smiling slightly and bowing to the five Xians, “Greetings to the five Xians present.”

The old men nodded, but they also sensed Xuanyuan’s mood.

“Brother Xuanyuan, what is wrong? You seem so angry. Did something happen?” Xingyun snorted. Fung Lie glared at him, so he quickly hid behind Jiang Yitian, but kept on pestering, “Brother Xuanyuan, why don’t you speak?”

“Greeting to First True Brother.” Xuanyuan’s heart was bleeding. He glared at Jiang Yitian with his red eyes.

“Brother Xuanyuan was chosen by the five Xians. This is a rare and precious opportunity. You should work hard.” Jiang Yitian said peacefully.

Xuanyuan ignored his comment and demanded, “Where did you get that wolf skin?”

“Xingyun and I were taking a stroll at the Fullmoon cave, arriving at the School of Yuehua when we spotted a lone wolf. Xingyun was itching to hunt and decided to skin the animal alive. I felt like the wolf was good quality and asked him for the skin to wear, but if brother Xuanyuan likes it, I can give it to you.” Jiang Yitian smiled.

“I didn’t think brother Xuanyuan would like the skin of such ordinary animal. I’ll give you another one when I find a good wolf.” Xingyun laughed aggressively.

Tears streamed down Xuanyuan’s face. He pointed a finger at Xingyun, “Guxing grew up by my side. I knew it wouldn’t be safe in the sect, so I left it in the School of Yuehua. I only wished for it to live a peaceful life away from fighting. You extended the grudge between you and me to Guxing. Guxing was innocent!”

Xingyun also screamed, “You think you can walk freely after destroying my arm and taking my ring? I was being lenient by only killing a measly wolf. Do you want me to kill Yan Ziyun too? If you’re not happy, why don’t you kill me?”

All five of the old men frowned, but they didn’t say anything. It was not convenient to get involved in the grudges between disciples. Jiang Yitian was a disciple of an extraordinarily powerful Xian.

“Xingyun, how dare you?” Fung Lie released his power as an imperial fighter and attacked Xingyun. He was too quick, it even shocked Jiang Yitian. Xingyun was thrown a dozen metres back from the power of the strike with numerous wounds appearing on his body. Jiang Yitian summoned a soft light onto the wounded Xingyun and began healing him. Fung Lie was provoked to attack him again but Jiang Yitian intervened.

“You still have a bad temper, brother Fung Lie and since you’ve entered the imperial realm, you can control the fighting wind, Wind of the Sky. However, you’re still not powerful enough to fight against me. If you continue being stubborn, I won’t spare you.” Jiang Yitian’s voice was gentle, as if he was an innocent young man that despised violence.

“I don’t mind testing the power of an emperor, to see if it can withstand the power of my wind!” Fung Lie snorted. He began to unleash the seal which was placed on his power.

“You should control your temper, don’t do something you would later regret, brother Fung Lie!” Jiang Yitian frowned.

But suddenly, Xuanyuan voiced his opinion, “Please stop, brother Fung Lie. This is my fight. In three years time, I will fight Xingyun to the death. Do you dare to accept, Xingyun?”

“Well, you’re nothing but an ant to me. Why wouldn’t I dare?” Xingyun agreed without hesitation, but he glanced at Fung Lie with a look of fright.

Xuanyuan glared at Xingyun. Then he turned to Jiang Yitian, “I swear, in three years time, I’ll end Jiang Yitian’s life. Please witness my vow, five masters!”

The Xians couldn't contain their shock. Jiang Yitian was an emperor realm fighter. Perhaps he would even break through the barrier to become a Xian within those three years. Yet where would Xuanyuan be? How could he improve by such a large degree in only three years? All the inner disciples were equally shocked. Jiang Yitian was the First True Brother in the sect. He was like a legend to all of the disciples. All the disciples thought Xuanyuan was too brave and stupid for challenging Jiang Yitian in three years time.

"Great! There was a reason why I picked you, Xuanyuan." Fung Lie slowly sealed his power, and restrained the suffocating force he was releasing. "In these three years, if anyone around Xuanyuan is killed, I swear to kill the responsible party's entire bloodline!"

"Wonderful. I didn't think the sect would have such an inspirational disciple. I'm very impressed." Bu Jingsha, the Head of the Inner Hall had only just arrived. He first bowed to the five Xians, then looked at Jiang Yitian, "Brother Jiang, what do you say about this?"

"Naturally, since brother Xuanyuan has challenged me, I can only agree to it." Jiang replied. His face remained unchanged, he didn't particularly care about Xuanyuan, "Brother Xuanyuan, I hope you wouldn't think that I am disrespecting you, but even if I give you thirty years, or even three hundred years, you still wouldn't be able to defeat me. Since I was born, I was able to practice. I've killed many so-called geniuses over these years that I have lost count. I'll give you a chance, so people cannot say the future sect leader wasn't a fair and just person. In these three years, no one should harm Xuanyuan deliberately. Otherwise, I'll kill them myself."

Looking at the wolf skin, Xuanyuan was filled with grief, but he wasn't strong enough. So he could only suppress his anger.

“Well, everyone should go...” The Xian of Fire looked grave. He didn’t think the event would unfold this way.

Jiang Yitian carried Xingyun and left.

“Then please take care of brother Xuanyuan, Xians. If he has any needs, he can tell Zhao Manfeng, we’ll provide assistance for him as much as possible.” Bu Jingsha was glad to have Xuanyuan as a member of the Inner Hall. A talent like this was quite rare.

As the Xians nodded their heads, a voice travelled from afar, “Fung Lie, come to the Mountain.”

It was calling for Fung Lie. He stood in front of Xuanyuan and said heavily, “Take the chance to train yourself while in the Red Mountain. You can only grow with danger. I’ll have to leave you, since my master is calling. I believe you won’t need much of my help to kill Xingyun in three years time.”

Mochou was hiding behind Xuanyuan and had witnessed everything. She was petrified but composed herself well. She tried to comfort Xuanyuan, “Don’t be sad. I’ll be by your side.”

Xuanyuan’s heart ached. He carried Mochou, “Don’t worry, Mochou. From this day onwards, I’ll protect all the people I care for.”

“I believe in you!” Mochou opened her arms and embraced Xuanyuan, “When aunt Mei was unhappy, I’d hug her like this to cheer her up!”

“Thank you Mochou!” Xuanyuan felt her kindness warm his cold heart.

“Let’s go. I didn’t think you’d be so reckless. But we’ve already picked you as our disciple, so we won’t give up on you. Go to the Red Mountain!” The Xian of Fire said.

Xuanyuan and Mochou sat on the Skysea Bird, and the five Xians also sat on the bird. They had sensed an unusual energy on Xuanyuan’s body when he was angry. Perhaps there was a chance for him to defeat Jiang Yitian within three years.

## Chapter 145 – Five Masters

The Skysea Bird carried them silently across the sky.

“Xuanyuan, we’re going to the Red Mountain. This little girl doesn’t have a single bit of power left in her body. She won’t be able to endure the heat of the mountain.” The Xian of Fire broke the silence.

“Don’t worry. Haven’t you realized it yet?” Xuanyuan had calmed himself and steeled his heart. There was nothing he could do, he needed to become stronger to take his revenge.

“No wind pressure!” The Xian of Wood was the first to realize. They had reached the Xian realm so the pressure from flying didn’t affect them and they had no need to pay attention to it. They finally realized the strangeness surrounding Mochou.

“Mochou has the Body of a Thousand Spirits. She can interact with everything in nature. She will only benefit from going to the Red Mountain.”

“She has the Body of a Thousand Spirits? She is qualified to become the Lady of the Fighting Dragons sect!” The Xian of Water cried.

But Mochou held Xuanyuan tightly and shook her head, “I only want to be with Xuanyuan!”

The Xian of Gold was delighted, “Perhaps you’ll have great progress in these three years if you are with her.”

“I think you four should go back to the Mountains of the Five Elements first. I can go to the Red Mountain with Xuanyuan and Mochou. If you can start refining the Golden Elixir for his lungs, the Earth Elixir for his spleen, the Water Elixir for his kidneys and the Wood Elixir for his liver, then Xuanyuan’s power will improve greatly. At the very least, he will not lose the battle in three month’s time!” The Xian of Fire commanded.

“Good. We will use all our power to help you, Xuanyuan. Just concentrate on your cultivation. Even if you can’t defeat Jiang Yitian three years later, we’ll still be able to protect your life.” The Xian of Earth said heavily to reassure Xuanyuan.

Xuanyuan was touched by their actions. Mochou looked at the old men and said quietly, “You are good people.”

“Hahaha, we aren’t good people. We just don’t want our disciple to be bullied. It’s not appropriate for us to get involved in young people’s affairs, but Xingyun must pay for what he’s done. His actions are grotesque.” The Xian of Gold said severely.

“Then we’ll go. You probably cannot study all of our techniques at once, but you should still work hard.” The Xian of Water said.

“Wait!” Xuanyuan called out as they were about to leave, “I won’t lie to you anymore. I have a special physique, the Body of Five Elements. I am very glad to have you five as my masters. I can study the techniques of all five elements!”

Xuanyuan immediately summoned his Qi and turned its nature from water, to wood, to fire, to earth and at last to gold. It formed a cycle of the five elements. He didn’t tell them the full truth. He used the power of the Body of All Creations

to create the cycle of the five elements. In fact, he could study every single technique in the world.

“It is the Body of Five Elements! Great!” The Xian of Gold laughed.

“Since you have the Body of Five Elements, then we’ll of course teach you all we know!” The Xian of Earth was excited.

“There’s one thing. You’re my masters now and I don’t want to keep you in the dark.” Xuanyuan felt relieved. He had help from Greed when it came to advancing, but Mochou still needed guidance to find fighting gold, fire, earth and wood.

“Xuanyuan, just tell us. We’ve finally found a perfect disciple for all of us, we won’t be angry about you hiding some things from us. You can help advance our techniques to a whole new level.” Wood said kindly.

“I’m the one responsible for the Blue Sea. I was being chased after by assassins and hid inside the sea. At the depths of the sea, I found the Water of Heaven.” Xuanyuan said, “Perhaps it’s because of my special physique. I was able to absorb the Water of Heaven. I’ve already used it to refine my kidneys.”

When he was speaking, he summoned a blue light in the palm of his hand, it was filled with powerful water Qi. It was the fighting water, the Water of Heaven! The five old men were astonished. Even though they were Xians, they would still be envious of such a treasure. The Xian of Water was especially envious and he laughed loudly, “That’s why the water in the Blue Sea changed! There were many disciples who trained in the Blue Sea over the years and none of them found the Water of Heaven. This is destiny! You are brave, Xuanyuan, to refine your kidneys using such a powerful water. I understand what you want

now. You want to find other fighting elements and use them to refine your other organs to enhance your power. What a crazy idea!”

“Indeed, it’s very dangerous.” The Xian of Earth couldn’t hide his excitement.

“And exciting! If Xuanyuan can control the fighting elements and study all our techniques, he’ll definitely bring our techniques to a new level! He has the Body of Five Elements, it’ll be easier for him to be accepted by the fighting elements.” The Xian of Gold said.

“That’s right. I want to ask masters for a favour and tell me where I can find more fighting elements. You’re Xians who have lived for countless years, you must know places which have high possibilities of containing fighting elements.” Xuanyuan was relieved that they regarded him as their disciple.

The Xian of Fire’s eyes sparked. He pointed at the Red Mountain, “There’s a great chance that there’s a fighting fire hidden in the Red Mountain. But numerous people have come and gone, but they were still unable to find it. With the help of Mochou, you might have a better chance at finding it.”

Xuanyuan grew more confident about his speculation of the Red Mountain after what the Xian of Fire said. If he could devour the fighting fire hidden in the mountain, he’d be able to defeat Xingyun!

“Then, may I suggest our next action? Master Gold, Earth and Wood, please start refining the elixirs to strengthen my other three organs. Since I have the Body of Five Elements, I will face greater difficulties when refining my organs. I need as much help as I can get. I’ll stay in the Red Mountain to refine my heart and study your techniques. Master Fire, please take Mochou and look for the fighting Fire. Master Water, since I’ve already refined my kidneys, there’s no

need for your elixir. Would you please help me look for other fighting elements? Does that sound appropriate?" Xuanyuan asked.

"Very well, you're quite strategically minded. We'll do what you say." The Xian of Water promised and left, so did the rest of the Xians, apart from the Xian of Fire.

"Xuanyuan, you're our disciple. You are our legacy and we are depending on you to enhance our techniques." Fire smiled contently and closed his eyes.

"Xuanyuan! Mochou will help you find the fighting Fire!" Mochou said. She was still very young, but she wanted to help Xuanyuan.

"Thank you, Mochou!" Xuanyuan smiled. He had made a right decision.

--

In Mochou's mind, a voice sounded, "Mochou, don't speak aloud, I'm Xuanyuan's grandfather! ....."

"Xuanyuan's grandfather?" Mochou was confused.

"Let's not dwell on the subject. I'm going to ask, do you want to help Xuanyuan?" Greed tried to lure her attention.

"Yes, but I'm not talented enough to help him." Mochou was disappointed with herself and her own power.

"Don't worry. I'm going to teach you a special technique. Just practice it and you can help Xuanyuan!" Greed encouraged.

“Really?” Mochou asked.

“That’s right. I’ll teach you now. Remember to work hard! I’ll help you with whatever you don’t understand. Remember, this is our little secret. Don’t tell grandpa Fire.” Greed said mysteriously.

“No problem! I promise. How should I address you, grandpa?”

“You can call me grandpa Greed!”

## Chapter 146 – Training on the Red Mountain

The Body of a Thousand Spirits was the target of many sentient treasures. In order for treasures such as fighting elements to become sentient, they'd need to survive for a long time and brave many dangers in order to reincarnate into human form. Fung Lie was a successful example, the Wind of Sky reincarnated as him. However, if Fung Lie hadn't become the Xian of Wind's disciple, he might be hunted down by practitioners and the Wind of Sky would be torn from his body. Then it would be another few millenniums before the fighting wind would have another chance to reincarnate into a human again. However, if they occupied the Body of a Thousand Spirits, the sentient being would be able to gain enormous power at once, without the need to reincarnate. The Body of a Thousand Spirits was in harmony with nature. It didn't require much time for it to harness the powers of nature.

And that was precisely why Greed would teach Mochou the Thousand Spirits technique. If she could finish studying the technique and absorb some powerful sentient being, then she would become unimaginably powerful.

"There's the Red Mountain. It's so nostalgic. I trained here for many years in the past. It's the perfect place for people who study fire Qi." The Xian of Fire indulged in his own memories.

Xuanyuan thought, "I have a pearl with me. My progress would be increased a hundredfold when using it. Even if I can't find a fighting fire, I can still fully refine my heart."

The Red Mountain was ahead of them. The mountain was too large, they couldn't even see the peak. The entire mountain was densely covered with fire Qi and emitting a burning heat. Even king realm fighters would find it difficult to

breath in the hot air of the mountain. Many practitioners would dehydrate and die while training on the mountain. Only the strongest grandmaster realm practitioners could survive for long periods of time on the mountain. The Skysea Bird with its extraordinary vigour, didn't dare to move closer to the mountain, so the Xian of Fire protected it and allowed it to enter the separate space he created.

There must be many sentient treasures dwelling inside the mountain. Xuanyuan didn't dare to bring Mochou with him. He had decided to let Mochou be protected by the Xian of Fire.

"Xuanyuan, be careful when you are training here alone. I'll be leaving to take Mochou to search for the fighting fire now." The Xian of Fire said. Even though he was there to supervise Xuanyuan, he wasn't going to be staying with him the entire time. If Xuanyuan couldn't even handle the creatures of Red Mountain by himself, he would surely die in three months time.

"I will." Xuanyuan turned to Mochou, who now sat on the Xian's shoulders. "Mochou, behave when you're around the Xian of Fire. You must work hard on your technique. Do you understand?"

Xuanyuan said this so the Xian wouldn't suspect Mochou if she practiced the Thousand Spirit technique given by Greed.

"I will work hard every day! When I become strong, I'll help you find many treasures. I'll be useful to Xuanyuan!" Mochou said seriously. She closed her eyes and began to recall the technique that Greed taught her. Her tiny hands formed a mudra according to the technique and her entire body began to shine with a bright spiritual light. Suddenly, the fire Qi started rushing towards her.

The Xian of Fire was planning on searching some suitable techniques for Mochou to study as soon as they were back in the sect, but when he saw how smoothly the Qi rushed to surround and enter her body. He recognized that she was studying a mysterious Xian class technique, so he didn't need to worry about finding a technique to suit her. He quickly flew to the peak of the Red Mountain with Mochou. On their way, more and more Qi started to rush into her, as if the Qi was being summoned by Mochou.

“Mochou, what kind of technique are you studying?” The Xian of Fire asked curiously.

“The Thousand Spirits Technique.” Mochou admitted honestly. “But please don't ask me where I got it, it wasn't given by Xuanyuan.”

The Xian of Fire was in awe. It was the Xian class technique created by the first person to own the Body of a Thousand Spirits. His curiosity was satisfied. There was no need to be suspicious of where the technique came from. There was no way that Xuanyuan would have access to such ancient techniques. The Xian grew very fond of the little girl, and encouraged her to grow stronger every day.

—

Xuanyuan was at the heel of the mountain. This would be the limit for any other king realm fighters, because the extreme heat further up the mountain would slowly exhaust their strength. If they didn't have enough strength-replenishing pills, they would collapse on the mountain and would never be able to return. However, such a problem wasn't an issue for Xuanyuan because he absorbed the Water of Heaven. With the protection of the Water of Heaven, the heat only felt like a cool breeze. Even if he didn't have the fighting water, the temperature alone wouldn't harm him, because he owned the Body of All Creations.

Within him, the fire Qi was starting to awaken. His heart started to race as he activated the Royal Fire technique, he also activated his pearl to boost his training speed. His body became a giant vortex which pulled all the inexhaustible fire Qi towards him. The burning energy rushed into his body and purified his heart. If someone was watching this scene from the outside, Xuanyuan would look like he was surrounded by a cocoon of fire.

Step by step, he began climbing the Red Mountain.

The stones on the mountain were all a shade of burning red and their heat distorted the air. He saw many creatures on the mountain which had long adapted to the difficult environment. The weakest wolf he saw had sixty dragons of strength, while the pack were much more powerful. All of them were growling at him as he moved up the mountain. He was absorbing a large amount of Qi as he moved, including the Qi of their territory. Obviously, they would be angry, but Xuanyuan simply ignored them. He was here to enhance his strength, not to bully those weaker than him. Searching for fighting fire was his main priority. He needed to find a location with dense fire Qi as soon as possible.

“Boy, those five old men are very good to you, but they’re quite weak. The techniques they gave you were only a collection of the incomplete ancient techniques of the Five Elements. Well, when I regain all my memories, I can teach them the complete techniques of the Five Elements as thanks. Then we won’t owe them anything.” Greed commented.

“It’s not about owing anything. They are my masters and deserve my respect. I know you were a big shot once upon a time and I’m the heir of the Devouring Emperor, so it mustn’t sit well with you when I call them master. Maybe they are nothing compared to the Devouring Emperor. However, that’s irrelevant. They have been good to me and protected me. It does not matter how strong they

are. Do you understand?" Xuanyuan said.

"Never mind. You're nothing like the Emperor. You are far too attached. One day, you'll know what I mean. You are too naïve to understand it now." Greed replied, then refused to continue.

Xuanyuan avoided the wild creatures on his way while absorbing a large amount of fire Qi to refine his heart. It would be a long process for him to refine his organs compared to normal practitioners. It granted him more power, but equally took a much longer time. So Xuanyuan was in no rush and walked at a leisurely pace towards the peak of the mountain.

After three days, Xuanyuan finally reached the halfway point of the mountain. Since the mountain itself was releasing a scorching heat, there were many plants and herbs in the surroundings which were ablaze, such as the burning grass. It was almost identical to normal grass, however it was engulfed in flames and produced fire Qi. These plants brightly lit up the mountain. It seemed like the mountain would be burning forever.

When he reached the waist of the mountain, he saw a strange species of trees. It was the tree of fire which only grew on the Red Mountain. Every one of its branches seemed like a flaming torch. Xuanyuan was amazed by the unique flora of the mountain. He couldn't help but wonder what was so special about the environment which caused all these unique and rare plants to grow.

In these three days, Xuanyuan felt his heart burning with more intense heat. The strength of fire in his body was growing and his blood was starting to boil. His heart was starting to synchronise with his refined kidneys. All the blood within his veins was being refined, and he noticed that his veins were expanding to accommodate the power of his strengthened heart. His mind also seemed to turn clearer and more determined. His heart would be strengthened against

temptations, making his mind stronger against illusions. If the heart was strong, the mind would be strong, and vice versa.

Apart from his mind, the energy in his body was also enhanced because the fire in his heart and the water in his kidneys synchronised to create an even greater strength. Before refining his heart, he was able to train without rest for seven days. Now, a month wouldn't be a problem, but he would require the assistance of pills and medicines.

Since he stepped into the king realm, he finally saw the benefits of refining his five organs. His strength was being increased at a rapid pace, Xuanyuan went from four hundred and fifty dragons to four hundred and eighty dragons in just three days. This was after only refining a very small part of his heart. He knew that when his heart was fully refined, his strength would be unimaginable for normal people.

"You keep saying that we're gluttons and bottomless pits for Qi, but you're also one. Keep working hard. The hard work and pain are only temporary..." Greed told him.

"I understand." Xuanyuan replied. "I wonder how things are with Mochou and the Xian of Fire?"

## Chapter 147 – Fighting Fire Discovered?

Mochou was growing at an unimaginable pace. On the first day, she grew from an ordinary person into a master realm practitioner. The second day, she became a wild fighter. The third day, she entered the realm of a peak king fighter, with a thousand dragons of strength!

It was beyond shocking. Xuanyuan was extremely talented, but he was nothing compared to Mochou.

“The Body of Thousand Spirits is an extremely special physique that attracts the power of nature and harmonizes with natural Qi. Mochou is easily able to understand the Tao of everything within the natural world without even realizing it. I’ve given her the Thousand Spirits technique. She is probably stronger than you by now.” Greed chuckled.

“How is that possible? She is more powerful than me after just three days?” Xuanyuan couldn’t believe Greed’s words. He even felt like his pride had been injured.

“It’s not impossible. I’ve already told you that you know too little about the world. Every power in the world has its own price. Because of her special physique, she was blind from birth, and not every person with a Body of a Thousand Spirits can open their eyes. If they cannot open their eyes, they will be forever blind and unable to practice. However, once they open their eyes, they are able to grow while using the power of nature. This was the reason why I wanted you to take her from the start. Also, the Thousand Spirits technique she’s studying is a ten star Xian class technique. It’s very normal that she will be stronger than you by now.” Greed seemed to be excited about the little girl’s growth.

“Alright. At least she will have the strength to protect herself. That’s what I wanted.” Xuanyuan said.

“There’s one more thing. The stronger the Body of a Thousand Spirits, the stronger their attraction to sentient beings becomes. There will be many sentient beings who will hunt her for her physique. Some of them will be very powerful. Each physique has its own advantages and disadvantages. For example, training will become more and more difficult for the Body of All Creations as you grow stronger. In the future, you’ll encounter many people with special physiques. They are your real enemies. All the Xians and Emperors throughout the course of history had special physiques.” Greed explained. It gave Xuanyuan a whole new outlook on how insignificant his power was.

“Well, I can sense that there are many interesting landscapes and dispositions on the mountain. There might be powerful stones or crystals hidden within. Let’s see if we can find something.” Xuanyuan said, but he was also wondering whether Jiang Yitian had a special physique. With this thought, he quickly ran higher up the mountain.

—

The top of the mountain was filled with hot air. Within the air, there was pure and abundant fire Qi. All of that fire Qi was rushing into Mochou’s body, which startled many of the sentient treasures inside the mountain.

“Grandpa Fire, there are many eyes staring at me! I’m scared!” Mochou trembled. She hadn’t fully understood the Thousand Spirits technique yet, so she still couldn’t command the sentient beings to protect her.

“Don’t be afraid. I’m here for you.” The Xian of Fire brought her to the opening which allowed entry inside the mountain. Inside was a giant palace made entirely of red stones. However, the palace was ruined and it seemed to have happened a very long time ago. Inside the mountain was lava so thick that it could even kill imperial fighters.

Suddenly, a dragon roared from above. A dragon made from fire was hovering above them and started spitting fire towards them. The Xian of Fire smirked and flicked his fingers. A magical power destroyed the waves of fire and smashed the dragon into pieces. After its final howl, the dragon transformed into dragon grass which lightly landed on the Xian of Fire’s hand.

“Haha, they are attracted by your physique, Mochou. This is Fiery Dragon Grass. It is extremely rare and extremely useful. It will be beneficial to Xuanyuan for refining his heart.” The Xian said.

“It’s scary! They’re all trying to kill me. Grandpa Fire, I’m scared!” Mochou was pale from fear.

“Don’t worry. I’ll defeat them all! Mochou, don’t you want to help Xuanyuan?” He said as he comforted the little girl.

“Yes!” The thought of helping Xuanyuan calmed her frightened heart.

“Good. My guess is that the fighting fire that Xuanyuan wants is hiding inside this palace, it’s probably under the lava. Let’s go take a look, Mochou. We will see if you can find it.” He brought her to the edge of the opening and looked down inside. The Xian of Fire had come to the Red Mountain many times, but he failed to find the fighting fire all these years. He was desperate to solve the mystery of the Red Mountain.

“I’ll look.” Mochou formed a mudra she learnt from Greed with her hands, and whispered, “Eyes of The Fire Spirit!”

Her eyes suddenly turned as red as rubies, as if she was able to see through the fire. She concentrated on the task for more than fifteen minutes. Her forehead was dripping with sweat.

Suddenly, she smiled from ear to ear, “I can see a pretty lotus!”

“What? Keep looking, what does it look like?” The Xian of Fire was shocked to hear that she found something.

“It’s a red lotus that is burning. The lotus is in the hottest place.” She was starting to grow short of breath, since the Eyes of The Fire Spirit consumed her strength very quickly.

“Would it be... on the list of fighting fire....” The Xian’s heart was racing. “The Fire of Red Lotus!”

Mochou’s technique suddenly broke, she began trembling and hugged the old man tightly while sobbing. She cried, “I’m scared! There are a pair of big eyes staring back at me!”

He immediately carried Mochou out from the opening and thought to himself, “We’ve found it. There’s fighting fire in here. It’s the Fire of Red Lotus, ranked twentieth on the List of Fighting Fire! Xuanyuan will benefit from this if he can refine the fire into his heart. I’ll use the grass to make an elixir which will help protect him from the intense fire.”

Mochou still wouldn't stop crying, and the old man tried his best to calm her. "Mochou, don't cry. You've done a great thing and helped Xuanyuan!"

"Really?"

"Of course! I wouldn't lie to you. We'll wait for him here. He'll be sure to punch that big pair of eyes for you!" He laughed.

But she started to cry again when she thought about those eyes. The eyes truly scared her.

"Don't cry, Mochou." He said and summoned a large cauldron. "I'm going to make a powerful elixir for Xuanyuan. If you keep on crying and distract me, Xuanyuan might get defeated by that pair of eyes!"

His threat worked quickly, with the opposite result. Mochou screamed out, "I don't want the eyes to take Xuanyuan, I don't want the eyes to take Xuanyuan!"

"Oh my, please stop crying. Xuanyuan won't be taken by the eyes. I'm here to help him, aren't I?" The Xian grew more desperate. "If you keep on crying, Xuanyuan will be caught the eyes, but if you stop, he'll easily defeat them!"

"Really? I won't...cry.... Can he...can he beat the bad eyes?" Mochou forced herself to stop crying with great difficulty.

"Of course! Here, help me make the elixir!" He was relieved that the crying stopped. He put a few dozen plants and the Fiery Dragon Grass into the cauldron

and started creating the elixir.

## Chapter 148 – Sadness and Despair

“Have you heard? An inner disciple named Xuanyuan challenged first brother Jiang Yitian. He said he’s going to defeat him in three years! I bet he must have gone crazy.”

“Right, I don’t care about it. A nobody like him can only attract attention this way.”

“I don’t know. There must be a reason the Xians of the five elements took him as their disciple. He’s determined and savage like brother Fung Lie. Maybe he’s an upcoming genius.”

“No matter how talented he is, he’s still nothing in front of First Brother. If I was in his position, I would have killed the arrogant brat on the spot.”

“First Brother is nice like that. He probably found the boy amusing.”

“I don’t know. I think the boy is quite smart. He has a grudge with those major families, but now no one can touch him for three years!”

“Three years is not long. He should have just laid low and studied under the five Xians. He would probably live longer that way.”

“I don’t think he’ll survive past three months. There’s no way he will be able to kill Xingyun.”

“Well, he’s only a king fighter, but strong enough to slaughter two grandmasters. I think he’ll make a lot of progress on Red Mountain.”

“But Xingyun has been a grandmaster for many years. He won’t be able to hurt him with just three months of training.”

“That’s true. We will see in three months.”

Everyone was discussing the rumours about Xuanyuan which had spread throughout the sect.

“Uncle Fang Yun, what should we do? How can we save Xuanyuan?” Fang Yuyou was worried. When she got the news about Xuanyuan, she rushed to the scene at once. But by the time she arrived, Xuanyuan had already left with the Xians. She was shocked that Xuanyuan would challenge Xingyun and Jiang Yitian. Her shock had now become concern.

“I’ve met Xuanyuan many times. He has a strong will. Perhaps he will defeat Xingyun in three months time. However, I’m not so sure about first brother Jiang Yitian. He’s too young to fathom Jiang Yitian’s strength. He can transform into a powerful beast, but no one knows what this beast is. Everyone who has witnessed his transformation died. Three years might not be enough time for Xuanyuan.” Fang Yun explained. He knew that his niece had taken a liking to Xuanyuan, but Xuanyuan was too young and reckless. He should have set the challenge for a century, then perhaps he had a chance to win.

“So Xuanyuan will die in three years?” Fang Yuyou’s eyes were clouded with sadness.

“It might not be hopeless. Xuanyuan is one of the most talented people I’ve seen. In three years time, Xuanyuan might become someone of great importance. The sect wouldn’t allow fights between their important disciples.

There will be people who will stop them from fighting. Don't worry." Fang Yuyou reassured.

"Uncle, I still want to visit him on Red Mountain." Fang Yuyou was still worried.

"You'll only die on Red Mountain. If you really want to help him, concentrate on your training and become a true disciple. Then I'll give you enough merit points to go into a separate space to train. If you're not strong enough, you will only become a burden." Fang Yun uttered slowly.

"I understand, uncle." Fang Yuyou replaced her worries with a determination to become stronger.

—

In a little wooden house made from scented wood, located in the garden of the Taibai Trading Centre, a scream suddenly erupted.

"What? Is this true?"

"It is true, my lady! Please don't be angry!" The housekeeper pleaded.

"This boy is worrisome! It's okay that he challenged Xingyun, but Jiang Yitian? Three years? I can't think of any way to help him." Bai was pacing back and forth. "No, I must stay calm. Jiang Yitian is the first brother of the sect, but there must be a way to defeat him. Three years, there is still three years of time. There must definitely be a way."

She suddenly turned to the housekeeper, "Give the order. Find every piece of information about Jiang Yitian. I want to know the technique he studies and the form of the beast he transforms into. Gather all the required information and report back to me."

The housekeeper left the room at once. Bai was finally alone and sat down heavily on a chair, closing her eyes and sighing deeply.

"He dared to challenge Jiang Yitian. No one knows how powerful he Jiang Yitian is, but if there's enough time, he might be able to grow beyond Jiang Yitian. What we need is more time." She pondered for a while before her eyes snapped open, "Three months, before his battle with Xingyun, he will need to come here to prepare. We should be prepared with everything he needs. Every type of instrument, talisman and medicine should be available. Someone come here! We'll need to gather the best lower ranked heaven class instruments, medicines and imperial class talismans!"

A shadow confirmed the order from outside of the house before vanishing.

"Xingyun, you shouldn't anger someone I'm interested in. In three months, he'll surely defeat you!" Bai gritted her teeth.

Suddenly, someone called from the door, "My lady, miss Huayu came with lady Yan Ziyun. They want to meet you."

"Bring them in." She said softly.

Two women stepped into her room. Huayu was as stunning as before, but Yan Ziyun seemed disheartened and lonely.

“Lady Yan, I know why you came today.” Bai said. She knew that Yan Ziyun would be blaming herself for Guxing’s death. Xuanyuan had asked her to care for Guxing before he left for the sect, which Bai was there to witness.

“Jiang Yitian is the First True Brother of the sect. Xingyun is also a true disciple. They travelled there specifically to kill Guxing. There was nothing you could do to stop them. Don’t be too hard on yourself.”

“What? He’s the First True Brother?” Yan Ziyun couldn’t believe what she heard.

“That’s right, lady Yan. Xuanyuan has dug a rather large hole for himself.” Bai sighed, “Guxing’s death made him act irrationally. He challenged Xingyun in three months, and Jiang Yitian three years later. Jiang Yitian is a third level emperor. I’m also worried about this.”

There was only despair for Yan Ziyun to feel! She wished that she could trade places with Guxing. She would happily change positions with Xuanyuan to challenge Xingyun and Jiang Yitian, if it could save Xuanyuan.

“Is there no way to save Xuanyuan? I came here to inform him and apologize. I didn’t think... It turned out this way...” Yan Ziyun couldn’t stop her tears.

“Lady Yan, it’s not your fault. He attracts too much attention with his talent. There are people who want to keep him down. They are not supposed to hurt the people related to him, but Xingyun played dirty. Xuanyuan must hold you in high regard. You should leave the sect territory at once.” Bai didn’t want to tell her this, but she didn’t want Xuanyuan to worry about unnecessary things. She was a calculating merchant after all. Yan Ziyun wouldn’t bring any benefit to

Xuanyuan, other than more trouble.

“I understand.” Yan Ziyun smiled bitterly. “Lady Bai, I know you like Xuanyuan. There’s something, I can only tell you.”

Then she approached Bai and whispered in her ears. Bai shook at what she said, “Is that true?”

“Absolutely. Please take care of Xuanyuan. I won’t bring him more trouble.”

—

Inside the City of Fighting Dragons, Yan Ziyun was surrounded by the hustle and bustle of the street. Wearing the Moonstar instruments Xuanyuan bought her, she felt nostalgic about the past. She felt as if every step was painful. Loneliness, sadness and despair. It was all her fault. She was not powerful enough to protect Guxing. She was not from a powerful family. It was her fault. She did this to Xuanyuan. Self-hatred was revealed in her eyes.

She slowly grabbed her sword, and said bitterly, “Xuanyuan, you won’t have to worry about me from this day onwards. I’m sorry that I wronged you.”

However, just before her sword touched her neck, a force shattered the sword.

“Little girl. Why would you choose to kill yourself? Wouldn’t it be a better idea to follow this old woman for a walk around the world? Maybe you’ll change your mind.” It was a hunchback, white-headed old woman staring at her. Yan Ziyun smiled bitterly, unable to forgive herself. “I seldom find someone I like. Come with me, little girl.”

She sighed and flicked her cane. A strong wind came and swept the two of them away.

## Chapter 149 – The Disposition of the Nine Locked Dragons

Seven days passed by. Xuanyuan fought against the attacks from uncountable beasts as he ran towards the peak of the mountain.

He observed many dispositions on his way, but there was nothing special about them.

The Disposition of Fire Pulling, for example, attracted a large amount of fire Qi and beasts with it.

The Disposition of Burning Heart suited those who studied fire techniques, especially when refining the heart, but there was a side effect. If the practitioners were not careful, they might lose their mind inside the disposition. These were not rare nor powerful dispositions, according to the Book of Acquisition, there were no special stones in these places.

Xuanyuan's strength had increased to five hundred and sixty dragons. His heart was stronger and more Qi could be accommodated in his body, his mind was growing sharper as his strength increased. Blood was pumping through his body with incredible force and filling his body with energy.

"The Red Mountain is a good place to train your mind, but it's providing you with less help. Go to the peak as soon as possible. The old man and Mochou have already found the whereabouts of the fighting fire." Greed reminded him.

"You can sense that?" Xuanyuan was curious. After Greed regained more of its memories and power, it seemed to gain more secret tricks.

“I just used a little trick when I gave her the technique. I was just being careful. If the secret about the Body of a Thousand Spirits is discovered, all the major sects and families will try to take her away.” Greed laughed, “Mochou probably saw the Fire of Red Lotus, ranked twenty on the list of fighting fire.”

“The Fire of Red Lotus?” Xuanyuan frowned.

“It can burn through the impure. Mo and beasts fear the flames greatly.” Greed said softly, “It doesn’t have any special attacking methods, but it is still extremely powerful. Normal people wouldn’t be able to handle it. It’s almost as powerful as the fighting fire that ranks seventeenth on the list. More importantly, it’s related to an Ancient Saint.”

“Ancient Saint?” This was the first time Xuanyuan could learn something about the ancient world.

“That’s right, the Ancient Saint was one of the many Saints. They were born with the world. The story was that the Fire of Red Lotus was created from one of the weapons of the Ancient Saint. The weapon was named Red Lotus.” Greed was also excited that it had a chance to explain.

“Were these Saints more powerful than the Devouring Emperor?” Xuanyuan asked.

“All the realms, fighters, warriors, masters were all derived from the titles of an Ancient Saint. They were the first to experiment with the different realms. They were the first to achieve those ranks, they created them! They also created all the instruments and the basis of all techniques!” Greed said, “The Devouring Emperor died young. He was attacked by numerous emperors since he was too powerful. His strength was comparable to that of an Ancient Emperor. Many

people were afraid that if he became even more powerful, he'd threaten their positions. He didn't have any family and he liked to interfere in other people's business. He would destroy different sects, families and organizations depending on how he felt towards them, he was a danger to the world. If his life wasn't cut short, he'd be as famous as the Ancient Saints. He was able to create his own technique, after all."

"He's that powerful?" Xuanyuan marvelled. Those Ancient Saints were the ones who created the laws of this world. They were the creators of the realms and the Devouring Emperor was almost as powerful as them!

"Of course. He also had the Body of All Creations. If someone knew about your physique, they'd fight over you, but you wouldn't be as fortunate as you are now. They won't be interested in training you, just experimenting on your body. They'd want to turn you into a living weapon. Because not a single sect can afford to train the Body of All Creations! If I don't get my Origins of Memories back, it'd take a near infinite amount of crystals to restore my power. But without the devouring technique, the Body of All Creations would require even more crystals than me!"

Xuanyuan trembled at Greed's warning. Indeed, none of the sects would be able to afford the training of the Body of All Creations.

"In order to create the Devouring Technique, the Emperor had to devour numerous techniques, Precious Beings, and other resources. That's why he made so many enemies. He destroyed many sects in his time. Now you understand, your physique is extremely unpopular. No one wants you to become powerful. They only regard your physique as the source of sin and disaster."

Xuanyuan breathed deeply. He finally understood and nodded, "I get it. I won't think about all that right now. I'll concentrate on enhancing my power, and

devouring the Fire of Red Lotus. I should try my best to strengthen my power.”

Then he noticed that there was nine dragons ahead of him, they were made of fire Qi and were growling at him. His heart raced. “This is the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons! A Xian class disposition!”

According to the Book of Acquisition, dragons were highly regarded as the symbols of spirit. There must be treasure hidden in there!

## Chapter 150 – Get Out!

Xuanyuan observed the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons from afar. Inside the disposition, the fire dragons were burning the sky. The disposition itself had a radius of nine miles, but beasts wouldn't dare to move closer than fifty miles. It was extremely violent. Not as powerful as the Disposition of Nine Lives, but still as terrifying.

The nine dragons were formed from the Qi inside. With them as guardians, the place was completely locked down.

"Maybe there's lots of precious stones inside. I want to get in." Xuanyuan was tempted.

"Or there may be nothing. Not every powerful disposition can nurture treasures. The dragons aren't proof that there will be good stuff inside. The mountain is full of pure fire Qi. It's not abnormal that it is able to give birth to a dragon." Greed said, "But since you have the fighting water, it's not impossible to get in. The Water of Heaven can reduce the power of this disposition. But even so, you shouldn't underestimate the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons. This disposition is specialized in sealing. You should make a counter-seal disposition before you go in. Otherwise, you might never get out. I also need to make a protective disposition of gold and water. I'll need your armour."

Xuanyuan was still not powerful enough to go in unprepared. These dispositions didn't form from a crystal mine, but formed from the combination of the natural laws and Qi! But Xuanyuan had made up his mind. In the Book of Acquisition, he learnt about how to make the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons, but the research might be very outdated compared to the current disposition. It would be best if he could go inside and feel it for himself.

He took off his armour and took out five hundred jin of crystals. Using the power from the Water of Heaven, he carved the markings to make the protective disposition. If the protection broke, his armour would transform into water and continue protecting Xuanyuan from the fire. It took him five hours to finish the protection. When he was done, the crystals were absorbed into the armour.

He then moved on to the next task, the counter-sealing disposition. Many tricks would be deemed powerless when facing such a disposition. There were people who studied sealing techniques that would lure their enemies into a counter-sealing disposition, in order to easily kill them.

There were two kinds of dispositions. The major ones located within natural environments, such as mountains and rivers and the minor ones carved on the human body. Xuanyuan was making a minor disposition and he still needed to use another eight hundred jin of crystals to make the counter-sealing disposition. When he finished, half a day was gone and almost all of his Qi had been used. He had sealed the disposition into his armour.

To regain his strength, he sat cross-legged and inhaled the fire Qi around him. Afterwards he took a strength-replenishing pill and walked towards the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons.

He couldn't feel anything when he was crossing the boundary of the disposition. But the moment he was completely emerged within, the counter-sealing disposition was activated immediately. The eight hundred jin of crystals was being used at an incredible rate. He also activated his Dustless Helmet and disappeared. It was not the most effective tactic, but it could slow down the consumption of his crystals.

Above him, nine dragons were hovering in the air. Despite being made from Qi, the dragons still caused thunderous waves whenever they flicked their tails. They

seemed to notice the intruder and dived into the disposition at once.

“Boy, they have found you. Be quick!” Greed screamed.

Xuanyuan observed the disposition, remembering as much details as possible and compared it with the record from the Book of Acquisition. He amended the book according to his observations.

At the same time, he activated his boots and dashed to the opposite edge of the disposition. He saw a burning red stone and stuffed it into his ring. A dragon seemed to have felt what was happening and dived straight for Xuanyuan. Luckily, he was quick and the dragon only struck empty space. But there was a deep crater which appeared on the ground, spewing flames from the centre.

Xuanyuan started to run for his life, until he suddenly saw another red fighting stone and couldn't resist the temptation as he picked it up while running. In exchange, he was now chased by two dragons. The attack from the dragons created a rain of fire. Xuanyuan had nowhere to hide, but the protective disposition was proving to be highly effective. The rain of fire turned into harmless steam by the time it reached him.

Xuanyuan didn't dare to slow down. At the same time, a blue light shone from his kidneys and supported his protective disposition.

He encountered another fighting stone, and surely enough, three dragons were now chasing after him. No matter where he ran, the dragons could sense his exact location.

“These stones are nurtured by the disposition. That's why they can sense their

whereabouts. Keep moving!” Greed screamed. The rain of fire was pouring down onto him. The power of his protective disposition was starting to run out of power.

Xuanyuan ran for his life, while taking six of the red fighting stones. After that, he ran towards the centre of the disposition.

The fiery rain continued to pour. He was covered by a layer of steam made from the protection of water stopping the rain of fire. Behind him were nine furious dragons. He spotted a strange fighting stone in the middle. It looked very different from others. But Xuanyuan didn't even think before he packed it into his ring. When he was doing that, a dragon approached him and struck him with all of its power. He was sent flying from the power of the blow. The protective disposition on his armour was damaged and he coughed up three mouthfuls of blood.

The attack had at least a thousand dragons of strength. His armour's protection was decaying at a rapid pace. It wouldn't be able to last much longer. Despite his wounds, Xuanyuan didn't dare to slow down, since his counter-sealing disposition was also starting to waver. If his power was sealed by the power of the disposition, he wouldn't be able to survive.

The dragon which attacked him also learnt its lesson. Its enormous head was destroyed from contact with Xuanyuan's protection. But the fire Qi started to pour towards the dragon and soon replaced its head. The power of the disposition made it so that no one could destroy the dragons as long as the disposition existed.

Xuanyuan jumped to his feet and continued to escape. The light screen surrounding the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons flickered and the seal was about to be activated.

Seeing the seal activating frightened Xuanyuan to no end. He ran towards the exit like his life depended on it, which it did. The rain of fire was pouring from above, dissolving his armour. The Water of Heaven took the core role in protection and it was consuming a large amount of Qi from Xuanyuan. His Qi was almost finished.

“You greedy old bugger! Stop being the bystander. You’ll be sealed into this disposition if I die!”

“Haha, don’t worry. I won’t let you die!” A large amount of Qi rushed into Xuanyuan’s body. He could finally use more Qi to increase his speed.

His armour was dissolving. The seal of the disposition was starting to activate. Xuanyuan stared at the exit and screamed, “We can’t be stopped! Screw it, let’s get out of here!”

## Chapter 151 – The Source Energy of Sky and Ice

At the very last moment, Xuanyuan decided to jump with all his strength towards the exit. He needed to escape the disposition before the seal was activated or else it would mean death. However, an insanely powerful flame crashed into Xuanyuan through the screen of light before he escaped. A few of his bones were immediately broken and blood splashed out of his mouth. He was terrified by that final blow. The entire area inside the disposition was suddenly burning so violently that even the lava was burning.

“Just in time. If I was one step slower, I wouldn’t have escaped with my life.” He sat on the ground and began recovering from his injuries. The dragons inside the disposition were unsettled, they had just lost everything. If they could, they would rush out and kill Xuanyuan, but that was impossible.

His armour was completely broken, his boots were damaged, the Dustless Helmet was cracked down the middle. It looked like he would need to find a whole new set of equipment.

The Water of Heaven helped to recover the burns on his skin and in less than an hour, his bones were fully recovered.

“I knew you wouldn’t die so easily.” Greed laughed when Xuanyuan finished his healing process.

He rolled his eyes and ignored Greed. The flames that hit him as he escaped, had a thousand dragons of strength. If he wasn’t protected by the Water of Heaven, he would have been seriously injured. The Body of All Creations was stronger than ordinary bodies, so he was lucky to have only broken a few bones. He finally realized how useful the Water of Heaven would be. Without it, his body would have required a few days to recover.

“You don’t understand. If you don’t encounter these type of challenges, you won’t make any progress. Quick, cut the stones and see what’s inside.” Greed couldn’t suppress its greed any longer, but Xuanyuan was the same. He took out his dagger and cut into one of the burning stones.

After just one cut, a cold light burst from the crack. He felt a freezing air rush over his body and the Water of Heaven quickly protected him from the freezing power.

It was an unusual type of crystals. Extraordinarily white and pure. Even though it was small, it was more than a hundred jin in weight.

“Hahaha, this is the crystal of sky and ice! It’s almost worth as much as fighting source! Who would have thought? Inside a fiery disposition there would be some ice cold crystals!”

Xuanyuan continued cutting through the stones. All the red stones were cut open and he gathered nine hundred jin of the crystals.

“Quick, boy, open the big stone in the middle. I think that is the most important one. Didn’t you see how the dragons went crazy when you took it? It’s probably quite powerful.” Greed urged Xuanyuan. Xuanyuan couldn’t wait to see what was inside so he made his first cut.

Not long after, the giant stone was down to the size of a human head, and yet there was no sign of any crystals.

“Keep going!” Greed was getting more excited.

Xuanyuan tried to be patient, but it soon reduced to the size of a fist.

“There doesn’t seem to be anything.” Xuanyuan moaned, but suddenly, with the last cut, a freezing white light covered the surroundings and filled it with cold air.

“Hahaha! It’s an energy source! Nine jin worth! That will be worth more than nine thousand jin of fighting source energy or nine million jin of top class crystals! It’s worth the effort, boy! Keep it. You’ll soon be able to use it.” Greed told him. Xuanyuan understood the implication. When he retrieved the Fire of Red Lotus, these crystals and energy sources would add to his strength.

“When you took the Water of Heaven, it was easy because of that woman in the white dress, she wanted to give it to you, so the Water of Heaven didn’t resist with all of its power. This time, you will need to use all your power to subdue the Fire of Red Lotus. It’s always a very dangerous task to try and control these sentient beings. The Water of Heaven can also help you with this task.” Greed couldn’t hide its excitement.

“It all depends on whether we can actually locate the Fire.” Xuanyuan also had a hard time containing his excitement. After all, his revenge was depending on this. He needed to win the fight in three months and the one in three years.

“That’s a sure thing. The old Xian and Mochou was not far from the mountain top. He’s making you an elixir. You only need to subdue the Fire of Red Lotus!”

Xuanyuan quickly rose to his feet and started to head towards the mountain top.

## Chapter 152 – The Search for the Fire of Red Lotus

In the sky above the mountain top, a giant cauldron was floating in mid-air, while an old man sat on the ground forming several mudras. A boiling hot red liquid was bubbling inside the cauldron, releasing its medicinal scent into the atmosphere.

Mochou had started observing the process of making the elixir, after using the Eyes of the Fire Spirit, she was completely exhausted and slept for eight days. If the Xian of Fire didn't know that she possessed the Body of a Thousand Spirits and the strength of a king realm fighter, then he would've started to worry about her.

"Grandpa Fire, you still haven't finished yet?" Mochou had only just woke up and was still drowsy.

"Mochou, you're a sleepy little piggy. You slept for eight days already." The old man teased.

Mochou was provoked by the harmless remark, "Who is a little piggy? I'm not a piggy. I was just tired. I don't know why I slept for so long..."

"Alright. Alright. You're not a piggy. It's fine, I just finished the elixir!" He made his final mudra and a powerful energy rushed into the cauldron. A dragon formed from fire surged into the sky, its roar echoed across the sky. A red elixir had been completed. It seemed to have its own consciousness as it flew out of the cauldron and attempted to escape. Before it could escape, the old man jumped up and captured it. "The Elixir of the Fiery Dragon. This is for Xuanyuan. With this he will be able to beat that bad guy with giant eyes."

“Great! He’ll beat the big bad eyes!” Mochou’s cheeks were red from excitement.

At this time, Xuanyuan had finally made it to the mountain top. He could sense the extraordinary power from Mochou’s body, and feelings of envy and jealous rose in him. However, since Greed had already explained this to him before, he did his best to suppress these emotions.

“Xuanyuan, you’re here! I was scared by a pair of big eyes! They made me cry!” Mochou started to tear up again when she thought about her encounter with the eyes.

“Don’t worry, I’ll punish all the bad guys who made you cry.” Xuanyuan smiled.

“Master, how did the search go?” Even though Xuanyuan was already informed by Greed, he still needed to pretend he didn’t know.

“We think that we have found the fighting fire, it was all thanks to Mochou’s help. It’s the Fire of Red Lotus. I’ve concocted an elixir which will aid you in refining your heart. It required twenty types of precious flora to make, so the benefits won’t be small.” The old man said as he handed Xuanyuan the elixir.

Xuanyuan could feel the enormous power from the elixir. He was glad to have the Xian’s help as this would definitely help him with refining his heart.

“Thank you, master. I will have to trouble you to protect me while I use it.” Then Xuanyuan gulped down the elixir. A gust of hot steam immediately rushed into his heart. A vortex was formed inside his heart and started to devour the

power of the elixir. A shadow of a Royal Dragon, representing his heart started to appear and was quickly joined by the Lady of Heaven from fully refining his kidneys.

“The medicine is so powerful!” Xuanyuan was in awe. His blood already contained the aura of a heavenly dragon, but it started to boil as his veins and arteries expanded.

His veins were becoming tougher with each heartbeat and he was able to accommodate even more Qi than before. More importantly, he felt that his thoughts had grown clearer and his mind was more powerful than ever. He felt like nothing could deceive his mind anymore. He felt an unexpected sense of peace.

His strength surged as his heart was refined,

Six hundred dragons!

Six hundred and forty dragons!

Six hundred and eighty dragons!

Seven hundred and twenty dragons!

The surge in his power finally stopped after three days. Xuanyuan opened his eyes, seeing that the image of the Lady and the dragon were now hovering behind him. The force of water and fire were beginning to interacting with each other. They were both extremely powerful.

The dragon was still weaker than the Lady, because his kidneys were fully refined by the Water of Heaven, while his heart was still not fully refined. Xuanyuan needed to acquire the Fire of Red Lotus if he wanted to quickly refine his heart.

“Alright.” Xuanyuan stood up. He turned to the Xian of Fire and felt a wave of gratitude rush through his body. He made this elixir over eight days and used many rare flora, without ever expecting anything in return.

“This Body of Five Elements is strange, huh? Even with the help of the elixir, your heart is still not fully refined. Well, at least the elixir can still benefit you when you enter the heat. The Fire of Red Lotus is cunning. It’s hiding within the palace in the hottest location. Even I am not strong enough to go inside and capture it. We can only lure it out.” The Xian of Fire exclaimed.

“Let’s just go to the entrance and see if we can find the Red Lotus again!” Xuanyuan felt his blood boiling. He had to take this opportunity.

“Carry me!” Mochou was clinging onto Xuanyuan like a koala on a tree.

“Fine, let’s go!” Xuanyuan carried Mochou and flew towards the peak of the mountain.

## Chapter 153 – Bait

“Brother Xuanyuan, you have to help me catch that big bad guy! He scared me!” Mochou tried to look intimidating, but instead she only looked more adorable.

“Haha, I will! Don’t worry.” Xuanyuan barked out a laugh and ran even faster with Mochou.

“Xuanyuan, there’s something I want to talk to you about.” Greed said.

“What is it?” Xuanyuan asked.

“The Fire of Red Lotus hides inside the Red Mountain and it’s very close to the sect. There are many talents in the sect, but why has no one ever found the fire? The only explanation is that the fire is extremely cunning!” Greed said, “It will be extremely dangerous to go into the palace and catch it. It might be able to kill everyone if we are not careful.”

“Just say what you want to say already!” Xuanyuan was slightly unsettled.

“There’s only one way to lure the Fire of Red Lotus out, but it requires bait.” Greed said slowly, “It means using Mochou as bait. The Fire has already sensed that she’s the Body of a Thousand Spirits, and it will certainly want to take over her body. Her body is an extremely tempting vessel for the fire.”

“No way! She’s only a child. I won’t put her in danger!” Xuanyuan rejected Greed’s idea without a thought.

“If you don’t devour the Fire of Red Lotus, do you think you will have a chance of defeating Jiang Yitian in three years? It’s extremely vital for your growth. Well, think about it. That’s the only way I can see. If I wasn’t sure that this plan would work, I wouldn’t say anything.”

“Well, there’s a set of top class earth instruments in Youyun Long’s ring. The set was named Frozen Sky. It has gloves, armour, helmet, boots and a jade pendant in the set. It’ll probably help you capture the Fire of Red Lotus. The Water of Heaven will help to enhance its power.”

“You can stay with her at first. Since you aren’t very strong, the Fire will not pay any heed to your presence, but it can’t detect me. The only problem is that the Xian of Fire might sense my existence.”

“That means there’s no guarantee of Mochou’s safety! What if her body gets possessed by the Fire?” Xuanyuan questioned.

“You can use the crystals and source energy you found a few days ago to replicate the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons. The Disposition will only be activated when the target enters the disposition. It should have the power to control the Fire of Red Lotus. You have everything you need. You just need to make the decision. Don’t forget, you also have the Water of Heaven as support.” Greed said.

“Even so, I can’t risk Mochou’s life.” Xuanyuan was still hesitant.

“Xuanyuan, the only person holding you back, is you. Nothing will go wrong unless you panic and cause the problem. You should have confidence when protecting Mochou. She practiced the Xian class technique that I gave her, so it

won't be that easy to possess her. You've made so many preparations leading up to today. You only need to distract the Xian so he doesn't sense my presence, then the only thing left is a long and gruesome psychological battle. We will see who has the stronger will, you or the Fire of Red Lotus."

—

When they arrived at the peak of the mountain, from the entrance to the palace, they could feel the unbearable heat burning their faces while the sound of flowing lava deafened them.

"Wait." The Xian of Fire suddenly said.

"What is it, master Fire?" Xuanyuan asked.

"The Fire of Red Lotus is much smarter than we imagined and would have prepared countermeasures. We shouldn't try to locate it the same way as before. We should lure it out." The Xian said sternly.

"Do you have a plan to do that?" Xuanyuan brightened up. It would be the best if they didn't need to use Mochou as bait.

"Yes. One option would be to use a weaker fighting fire as bait. The Fire of Red Lotus wouldn't be able to resist the temptation to devour it." The Xian glanced at Xuanyuan, "Another option would be to use a body which it could possess and use to reincarnate. Like Mochou's Body of a Thousand Spirits, but of course, we'd have to carefully prepare before we use Mochou."

Xuanyuan couldn't believe what he just heard. Greed had always been a

creature who lacked emotion. It would always tell Xuanyuan to value himself and not care for others. Greed's suggestion to use Mochou didn't surprise him, but the Xian of Fire also suggested it. Perhaps this was the only way.

"See, I told you. It all depends on you." Greed didn't keep nagging him. It understood how Xuanyuan felt.

Xuanyuan closed his eyes to contemplate his options. At the same time, the Xian of Fire asked Mochou softly, "Mochou, would you help Xuanyuan to catch the bad guy with big eyes? It would mean that you will be used as bait though."

"Yes! I believe in brother Xuanyuan!" Mochou pouted, like she was embarrassed about crying when she first saw the eyes.

"Xuanyuan, this girl has faith in you. Why don't you try believing in yourself as much as she believes in you? If you want to protect others, you need to have confidence in your own ability. It was your lack of faith that led to you leaving Guxing in the School of Yuehua. You didn't believe that you would be able to protect it, so you left it without your protection. Don't you understand the world by now? If you have strength, you can protect everyone around you; if you are weak, it doesn't make a difference what actions you take."

Xuanyuan had made up his mind. He took a deep breath and knelt in front of Mochou, while looking into her eyes.

"Mochou, no matter what, I will protect you. Don't be afraid. I'll catch the bad guy."

"Great! Those eyes made me cry. It's embarrassing." Mochou blushed. "What

should I do?”

“We’ll wait until I’ve prepared everything.” Xuanyuan chuckled. He turned to the Xian and asked, “Master, what should we do? Where should we prepare the trap?”

“There!” He pointed at a plain area outside the entrance to the palace, “There might be traps inside the palace. It’s too dangerous to go in now. If we set up near the entrance, when Mochou begins to train, she will lure the fire Qi and all the sentient beings towards her. Like that fiery dragon grass, it couldn’t resist attacking Mochou, and was killed by me.”

“Great, I’ll set up the disposition before we begin.” Xuanyuan made up his mind. He took out a block of cold crystal and used the power from the Water of Heaven to carve the markings onto it. The Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons was a Xian class disposition, Xuanyuan would struggle to bring out its full power, even with the help from the Water of Heaven.

“My god, you have a Crystal of Sky and Ice? It is as rare and powerful as some energy sources. If you create the disposition with it, it will be extremely powerful. Combining the disposition and the Water of Heaven, you will be able to control the Fire with ease. You already have everything planned well!” The Xian said appreciatingly.

“It was just luck.” Xuanyuan knew he had no time to waste, and took out nearly ten thousand jin of top class crystal, which was only a small portion of the crystal inside Youyun Long’s ring. This would help him to restore his Qi more conveniently. Without a moment of rest, he began carving the markings for the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons.

Xuanyuan was soaked with sweat from the work. His exhaustion was starting to show on his creased brows. Mochou was slightly heart-broken to see how hard Xuanyuan was working for her.

“Brother Xuanyuan, I think you should rest, you look so tired. I don’t want you to wear yourself down. We don’t need to catch the bad guy. It’s my fault...” She began tearing up as she spoke. Xuanyuan smiled towards her. He didn’t do this for Mochou’s sake. He wanted, or needed to catch the Fire of Red Lotus. He didn’t deserve Mochou’s tears, he was using her as bait.

“Mochou, we’ve already started and I want to catch the bad guy, not just for you, but also for me. So, don’t cry. It’s not your fault.” Xuanyuan comforted her gently.

Four days later, he was surrounded by several heaps of crystal powder. Only two thousand jin of crystal remained.

“Is this the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons? This is indeed a talented disciple I have chosen! Even in the sect, there are not many people can make this! Maybe he can really defeat Jiang Yitian in three years.” The Xian was extremely pleased when he thought about Xuanyuan. “The five of us being able to find a disciple like him was a blessing. He’s talented, kind and strong. Jiang Yitian is nothing compared with him!”

Another day quickly passed. The remaining two thousand jin of crystal had transformed into powder as well. Xuanyuan took out another two thousand jin of crystal and continued.

At last, by the end of the day, he finished the markings for the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons. He was exhausted. However, when he looked at all the

marked crystals, he was more determined than ever. He started equipping his new instruments and connected his consciousness with the marked crystals, allowing him to fully control the disposition.

“We’re done. Let’s rest for now, tomorrow I will be in a better condition. Then we’ll begin!” Xuanyuan closed his eyes and started to restore his power with anticipation.

# Chapter 154 – The Fire of Red Lotus!

Xuanyuan closed his eyes. All his energy was drained from carving the markings. It was a task that required extreme concentration and precision. In the process, he expended a huge amount of Qi, but he was able to overcome the challenge. As a result, he could now control his Qi more precisely than before.

From Xuanyuan’s kidneys, the soft blue light from the Water of Heaven spread through his body and nurtured his entire body. His body was like a scorching desert being soothed with a drizzling rain. His exhaustion slowly subsided. It took an entire day for him to regain his energy.

“Let’s begin.” Xuanyuan sat in the middle of the disposition. Next to him was Mochou. She began practicing the technique she had been given by Greed. Many fire spiritual beings were immediately drawn to her from the surroundings. This was the first time Xuanyuan had witnessed her using this technique. He was shocked when he noticed the incredible effect it had.

“When you defeat and absorb the Fire of Red Lotus, take the egg to the palace. There will be something to help restore its power inside.” Greed told him. Xuanyuan was excited when he thought of the great beast which was dwelling inside the egg. It was, after all, the Mount of the Emperor.

—

The spiritual beings began to stir and grew impatient.

“Master Fire, please be prepare for the Fire of Red Lotus and lock down its escape. Otherwise, I don’t think I can capture it with so many spiritual beings

here.” Xuanyuan said.

“Naturally. I believe you can do it.” The Xian of Fire became incredibly serious. He would be pleased if his disciple could capture the Fire, but he was equally proud either way.

Days slipped away and Mochou didn’t stop using her technique for a second. Xuanyuan could sense that they were surrounded by an enormous amount of spiritual beings who wanted to devour Mochou, but they were all waiting, they all seemed to be frightened. There seemed to be a powerful existence which stopped them from acting out.

“There are many voices speaking, Xuanyuan.” Mochou whispered.

“Don’t worry about that. Concentrate on your practice.” Xuanyuan reassured her. But in his mind, Greed was reminding him “The Fire of Red Lotus might be communicating with the other spiritual beings here. Be careful.”

“Master, be careful.” Xuanyuan said.

“Of course.” The Xian had already noticed the danger.

Another seven days passed. Mochou’s blood and Qi were boiling. She began to break through to the realm of a grandmaster and her strength began to surge until it reached a thousand, five hundred dragons.

When ordinary grandmasters stepped into the imperial realm, they would normally have around a thousand dragons of strength. It was unbelievable of Mochou’s ability. If Mochou really wanted to defeat Xuanyuan, she only needed

to use one hand! This realization made Xuanyuan feel intimidated and envious.

“How about that, boy? Are you jealous? This is the power of the Body of a Thousand Spirits. However, the technique she uses is mainly for protection and is not specialised in killing. I can only find other suitable techniques for her once I recover to the Emperor realm.” Greed teased.

“Well, that’s good. But I was supposed to be the one who protected her....” Xuanyuan sighed.

At this time, Mochou suddenly became pale. Spiritual lights started to cover her body as Greed screamed, “Damn it, the Body of a Thousand Spirits is experiencing a transformation! Her power will be greatly weakened!”

Mochou’s strength started to decrease rapidly as the colour drained from her body.

A thousand four hundred dragons!

A thousand three hundred dragons!

A thousand two hundred dragons!

....

A hundred dragons!

BANG!

A gigantic red lotus burst through the rocks and began to attack. The rocks began to melt into lava as they hurtled through the air. All the spiritual beings in the area also became active.

“The Fire of Red Lotus was too devious! It had recruited all the spiritual beings to help it take over Mochou’s body. It must have sensed that Mochou was approaching a transformation and waited for her strength to weaken. If she overcomes it, her power would be much greater, but this is also the perfect time to occupy her body. Be careful!” When Greed finished, the Red Lotus began to shrink until it became the size of a fist. Then it smashed into Xuanyuan’s disposition of Nine Locked Dragons.

Xuanyuan immediately activated the disposition with his mind. Numerous white dragons formed from the ice crystals and Mochou was quickly surrounded with a cocoon of ice. A snowstorm raged within the disposition and was targeting the Fire of Red Lotus, but the snow melted as soon as it came close.

Outside of the disposition, there were uncountable spiritual beings. They took the form of dragons, tigers and many other beasts as they began attacking the disposition. The Xian of Fire waved his hands and a giant red bell appeared. It was a top ranked heaven class instrument, the Fire Spirit Bell. The bell expanded until it covered the entire disposition. Under the Xian’s control, the bell fell from the air, smashing the spiritual beings back into their original form. They were then immediately harvested by the Xian.

“Haha, great. Keep it coming. Don’t you dare runaway.” The Xian laughed, “Xuanyuan, the Fire of Red Lotus is all yours!”

Greed also said, “Xuanyuan, there’s no other option other than defeating the Fire of Red Lotus now! Be prepared to activate the Frozen Sky!”

The Fire of Red Lotus understood that it had run headfirst into their trap and unleashed an angry roar which summoned a terrible fire which almost destroyed

the snowstorm. It started to rush towards Mochou without fear.

Xuanyuan activated immediately activated the Spell of Frozen Sky on his instruments. A cold breeze blew around him and surrounded his body in ice which shined brightly. The Fire sensed the power of ice and slightly hesitated.

“This is the time! Nine Dragons, Lock!” Xuanyuan yelled. The complicated markings appeared on the nine ice dragons and they dived towards the fist-sized Red Lotus. The Fire already knew it couldn’t escape and had chosen to fight.

The power of the crystals of sky and ice, and the energy inside Xuanyuan’s body was being consumed at an extremely rapid pace.

The Lotus began screaming. Xuanyuan didn’t understand what it was doing, but suddenly the power of the crystal was rapidly draining.

“Xuanyuan, it’s bad. The Fire is activating the Spell inside the palace. For now, it is being stopped by the disposition, but it won’t hold for very long. You must use the Water of Heaven immediately.” Greed screamed. Behind Xuanyuan, the lady of Heavenly Water appeared, radiating soft blue light which filled the entire disposition.

With support from the Water of Heaven, the power of the disposition was greatly strengthened. The damage caused by the Fire of Red Lotus was slowly being repaired.

“Water of Heaven, seal!” Xuanyuan shouted as a soft blue light formed on his hands. He approached the Fire of Red Lotus and felt the scorching heat against his skin.

“Be quick! The disposition won’t hold for long. The Fire can sense that. We only have this one chance. Otherwise, we’ll all die here.” Greed urged.

Xuanyuan continued approaching the Fire, as the danger surrounding them increased.

## Chapter 155 – Devouring the Red Lotus

Xuanyuan released the Qi from the Water of Heaven and attacked the Fire of Red Lotus. The power of the Water immediately suppressed the Fire. The laws of nature states that water overcomes fire.

“That’s it. Keep weakening it. Once it becomes weak enough we can use the Devouring Technique,” said Greed. Xuanyuan didn’t dare slow down his attacks. He was enduring the extreme cold from the Water of Heaven inside his body and the extreme heat from the Fire on the outside.

But the Fire of the Red Lotus was not to be underestimated. The Spell of Frozen Sky could only provide him with a little support. The fire continued raging as Xuanyuan kept activating the Water.

After an hour, the power of the Fire had grown much weaker, but the Water of Heaven hadn’t faltered in the slightest. The steam produced from the clash of the two powers ascended into the sky and froze when encountering the spell. Xuanyuan was now standing in a large pool of water which was formed by melted ice.

Another hour passed and the power of the Fire was growing weaker.

“This is the time!” Suddenly, from inside of Xuanyuan, numerous black threads extended and wrapped around the Fire. The Fire roared in anger and struggled, causing the entire Red Mountain to tremble.

“Xuanyuan, quick! Use the disposition to seal yourself!” Greed urged. Xuanyuan understood and immediately activated his thoughts to make the disposition shrink. The ice dragons clung onto him as Xuanyuan was trapped

inside the disposition. Since he was the one who made the disposition, Xuanyuan was not harmed by the disposition. He was surrounded by a shield of ice. Nothing, not even an iota of Qi, could leak outside. The trembling Red Mountain soon returned to normal.

“We have made it this far without dying. Good. Now, I’ll use the Devouring Seal to trap the Fire inside your heart. The rest will rely on you,” Greed said. The black light formed many strange looking symbols which captured the Fire and dragged it towards Xuanyuan’s heart.

Xuanyuan instantly felt like his body was going to explode from the pain. The Water of Heaven tried to protect him, but the Fire was too overbearing. Every inch of his body was being torn apart from the inside. His instruments, which had helped him so far, slowly broke down when they encountered the Fire’s rampaging power.

“Xuanyuan, I’m going to drag the Fire into your heart completely. You’ll have to overcome it. Whoever has the stronger willpower will win the fight. If you lose, your body will be devoured in an instant and your mind will be lost!” Greed warned him for the last time.

—

A ball of black light could be seen from inside the shell of ice.

The Fire had stopped struggling and rushed into Xuanyuan’s heart, then Xuanyuan’s consciousness was torn from his body. When he looked around, he was inside a world of fire. Numerous burning lotuses filled the entire space.

“Mundane human, you disrupted my plans. All this one wanted was the Body of a Thousand Spirits. Not only did you interfere, you even attempted to steal my royal power.” A man equipped in bright fiery armour said. His tone was regal and he spoke like a king. “No one will ever be my master. The Emperor of Red Lotuses was my only master in this life. If you so wish to die, I’ll make use of your body.”

The man walked towards him. The heat grew more intense as he approached.

Xuanyuan smirked. Behind him stood the Lady of the Water of Heaven. When she appeared, the burning red lotuses were trapped within ice, suppressing the intense heat.

“Water of Heaven! Good, I can finally defeat you and claim this body.” The man glared at the Lady, who smiled calmly in reply. However, her attack was violent. Forceful blue waves attacked the entire sea of fire.

“Stop resisting. I am your master now. The Emperor of Red Lotuses is your past, I’m your future. I will bring glory to your name. Do you know who I am? I’m the heir of the Devouring Emperor. My Body of All Creation can absorb everything in the world. There’s no use in resisting me.” Xuanyuan declared his strong will.

“The Body of All Creations! It is the origin of all sin!” The man’s eyes revealed his shock. “Don’t you dare try suppressing me. I have never heard of the Devouring Emperor!”

The man roared in anger and summoned a ball of fire which engulfed Xuanyuan. He was still protected by the blue water, but the fire was also attacking his mind. Every inch of his skin was screaming with pain.

“Looks like the Emperor of Red Lotuses preceded the Devouring Emperor. If

that is so, I can only make him bow to me using force!” He absorbed the figure of the Lady of Water inside his body and the divine power of the Water of Heaven radiated from him.

“The Fire of Red Lotus, burn their sins!” Red lotuses appeared from every direction. All of them were filled with the power of fire as they directly attacked Xuanyuan.

“Water of Heaven, protect me!” A blue lights shone from his body and destroyed the lotuses which were approaching. Xuanyuan unleashed a flurry of blows towards the man in red armour. In his mind, he focused on the pain which Guxing must have suffered. He thought about Ziyun? Is she safe? No matter what he needed to enhance his power and kill Xingyun. He needed power to protect all the people he cared about, he needed the Fire of Red Lotus to submit!

The two powerful wills clashed in a mighty battle. This intense struggle between whose will was stronger carried on for half a month.

“How can this be? He’s only a mundane human. How can he have such a strong will?” The Fire didn’t have much strength remaining. The Water of Heaven was draining his power and the boy wasn’t submitting. His willpower seemed to be undying.

“Fire of Red Lotus. I’ll ask you one last time. Submit to me. I will be the Emperor of the future. I’ll bring glory to your name. I’ll find the origin of your power, the Twelve Red Lotuses. If you refuse, you’ll die here.” Xuanyuan’s face was emotionless. It was as if he had become someone else. Someone you wouldn’t dare to meet eyes with.

The man was shaken. His voice was coarse, “You can help find my origin?”

“Yes, I will. I have the Body of a Thousand Spirits by my side. You know how well she can sense spiritual beings. If I can’t find your origin, then no one can!” Xuanyuan voice was dignified and the Fire’s will weakened. “If you don’t submit to me. You will die here. I will just find another fighting fire. It won’t be difficult for me with the help of the Body of a Thousand Spirits.”

Xuanyuan raised his hands to make one last move, but the man opened his mouth and said slowly, “If I wasn’t lured out of the palace by your trap, you would have never been able to force me into this position. I’m impressed that you were able to control the Water of Heaven, and create the Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons. You are no ordinary human. If you swear to help me find the Twelve Red Lotuses, I will submit to you at once.”

“I swear. When I find the Twelve Red Lotuses, I will refine them into my heart and return your origin.” Xuanyuan smiled proudly. He then devoured the Fire of Red Lotus without any resistance.

## Chapter 156 – The Palace of Red Lotus

At last, the Fire of Red Lotus had been devoured into his heart. This process required an entire month. When it was finished, Xuanyuan collapsed onto the ground from exhaustion and curled into a ball. His skin which had been charred black, had to be regenerated and restored to its normal condition.

The Disposition of Nine Locked Dragons was broken. The icicles became water that streamed down the mountain. The temperature on Red Mountain was much milder than in the past.

“Xuanyuan! Xuanyuan... No!!... Wake up! Please don’t leave me alone!”

Xuanyuan was still half awake. He slowly opened his eyes when he heard his name, and saw a beautiful face sobbing above him. It was a tiny face which belonged to a young teenage girl. Her eyes were bright, her skin flush with youth.

When he opened his eyes, the girl’s tear covered face bloomed into a smile, “You’re awake!”

“You are?” Xuanyuan frowned, dumbfounded by this unrecognizable girl. He pondered for a while and cried out in shock, “Mochou?”

“Yes! I am Mochou! I don’t know what happened. I became like this after practicing.” She nodded her head excitedly. Her big eyes gazed at him intensely, making him blush with embarrassment, the embarrassment enhanced when she started hugging him tightly.

Xuanyuan wouldn't feel so abashed if it was still the little girl hugging him, but now she had grown into a young lady. Many inappropriate thoughts appeared in his mind, but Mochou was ignorant of what she was doing.

"This is the transformation of the Body of Thousand Spirits. This girl is pretty good! You should stay with her and see if the two of you give birth to a Body of a Thousand Spirits and All Creation." Greed laughed teasingly. Xuanyuan was so embarrassed he wanted slap himself. It was outrageous to think about these type of things, but after all, she looked like a girl around his age...

"Did I perhaps sleep for a very long time?" Xuanyuan scratched his head while thinking and looking at the Xian of Fire.

"Not very long, only a month. But I'm glad that you're awake. You're the first one who I've seen absorb a fighting fire as violent as the Fire of Red Lotus into your heart!" The Xian was impressed.

Even though he had just been through a long and gruesome battle, he felt a burst of energy within his body. His Qi seemed like it was endless, but he knew, he needed much more than this. He needed to devour more power. He didn't just want to defeat Jiang Yitian. He needed to fight against the Yin Family, so Master Zhenluo wouldn't have to get married against her will.

"I did sleep for a long time. Master Fire, you don't have to worry about my safety any longer, as I am now the master of The Fire of Red Lotus. Besides, the temperature of the Red Mountain has lowered dramatically. I will stay here, so no one will suspect anything. After, I'll go into the City of Fighting Dragons. You don't have to protect me any longer." Xuanyuan was touched by the two of them, they had watched over him for a month.

“Good. I’ll go back, the other masters have completed the elixirs. They’ve also found other fighting gold, earth and wood. I’ll go back and look for more. It won’t be a problem for you to defeat Xingyun.” Fire smiled, “I’ve collected a lot of precious items from this trip to the Red Mountain. They’re gonna be so jealous. The Red Mountain was the grave of the first Emperor, The Emperor of Red Lotus. Rumour has it that the rivers of lava were formed when his blood touched the land. You can control the Fire of Red Lotus now, so you shouldn’t be in any danger, but still, be careful.”

Afterwards, the Xian of Fire disappeared, leaving the Skysea Bird circling in the sky. Since the defeat of the Fire of Red Lotus, the Red Mountain had become much cooler, so the bird was able to fly closer. Mochou’s spiritual Qi was also able to protect the bird.

Xuanyuan took out a new inner disciple’s robe from his ring and changed into it. He looked at Mochou. She did not look like a small child anymore, but she was still the same little girl, “Mochou missed you! Did you catch the bad guy?”

“Yes, I did.” Xuanyuan said.

“Great! That bad guy was terrifying!” Mochou jumped onto Xuanyuan and hugged him. Xuanyuan blushed when this happened a second time.

“Mochou... this... you can’t hug me as casually anymore...” Xuanyuan couldn’t find the words.

“Why?” She blinked with confusion.

“That... It’s because you’re a big girl now...” Xuanyuan couldn’t really explain.

“It doesn’t make any difference. I’m still going to stay besides you. Don’t you like Mochou anymore?” Mochou suddenly got teary, “Did I do something wrong?”

“No! No!” Xuanyuan wanted to find a hole to crawl into. “All right. It’s nothing, don’t worry. Let’s go to the Palace of Red Lotus first.”

The Mochou jumped onto Xuanyuan’s back. Wrapping her arms around his neck tightly.

“Mochou. You’re not a little girl anymore. You have to walk by yourself. If someone see this, no one will marry you in the future.”

Mochou considered his words for a while before letting him go. While smiling she said, “Then I’ll just marry brother Xuanyuan.”

Xuanyuan was stunned. What was she saying? He shook his head and decided that it would be better to have his five masters explain, as he was making it worse.

“Haha, I told you. She’s a good girl. At least she won’t lie to you. Yin Zhenluo and the Bai woman are women with their own agendas!” Greed teased.

“Go to hell, Greedy old bugger. That is inappropriate.” Xuanyuan rolled his eyes.

“All right. Don’t cry when you are scammed by women.” Greed diverted the

conversation, “Go to the palace now. There’s dense Qi inside. Give the egg a few days to absorb it, it’ll help a lot.”

“So you can do the same, right?” Xuanyuan said sarcastically.

“Haha, of course I’ll absorb it too, be quick now.” Greed laughed.

Xuanyuan ran towards the entrance of the mountain. Mochou followed lightly behind him. Soon the Palace of Red Lotus was beneath them. They jumped inside and the Skysea Bird dived in with them.

## Chapter 157 – The Blood of the Emperor

The Palace of Red Lotus was made from white marble which had blood red lotuses carved into them. The reflection of the light on the lotuses made the place seemed hauntingly crimson. The pillars in the main hall were broken and stains of blood decorated the rubble. There were thousands of deep cut marks which tore apart the floor as if someone had been slashing desperately with a terrifying strength. It was a ruin, however, it was also a sacred place where the Emperor of Red Lotus fell in battle.

There was a river of lava streaming beneath the palace, as if the palace was floating atop the river. The Xian of Fire mentioned that the lava was rumoured to have formed from the Emperor's blood. Even without the Fire of Red Lotus, the power of the lava could still kill an imperial fighter.

Mochou looked at the place with her curious wide eyes and was amazed. "Xuanyuan, the Qi in here is so dense!"

Even Greed was laughing with excitement, "Hahaha, boy! There is a crystal mine under this lava. The crystal must be to support the spell to protect the palace. Looks like there must have been many battles occurring here. It was probably the people who came looking for the fighting fire and were killed by the spell. You are going to have a feast here, boy!"

"It's you who are going to have a feast, right?" Xuanyuan rolled his eyes.

"Well, who do you think benefits from me regaining my power?" Greed said.

"Just absorb all you can, I'll use the Fire to maintain the temperature here,

which will give us more time until people arrive.”

Xuanyuan took out the egg and placed it in the centre of the hall. Perhaps it was due to its excitement, but the egg trembled frantically as it extended its black threads into the lava, to absorb the inexhaustible Qi. Since the Qi here was purer and more abundant, Greed quickly did the same. The Fire of Red Lotus in Xuanyuan’s heart allowed him to control the spell protecting the palace.

The carvings of red lotuses on the ground suddenly started to spin as if they were alive. A dense fire Qi concentrated in the centre of the hall. The Red Mountain started to regain its former temperature, which had dropped because Xuanyuan devoured the Fire of Red Lotus.

“Hahaha, wonderful!” Greed was devouring the power from the crystals under the lava, “The lava actually contains the blood of the Emperor! There’s not only crystals, but also source energy! Boy, I’ll get some of the energy for you!”

The dagger shook, bringing the boiling lava to surge. Suddenly, on the lotus carvings, many source energy appeared, it was the source of fire lotus. Each of the source was ten jin in weight. Each was source was equivalent to a million jin of top class crystals. If he used them against his enemies, it’d be devastating. Twelve of them appeared and Xuanyuan quickly put them inside his ring.

“Mochou, this is a great opportunity to practice.” Xuanyuan reminded her. She immediately sat on the ground cross-legged, and formed a mudra with her hands. A large amount of fire Qi rushed into her body. The egg was clearly furious that it was forced to share the Qi and thrust its black threads even deeper. With Mochou, Greed and the egg absorbing the Qi, Xuanyuan was only left with ten percent of the Qi.

He closed his eyes and concentrated on his training. Extending his arms, one of them was filled with the calm force of water, the other was ablaze with the mighty power of fire. Two images appeared behind him, the Lady of the Water, and the Royal Fire Dragon. The red lotus carvings started to spin, it seemed like they were bowing towards Xuanyuan who now controlled the palace.

He flicked his fingers, summoning a giant dragon of fire. The dragon roared and spat out a huge fireball, creating a large hole in the stone wall. Xuanyuan smiled satisfactorily as he was now able to control the Fire of Red Lotus.

Over the next two weeks, Xuanyuan focused his time on harmonizing his two powers, there was a natural hostility between the Water of Heaven and the Fire of Red Lotus. Whenever the powers came into contact with the other, a surge of energy exploded inside his body, injuring Xuanyuan. Eventually, Xuanyuan understood the method to creating harmony between the two powers, but he needed much more time.

Mochou had stepped into the realm of a peak grandmaster. As Greed predicted, the Body of a Thousand Spirits had a huge advantage when they begin cultivating. But she was now beginning to encounter more challenges with her cultivation. It would be even more difficult for Mochou if she didn't have access to large amounts of source energy.

The seventh golden sun had appeared on the shell of the egg, with the eighth red sun mark starting to form. Xuanyuan couldn't hide the excitement on his face. Only two more to go before the beast hatched.

"Haha, Xuanyuan, as I said before the last suns on the shell will be the most difficult. Unless there's another ten of these palaces for it to absorb, the final golden suns won't appear." Greed chuckled which left Xuanyuan speechless.

“I’m almost done with the imperial realm. If the girl wasn’t here, the eighth mark would probably have turned golden.” Greed said slowly, “But this is good enough. Mochou has two thousand five hundred dragons of strength now. She might not have the ability to swiftly kill her opponents, but she can definitely protect herself.

Xuanyuan was even more silent. He only had eight hundred and eighty dragons of strength after he devoured the Fire of Red Lotus.

“Don’t be jealous. You’re only a king realm fighter with just two of your organs refined. Your strength is already impressive. Mochou only had a thousand dragons when she reached the peak of the king realm. Even if you can’t find another spiritual being, you’ll still easily surpass a thousand dragons of strength.” Greed added. “Alright. We’ve devoured all the crystals and source energy in the mountain. I left some of the Emperor’s blood behind, or the whole palace would collapse. It’s time to go to the City of Fighting Dragons and get some good quality instruments!”

“Sure.” Xuanyuan turned to Mochou. “Mochou, I’ll send you back to the Mountain of Five Elements. You need to study hard under the five masters while I am in the City of Fighting Dragons.”

“Can’t I go with you?” Mochou begged.

Xuanyuan couldn’t say no to her innocent behaviour and sighed, “Alright, we’ll go together.”

He summoned the Skysea Bird and jumped on with Mochou. The bird spread its gigantic wings and soared out from the mountain towards the City of Fighting

Dragons.

## Chapter 158 – The Umbrella of Rainbows

The City of Fighting Dragons was still bustling with crowds of people. Several thousands of people arrived there every day through the portals. Many people came here to make a name for themselves, despite the fact that millions had died before them in pursuit of the same goal.

Xuanyuan arrived at the Taibai Trading Centre on the back of the Skysea Bird. Many people began to gossip about his identity.

“It’s a Skysea Bird. He’s definitely not an ordinary person.”

“Of course, he’s wearing the clothes of an inner disciple.”

Xuanyuan landed on the ground lightly with Mochou following behind. Her innocent beauty instantly attracted a great deal of attention. The Skysea Bird circled the trading centre from the sky while it waited.

Xuanyuan approached one of the guards outside and asked, “Is lady Bai here?”

Some of the guards recognized him from the previous incident at Taibai. Lady Bai had also sent down orders regarding him, so the guard swiftly replied, “Master Xuanyuan, lady Bai has been waiting to see you. Please wait here and we’ll contact the housekeeper.”

Xuanyuan nodded when he suddenly heard a kind voice from behind.

“It’s only been a few months, but master Xuanyuan has become so powerful.

You are indeed a rare genius.” He was the housekeeper of lady Bai’s house.

“Housekeeper, you’re too kind. Please lead the way,” Xuanyuan said.  
“Mochou, what are you looking at, come!”

This was the first time she had encountered such a large city and so many people, so she was noticeably curious.

“Brother Xuanyuan, it’s so big here! Look at those fish! And that flower!”

Inside the trading centre there was a huge pond with fragrant white lotus floating atop and dragon-koi swimming below. The koi were attracted to Mochou’s Qi and began leaping in the air. The water from their tails formed a glistening rainbow in the air.

“These koi seldom get close to anyone. Master Xuanyuan’s acquaintances are all extraordinary.” The housekeeper was amazed.

“This is my sister, Mochou. She doesn’t come to the city often, she’s naturally curious,” Xuanyuan replied. Mochou was fixated on the koi in the pond as the housekeeper and Xuanyuan waited for her.

Over time, many people began to notice the young girl who was loved by the koi fish. There were many who were astonished by her beauty and innocent aura. But their attitudes all took a 180 degree turn when they noticed Xuanyuan.

“This boy again. What’s a nuisance. He is close with lady Bai, and now he has another girl. Why are all these girls with him?”

“I’m so much better than him.”

“Ha, have you looked in the mirror lately? He’s an inner disciple of the sect, what are you?”

“Don’t you know? He’s called Xuanyuan, he has killed heirs from the Bi, Lie, Nu, Lu and the Xie families!”

“It’s him! Haven’t you heard? He challenged the true disciple Xingyun. The fight will happen soon. He also swore to defeat the First Brother Jiang Yitian in three years!”

“What? That’s not possible, he can’t be that crazy? Jiang Yitian is already an Emperor realm fighter! Are you sure?”

“Absolutely. I heard it from many inner and true disciples from the sect. Looks like he only has three more years to live.”

“Who knows if he can even survive the battle with Xingyun?”

Mochou widened her eyes and glared at the gossiping group as she shouted, “Who said brother Xuanyuan only has three more years to live? He can definitely defeat Jiang Yitian!”

Her shout to defend Xuanyuan attracted even more attention.

“So that’s the boy who challenged Jiang Yitian! I’ve heard the Xian’s of Five

Elements took him as their disciple!”

“Really? Well that’s really something.”

“I’ve heard that he produced a seven-coloured light. He has the talent to become a Xian.”

Mochou didn’t expect her words would stir even more comments. She was slightly intimidated and quickly hid herself behind Xuanyuan.

Suddenly a refreshing laughter arrived from behind them. “Master Xuanyuan, what a pleasant coincidence! We meet again!”

“You’ve reached the imperial realm, master Huxuan. Very impressive.” It was the young master of the Hu family, Huxuan. Xuanyuan sensed his powerful aura and goosebumps covered his body. “It’s nice to see you again. Mochou, come meet master Huxuan.”

Mochou came out from behind him and curtsied.

“Mochou? How nice to meet your acquaintance. You have incredible aura. It’s like you have all the purest Qi from the universe dancing around you. Why don’t you take this instrument, I think it suits you very much. It’s called the Umbrella of Rainbows, it’s a lower ranked heaven class instrument.” Huxuan was very curious about this girl. She’s more powerful than Xuanyuan and yet she seemed dependent on him.

Both men and women witnessing this felt a slightly bitter taste in their mouth. The women wished they could be Mochou, the men were jealous that they could

never afford such an expensive gift nor attract such beautiful girl.

Mochou looked at the umbrella and turned to Xuanyuan, as if she was asking if it was ok to accept the gift.

“Accept the gift. Master Huxuan could also be considered as your brother,” Xuanyuan chuckled.

Mochou took the umbrella and smiled happily. When she opened the umbrella, light fell onto her like snow. She looked ethereal. Even Huxuan was lost for words.

“It is my honour to have a sister like Mochou.”

Xuanyuan thought, it'd be good for Mochou to have Huxuan as a brother, since there was always danger around him and he might unexpectedly die. Huxuan was an honourable man. He might be willing to care for Mochou should anything happen to him.

“Let's talk while we walk.” Xuanyuan wouldn't want to keep the housekeeper waiting.

“Master Xuanyuan, you have encountered much trouble since we last met. Both the Xie and Lu families sent people to my house and told us that you could endanger us, since you've slaughtered their heirs already.” Huxuan walked side by side with Xuanyuan. “But there's something I don't understand. Even if you want to avoid the trouble from all those families and challenge Jiang Yitian, you should have set a longer time limit for yourself. Only three years, what if you are unable to defeat Jiang Yitian? What is so urgent?”

“Well, it’s a long story...” Xuanyuan sighed and explained the reason behind the conflict.

“I see. Xingyun is a scoundrel. His methods are despicable, but your challenge was exactly the thing he wanted.”

At this point, an emotionless voice came from behind, “Xuanyuan, how dare you challenge my brother. I’ll kill you today. No one can save you!”

## Chapter 159 – Killing in the blink of an Eye

All eyes were on the man who had just threatened Xuanyuan. He was the brother of Xingyun, Xingzan. Xingzan's face was full of disdain for Xuanyuan. He was wearing a shiny flamboyant armour and holding a sword which was a top class earth instrument.

A new round of gossip began.

“He's Xingyun's younger brother! An inner disciple who ranks number six on the List of Merit!”

“That's him. He slaughtered a grandmaster fighter over their gamble!”

“Everyone on the List of Merit is strong enough to challenge grandmaster fighters.”

“Looks like Xuanyuan's going to die. He doesn't even have a single instrument equipped!”

“Xuanyuan is the disciple of the Xian's of Five Elements! He has been training for months on the Red Mountain with the Xian of Fire! Xingzan's not strong enough to challenge him!”

“Xingzan must be trying to kill him because he doesn't have any instruments equipped!”

“But Xuanyuan isn't on the List of Merit.”

“Jiang Yitian declared that no one should harm me in these three years. Are you trying to insult the First Brother?” Xuanyuan smirked when he saw Xingzan. His words provoked many people. They thought Xuanyuan was afraid so he was using Jiang Yitian to avoid the fight.

“Xuanyuan, if you are scared, of course I won’t challenge you. First Brother Jiang Yitian commanded that no assassination is allowed, but I challenge you with all these witnesses. Do you dare to fight me? If you’re afraid, kneel down and bark like a dog, then I’ll let you go,” Xingzan laughed hysterically.

“Is that so? Alright. I’ll accept your challenge.” Xuanyuan didn’t seem like he was provoked. He actually wanted to use this to test how much he had improved and also to test the strength of someone on the List of Merits.

“Everyone, please bear witness. I didn’t set up a trap for Xuanyuan. In this fight we are responsible for our own lives, how about having master Huxuan be the judge?” Xingzan said.

Huxuan looked at Xuanyuan, who nodded approval.

“Fine. I declare that inner disciples of the Fighting Dragons Sect, Xingzan and Xuanyuan have both engaged in this fight willingly. The death of either party shall not be blamed on anyone but themselves.”

The centre of the garden was quickly cleared for the two of them. Mochou frowned. She wanted to step in, but was stopped by Xuanyuan.

“Xuanyuan, take out your weapon. I don’t want people accusing me of killing

people without a fair fight.” Xingzan had wanted to kill Xuanyuan for a long time, since he had embarrassed him in front of lady Bai.

“It’s just a fight with you. Why would I need a weapon?” Xuanyuan shook his head.

The crowd were surprised again. They thought Xuanyuan was either ignorant or scared stupid.

“Alright, if you want to die. I’ll make it quick.” Xingzan was furious at Xuanyuan’s arrogance. He released his Qi. A light shone out from his sword and hundreds of dragon shadows surged into the sky.

Two hundred dragons!

Three hundred dragons!

Three hundred and sixty dragons!

“Impressive! A peak king realm fighter who has three hundred and sixty dragons! No wonder he could kill a grandmaster! Xuanyuan is dead!”

The sword and Xingzan seemed to fuse into a single entity. It was so bright, even in daylight, it was hard to directly look into the light. He wielded the sword, shooting the Qi directly at Xuanyuan’s face. Xuanyuan didn’t make any attempts to evade. He remained unmoved. Behind him, the shadow of the Royal Fire Dragon appeared. It was like the most noble and domineering tyrant, forcing the entire area to surge with heat.

“What is this?” People started shouting in awe.

“Is it a kind of uncommon fire? It’s not as strong as fighting fire, but it’s still powerful.”

“I guess so. Xuanyuan practiced on the Red Mountain with the Xian of Fire. It must have been given to him by the Xian. No wonder he was so arrogant.”

In Xuanyuan’s heart, he said silently, “Guxing, First I’ll kill Xingyun’s brother to help comfort your soul!”

His hand reached out and he flicked his fingers. A spark of fire cracked in mid-air—

Xingzan felt like his body was being torn apart from within. His Qi was stopped with a single flick. Xuanyuan leapt forward and grabbed hold of the sword by the blade. Xingzan tried to pull the sword away, but it wouldn’t budge.

To everyone’s surprise, the sword started to melt in Xuanyuan’s hand...

“Uncommon fire! It’s scary! I’ve heard that the Xian of Fire also controls an uncommon fire. Looks like he’s given it to Xuanyuan. A fighting fire would be even more scary.”

Xingzan was forced into a corner, his Qi formed into golden stardust which surrounded Xuanyuan. But Xuanyuan’s terrifying fire Qi burnt the dust before it even touched his body. Xingzan finally realized, he was not Xuanyuan’s equal.

But it was already too late for him to regret.

“You can die now.” Xuanyuan declared. A red light flashed through the air as Xuanyuan hand moved. Xuanyuan grabbed Xingzan’s head with a single hand and then violently ripped it off of Xingzan’s body. A rainbow of blood splashed into the air, staining the garden of the Taibai Trading Centre with crimson rain. It was a death which happened within a few seconds!

The audience was trembling. Xuanyuan’s method was too savage. Even Huxuan couldn’t think of anything to say at that moment. After a few minutes, he finally announced Xuanyuan’s victory.

Xuanyuan’s took Xingzan’s ring and transferred his four billion merit points to his own token. There was also about five million king coins inside. It should be enough money to buy what he wanted, he thought to himself.

The housekeeper was the only calm person on the scene, “Someone clean up this mess and take away the body.”

“No need for that.” Xuanyuan smiled. He flicked his fingers again and flame poured from his finger, engulfing the remains. In an instant, the body was burnt to ashes.

Mochou looked at Xuanyuan with a frightened look, but said nothing. She still believed that Xuanyuan was fundamentally good. He wouldn’t kill people who didn’t deserve it.

“Let’s go!” Xuanyuan said mildly. Mochou followed him immediately, but she was no longer in the mood to play with her umbrella of rainbows.

“It’s only been a few months and master Xuanyuan has improved a lot. Looks like Fung Lie has a very keen eye for talents,” Huxuan said, “In two days time, there will be one of the many auctions which Taibai host, this one occurs every decade. Will master Xuanyuan be attending?”

Xuanyuan’s eyes lit up, “Naturally. I was wondering why Xingzan would have so much money with him. Looks like he came for the auction.”

After a while, they approached the wooden house Bai lived in.

“Master Xuanyuan, the lady has been waiting for you. Please come this way,” The housekeeper said. Huxuan knew it was time for him to take his leave. He promised to meet Xuanyuan in two days at the time of the auction.

Xuanyuan looked at Huxuan’s back, then brought Mochou towards the wooden house. Then he suddenly realized there was a large cut on his hand.

“Looks like my body is still not strong enough.” He sighed.

## Chapter 160 – The Plot of Jiang Yitian

“According to ancient knowledge, the heart governs the blood, the veins and circulation to the mind. The kidneys govern the bones, while the lungs govern the skin. If you had conquered a fighting gold and refined it into your lungs. The sword would’ve been unable to harm you.” Greed told him.

“I have already found fighting fire and water to refine my organs with. It’s already considered a blessing. It won’t be easy to find fighting gold.” Xuanyuan reflected.

“Your beautiful master has fighting gold, doesn’t she? Go to the Yin family. I’ll treat her sick father and request the Divine Gold as payment.” Greed suggested playfully.

“Don’t even think of taking things from master.” Xuanyuan dismissed the suggestion. However, he remembered Yin Zhenluo managed to damage the ground with a single breath. The fighting gold, Divine Gold, was unimaginably powerful.

“You’re tempted though, aren’t you?” Greed knew every little thought which Xuanyuan had. “Your body would transform if your five organs are fully refined by the five elements. It’s a transformation you will need, if you want to avenge Guxing.”

“Even so, I still won’t take things from master.” Xuanyuan replied. “And I should be the one who finds the cure for master’s father. Bai once said that his sickness is related to spiritual beings....”

“Alright. I’ll wait until you beg me. There’s no disease I can’t cure. I’ve seen all kinds of strange illnesses...” Greed laughed.

Mochou walked down the path lightly. The sides of the pathway were decorated with bamboo. They would create a soothing melody as the wind blew through the air. When Mochou passed the ponds, the fishes jumped up as if they were welcoming her arrival.

When they arrived at the doorstep of Bai’s house, the housekeeper said softly, “My lady, master Xuanyuan has arrived.”

“Come in.” It was Bai’s voice. The housekeeper opened the door and let the two of them inside, but he didn’t enter. Bai sat on a meticulously crafted mahogany chair and chuckled, “You are back so soon.”

“I’m here to ask for your help.” Xuanyuan smiled bitterly.

“What is it? There’s no need to be shy.” Bai said. She noticed Mochou and asked, “And you are?”

“Mochou! Xuanyuan is my brother!” Mochou said merrily.

“Is that so? Come sit. There is no need to stand.” Bai said sweetly.

Xuanyuan sat down, but he couldn’t find the words. Since Guxing was murdered, Ziyun must have also encountered trouble. He had already prepared his mind for the worst.

“Is there any news on Ziyun?” He took a deep breath and asked with trembling voice.

“I knew you’d ask about that.” Bai sighed. “About that. I hope you won’t mind my decision.”

“What did you do?” Xuanyuan frowned.

“Lady Yan came to see me here. And I...” Bai told them what happened that day. She was also uneasy. “After that, lady Yan left and no one has seen her since that day.”

“Well, it is already in the past. There’s nothing we can do. If it wasn’t for me, none of this would’ve happened. You did what you could. I’ll find Ziyun after I defeat Jiang Yitian. I don’t blame anyone but myself.” Xuanyuan’s face contained a bitter smile.

“Before she went away, lady Yan told me to remind you about Jiang Yitian.” Bai let out a long sigh.

“What is it?” Xuanyuan asked.

“Jiang Yitian used a memory spell and went through lady Yan’s memories. He knows that you acquired the Book of Acquisition in the Shi village. I speculate that he wouldn’t want other people to know about it. He surely wants it for himself. That’s why he returned to the sect.” Bai wouldn’t have thought that Xuanyuan was the master of the Book of Acquisition when they met. Everything about him was unbelievable.

“He thought that I wouldn’t hand over the Book of Acquisition. So, he baited me into a fight to kill me. Then he can take away everything I own without creating suspicion.” Xuanyuan snorted. “He left Ziyun alive to continue gathering information on me. Luckily she’s very observant and realized his real plot. Otherwise, I wouldn’t know the book is his target.”

“So, is that all you want to know? About lady Yan?” Bai smiled.

“No. There’s one more thing. I think Taibai must have the information which I require. I’d like to know more about other spiritual beings. Specifically fighting gold, earth and wood.” Xuanyuan said slowly, “Taibai must have gathered intelligence about them, right?”

“Of course, but they are the top secrets of Taibai. I don’t have access to that information. But, if you really want to know, I will see what I can do.” Bai gazed at Xuanyuan, whose temperament had transformed to be more elegant. “Why do you need them?”

“To refine them into my five organs. I already have fighting fire and water.” Xuanyuan immediately spoke the truth. Bai could have captured him to find out more about the Book of Acquisition, but she chose to help him instead. He decided that she was trustworthy.

“You have fighting fire and water?” Bai couldn’t help but gasp.

“Yes. I am betting on the transformation which occurs when one refines all five organs. Then it wouldn’t be impossible for me to defeat Jiang Yitian.” Xuanyuan said quietly.

“So you have a special physique, is it the Body of Five elements? Otherwise, you wouldn’t be able to refine both fire and water!” Xuanyuan became more surprising everyday.

“Bai, you are very clever. I need your help. I only have three years to find the other three elements to defeat Jiang Yitian.”

“Don’t worry about that. I’ll help you.” Bai reassured him. “Can you tell me which fighting elements you acquired?”

“The Water of Heaven and the Fire of Red Lotus.” Xuanyuan confessed.

Bai looked at him with wide eyes. She immediately guessed where Xuanyuan found the spiritual beings and didn’t inquire any further. “Do you think you can defeat Xingyun?”

“Of course! I don’t even need to use the power of my fighting water or fire. But I need some instruments, talismans and medicine.” Xuanyuan took out eighty million king coins and then said, “I have quite a lot of earth class instruments and other items which won’t be of much help to me. Would you please help me sell them? I might want to buy something at the auction in two days.”

“I’ll have them prepared for you. I’ve added the items to the manifest. Buy whatever you need.” Bai was shocked at the wealth Xuanyuan had accumulated, though she didn’t show it.

“Thank you. Would you mind if Mochou and I stay here until the auction?” Xuanyuan smiled.

“Of course you may.” Bai remembered what happened last time and blushed slightly. She turned her attention to outside, “Housekeeper, take these items and evaluate. Exchange them for king coins and send the money back.”

The door opened and the housekeeper entered. He took the two rings and closed the door again.

With two young women and one young man alone in the house, the atmosphere quickly became awkward.

## Chapter 161 – Banter

The room was filled with the soothing scent of incense. It sharpened the minds, and filled the air with a sense of calm. The room was very simplistic. There was only an octagonal table with a few stools, a few mahogany chairs, a bed and a few plants.

Xuanyuan glanced at Bai and broke the silence, “There’s one more thing I want to know.”

“Ask.” Bai smiled elegantly, glancing at Mochou who was quiet throughout the conversation.

“I want to know if there’s any news about the Yin Clan.”

“I knew you’d ask that. Do you want to hear the good news or the bad news first?”

“Bad.” Xuanyuan replied immediately.

“Yin Zhenluo cut ties with her older brother and he was furious about it. He slaughtered his way through every city his army passed through. You were the one who caused the disturbance in Lishou City in the Eastern Dynasty, right? Her brother sent out eighteen Heavenly Dragon Guards and ordered them to assassinate you.” Bai frowned as she said.

The grandmaster realm was the lowest requirement to become a Heavenly Dragon Guard. Xuanyuan might not be able to defeat eighteen of them if they attacked together.

“That’s not bad news to me. With my strength as it stands, I can kill all eighteen of them.” Xuanyuan said menacingly. This made Bai contemplate just how powerful the fighting water and fire actually were.

“Even so. There are three imperial fighters in the guards. The formation they create is not to be underestimated.”

“Imperial fighters?” This caught Xuanyuan off guard. They were stronger and had more numbers than Xuanyuan. Not to mention they can form an attack formation.

“Yes. The young master of Yin Clan was truly outraged. The reason Yin Zhenluo cut the ties with him was because of you.” Bai said.

“Because of me?” Xuanyuan was shocked. But he remembered, “Is it related to me activating the Light of Heavenly Dragon? They can sense that?”

“Probably. The young master loves his little sister very much. So he’s willing to send out all those guards to eliminate you, even though he is fighting a war.” Bai explained.

“I see. What about the good news?”

“Since Yin Zhenluo never returned to her family, she won’t be married to the Hai Clan anytime soon. She seems to be looking for you.” Bai said.

“She’s looking for me?” Xuanyuan’s heart was racing at the thought.

“Does Xuanyuan like master Zhenluo?” Mochou suddenly said. Bai chuckled, even this innocent little girl noticed it.

“Don’t be nonsensical!” Xuanyuan glared, but Mochou took no notice and offered her observation.

“It was like the time you were with Sister Shiguan. Even though this is slightly different, you still like her. Sister Shiguan also likes you. I wonder if master Zhenluo likes you.”

“Shiguan....Good heavens. So it was not just rumours. The young princess of Mo, Shiguan battled with Princess Pingyao of the Eastern Dynasty for a mysterious man. When did this Xuanyuan become so charming? But Shiguan is a member of the Mo, Xuanyuan will never stay with her. Yin Zhenluo is his master, Yan Ziyun has disappeared, Mochou is his sister and Fang Yuyou is no competition for me at all...” Bai thought to herself, then she blushed with embarrassment as she thought, “Why am I having such thoughts!”

“Where is master Zhenluo?” Xuanyuan asked.

“She might have been to Lishou City, but recent news indicates that she’s probably now on the east side of the Linglong Sect.” Bai.

“Thank you, Bai.” Xuanyuan was grateful for her help.

“Don’t worry about it, I do it because I like you.” Bai said softly.

“But it’s not like, it’s love.” Mochou said and she looked straight into Bai’s eyes. “Aunt Mei once loved a man. I know what it looks like.”

Bai’s face turned crimson. Xuanyuan laughed drily.

“Silly girl. Don’t talk about things you don’t understand.”

“I understand! Aunt Mei said if a person gives you all they have without expecting anything in return, that’s love.” Mochou pouted. Xuanyuan rolled his eyes. He never thought he’d banter with this young girl.

“Mochou, do you want me to be your sister?” Bai asked teasingly, but Mochou’s face was blank. She didn’t understand, so Bai continued, “If I marry Xuanyuan, then the two of us will be sisters.”

After a while of pondering, Mochou asked seriously, “Xuanyuan said if I keep hugging him everyday, no one will marry me. So I will just marry him. If both you and I marry him, then what would I call you?”

“Well, you’re his little sister, you can’t marry him.” Bai was still teasing.

“Who said I can’t? Aunt Mei said I should marry a good person and Xuanyuan is a good person!”

“That won’t do!” Bai wouldn’t stop teasing and Xuanyuan decided he didn’t want any part in this.

“Look at you, boy! The Devouring Emperor wasn’t as charming as you! He was

powerful, but many women avoided him because of his reputation. Not like you! Charming women wherever you go.” Greed laughed uncontrollably.

“I didn’t charm any woman, anywhere. Mochou just doesn’t understand what she’s talking about. Bai is the one who charms people. Her affection will pass.” Xuanyuan was slightly annoyed.

“Even though I don’t particularly like Bai, but Mochou eyes are not wrong. Don’t be a wuss. In ancient times, those with power would take many partners....” Greed began to reminisce.

The housekeeper called from outside, “My lady, the possession in the rings have been exchanged.”

“Good, come in and give the money to master Xuanyuan.” Bai stopped teasing Mochou and commanded. The housekeeper swiftly entered the house and quickly left. Xuanyuan checked the rings and took a deep breath. Li Gang and Youyun Long from Lishou City were loaded. Apart from the crystals, their wealth was exchanged for a total of 380 million king coins. He now had 550 king coins in total. He should be able to buy quite a few things in the auction.

“Xuanyuan. It’ll be the auction very soon. There are many things I need to tend to, so I’ll leave first. You and Mochou can stay here. I’ll pass the Taibai golden token to you later so you will receive a discount when purchasing from us.” Bai looked at Mochou with half annoyance and half affection. She doesn’t understand the world yet, but she was adorable.

Xuanyuan sat cross-legged on the floor to meditate.

Two days soon passed.

## Chapter 162 – The Linglong Instruments

People were rushing into the Taibai Trading Centre. There must be people in the emperor and Xian realms coming too, Xuanyuan thought. Since this was an auction that happened once every ten years, it would attract more attention than their normal auctions.

The auction was segregated into two sections, the heaven section and the earth section. People who were under the grandmaster realm or without a powerful background were only allowed to join the earth section, while those with backing would be in the heaven booths. The heaven section would only accommodate peak grandmasters or above, and those who were from particularly wealthy and powerful backgrounds had their own booths.

Xuanyuan was not influential enough to receive his own private booth, but Bai had arranged a booth for him, heaven section number thirty-six. Apart from Bai, Xuanyuan, and Mochou, no one knew that Xuanyuan was in attendance.

Many true many true disciples had come to join the auction. Some of them were imperial fighters already, but they were still unable to get a private booth. Bai told Xuanyuan that Jiang Yitian, Fung Lie and Huxuan were all attending the auction this year. All hundred booths of the heaven section and two hundred booths of the earth section were occupied.

Over the past two days, Bai was busy preparing the information on the guests' wealth and the estimated prices for the items on the manifest. She was the chief manager of the auction, but she only accompanied Xuanyuan to the auction.

“Which class of instruments do you want to purchase this time?” Bai asked.

“Lower rank heaven class. I won’t be able to activate anything more powerful at the moment, but I’ll need a set of upper rank heaven class instruments for Mochou.” Xuanyuan smiled. Mochou was much more powerful than he was since she was a peak grandmaster. She had the Body of a Thousand Spirits, she would need something decent to protect herself. “How much do those usually cost?”

“Ordinary upper rank heaven class would cost around 20 million king coins.” Bai chuckled. “You probably have more than enough money for that.”

“Then we’ll see what’s on offer. Oh? Xingyun’s here also?”

Xingyun sat in the normal seats with a few other true disciples. They were chatting very loudly, so their voices were clearly heard by everyone surrounding them.

“Xingyun, your brother was killed by Xuanyuan a few days ago. This is infuriating!”

“If he wasn’t given that uncommon fire by the Xian of Fire, he wouldn’t have been able to kill Xingzan. I’ll skin him alive when we fight.”

“I wonder if he joined the auction. He took all the money Xingzan brought with him.”

“Xingzan only had 5 million on him. What good will that do him? He won’t even be able to enter the earth section. He’s just a country bumpkin. Killing him is like crushing an ant.”

Mochou heard what they said and she jumped up and down in anger, “They’re so rude! I’ll go teach them a lesson!”

“Let them be. Don’t bother with them.” Xuanyuan smiled. He reached out to grab her shoulder to stop her. Mochou could definitely kill them with just pure strength, but attracting attention to her was not desirable.

“That’s right, Mochou. Don’t be provoked. Those people are not worth your attention.” Bai was delighted.

“Alright, they are not worth it.” Mochou pouted.

“That’s right.” Bai smiled. “Xuanyuan, if you want to purchase a set of upper rank heaven class instruments, the first item is quite suitable. It’s a set of Linglong instruments, including the armour, helmet, boots, and jade pendant. It’s great for protection. They were made by the previous saintess of the Linglong Sect. They are extremely valuable.”

“The Linglong Sect. I’ve read in the Book of the East that it only accept female disciples, right.” Xuanyuan asked.

“That’s right, but it’s just as influential as the Fighting Dragons Sect. They have dovish policies on their land, so their land is much more peaceful than the Fighting Dragons Sect and the Eastern Dynasty. The citizens there are much more wealthy, but since they’ve been peaceful for a long time, they do not have as many warriors as the land owned by the Fighting Dragons Sect. Each sect has their own advantages and disadvantages.” Bai explained. “Oh, the auction is beginning.”

Xuanyuan looked at the centre stage where there were three beautiful women present. The strongest among the three was an imperial fighter, while the other two were peak grandmasters. Xuanyuan was amazed at the power of the Taibai Trading Centre.

“Welcome everyone, for joining the decade auction of Taibai. The time has come to begin. Let’s start with the first item.” The leading lady was named Baiji. Her smile was sultry and enticing. Even Xuanyuan felt slightly fuzzy when he watched her.

“They all study a technique which increases their charm. This is to attract everyone who joins the auction. Xuanyuan, are you tempted by them?” Bai noticed Xuanyuan’s change of expression.

“A little, but not much.” Xuanyuan confessed. Bai let out a small laugh.

“Xuanyuan, do you think they’re more beautiful than me?” She asked.

“No, I think you’re better.” Xuanyuan said honestly, not understanding why Bai was asking.

The first item was on stage for display. Baiji began to explain the use and history of the Linglong Instruments. It was indeed a set of powerful protective instruments. The starting price was 100 million king coins.

“I’ll take the set for 100 million king coins, I can offer it to my wife.” An imperial fighter announced.

“120 million. I don’t need anything from you. I’ll buy it myself.” A hot tempered, beautiful woman said. She was sat next to him and was a peak imperial fighter.

“130 million.” A woman in the earth section announced.

“140 million.” The first woman said coldly.

“150 million.” A man’s voice came from the heaven section.

“That was Jiang Yitian!” Xuanyuan jumped. He looked at Bai, who nodded in confirmation.

“It’s indeed Jiang Yitian. He wanted to please the current saintess of the Linglong Sect. This is probably for her.”

“Then I’ll have to fight with him for the instruments. Let’s see who has more money.” Xuanyuan said dangerously.

“He has about 2 billion kingly coins with him, but he has many things to buy so he won’t be able to spend all his money on the first item.” Bai explained.

Xuanyuan turned to Greed in his mind, “Don’t let the egg absorb everything from the energy source. I’ll exchange those for money if needed. I’m not as powerful as Jiang Yitian now, but ill drown him with all my money.”

“I know, I know.”

Xuanyuan had about a million jin of top class crystals with him to exchange for more money.

“180 million.” Xuanyuan’s voice became incredibly cold and sinister as raised by 30 million at once. Bai and Mochou had shivers when they heard it, so did many people attending the auction. They turned their heads towards the booth where Xuanyuan was sitting.

## Chapter 163 – Greed at Work

“190 million.” Calmly said the woman in the earth booth, but the first woman had already given up on buying the set of Linglong instruments. Many people wanted to know who was occupying the heaven class booth. Normally, people would give some face to Jiang Yitian and wouldn’t immediately outbid him.

“200 million.” Jiang Yitian announced.

“230 million.” Xuanyuan continued raiding the price.

“Who’s that? People rarely raise the price by so much.”

“He sounds like a cruel old man. Looks like he isn’t scared of Jiang Yitian.”

“The woman in the earth section is also quite mysterious. I’ve heard that she’s a true disciple from the Linglong Sect. She probably really wants this set. After all, it’s made by the previous Saintess.”

“Looks like the fight is just the beginning.”

“240 million.” The woman’s voice was calm.

“250 million.” Jiang Yitian was also undisturbed.

“280 million.” Xuanyuan spoke coarsely.

“You seem to be an old guy. Why do you need the Linglong Instruments? Do you want to attract some young girls? Why don’t you give it to Brother Jiang Yitian? He’s the First True Brother of the Fighting Dragons Sect.” Xingyun said sarcastically. The people in those booths were all incredibly powerful, so he wouldn’t go too far with his joke, but he was supported by Jiang Yitian so he was a little cocky and arrogant.

Greed was provoked. Using Xuanyuan’s voice, it projected a dangerous aura towards Xingyun, “Shut up! How dare a little ant question me?”

It was the Voice of Death again. Greed also used this in the last auction they attended, but this time, it was different. In the last auction, everyone who was on the scene was terrified. They all thought they were being dragged into hell and their souls were being ripped apart. But this time, the power was concentrated only on Xingyun. He felt as if his soul was being shredded. He started violently coughing up blood. A light quickly shot from Jiang Yitian’s box towards him which finally stopped the coughing.

“It’s the Voice of Death. This was said to have been lost long ago! It’s a seven star heaven technique from the Death Cult. Looks like you are someone related to the destruction of the cult.” A man commented from another box.

Xingyun turned very pale when he heard this. If Jiang Yitian didn’t interfere, he’d be dead already. Thinking of Jiang Yitian, he felt slightly more courageous and pointed his finger at Xuanyuan’s box. “How dare you hurt me? Don’t you know I’m a true disciple from the Fighting Dragons Sect? You are disrespecting the Sect!”

“You disrespected me. I don’t care if you’re from the Fighting Dragons Sect. When I see something I like, I take it. Do I have to give it to you without a fight? Be careful of what you say. I know there are Xians from the sect here, but if I

want to, I can still kill you. Think about it carefully.” Xuanyuan said imposingly. Bai was shocked to hear his speech. Many people tried to investigate who was in the booth, but they were all unsuccessful.

Xingyun was not so cocky now. His arrogant attitude actually made quite a few Elders and Xian’s from the sect angry. Since an auction of this scale was the best place to befriend and recruit powerful people from around the world, but Xingyun immediately antagonized one of the most mysterious guests in attendance. If they were back in the sect, Xingyun would have been severely punished.

“Sit down.” Jiang Yitian ordered. “Please don’t be provoked by his ignorant comments. Let me introduce myself. I’m the First True Disciple of the Fighting Dragons Sect, Jiang Yitian. You must be well-prepared for this auction, sir. But if you would let me bid the set of instruments first, I’ll certainly treat you as a respectable guest in the sect.” Jiang Yitian was mild and graceful. A perfect example of the future Master of Fighting Dragons.

However, Xuanyuan and Greed didn’t care for his politeness.

“Go away! You can pretend, but don’t you know people who use the Voice of Death can detect if someone’s words are sincere or not? Your voice is filled with hatred and bad intentions.”

“Haha, the Voice of Death is indeed impressive. First Brother acts polite, but he can’t pretend in front of you, sir.” It was Fung Lie’s voice. He was also sitting in another heaven booth. This had quickly escalated into fight between true disciples, so none of the Elders or Xian wanted to interfere in the argument.

“Brother Fung Lie, you are very funny. If this master doesn’t let me have what I

want, then we'll have to see who has more money." Jiang Yitian said while remaining calm.

"Fung Lie? Not bad. You're straight-forward and upright. I thought all disciples in the sect would be scum like them. I like you, this is a Xian class technique, the Wuji Cyclone. It's yours now. It's incomplete, but you should be able to improve it." A book flew from Xuanyuan's booth into Fung Lie's.

"Haha, I thank you, master, sir!" Fung Lie took the book immediately.

Everyone was in awe. Who was this man? He threw out a Xian class technique to someone he didn't know like it was garbage!

"What? He just gave him such a powerful technique? He is a man of emotion!"

"Master Fung Lie is imposing, but he never bullies the weak. He is always fair and just. No wonder a man who can hear sincerity would like him."

"Jiang Yitian's the complete opposite. He is polite on the outside, but his mind is filled with evil plots..."

"Wuji Cyclone? Is that the technique created by the Wuji Emperor?" A Xian inquired.

"Exactly the same. I just happened to encounter part of the incomplete technique. I can't study it, but it's suitable for Fung Lie. This boy, I have taken a liking to him. Techniques can only be pushed to the limit if they're used by suitable people." Xuanyuan said.

“Well said, my friend. I’m impressed by your generosity.” Another Xian complimented.

In Jiang Yitian’s booth, he turned to the girl sitting next to him.

“Do you know who’s sitting in that booth, miss?”

“I don’t know.” She shook her head.

“Tell me and I’ll give you 10 million king coins.”

“I really don’t know. Even if you give me 10 billion, I wouldn’t be able to tell you.” The girl said as she fidgeted nervously.

Jiang Yitian knew that she was genuinely ignorant about it, so he stopped pushing the subject.

“300 million!” From the earth booth, the woman called out her bid.

## Chapter 164 – The Protective Talisman of Emperors

Inside booth number thirty six, Bai was looking at Xuanyuan, but she felt like he was an ancient, terrifying being. There were many things he kept secret which she didn't ever question.

Greed was talking to Xuanyuan in his mind, "Are you happy with this? I think it's good to give him the Book of Wuji Cyclone, even though it's incomplete, it's still powerful. He'd be able to learn a lot as the reincarnation of a fighting wind. Fung Lie is decent to you. This could count towards repaying the favour."

"I'm very happy with it. Fung Lie discredited Jiang Yitian. This is the first strike. Now I'll discredit his name even further."

"310 million." Jiang Yitian was relentless.

"340 million." Xuanyuan added. Many people thought Xuanyuan had already won this round. Not many people could give away a Xian class technique so casually. He definitely had enough money to buy the Linglong Instruments.

"350 million." The woman bid again, but her voice was not as calm as before.

"360 million." Jiang Yitian looked towards booth thirty six and gave his bid.

"Xuanyuan, be careful. 400 million is the highest value of this set of instruments. It won't be worth it if you bid for too high." Bai reminded him.

"I understand." Just when Xuanyuan was about to make the next bit, Fung Lie

laughed loudly. The technique he just acquired had delighted him.

“I’ll add in 100 million, so the bid is 460 million! Sir, you gave me such great gift. I should at least show my gratitude. There’s not much else I can do for you, but I have a bit of money. Please take it!”

“Agreed!” Xuanyuan also laughed. He might not have had enough money otherwise.

“I give up.” The woman from earth booth said. Attention soon turned towards Jiang Yitian.

“Brother Fung Lie is very generous. I’ll relent.” Jiang Yitian announced. He didn’t want to lose money in order to buy this set of instruments. Also he didn’t know who the mysterious man was, it would be better not to get on the wrong side of him. “I must have offended you, sir. Please forgive me, and allow me to apologize.”

“If you give me 200 million king coins, I will forgive you.” Xuanyuan smiled coldly.

Jiang Yitian frowned. The man was extorting him in front of such a large crowd. But the mysterious identity of the man sobered his mind. He must be someone extremely powerful. If he could form a friendship with him, it would be very helpful.

“Of course. I didn’t discipline my brothers in the sect and embarrassed you and the sects reputation. If 200 million can settle this, it’s very worth it.” Jiang Yitian said slowly.

“Do you think Jiang Yitian will die of anger if he finds out that it’s you?” Bai was astonished.

“Haha, who knows?”

“460 million the first time.”

“460 million the second time.”

“460 million the third time.”

“The Linglong instruments belong to the gentlemen in the booth number thirty six.” Baiji, the auctioneer announced. She ordered people to collect money from Jiang Yitian and Fung Lie. Xuanyuan only needed to pay 130 million, with his discount given by Bai.

“You’re probably the only person who would make your enemy pay for you.” Bai was liking Xuanyuan more and more.

“I understand what he’s thinking. Jiang Yitian looks at the long-term benefits and doesn’t mind sacrificing in the short term.” Xuanyuan was in a great mood.

When the instruments arrived, Mochou was drooling over them and took off all her clothes at once to change. Xuanyuan turned his head but still caught a glimpse as she stripped. He blushed uncontrollably. Bai was not amused. Was this girl really so innocent?

The instruments transformed Mochou's aura once they were equipped. People would surely mistake her as the Saintess of the Linglong Sect while wearing this.

"Xuanyuan, do the new clothes look good on me?" Mochou smiled from ear to ear.

"Yes, you look really nice." Xuanyuan said. He sighed and was amused by how beautifully the instruments matched her.

"Why don't you marry her? She likes you enough! I wonder if your children will be some sort of hybrid between the Body of All Creations and Spirits!" Greed laughed teasingly.

"Go to hell." Xuanyuan rolled his eyes. He then turned his attention back to the stage. The second item was an unusual crystal. It was at least a thousand jin and was filled with wind Qi. Many practitioners who studied Wind techniques started bidding on it, but Fung Lie was of course the final winner.

"The third item is the Protective Talisman of Emperors. An Emperor class talisman, made by a Xian. When you're attacked by an emperor realm fighter, this will save your life. The bid starts at 10 million king coins!" Baiji announced.

"A talisman with 10 million as a starting point? This is insane!" Xuanyuan gasped.

"Of course. We're not particularly wealthy. But when we are, we'll realize that's not a lot of money. The price of source energy can be worth billions. It's the same for talismans. The more powerful the maker, the more powerful the talisman. An emperor class talisman is extremely rare. 10 million is considered a

bargain.” Bai smiled. Xuanyuan understood this. The nine jin of sky and ice source energy was valued at 20 billion king coins.

People were calling out bids crazily.

“12 million!”

“15 million!”

**“23 million!”**

“29 million!”

When the bid reached 40 million, many people began to realize this was a very high price for a one-time use talisman. But at this point, Xuanyuan opened his mouth,

“45 million!”

